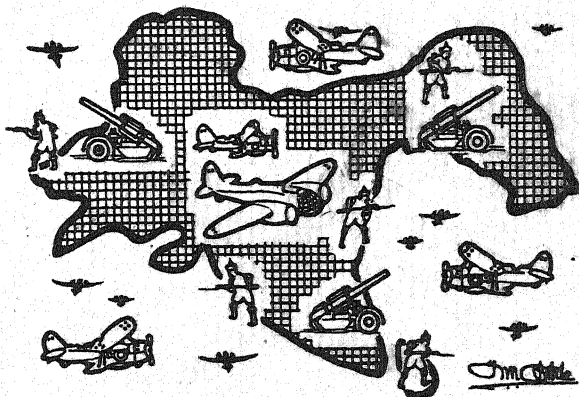


# AIR RAIDS AND CIVIL DEFENCE



214 By

L. M. CHITALE, F.R.I.B.A., A.M.T.P.I.

Chartered Architect and Town Planning Consultant;  
Chairman, Board of Studies in Drawing and Architecture,  
Madras University

THIRD EDITION  
UNITED STATES OF INDIA  
REVISED AND ENLARGED

Acc. No.

Dated

L. M. CHITALE, F.R.I.B.A., A.M.T.P.I.

AUTHOR & PUBLISHER

ORIENTAL BUILDINGS, G. T., MADRAS



6  
358  
CHS-A  
18995  
COPYRIGHT RESERVED BY THE AUTHOR

FIRST EDITION 1941

SECOND EDITION 1942

THIRD EDITION 1943



22.7.84

PRINTED AT

THE MADRAS PUBLISHING HOUSE, MOUNT ROAD, MADRAS

"India has been fortunate that in nearly two years of war no hostile air-craft has approached her shores. But that is no reason for complacency. If we have learned any lessons from this war, there is surely among them—that, however far away the noise of battle may sound to-day, to-morrow it may be at our gates.

"The moment for which you are preparing may never come ; it is true ; but not one can tell—it may come when you are least expecting it ; and if it comes when you are unprepared, then you are beaten before you have started to fight."

*H. E. the Viceroy and Governor-General of India,*  
15-8-1941

"The measures for safeguarding the civil population against the effect of air attack . . . have become a necessary part of the defensive organisation of any country which is open to air attack. The need for them is not related to any belief that war is imminent. It arises from the fact that the risk of attack from the air, however remote it may be, is a risk that cannot be ignored, and because preparations to minimise the consequences of attack from the air cannot be improvised on the spur of the moment, but must be made, if they are to be effective, in time of peace."

*General Preface, the Home Office*  
*A.R.P. Handbooks*

## ABBREVIATIONS USED

A.R.P.H.	Home Office A.R.P. Handbook.
A.R.P.M.	Home Office A.R.P. Memoranda.
J.A.R.P.I.	Journal of the Air Raid Protection Institute.
J.I.C.E.	Journal of the Institute of Civil Engineers.
J.I.M.Cy.E.	Journal of the Institution of Municipal and County Engineers.
J.R.I.B.A.	Journal of the Royal Institute of British Architects.
J.T.P.I.	Journal of the Town Planning Institute.
I.C.J.	The Indian Concrete Journal.

# FOREWORD

BY

**H. E. GENERAL SIR CLAUDE AUCHINLECK,**  
**G.C.I.E., C.B., C.S.I., D.S.O., O.B.E., A.D.C.,**  
*Commander-in-Chief, India.*

Great effort and conscientious compiling of recent literature on the subject have gone together to make Mr. Chitale's book a mine of information on A.R.P.

Mr. Chitale has appreciated the ever-changing aspect of air defence and in this his Third Edition he embodies the lessons learned from more recent heavy air raids in Great Britain.

We must not forget the possibility of more air raids on India. As the Japanese get more desperate they may attempt to disrupt our supply lines and bring panic to our cities. Panic can be prevented by a sound knowledge of A.R.P. Ignorance of A.R.P. may easily lead to panic during an air raid, while a knowledge of happenings and effects can well make for confidence and safety. I recommend this book to all those interested in Air Raid Precautions and Civil Defence.

" This is a valuable contribution to training in Civil Defence and should help to bring home to Indians the tasks which confront them if enemy attack from the air should develop. In this country we realise that much depends on each individual member of the Civil Defence Services and the public being fully instructed and trained in all branches of Civil Defence Work."

MINISTRY OF HOME SECURITY  
WHITEHALL, LONDON

## PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION

The Second Edition published in May last year, received high praise from responsible authorities all over India. Inspectors-Generals of Police, Directors of Public Instruction, Chief Engineers of Public Works Departments, Inspectors-Generals of Civil Hospitals and Prisons, Directors of Public Health and other Heads of Departments in several Provinces and States recommended to their officers and institutions this publication as a valuable book. Jap Fleet movements in the Bay in April 1942 awakened the people of this country to the importance of strengthening the Home Front and the value of Civil Defence Measures. Civil Defence Organisations rapidly spread all over the country. The book was sold out within a few months.

Demand for copies from Government Departments and Officers and Public Institutions all over the country and the warm praise the book received from the Civil Defence Authorities necessitated the issue of the Third Edition, considerably delayed on account of the difficulty of obtaining supply of paper. Events have moved so fast during the past twelve months as to make a thorough revision, considerable addition and alteration in several chapters of the book necessary. The R.A.F. set up a new record in bombing. Air Raids were made on Indian soil. Civil Defence has come to stay in every country throughout the world and even in distant America authorities find that Civil Defence has become part of their everyday life.

This revised and enlarged Third Edition has been issued in the interest of keeping the Indian public and responsible authorities informed of the latest developments and measures necessary for air defence. It is brought out with the same hope that the book would prove of some value in strengthening the Civil Defence Front of this vast country.

MADRAS,  
15th July, 1943

L. M. CHITALE

## PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION

The favourable reception which the first edition had at the hands of the Authorities and the Public in India, Burma, Ceylon, etc. and the growing appreciation of the value of Civil Defence measures for protecting the civilian population and their property from destruction by modern methods of warfare compelled me to issue a revised and enlarged second edition, at this juncture.

The creation of a separate portfolio for Civil Defence and the increasing activities of Government in the vulnerable areas of India prove the need for concerting effective A.R.P. Measures immediately to face the danger which threatens to overwhelm the country from the East and the West.

Fortunately India has been spared the horrors of air attack and is in a position to profit by the experiences of many unfortunate nations. The consequences of air raid though disastrous have shown themselves to be not uncontrollable if appropriate steps are taken in advance. Bombers have got through, as Baldwin predicted, but not without great difficulty. High explosive bombs have not proved impossible of resistance and gas, contrary to expectation, has not been resorted to by aggressors. Incendiaries have done greater damage than we once supposed and the need for helping those who escape unhurt but who lost their homes have now been shown to be as important as the precautions required for the injured and the maimed.

The book has been considerably enlarged and rewritten in many parts. Events, however, have supported the main hypothesis enunciated by the author in the First Edition. All available information and data have been examined and incorporated to suit Indian conditions. A new chapter on Camouflage has been added; while the chapter on A.R.P. organisation has been considerably enlarged.

The author is indebted to the numerous Government Departments and Public Institutions for their encouragement offered to this pioneer effort. His sincere thanks are due to his office staff for assistance in compiling this publication. He is also deeply indebted to the numerous Books, Reports, Journals, Periodicals and Illustrations referred to.

MADRAS,  
15-4-1942

L. M. CHITALE



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	v
INTRODUCTION	xiii
I. AIR ATTACK : MEANS AND METHODS	1
High Explosive Bomb — Incendiary Bomb — Machine-Gun — Aerial Torpedo — Poison Gas — Bombers and Bombing Methods — Air Raid Destruction.	
II. PREVENTION AND ESCAPE	79
Fighter Aircraft — Anti-Aircraft Gun — Balloon Barrage — Evacuation, Camouflage, Obscuration of Light.	
III. PROTECTION TO PEOPLE	117
Gas Protection — Bomb Resisting Accommodation — Shelter Equipment — Shelter Economy — Location and Accessibility.	
IV. RESISTANCE TO STRUCTURES	161
Resistance to Gas — Resistance to Fire and Incendiary Agents — Resistance to Blast, Splinters and Demolition — Designs for Factories.	
V. IMMUNITY TO ESSENTIAL SERVICES	193
Vulnerability of Essential Services — Water-Supply and Drainage : Residential Zones — Water-Supply and Drainage : Non-Residential Zones — Power Stations — Road System and Transport Facilities — Food Supply — Self-sufficient Units.	
VI. ESSENTIALS OF AIR DEFENCE	223
Cities for Air Raid Protection — Green Belts — Rational Road System — Tanks, Wells and Ponds — Central Park and City Zones — Townships and Villages — Pasture and Agriculture — Nerve Centres — Separation of Industry — Universities, Libraries and Art Galleries — Size and Shape — Bomb-resisting Cities — Town Planning and Air Defence — Reconstruction and National Planning — The Planning Commission.	

	PAGE
VII. EVACUATION AND DISPERSAL ... ..	287
Importance — The British Experiment — The Indian Problem — Evacuation and Rural Betterment — Housing the bombed-out — Decongestion.	
VIII. AIR RAID SHELTERS ... ..	327
Domestic Shelters — Medium Size Shelters — Large Shelters — Shelters for Key-men — Shelter Sanitation and Comfort— Designs for India — Brick Shelters.	
IX. PRECAUTIONS FOR STRUCTURES AND SERVICES ...	389
Precautions against Fire — Precautions against Blast and Splinters — Sandbagging and Baffle Walls — Window Protection — Precautions for Factories — Precautions for Temples, Palaces, etc. — Precautions for Museums, Libraries, etc. — Precautions for Services — Sewer Squad Organisation — Precautions for Transport — Decontamination of Building Materials — Organisations — Appendix.	
X. CAMOUFLAGE AND LIGHT OBSCURATION ... ..	453
Introduction — Colour : Toning Down — Shape: Merging and Disruption — Shadow : Elimination and Disguise — Dummies—Typical Problems—General Procedure—Materials—Conclusion — Obscuration of Light — Appendix	
XI. CIVIL DEFENCE ORGANISATIONS AND EDUCATION ...	543
Civil Defence in Great Britain — The Warning System — Fire Prevention and Fire-Fighting — Roof Spotters — Rescue and Demolition — Salvage and Storage — War Damage Repair — Post-Raid Information — Food and Drink, Clothing and Cash—A.R.P. Medical Organisation—A.R.P. for Animals—Unexploded Bombs, A. A. Shells, etc. — Compensation for Air Raid Damage — Women and A.R.P. — A.R.P. for India — Civil Defence Training — Public Education.	
BIBLIOGRAPHY ... ..	615
INDEX ... ..	625
APPRECIATIONS AND REVIEWS ... ..	631

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
1. High explosive bombs released from a bomber ... ..	3
2. Incendiary bombs released from a bomber ... ..	3
3. High explosive bombs kept in position in the fuselage of a bomber	4
4. High explosive bomb used in Spanish raids ... ..	4
5. High explosive bomb used by the R.A.F. ... ..	4
6. Typical Dimensions of Air-craft Bombs ... ..	6
7. German bombs released over Great Britain ... ..	6
8. Typical British bombs ... ..	7
9. The effect of a high explosive bomb bursting in the ground ...	11
10. What blast did to a stationary bus in a London street ...	11
11. Effects of the positive and negative phases of blast upon walls ...	12
12. Diagrammatic representation of scabbing ... ..	15
13. Delayed action H.E. bomb penetrating a multi-storeyed building	16
14. Fragments of a bomb exploding on impact ... ..	17
15. Bomb fragments taken out from an injured person in Spain ; actual size ... ..	17
16. Formation of crater ... ..	19
17. Shape of a typical crater ... ..	19
18. Pressure waves created when H.E. bomb explodes within a target	20
19. A crater showing the damaged underground telephone cables	21
20. The angle of impact of high explosive bomb ... ..	22
21. Screaming device attached to H. E. bombs ... ..	23
22. Ear plug ... ..	23
23. The famous Carlton Hotel, London, which received a direct hit	24
24. What a German fire raid did for the Paternoster Square in London	25
25. Molotov's bread basket ... ..	26
26. Japanese and German types of Incendiary Bombs ... ..	27
27. Typical Kilo Magnesium (Electron) Incendiary Bomb ...	33
28. Method of attacking vessels ... ..	36
29. Dive bombing ... ..	36
30. Loading bullets into Machine-guns of Fighter-aircraft ...	38
31. Aerial torpedo ... ..	40
32. Method of dropping parachute flares and troops from a plane ...	41
33. Container attached to the plane for spraying liquid gas ...	47
34. The combined high explosive and liquid gas bomb ... ..	47
35. The spreading of poison gas ... ..	47
36. Blenheim Bombers ... ..	59
37. The celebrated Bristol " Blenheim " long range bomber	81
38. The Heinkel bomber " III K " ... ..	82
39. Fighter air-craft... ..	82
40. British Fighter-aircraft 'Defiant' ... ..	83
41. Bombers flying in formation ... ..	84
42. ' Hurricanes ' on patrol ... ..	85
43. A typical Anti-Aircraft Gun ... ..	94
44. Anti-aircraft shell shrapnel picked up in Spain. ... ..	94

	PAGE
45. A.-A. Gun Shells ... ..	95
46. Search-lights in action ... ..	95
47. Organisation and plan of operations to intercept enemy bombers	103
48. The Balloon Barrage ... ..	107
49. Civilian Respirator ... ..	119
50. Civilian Respirator Container ... ..	119
51. Anti-Gas Suit ... ..	120
52. Service Respirator and Civilian Gas Masks ... ..	121
53. Austin's Tunnel Shelter for 10,000 people ... ..	123
54. Schindler Stronghold ... ..	124
55. Winkel Tower ... ..	124
56. A section of the Maginot Line ... ..	125
57. German fortified Siegfried Line ... ..	127
58. Shelter recommended to afford protection against direct hits ...	130
59. Bomb Resisting Shelter for 1,200 persons ... ..	131
60. Bomb-proof shelters with pressure piles ... ..	133
61. People who were killed in a Chungking air raid shelter ...	136
62. Blast, splinter and gas-proof shelter door ... ..	140
63. A typical chemical closet ... ..	141
64. The Birmingham underground car park and air raid shelter ...	145
65. Another type of car park and air raid shelter ... ..	147
66. Over-ground bomb-proof air raid public shelter ... ..	152
67. Bomb-proof shelter in a residential zone ... ..	154
68. Londoners taking shelter in an underground tube station ...	156
69. Inside a typical shelter in Chungking, during raids ... ..	158
70. Effect of blast upon walls of buildings in a narrow street ...	175
71. Multi-storey buildings ... ..	176
72. 'Protective' and 'Safety Valve' Wall and Floors ... ..	187
73. A type of house designed to offer greater resistance to air raids ...	188
74. Diagram showing the value of space around buildings ... ..	190
75. High explosive bomb with delayed fuse exploding in a street ...	195
76. Tracks of the London and N.E.Ry. knocked out by a bomb ...	197
77. The dangers of a hard surface in narrow streets ... ..	208
78. Air raid-proof city ... ..	226
79. The probable range of variation in bombing a target ... ..	231
80. Perspective view of a city which would resist air attacks ...	234
81. The road system recommended by ancient Indian Town Planners	235
82. The road system recommended by ancient Indian Town Planners	236
83. A bomb-proof city with overground dwelling towers ... ..	261
84. Development of Bomber 1914-1940 ... ..	290
85. A typical air-craft carrier... ..	290
86. London children with destination label ready for evacuation ...	293
87. Evacuation camps erected near London ... ..	311
88. Camps for housing the bombed-out ... ..	324
89. Anderson Steel Shelter set in position ... ..	330
90. The Anderson Steel Shelter ... ..	331
91. An Anderson Steel Shelter ... ..	332
92. Domestic Surface Shelters ... ..	335

	PAGE
93. Concrete shelter with steel reinforcement, for six persons ...	337
94. Tube shelter in position showing one end ... ..	339
95. A concrete pipe Domestic Shelter ... ..	339
96. Large precast concrete tubes inserted into hill sides or slag heaps	340
97. A typical steel shell for erecting family shelters ... ..	340
98. Garden trench ... ..	342
99. Brick Surface Shelter ... ..	345
100. A strengthened basement for a family of seven persons ...	346
101. Types of traversed entry ... ..	347
102. Framed Structure with strengthened basement ... ..	348
103. A Strengthened Basement with emergency exit for an office	348
104. Correct and incorrect location of shelters within a building ...	351
105. A lean-to air-raid shelter easily accessible from the street ...	352
106. Interior of an air-raid shelter at Wimbledon ... ..	353
107. Brick trench for twenty people ... ..	355
108. Plan of an overground shelter for fifty persons ... ..	356
109. Medium size shelter for fifty persons ... ..	357
110. Dovetail steel sheets fixed in position in an overground shelter...	358
111. An air raid shelter for 25 persons on a 120-ton barge on the Thames	359
112. Trenches lined and covered with precast concrete slabs ... ..	360
113. Covered trenches in the course of construction in London ...	361
114. All welded steel shelters for key-men ... ..	362
115. The 'Haldane' Shelter ... ..	370
116. A Communal air raid shelter ... ..	371
117. Office and Bomb-proof shelter combined ... ..	373
118. A type of lay-out of trenches for the floating population ...	373
119. An economical method of arranging trench shelters ... ..	374
120. The vulnerability of basements to the high explosive bombs ...	377
121. The Pill-box Shelter ... ..	379
122. Brick overground shelters in Madras, Plan and Section ... ..	380
123. Brick shelters erected in the streets of London ... ..	381
124. Brick surface shelter erected without timber or steel ... ..	382
125. Domestic shelter for ten persons below ground level ... ..	382
126. Domestic shelter for six persons below ground level ... ..	383
127. Section of a concrete shelter below ground level ... ..	384
128. Methods of strengthening roofs to resist the Kilo Incendiary Bomb	394
129. A Fire-fighting party in action ... ..	395
130. Blast effect upon buildings strengthened with supports ... ..	406
131. Correct method of sandbag walling... ..	408
132. A sandbagged hospital in London ... ..	410
133. Hollow concrete blocks used instead of sandbags ... ..	411
134. Sandbagging (Emergency) ... ..	413
135. Sandbagging (Military) ... ..	413
136. Section of trench shelters lined with split bamboo-wallings ...	424
137. The above-ground brick wall shelter ... ..	424
138. Sandbag protection for pictures, bookcases, etc. ... ..	434
139. A dazzle-painted battle-ship ... ..	455
140. A camouflaged Bren Gun Carrier used in East Africa ... ..	456

	PAGE
141. A type of dazzle-painting recommended for moving objectives...	457
142. A camouflaged air-craft ... ..	458
143. Disruptive patterns found over a kind of butterfly ... ..	459
144. A leaf insect ... ..	460
145. A Python in its natural surroundings ... ..	460
146. Disruption in Nature: Patterns over a fish ... ..	461
147. The Zebra ... ..	462
148. A frog and how it disappears into the background ... ..	462
149. Locating targets from air-craft and releasing bombs over them ...	463
150. Typical bombing problem ... ..	464
151. A large gas holder in an industrial area ... ..	467
152. Imitative patterns painted over to merge it in the surroundings	467
153. Bold patterns drawn over with a view to disrupt the outline ...	467
154. The Owl in its natural surroundings ... ..	468
155. Stripes merge the form of the tiger in the jungle background...	469
156. Typical disruptive patterns ... ..	469
157. Camouflage of Cooling Towers ... ..	470
158. Structural distortion of a building ... ..	472
159. Shadows reveal the shape of objects ... ..	475
160. Garnished netting used for concealing a machine-gun post ...	478
161. A 25-lb. gun and its crew camouflaged by an overhead cover ...	480
162. A gun emplacement covered by camouflage netting ... ..	481
163. A typical factory in a rural surrounding ... ..	492
164. A view of the above factory camouflaged ... ..	492
165. Economical method of netting to conceal shadows... ..	493
166. A factory before and after camouflaging ... ..	493
167. A camouflaged motor car ... ..	501
168. Camouflaging open car parks by disruptive painting ... ..	501
169. A.R.P. lantern for indicating shelters, refugees, traffic signals ...	526
170. A.R.P. Decontamination and First Aid Post... ..	553
171. A typical lay-out for salvage depot ... ..	569
172. The action of High Explosive Bomb ... ..	604
173. How High Explosive Bomb effects affect persons ... ..	605
174. Air Raid-Proof Tower ... ..	611

## INTRODUCTION<sup>1</sup>

---

The darkening European horizon has given a new significance to the arguments advanced on social and æsthetic grounds against the uncontrolled expansion of cities.<sup>2</sup> Overcrowding and congestion of people and buildings, thoughtless association of different kinds of activities, inadequacy of water, air and ventilation and scope for movement, the dominant features of modern urban communities have made cities, danger spots of national security. This is the lesson which recent events in Western Europe teach. Men and women are fleeing from the great city in search of safety to country villages. It is now evident that the normal pattern of our existence in peace time is such that it is not merely useless in time of war, but a positive menace to life and limb. Urban surveys and statistics have demonstrated their unfitness even in times of peace. "Never go to cities" said the Upanishads, although with a different object. In the huge agglomerations of men and buildings breed the danger "beating down the will to live" and intelligent citizens are already leaving the hearts of cities to their outskirts, as the American movement of depopulation and blighted areas show.

Are great cities a menace? The weapons of air attack leave no room for doubt. It needs £3,60,000 a day for A.R.P. and evacuation alone for a tiny country like England just to reduce the quantity of destruction. As long as the threat of war remains so long will the Exchequer be drained. In addition there is the expenditure on coastal patrol and other services organised to deal with the risk. Inconvenience to the people and the strain upon the nerves of citizens should also be added.

The price we pay for city life in times of peace is serious if not spectacular. The loss of efficiency, the harm to health, the waste of resources and energy are hard to evaluate. Careful investigation alone will open our eyes to this appalling waste in our civic organism. If municipal finance spent upon ameliorative measures, urban sanitation and the like are an index to the inadequacy of our civic

<sup>1</sup> For the First Edition, written in 1941.

<sup>2</sup> W. A. Robson, "Evacuation, Town Planning and the War." The Political Quarterly—Volume XI, No. I, Jan.-March, 1940, pp. 45-58.



organism to meet the needs of peace, expenditure upon A.R.P. might be taken as the index to the unsuitability of cities in times of war.

In spite of immense sacrifices and expense the feeling is prevalent that the risk cannot be avoided. France where the need for A.R.P. was visualised ten years ago—in fact a scheme for evacuation was prepared in 1930—paid heavily for the first mass air attack of the Nazis. Two hundred and fifty people lost their lives and 650 were injured in the heart of Paris claimed to have been equipped with all the anti-aircraft devices.

This is because the root of the problem remains unaffected. "Hitlerism will never be defeated by counter-Hitlerism. It can only breed superior Hitlerism raised to the Nth degree." "Every new weapon of war inevitably results in a counter-weapon on the part of the adversary of even greater effectiveness."<sup>2</sup> Air attacks carefully planned to destroy cities as they are, can be successfully counteracted only by measures which change their form, their plan and pattern. The logic of this argument will become apparent when we study carefully the kinds and capacity of the weapons used in air attacks.

Defence is no longer the repelling of invasion but the protection of the home and the soil.<sup>3</sup> Even in the West it is recognised "that the troubles to-day cannot be cured by arms and armaments. We have to go further and deeper."<sup>4</sup> And considered opinion is therefore gathering round the view that proper planning of civic communities, careful selection of centres of population and industry and thoughtful balance between the built-up and open areas are necessary to meet the air menace.

This danger is three dimensional and hence the need. What a shield could do when blows and arrows were weapons of the war ; the fortress, the rampart and the moat had to do, when infantry and cavalry marched against the enemy. Against aerial bombs they offer no safeguard ; in planning alone lies chances of survival.

<sup>1</sup> Mahatma Gandhi : The " Harijan ", 22nd June, 1940.

<sup>2</sup> The Pope's Easter Broadcast, London, April 13, 1941.

<sup>3</sup> Robson.

<sup>4</sup> Chamberlain : Address to the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland at Edinburgh during May 1939.

Planning is a necessity to readjust our urban communities and to provide us towns fit to live in, and cities to be proud of, where our people can dwell in comparative security. How will these prevent air raids? As Chapter VI would show properly planned cities and towns would render air raids uneconomic and not worthwhile. Herein lies the safety for cities and civilization without the aid of Le Corbusier and his deep underground cities or Commodore Charlton and his human hives overground. This ideal towards the very best, will give us the correct basis of development. Even if the weapons are made more powerful such a plan would render possible protective measures.

Absolute security is possible only if the world forgets the aeroplane or submits to the Gandhian ideal of non-violence in matters international or internal. Mere conventions and agreements or Leagues and Covenants do not help. The Geneva Gas Protocol of 1925 prohibited the use of poison gas in war but in Abyssinia barrels of liquid mustard gas were used.<sup>1</sup> And it is only in the name of 'civilization' that women and children are machine-gunned and killed by champions of 'civilization' in Europe. In a world with such leaders, limiting wars to warfields is unworkable. When women and children and non-combatants form the targets of attack by bombs and blockades what can the Kshatria ideal of zoning warfields do?

Until human nature improves and man gets humanised there is little hope, as Sir Clement Hindley points out, of obtaining peace for mankind from the threat of air raids.<sup>2</sup> When will it change? Centuries of 'progress' has left man where he was in the days of Cain. If it is idle to hope for improvement there is no alternative but to plan and plant the communities in such a way as to infuse strength into them to resist and recover from air attacks.

Will readjustment of our cities, towns and villages to meet the needs of war injure the needs of peace, the requirements for health and comfort of those who should dwell in them? Fortunately the measures necessary for air resistance are eminently helpful to enhance civic comfort. This is a silver lining to the threat of air attack gathering in the sky and screening the dawn of hope

<sup>1</sup> A. A. Spaight: Air power in the next war.

<sup>2</sup> Presidential address. Institution of Civil Engineers. J.I.C.E., Nov. 1939, p. 4.

and survival. Town planners therefore view this new threat as a blessing in disguise. For the reforms which eminent authorities in public health, sociology, civic economy, dietetics, traffic control, etc., have been recommending these many years are essential since they are eminently helpful to face the high explosive, the incendiary bomb and liquid poison gas. The open pattern required for safety is ideal for efficiency.

Details of researches in sciences directly affecting human welfare that call for change in our mode of life are discussed in their relevant places. Emphasis should, however, be laid upon the most vital factor in human welfare, namely the maintenance of the proper balance between organism, function and environment (men, occupation and land) on which alone a stable civilisation could be built. The lessons which human ecology has to teach us, has immense bearing upon the problem of safety. The Royal Commission on the Geographical Distribution of the Industrial Population and the recent cry of 'grow your own food' in Great Britain, the back-to-village movement in other countries are but feeble manifestations of the unconscious recognition of the vital need to restore the lost balance between these fundamental constituents of society. And this can be solved as sociologists have pointed out only by a correct proportion between agriculture and industry, land and labour, cities and towns, work and wealth. If air raids compel us to realise and adopt this as our goal, they would not have been in vain.

To this lack of balance and proper spacial distribution of population and industry is due the difficulty of securing safety for the citizens and civilisation in Europe, in spite of the enormous expense and discomfort. In the words of Mahatma Gandhi "it is not unreasonable to presume from the state of Europe that its cities, its monster factories and huge armaments are so intimately interrelated that one cannot exist without the other." For "a society which anticipates and provides for meeting violence with violence will either lead a precarious life or create big cities and magazines for defence purposes."<sup>1</sup> The legacy of the industrial revolution was one-sided, and the consequences we are witnessing to-day; bread without butter and diet without nutriments; homes without housewives, schools without children, children without schools, lamps without light and strain without war!

<sup>1</sup> The "Harijan", Jan. 13, 1940.

If India neglects these valuable lessons the same difficulties are bound to be in store for her. The situation is not beyond reform if attempted at present. We are yet to discover the optimum spacial distribution of population and sooner an effort is made the better. Industrialisation awaits India and its evil consequences can be avoided only by careful planning in advance.

A.R.P. in India is rapidly gathering momentum. Long before the declaration of hostilities in Europe steps were taken to prepare schemes for India, although the September crisis gave a fillip to A.R.P. activities and to public interest in the matter. Information available indicates that A.R.P. in our country covers such items as black-out, wardens, sandbagging, sirens, first-aid parties, etc. Attempts at air raid shelters have also been made; and A.R.P. organisations are being built up in important cities. Medical aspect of A.R.P. has drawn wide attention.

However necessary these may be, events in Europe indicate that they cannot assure protection, even if our finances permitted their adoption on the British scale, to 30 million people inhabiting more than 1,000 centres.

If we should succeed in obtaining air security for our country every effort must be made to discover and apply measures that would be both economical and efficient. Is this possible when the threat of attack is at our doors? "So long as the possibility of attack exists, it is necessary to create organisations to minimise the consequences of attack and as it would not be possible to improvise effective measures on the spur of the moment in time of emergency, preparation must be made in time of peace.

"It is of essence of any such preparation that the civil population should be informed of the present and future possibilities of air attack and instructed in the precautions designed to meet it."<sup>1</sup> This warning of the Home Office of Great Britain has special significance to India. A correct perspective is essential to make our plans efficient. Effective public opinion is needed to launch comprehensive schemes.

<sup>1</sup> Home Office A. R. P. Circular dated 9th July 1935, p. 2.

✓ In the following pages an attempt has been made to deal with the problem of air raids and how best we could face this danger. The weapons used in air raids, their terrible potentialities and the destruction caused by them are first dealt with since a correct appreciation of the position is essential for formulating measures to combat them. Prevention is the most desirable solution, and the measures generally adopted, is described next. Since total prevention is impracticable the following three Chapters deal with the question how best the people could be protected, city structures could be made resistant to air raids and the supply of essential services immunised from the risks of dislocation and destruction. The plan and pattern of urban communities that would resist and recover from air raids are described next. In the four chapters that follow are indicated emergency measures and precautions for immediate adoption ; evacuation and dispersal ; air raid shelters ; precautions to structures and services ; camouflage and light obstruction. A.R.P. organisations and education to render these reforms possible and effective are outlined in the concluding chapter.

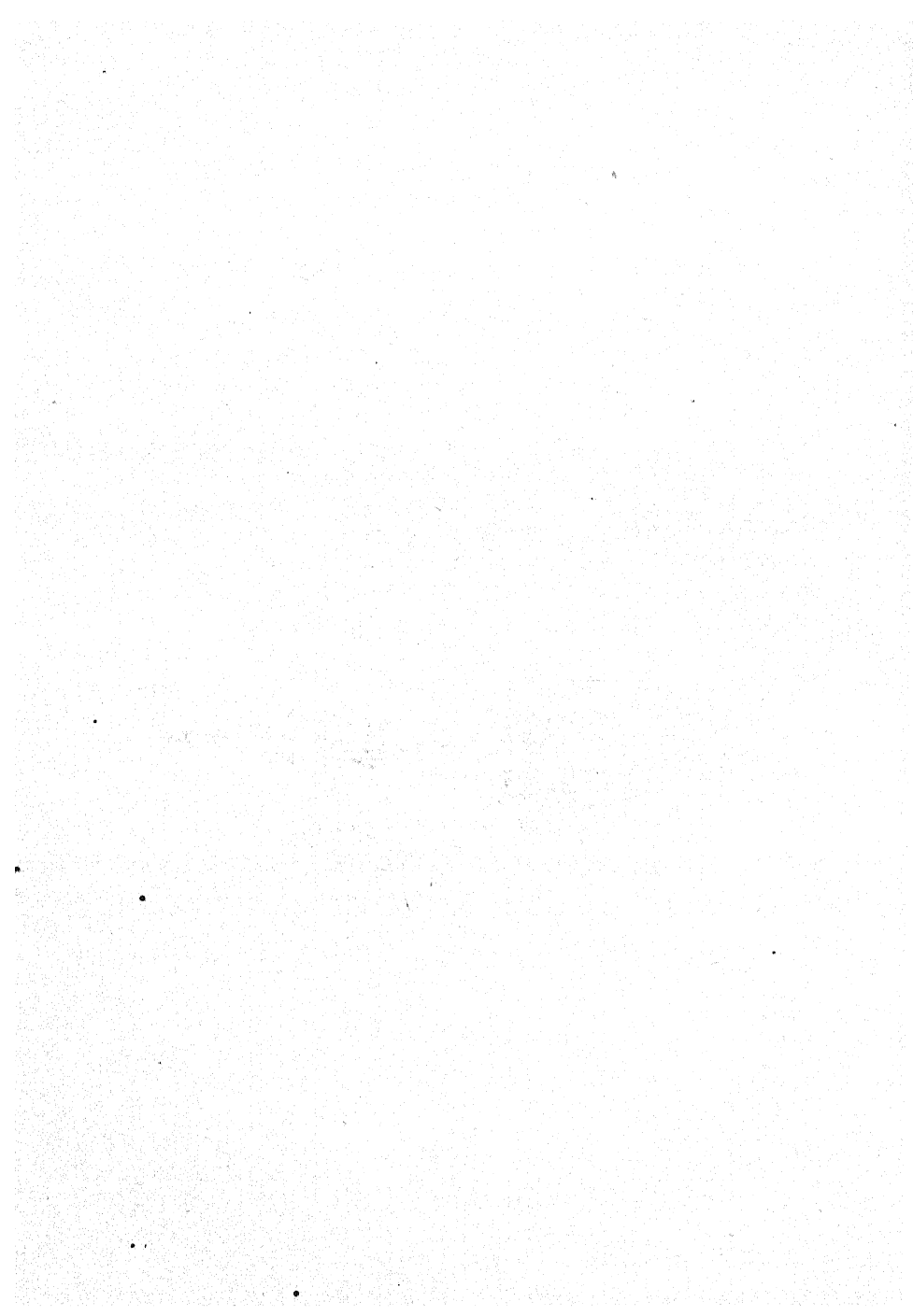
✓ The literature on A.R.P. is rapidly growing. Government departments, expert bodies and manufacturers have published valuable books and pamphlets. Research work is being carried on under their auspices. The experiments of the Home Office of Great Britain and their A.R.P. Handbooks and Memoranda constitute a mine of valuable information to which the reader must turn for further details. The aim of the author, however, has been to present the different aspects of the problem in their true perspective, concisely over a comprehensive canvas without which the approach to the remedy is impossible. He would consider his labours amply rewarded if the following pages succeed in stimulating a healthy public interest on this vital question before the peril overwhelms the country.

---

# **CHAPTER I**

---

## **AIR ATTACK: MEANS AND METHODS**

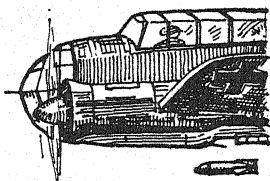




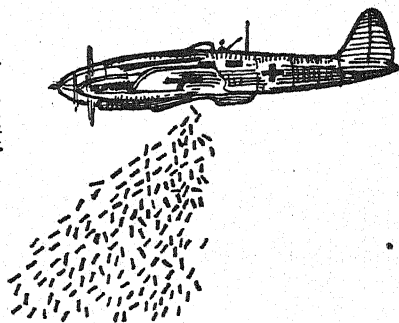
## CHAPTER I

### AIR ATTACK : MEANS AND METHODS

Air attacks are intended to destroy the morale, property and lives of the inhabitants of the enemy country in the shortest possible time. The means and methods of achieving this are, therefore, carefully planned. Thickly peopled zones, and closely built-up areas and strategic centres are selected. Squads of bombers drop different kinds of bombs in quick succession. Their aims are accomplished by demolishing railway stations, harbours, power-houses, telephone exchanges, bridges, and other key positions; by destroying factories, industries, godowns and warehouses; by spreading fire; by harassing people by machine-gunning; by poisoning men, their food, clothes, roads and buildings.

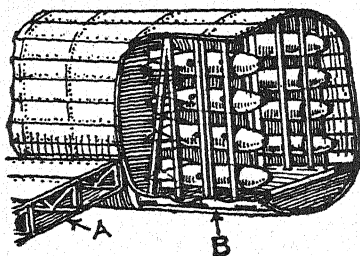


High explosive bombs released  
from a bomber



Incendiary bombs released  
from a bomber

The weapons designed for this purpose are : the high explosive bomb, the incendiary bomb, machine-gun, and liquid poison gas. Bombs are released from air-craft and liquid gas is also directly sprayed from the plane. An air-craft bomb is a container holding high explosive, or incendiary mixture or gas



High explosive bombs kept in position in the fuselage of a bomber

with means for detonating, burning, or discharging the filling. A bomb is simply released from an air-craft and is shaped to minimise the resistance offered by the air. Bombs are cylindrical or streamlined, the length of the body being about 4 to 6 times that of the diameter.

### High Explosive Bomb<sup>1</sup>

There are several kinds of high explosive bombs. One variety called armour-piercing, is designed for deep penetration and is used for demolishing factories and other protected centres.

Another variety known as the general purpose bomb is designed for maximum destruction in built-up areas by blast and splinters.



High explosive bomb used in Spanish raids

High explosive bombs are classified according to the weight of their case or containers into heavy, medium and light case. Heavy case bombs are also classified as armour-piercing and semi-armour-piercing; medium case, as general purpose, and small bombs as fragmentation or anti-personnel. A special class of light case bomb is classified as anti-submarine.



High explosive bomb used by the R.A.F.

<sup>1</sup> This section is largely based on the Home Office A.R.P.H.5 "Structural Defence", and reports of recent raids.

Weight range of H. E. Bombs is given below :—

Type of bomb	Charge/weight Percentage	Gross weight lb.
Anti-personnel .. .. .	15 to 20	20
Light case .. .. .	50 to 60	50 to 4,000
Heavy case .. .. .	25 to 40	
Medium case .. .. .	Small	

In the following table are given typical dimensions for a few bombs. In practice they vary considerably. The figures in brackets in the second column give the length of bomb carcass, that is, the part enclosing the charge.

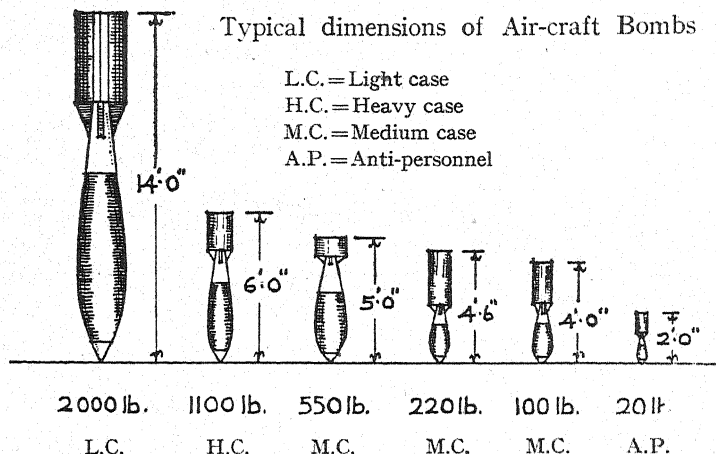
Bombs	Length Ft.	Diameter Ins.	Sectional Density* Lb. sq. in.
2,000 lb. light case .. .. .	14 (9)	24	4.4
1,100 lb. heavy case .. .. .	6 (4)	12	9.7
550 lb. medium case .. .. .	5 (4)	15	3.1
200 lb. medium case .. .. .	4½ (2)	10	2.8
100 lb. „ .. .. .	4 (2)	9	1.6
20 lb. anti-personnel .. .. .	2 (1)	5	1.0

\*Mass/Maximum Cross-sectional area

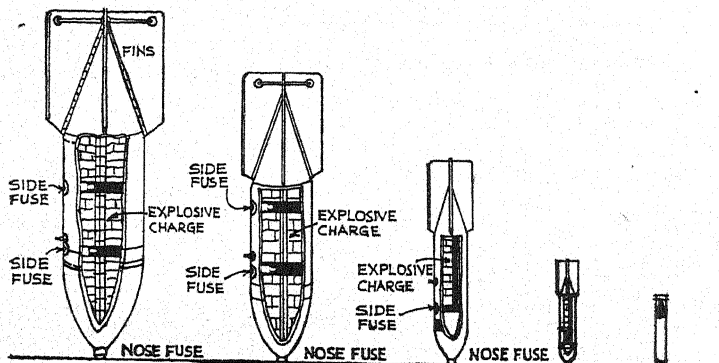
In the next page are shown various types of bombs in use at the present time, including the Incendiary, the High Explosive, the Armour-piercing, the Delayed action and the Oil bomb.\*

Though various standard type bombs are given as used by the *Luftwaffe*, bombs similar in size, though differing in shape, and generally aerodynamically superior to the German, are being used by the British bombers upon targets in Europe and Africa. The bomb most generally in use to-day is the high explosive type with contact fuses. These fuses are two in number in the larger types and one in the smaller bombs, placed on the side of the case to facilitate manipulation. The case is of steel and kept thin so that there is a very large bursting content. The armour-piercing types are, of course, largely used against warships and forts and the whole case is very much thicker than the high explosive general purpose type. The time gear of a delayed action bomb, in the

majority of cases, is clockwork, but in some cases an acid is used which cuts through a soft metal plate and causes explosion. The oil bomb, which may be of various sizes, is filled in some cases with petrol, thus becoming tremendously powerful incendiary bomb. In other cases it is filled with crude oil, which is ignited by a small petrol charge.



The destructive force of high explosive bombs is due to the various effects of explosion and fragmentation, of expansion, and of suction immediately following, whereby the pocket of rarefied air produced is filled by the pressure of the surrounding atmosphere.<sup>1</sup>

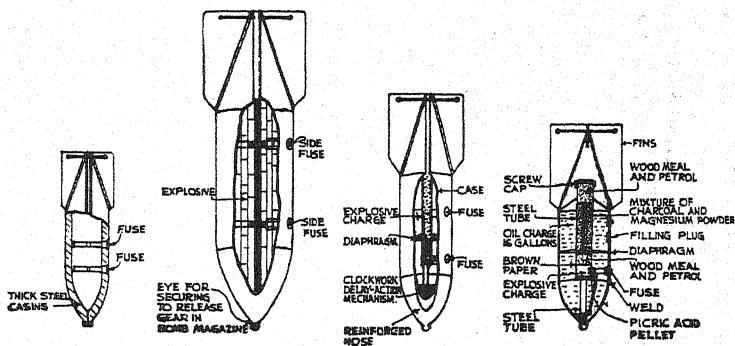


German bombs released over Great Britain

<sup>1</sup> "Illustrated London News", Oct. 5, 1940, p. 435.

A heavy case bomb is designed to withstand the shock of impact and to penetrate into or through the object struck, before detonation, and a delayed fuse is inserted.<sup>1</sup> Its potentiality will be developed only when it hits specially protected targets and it is hoped that the armour-piercing bomb is likely to be restricted only to that purpose. Heavy case bombs vary from 250 to 4,000 lbs. in weight.

The heaviest bomb dropped by the *Luftwaffe* over England weighed two tons. In its original state it measured 13' 3" long by 2' 3" in diameter and it was nick-named "Satan". Whereas the heaviest bombs used by the R.A.F. over Germany weigh 8000 pounds.



Typical British bombs

In the medium case bomb, the explosive content ranges from 25 to 40 per cent. of the weight; and it is less strong to withstand the shock of impact. Still with a delay fuse it can penetrate some distance and would ordinarily be strong enough to perforate several concrete floors of the thickness usual in multi-storeyed buildings. Medium case bombs range from 50 to 1,000 lbs. and they may be designed to produce intense blast as well as fragmentation. Heavier

<sup>1</sup> Time-bombs seriously affect traffic and A. R. P. services. They have been used by the Nazis over London. A time-bomb weighing nearly a ton fell near St. Paul's and the Cathedral was saved by the heroism of a bomb disposal squad which dug it out of a depth of 27 feet. It was a delayed action bomb which exploded inside the debating chamber of the House of Commons that destroyed walls although fire helped to burn it down.

In a Midland town a delayed action bomb necessitated the evacuation of a number of families.

A large hospital had to be evacuated owing to the presence of a delayed action bomb in the suburb of Birmingham during the close of July 1942. (*The Hindu*, 29-7-1942.)

ones are possible, but tactical considerations would make them vary between 110 to 660 lbs. as the most practical against civil buildings.

Light case bombs contain 50 to 60 per cent. or more of explosives and are used for maximum blast effect and will be used where blast is the decisive factor. If used for underwater attack for docks, reservoirs, etc., they would be fused for delay. Such bombs may be of any size.

The fragmentation or anti-personnel bomb usually weighs about 20 lbs. and is designed for use in large quantities to cause fragmentation, to cause injury to persons in the open and is fused to fire on impact.

The Japanese have resorted to this to gain their objective in the Eastern front. They made good use of anti-personnel bombs to cause injury to personnel in Rangoon, in Australia, in Malaya and other places. In their raid on Port Darwin in March 1942 by heavy bombers, the planes dropped mainly anti-personnel bombs. Apart from injury from splinters these bombs create tremendous noise. In the words of E. M. Glover, Managing Editor of the "Tribune" Group of Newspapers, Malaya, "the noise was much worse than their bite."

The Japanese used this with deadly effect over the civilians of Rangoon on Dec. 23, 1941. In a single raid over 1,000 people were killed and larger number injured. Rangoon experience shows that A.-P. bombs do not penetrate very deeply before exploding. They burst on impact and Japanese raids on Rangoon have shown that the fragments are scattered all round keeping very low and close to the ground. How low the fragments travel will become clear when we realise that in several places where the bombs exploded, the road was scarred on the surface for some considerable distance from the actual crater by low-flying fragments. The kerb stones of the pavements were smashed to pieces. The ground floors of shops and houses were heavily scarred and chipped. All glass for hundreds of feet around had been smashed.

Even those who lay flat on the ground when they heard the bombs coming, were killed or wounded. The destruction and slaughter were simply frightful. Mangled corpses, arms, legs, pieces of flesh and blood lay scattered all over the road pavements and walls of buildings.

It is evident from Rangoon experience that fragments attacking brick walls do not penetrate more than four or five inches into the brick ; they cause a good deal of ploughing up of the brick. Even a nearby explosion cannot damage a brick shelter. In no case, they penetrated right through the brickwork.

A direct hit is, however<sup>d</sup>, disastrous to normal buildings. One A.-P. bomb burst in a wooden bungalow, completely demolished half the structure and created a crater 25 feet in diameter.

In their raids on Calcutta, too, the type of bombs principally used by them was anti-personnel, the principal object of the attack being to cause maximum number of casualties amongst the civil population and to create nervousness among the citizens. Some bombs were dropped in the residential area and damage was caused to glass windows, a large number of which were smashed.

One shrapnel pierced the steel helmet of an A.R.P. Personnel but he escaped uninjured.

Walls of some of the buildings were pitted with fragments of bombs as were the baffle walls on pavements. The results demonstrated that complete protection is afforded by baffle walls. In no case did fragments penetrate the walls and in every case anybody who happened to be behind such protection was completely safe. The total casualties were light, the majority of them being among the people who had not taken cover. Damage to buildings was negligible.

Explosives used as fillings for High Explosive bombs are, Gun-cotton (dry), Tri-nitro-toluene (T.N.T.), Dynamite No. 1, Amatol 80/20. A high explosive bomb has a filling of high explosives with devices for detonating the filling. The impact causes a needle to fire a cartridge cap contained in the head of a detonator, which in turn detonates another intermediary filling which initiates the detonation of the main filling.

The means of detonating the filling, or fuse may be (1) instantaneous, causing the bomb to burst on impact with the target or (2) delay, introducing a time interval between impact (which starts the fuse mechanism working) and the detonation of the bomb. This gives the bomb time to penetrate the target before bursting. The former is usually fitted to the nose of the bomb while the latter is attached to the tail. Some bombs carry both types.



The high pressure generated by the conversion of the solid explosive into gas, causes the metal case to swell until it reaches about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  times its original diameter, when it bursts into fragments or splinters. The time taken for the detonation of the main filling of a typical 500 lb. bomb may be assumed to be of the order of one ten-thousandth of a second.

On explosion, the explosive inside is suddenly converted into gas at a very high temperature and pressure. The effect is that of a sudden blow on immediate surroundings, the violence of which depends on the velocity of detonation and the pressure produced. When the bomb bursts on a flat surface the gas expands to a radius of 20 to 25 feet.

In the air which surrounds the explosion itself, is created the blast pressure. This air-borne shock wave is analogous to an ordinary sound wave except that its amplitude and velocity are higher. It is propagated by wave motion through the air without bodily movement of the air and persists for considerable distances.<sup>1</sup>

As Prof. Haldane explains, the blast of a bomb may be described as a gust of wind moving at several thousand miles an hour, but only lasting for a small fraction of a second. The hot gases from a bomb not only burst its case but push away everything in the neighbourhood, with an almost inconceivable force. The air in front of them is pushed forward at a speed of about four thousand miles an hour, twenty or more times the speed of the most rapid hurricane. A man standing within ten yards of a large bomb will be torn to pieces and the pieces thrown for hundreds of yards. A brick wall is not merely knocked down. It is shattered into a hail of projectiles which may kill people at a great distance.

At a still greater distance the blast is translated into a wave of sound, but a sound like that of the last trumpet which literally flattens out everything in front of it. "Remember the loudest thunder-clap that you have ever heard. You would not notice it in the middle of an artillery barrage. But an artillery barrage

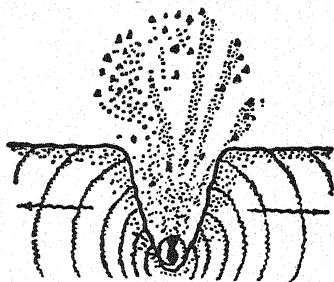
<sup>1</sup>A large proportion of Britain's air raid casualties have been victims of shock. Many have been hurt by splinters or falling masonry. To absorb shock and resist splinters, American medical authorities are devising a bomb-blast jacket of sponge rubber reinforced by thin plates of plastic material.

A well-known British Surgeon, who was in the Royal Medical Corps in the last War, has pointed out that the shell shock which soldiers experienced in the last World War "were not nearly as bad as the spasmodic bombings that occur in this war."

is nothing to the explosion of a big bomb ; and dozens may explode at once."

Apart from the shock wave, generated in the air, analogous waves are also generated in the earth or other target in or on which the bomb explodes. If the bomb penetrates to a sufficient depth in the earth, earth waves are created which may prove very dangerous at close distances.

Detonation is followed by the effects of blast, earth movement and earth waves, fragmentation, disruption and cratering. In sequence the effects of a bomb are, penetration, impact, fragmentation, rupture and cratering. Home Office authorities recognize the difficulty of accurately stating the effects of these, produced by a bomb. Artificial experiments, they rightly feel, cannot give correct results but a fair degree of reliance could be placed on proper calculation.



The effect of a high explosive bomb bursting in the ground



What the blast of a bursting bomb did to a stationary bus in a London street

When a bomb bursts the hot compressed gases escape and deliver an instantaneous but localised blow on the surrounding air, and their pressure on detonation has been variously estimated at between 100 and 650 tons per square inch. The maximum distance

of the outward movement is stated to be of the order of 25 feet when the bomb bursts on a flat surface in the open air. Experiments indicate that blast from such an explosion sends a shock wave of an initial positive pressure phase followed by a negative (suction) phase which is probably followed by a small decaying oscillation. At 50 feet from a 500-lb. bomb the maximum pressure in the wave is of the order of 6 lb./sq. inch and that the durations of the positive and negative phases are respectively, 5 milli-seconds and 25 milli-seconds.<sup>1</sup>



Effects of the positive and negative phases of blast upon the walls of a building

The total duration of the combined positive and negative phases is about  $1/30$  of a second whether the distance is 50 to 200 feet from the bomb, but the duration of the negative phase varies from three to six times that of the positive phase. The wavelength of the initial phases is about 30 feet.

The pressures in the subsequent decaying oscillation are much less than those in the initial phases, and it appears that any structural damage occasioned by the blast will be due to the initial phases.

<sup>1</sup> When a German Heinkel Mine-laying Air-craft crashed in a garden it burst into flames and exploded. A complete row of houses was demolished at Clacton-on-Sea, Essex, when this happened on the night of 30-4-40. Two civilians were killed and some 160 people injured. This severe damage was caused by the explosion of a mine carried in the air-craft.

A raider crashed with a full load of bombs in South-east London. Several buildings were demolished.

When a German plane crashed on houses on the fringe of an Essex coast town, an explosion occurred, and several houses were wrecked. Serious damage was caused to a greater part of two streets of houses and a large new block of flats was badly damaged. The whole back of one pair of houses was torn off. A house front was blown away.

Much has been written about the suction effect produced by detonating bombs for they are contrary to anticipation, since debris etc., are thrown towards the bomb site. This is due to the true

On 15-3-40, one high explosive bomb hit a dance hall in London, wrecked it, and its blast overturned a crowded bus outside, which caught fire. Several passengers were killed.

When a bomb fell in a London street, the blast blew a car into the air, over the tree-tops and through the roof of a house, where it finally came to rest on a table in a back room forty-four yards away from its original position.

One bomb demolished a row of houses in London in March 1941.

A time-bomb exploded in Regent Street during September 1940. The windows on both sides of the street were blown out.

An unidentified plane in January 1941 dropped one bomb in Donmore Avenue, South Circular Road, Dublin and destroyed two houses, seriously damaged a third and did slighter damage to other houses in the area. An official announcement stated that some 20 people were injured, but none seriously. The explosion shook a big area of the city and caused widespread alarm. The bomb blew off roofs, windows and walls and smashed panes of glass within a radius of half a mile.

A solitary plane dropped two bombs in a field near a residential quarter of a south-west England town. Several houses were damaged and there were some casualties, including a man in the field, who was killed instantly and a few people were seriously injured. A number of cattle were also killed.

People killed by blast have shown no external signs of injury; the main effects have been on the lungs, the delicate tissues of which have been shattered by the terrific impact.

Thin people appear to be more likely to suffer from bomb blast than the fat. It would seem that their extra flesh offers some protection, yet according to the experts who have studied the subject in this war, thickly-clothed persons are more liable to receive injury than the thinly-clothed. Older folk suffer less than the younger.

The subject of lung injuries resulting from the blast of explosives is one of especial importance. The Spanish War first drew the attention of Army Medical Officers to the occurrence of death at a distance from the bomb explosion. People so killed were picked up without any obvious external injury. With regard to the mechanism of the damage, three views have been suggested: (1) That the wave from the blast causes sudden alterations in the alveolar pressure by a pressure or suction effect; (2) A sudden forcible distension of the lungs is produced through inhalation of the blast; (3) The effect is transmitted by compression of the thoracic walls. The last view is held by all observers to be the true explanation. It has been pointed out that a similar phenomenon is brought about by the explosion of depth charges on those unfortunates who are swimming in the sea near the site of the explosion. This is conclusive evidence to show that the force is transmitted through the body surface and not through inhalation.

It is of interest and importance to notice that the changes found in the lungs as a result of blast do not differ in any respect from those found as a result of any ordinary street accident where sudden compression of the ribs may have occurred, and yet no obvious injury to the skin or ribs is to be seen.

suction effect of the negative component of the shock wave, that is to the wave of rarefaction following immediately on the wave of compression.

A bomb explosion particularly in a confined space such as a street or building, will always tend to give chaotic and apparently freakish effects, which are probably attributable to reflections of the pressure from a multitude of surfaces.<sup>1</sup>

In the case of bombs, penetration is not an end in itself but is primarily a means to an end, which may be destruction by explosion, or fire or the distribution of war-gas. Various formulae are met with in literature and are assembled together and the adjoining table gives the penetration into various media, based on published results, for a 500-lb. bomb of the assumed sectional density  $M/A = 5$  lb. sq. inch. Depths are given in feet, and the striking velocity is assumed to be 820 f.s.

<sup>1</sup>The phenomena of explosions is remarkable, and in fact in many cases almost inexplicable. Thus there have been cases in London of bombs falling near houses in which all the glass windows remained intact whilst the whole of the crockery, inside the house has been shattered. There were also many cases of individual houses completely blown to pieces with large bombs whilst the windows of neighbouring houses were untouched, although in many cases windows were shattered half a mile away from the explosion. It is pointed out in the Air Raid Precautions Memorandum No. 16 that there have been cases where a bomb of 100 lbs. has detonated on the corrugated iron roof of a single storey factory without causing very much damage, whilst there are other bombs which have fallen clean through the roof on to the floor of buildings and done little damage to surrounding machine tools. There are cases of heavy bombs, up to half a ton in weight, that have fallen within 30-40 feet of a workshop and done no damage except stripping off the roof. As against this, however, the extent of the damage caused is often out of all proportion to what might have been expected.

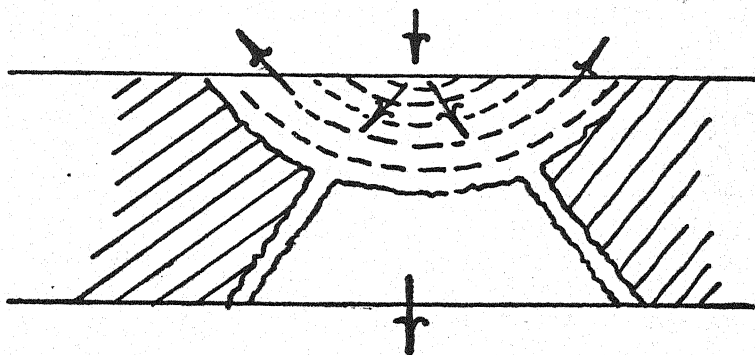
Some of the recent R.A.F. bombs possess terrible exploding capacity. "Five times the blasting effect of any bomb previously dropped by the British Air Force", is how the new type of bomb used in the British raid on Emden, the during April, 1941 is described. The new bomb is filled with an extremely effective explosive, capable of destroying buildings over a wide area. The concussion would be felt many miles away. In view of the devastating nature of these bombs, which are of very large size, it was difficult to find a sufficiently large uninhabited area in England for testing their blasting powers.

The terrific devastation these bombs can cause may be gathered from the report of the Air Ministry News Service. A huge bomb fell; there was a colossal flash and the crew of the machine saw great masses of debris flung high into the air. These were no ordinary fragments, proving that enormous destruction had been done. Moreover the debris must have been thrown to a great height as there was a distinct interval before it settled down again. It seemed as if a whole building had been thrown into the air. One pilot saw "houses take to the air".

Penetrations (in ft.) for 500-lb. bomb ;  $M/A = 5$  lb. sq. in. : S. V. = 820 f.s. Normal incidence.

Material as described by the authors	Metz Committee (Poncelet)	Petry	Vieser	Peres
Limestone .. ..	3.0	2.5	—	—
Ferro-concrete .. ..	—	2.1	1.5	1.7
Ordinary concrete .. ..	—	—	2.1	3.2
Stone masonry .. ..	—	5.4	—	—
Brick masonry .. ..	10	9.3	4.3	—
Sandy soil .. ..	20	17	10	—
Soil with vegetation .. ..	—	22	12	—
Ground of average firmness .. ..	—	—	—	17
Soft soil .. ..	—	34	19.5	—
Loose earth .. ..	25	—	—	26

Penetration depth will decrease if departure from normal incidence occurs and as the angle of impact measured from the normal to the target, increases, until at a certain angle of impact the bomb will merely ricochet without penetrating appreciably. Moreover, for angles between zero degree to the normal and the angle of ricochet, that is, for all practical impact conditions the bomb, after penetrating a certain distance into the ground, usually deviates from its course, generally in an upward direction.



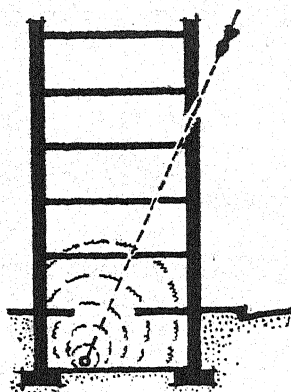
### DIAGRAMMATIC REPRESENTATION OF SCABBING

The effect on the target varies considerably with its physical properties. The path followed by a bomb when penetrating natural rock or soil is rarely a straight line from point of entry to its final position ; variation in the resistance of the soil is liable to cause the

bomb to deviate considerably from its original direction. The longer the path the greater is the tendency to deviate.

A direct hit causes scabbing. Scabbing consists in flinging off from the rear of the target, of a piece of the target opposite the part struck, and may occur whether the target is perforated or not. The scab or plug is usually of the shape shown in the above diagram.

When a typical 500-lb. medium case bomb with a delay fuse



Delayed action high explosive bomb penetrating a multi-storeyed building

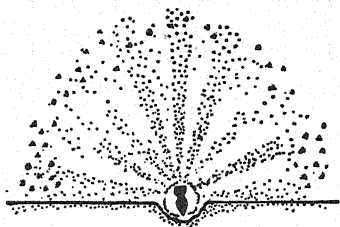
falls, at a steep angle, on a multi-storeyed building having a roof and floors of reinforced concrete each six inches thick, it can perforate the roof and five floors before exploding, provided it does not break up and is not deflected from its path by obstructions such as steel girders. The total thickness penetrated by the bomb is thus about 36 inches. But the corresponding depth of penetration into a single thick, reinforced concrete block would be less, other things being equal, because the penetration is not helped by the scabbing.

A heavy case bomb being designed for penetration prior to explosion, its capacity for penetration is comparatively definite ; but the penetration of delayed action medium case bomb into resistant material, such as concrete, or even into semi-resistant rock such as chalk, is doubtful. Not being designed specifically for penetration the case is liable to deformation on impact with resistant material to an extent which is scarcely predictable.

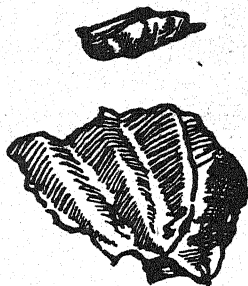
When heavy case bombs fall on soil, gravel, shingle, and chalk, they tend to diverge from their original direction after penetrating some distance, and to follow an erratic path influenced by local obstruction. Sometimes the path is a fairly uniform curve, often concave to the ground surface and turning upwards towards the last stage. If a bomb meets clay at an early stage the total penetration is increased.

A typical heavy case 500-lb. bomb falling from a considerable height could penetrate to a vertical depth of 25 feet of chalk or dry sand.  $1\frac{1}{2}$  times in loam, ordinary soil ;  $2\frac{3}{5}$  times in clay ;  $\frac{3}{5}$  times in gravel. Hence the maximum vertical penetration of a typical 500-lb. heavy case bomb in ordinary soil would be 42 feet.

Fragmentation is equally dangerous and difficult to judge. It is not easy to discover the direction, number, shape, weight and velocity of all the fragments which are shot out when the casing of the bomb bursts. The total number of fragments from any ordinary bomb runs to thousands, and although by far the greater percentage may weigh less than an ounce, they may nevertheless be lethal to human beings and animals. The number of fragments range between 2,000 and 6,000 for all sizes of bombs from 25 lb. and the average size of the fragments tends to increase with the size of the bomb.



Fragments of a bomb exploding  
on impact



Bomb fragments taken out  
from an injured person in  
Spain; actual size

The maximum velocities attained by fragments probably lie within the limits of 4,000 to 7,000 ft. per second for most bombs and are reached within less than 10 ft. from the bomb. Thereafter the fragment velocity drops owing to air resistance. At about 50 ft. from the bomb the velocities probably lie between 2,500 and 5,000 ft. per second, the higher velocities being associated with the larger bombs.

The effective range of fragments is about 500 ft. but the gross range, if the bomb is fired above ground in the open, is from 300 to 1,200 yds. depending on the kind and size of bomb, and its charge-weight percentage. If the bomb bursts below ground the gross range might be halved.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>The head of the German A.R.P. Department in the course of a two-column press statement admitting the destructive power of British bombs said that he had seen one splinter going clean through heavy doors and two thick walls.

At Cocanada a European who was not properly sheltered was hit in the stomach by a small bomb splinter, which cut through the abdominal wall and just cut his liver.



In a given bomb the fragment velocity depends on the explosive used. But the depth to which a bomb fragment can penetrate structural materials depends on the weight, size and shape of the fragment, its velocity, the angle of strike and the material attacked.

The lethal effect of fragments upon personnel has been proved in Japanese raids on Rangoon. An eyewitness to the 23rd December, 1941 raid "knew of one instance where 25 lives were lost by the splinters of one bomb alone." A very large percentage of casualties were caused by splinters. The anti-personnel bombs used by the Japanese detonated on impact and showered splinters all round. They had a very low trajectory sometimes as low as one or two inches from the ground. They inflicted terrible injuries to those in the vicinity. The majority of the injuries inflicted by these bombs in the first raid were, however, from the waist downwards, while 40 per cent. of the injuries were below the knee.

An idea of the penetrating power of fragments could be had from the following table giving the thickness of various materials, recommended for protection by the Home Office of Great Britain.

Material	Thickness
	Inches
Mild steel plate or plates of an aggregate thickness, not less than ..	1½
Solid brickwork or masonry, not less than .. .. .	13½*
Reinforced concrete, not less than .. .. .	12†
Ordinary concrete, not less than .. .. .	15‡
Earth or sand, not less than .. .. .	30
Ballast, or broken stone, not less than .. .. .	24

Cratering is another destructive consequence when the H.E. bomb bursts in the ground. The material is broken up and forms a

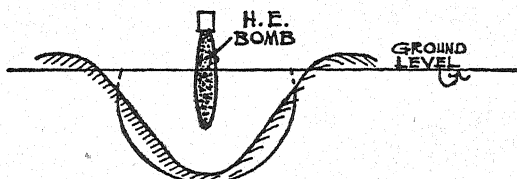
\* This thickness is suitable for sound brickwork in cement mortar, hydraulic lime mortar, or cement-lime mortar, or for coursed masonry in sound condition. For old brickwork, where the mortar is found on inspection to be weak and friable and for rubble masonry, the thickness should be increased upto double that given in the table, according to condition.

A cavity wall of brickwork with outer leaf 4½ ins., cavity 2 ins., and inner leaf 9 ins. thick offers resistance similar to that of a solid wall 13½ ins. thick.

† This thickness is suitable for concrete containing not less than 112 lb. of cement to 2½ cub. ft. of fine aggregate and 5 cub. ft. of coarse aggregate, with not less than 0.2 per cent. of reinforcement in each direction (total 0.4 per cent.) properly distributed.

‡ Ordinary concrete should contain not less than 112 lb. of cement to 12 cub. ft. of fine and coarse aggregate in combination.

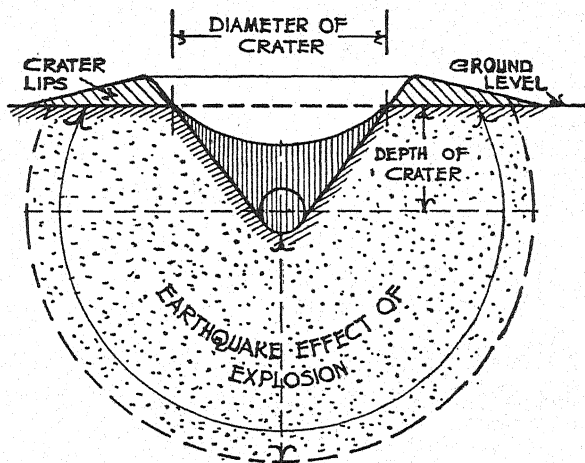
cone-shaped pit called a crater. The size of the crater formed will depend on the kind of earth, the depth to which the bomb penetrates



Formation of crater

before bursting, the weight and characteristics of the high explosive filling, and the amount of energy taken up in the bursting of the case of the bomb.<sup>1</sup>

Immediately outside the circumference of the crater are formed the crater lips and in addition, the ground near the crater will be



SHAPE OF A TYPICAL CRATER

cracked and shaken. The zone in which this happens will be bounded by a circle concentric with the crater but of larger diameter.

Everything on the site of the crater is completely wrecked.<sup>2</sup>

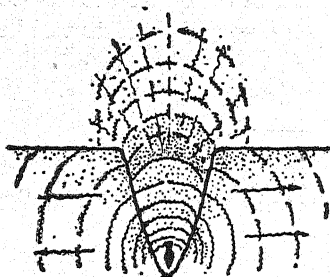
<sup>1</sup> The crater created by a high explosive bomb in the street of London was so big that a bridge had to be erected to facilitate transport.

A one-ton high explosive bomb removed from St. Paul's Cathedral compound and made to detonate produced a crater 100 ft. wide.

<sup>2</sup> Haldane, A.R.P., p. 34.

The volume of material thrown out by the explosion will approximate in shape to a blunt inverted cone with apex below the centre of the charge. The amount of earth displaced by a bomb may be considerable and American figures for 300-lb. bombs and 2,200-lb. bombs give 90 tons and 1,000 tons respectively, the bombs having about 50 per cent. charge/weight ratio.

Apart from the damage resulting from the crater formation, a bomb bursting within a solid target transmits pressures through the target in the form of waves, with or without translational movement of the material of the target.<sup>1</sup> The physical movement of the earth and pressure waves may damage



Pressure waves created when the high explosive bomb explodes within the target

underground structures and services such as water and gas mains, sewers, electric power and telephone cables. Reports from war areas state that medium case bombs penetrate roadways to a depth of about 2 ft. and their effect on the road was greater than that of similar bombs bursting on contact.

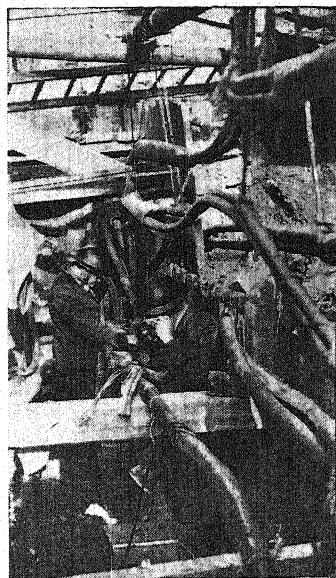
A trial experiment conducted by the Home Office showed the great potential danger to underground services by bombs; water and gas mains, and telephone cables, were severely damaged and shattered. A deep underground sewer escaped but with a heavier bomb it would have been destroyed. Another experiment made showed that when a heavy case bomb was detonated with the nose buried 2 ft. down in a slab of reinforced concrete 15 ft. by 20 ft. and 3 ft. thick, the concrete was completely disintegrated over a diameter of about 12 ft. and the slab was split open. Another trial

<sup>1</sup> The explosive force of air-craft bombs would become apparent when we realise that when the R.A.F. dropped the bombs on targets in the French Coast during May 1942 towns on the English side of the Straits of Dover were racked. Doors and windows of houses rattled and many a treasured family ornament was shaken from its shelf by the explosion of Britain's new and powerful bombs.

showed that 15 ft. of first-class rock above an unlined underground chamber with a cross section of 4 ft. by 2 ft. 6 ins. would give full structural protection against a heavy case bomb weighing about 250 lb. while against a similar bomb of about 500 lb. about 20 ft. rock cover would be required,

In aerial bombing there is danger not merely to the roof but to walls and sides of buildings. For the angle of approach of the bomb when it hits the target is between 15 to 35 degrees from the vertical.

The approximate striking velocity and the angle of arrival for a bomb released from an air-craft flying horizontally at 200 miles an hour is given below.



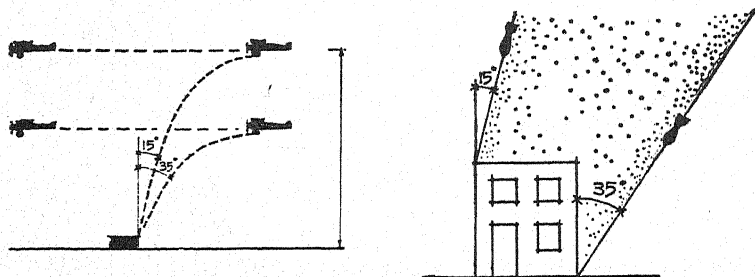
A crater created by a H. E. bomb in London showing the damaged underground telephone cables

Height of Release	Angle of Impact	Striking Velocity
Feet	Degrees	Feet per second
1,000	46	390
3,000	33	520
5,000	26	610
7,500	22	710
10,000	19	800
12,500	17.5	880
15,000	16	950

Recent happenings have shown that these capacities attributed to the high explosive bomb are true. Contrary to expectations they have been showered over cities regardless of cost. The R.A.F. during one raid poured hundreds of tons over Kiel and the Nazis over two hundred tons over London during one raid.

M 2493

British bombs "big, beautiful" according to Beaverbrook, have shown themselves to possess more terrific explosive power than those of the Germans. 4,000 and 8,000-pound bombs are also used.



The angle of impact of high explosive bomb

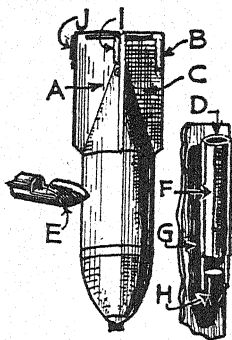
Increasing use is being made now of 4,000 and 8,000-pound bombs. Large numbers are released by the R.A.F. bombers over targets in Europe. Their devastating effect is attested to by eyewitnesses. According to information from Germany reaching Free French Quarters in Britain, a traveller, who arrived from Hamburg described the destruction caused by single 4,000-pound bomb which literally blasted an entire block of important buildings including the observatory and barracks. These have, therefore, come to be known as "block bombs". Time-bombs have been utilised by the Nazis over London. The screaming device has been resorted to by Germans to terrorise the people.

The ear-drums of the public, which have had such a strain put upon them by the sound of bombs and guns, are to be protected by ear plugs like the following issued freely by the Government. Several million pairs were issued through local authorities.

One-ton bombs have penetrated over 20 ft. into earth and craters hundred feet wide have been created when such bombs were detonated artificially.

The explosion of high explosive bombs have proved disastrous to objects closeby. Several houses in streets have been demolished by the explosion of a single bomb. The windows in rows of houses have been shattered by blast of a single explosion. The terrific effect of a nearby blast has been demonstrated in the streets of

London where omnibuses and trams have been blown away several yards and some times over the roofs of distant houses.



Screaming device attached  
to H. E. bombs



Ear plug used in Britain to protect the  
ear-drum from destruction by the noise  
of bomb explosion

The earthquake effect or vibration created by the explosion of bombs which penetrate into the ground has also been demonstrated. The Southwark Cathedral was cracked by bomb explosion, underground.

During a raid a bomb buried itself in the ground just outside the Lady Chapel. This at first was believed to be a delayed action bomb; but it was found that it had burst underground. It was not till recently that cracks were noticed in the east wall of the cathedral, no doubt as a consequence of the underground explosion. This injury to the fabric, it is believed, might well prove to be more serious than that caused in later attacks. An idea of its terrific effect would become apparent when we learn that houses on the Kent coast have been shaken by the heavy explosion caused when the R.A.F. delivered its big attacks on German invasion bases.

High Explosives, although dangerous are not so very dreadful as the Land Mine which is also an explosive type of bomb but of a very highly destructive nature and of larger size. The mines are somewhat square or rectangular in shape and come down slowly by a small silk parachuté with a very fine silken cord. The size

can be anything from 2' 6" by 1' 6" upwards. They look more or less like packing cases which explode on striking a surface. Although they are deadly, they can be easily rendered harmless by our guns which blow them up in the air before they have any chance to fall and cause destruction. The effect of a land mine, if you are unlucky to catch one, is simply deadly and frightening. A medium size land mine's effect can be felt anywhere within an area of 2 or 3 sq. miles.



The famous Carlton Hotel, London, which received a direct hit from a H. E. bomb

Bombs which explode in mid-air and suitable for flying air-craft or floating targets have been invented by the Japanese who have used this kind of bomb over Rabaul and Lae, against Allied formations, in the latter part of 1942.<sup>1</sup> This bomb described by Allied pilots as "something entirely new in aerial warfare", is pear-shaped or cone-shaped and is used as an offensive weapon against enemy air-craft. Zero fighters carrying these bombs waited until Allied bombers completed their operations and regained the formation. The Zeros climbed over a thousand feet over the formation and got some distance ahead releasing below the new type of bomb. They fell vertically and burst in the air with considerable violence sending out a pear-shaped shower of shrapnel and a tongue of bluish white smoke.

<sup>1</sup> The Japanese raiding Milne Bay and Port Moresby in April 1942 used bombs upto 250 pounds timed to explode a 100 feet above the earth. In May 1943 the Allies returned the compliment with similar bombs but weighing up to 2000 pounds, the concussion of which, bursting 50 to 300 feet over the ground, killed through the blast alone while the hail of fragments neutralises the relative safety of slit trenches. (*The Hindu*, 4-6-43.)

### Incendiary Bomb<sup>1</sup>

To set fire to a city and destroy it is easier and cheaper. Incendiary bombs are used for this purpose. They burn with intense heat and spread an effective fire and so many fires are started as to make the task of dealing with them by the fire brigades impracticable. A large bomber can carry between 1,000 to 2,000 small incendiary bombs which, if scattered over built-up areas, and not dealt with within two or three minutes after falling, might start so many fires that no fire fighting organisation could be expected to deal with them all. The water-mains may be damaged or drained dry for fire fighting elsewhere, with the result that there might not be enough water nearby for a fire engine to use ; or again, roads might be damaged by high explosive bombs and so prevent a fire engine from reaching the site of the fire. It should be remembered



What a German fire raid did for the Paternoster Square in London

that sufficient appliances may not be available to deal with the fires caused by incendiary bombs ; and as each fire left unattended in a building is a potential " burn out " of that and possibly neighbouring buildings, it is obvious that this weapon will prove most disastrous to property.

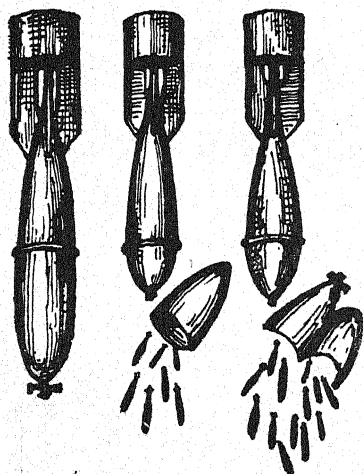
There are several types and sizes of incendiary bombs. The well-known is the Light Magnesium (Electron) bomb weighing 1 kilo.

<sup>1</sup> The following account is based on A.R.P.H.9 "Incendiary Bombs and Fire Precautions" and reports of raids.



Two, twelve and twenty-five kilo bombs are known but are likely to be aimed at special targets. It is, however, considered possible that 2-kilo bombs might be used in indiscriminate bombing.

Multiple effect bombs have been designed for use against store yards, large factory buildings and ammunition dumps, etc. They contain a number of separate incendiary units of magnesium or phosphorus which are expelled from the bomb and scattered over a wide area. The incendiary units are small and have little penetrating power but the main bomb weighs over 12 kilos and its steel nose can perforate strong roofs. Magnesium could be dealt with as in the case of the 1-kilo bomb but phosphorus is more



Molotov's bread basket. The Nazis have used this over England recently. It is about eight feet long and three feet in diameter. Many incendiary bombs are packed in a hollow cylinder which detaches midway and scatters them over the target<sup>1</sup>

difficult to deal, for it re-ignites after drying, when extinguished with sand or water. Until all the material is removed, the surrounding must be kept wet and the process of removing it may poison and burn the skin if it comes in contact with it. Thermitic bombs in which the entire incendiary charge consisted of the material, were used in the last war. Though its heat is intense it burns rapidly and incendiary effect is smaller than that of magnesium.

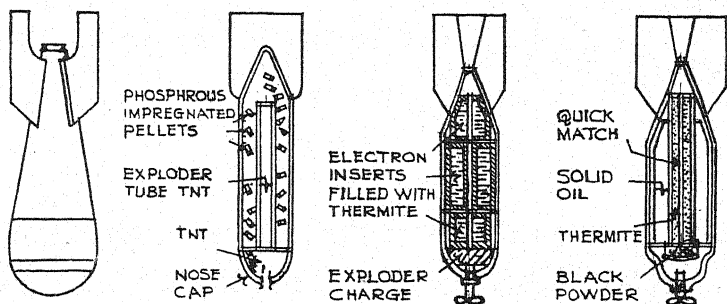
Petrol bombs are not considered likely because the 5 and 10-kilo types used in the Great War were not found very effective. Sodium and Sodium potassium alloys are difficult to deal with water, but can be easily extinguished by dry sand, and are poor incendiary agents. They are also not considered likely.

<sup>1</sup>A new type of "bread basket" with small high explosive instead of incendiary bombs is believed to have been dropped by a German raider in one of the outlying London areas during one night. The residents reported that sixteen bombs exploded in less than a minute.

The German variety dropped over England is a collection of three layers of bombs, viz., flares in the first row, incendiaries in the second row and small high explosives in the third layer. The basket is dropped with a parachute and the flares light up midway. The action of the incendiaries is delayed until they strike the surface when they set fire to the target, after which the third layer of explosives do their job.

Incendiary bombs weighing about 40 lbs. have been used by the Japanese over Burma. They explode on impact, scattering around a number of pencil-shaped incendiaries  $\frac{1}{4}$  to 6 inches long. Every one of them is capable of setting effective fire. Another type contains round black rubber balls which roll away into different parts of a building when the bomb bursts. They smoulder and set fire to inflammable material in contact with them. These balls cannot be extinguished by water; they can be temporarily smothered by it, but when they become dry, they smoulder again. This is a dangerous type; for, until they are searched and removed from a building, the risk of fire is not eliminated. They can, however, be smothered with sand and removed by shovel and allowed to burn harmlessly.

Solid oil incendiary bombs weighing 132 lbs. have been used by Germans over England. The solid oil incendiary bomb has a filling of solidified inflammable oil surrounding a central ignition and exploder tube of thermite. There is a propelling charge located in the nose of the bomb which is ignited by the nose or fuse.



Japanese and German types of Incendiary Bombs

When a bomb falls, the fuse ignites the exploder charge which ejects the inner case containing the oil. At the same time, the fuse ignites the thermite in the exploder tube. The thermite in turn melts and ignites the oil which is scattered.

A new type of phosphorous fire bomb and explosive incendiaries were dropped on an East Anglian town, described by Germans as Cambridge, early in August 1942. Few fires were started owing to the timely advice on how to deal with the phosphorous type of fire bombs, issued by the Ministry of Home Security.

A combination of the high explosive and incendiary bombs has been made in Russia. This weapon was used over Finland with deadly effect. A large high explosive bomb halfway down to the target breaks and releases a number of incendiary bombs which scatter all round. The high explosive bomb contained in the other half of the missile hits the target and explodes.

A new type of incendiary bomb has been used by the R.A.F. (this new bomb is more effective than the present fire bomb). It is cubical in shape and contains phosphorus and is more difficult to extinguish than the ordinary incendiaries. Much work has been put in on the incendiary bomb and the R.A.F. are using a bigger type than the standard German incendiary used over Britain.

A new type of bomb which bursts in the air with huge flames has been used by the Japanese in their raids over Corrigidor in April 1942. The missile bursts in the air emitting huge flames and is most likely to be some type of incendiary designed to burst over an inflammable target and throw the flames on to it. It was tried out on Corrigidor perhaps for the purpose of deciding its range and fixing the detonations.

New types of incendiary bombs have been used by the Germans in their most recent bombing raids on England. The basic incendiary material has been supplemented by a charge of from two to twelve pounds of high explosive per bomb. A half pound of TNT in a grenade, tossed into a machine-gun nest, can end the careers of a whole squad of soldiers and leave the gun itself a total wreck. Two pounds of TNT tied to a steel railroad rail, will effectively cut the rail in two. Six pounds of TNT, tied around the bole of a hardwood tree, one foot in diameter, will cut the tree down instantly. Twelve pounds of TNT applied to an 18-inch steel bridge girder will cut the girder as a knife cuts cheese. And there are from two to twelve pounds of TNT in the new incendiary bombs. "Imagine," comments Colonel R. E. W. Fairweather of London's Civil Defence Service, "what would happen to the fellow who tried to handle one of these new bombs on a long-handled shovel, or with a hose from behind the shelter of an ashcan top. Likely neither fellow nor shovel would ever be seen again."

The use of a more powerful explosive charge and a time fuse which may detonate the bomb at any time up to seven minutes after it lands, indicates the danger of dunking or any method requiring

close approach to these explosive bombs. It would be difficult for civilians to distinguish between the small bomb with this explosive attachment and the plain magnesium incendiary bomb. There is still a good deal of difference of opinion as to the best way to teach the public to handle the new charged incendiary. Methods have been definitely agreed on by various OCD officials and some of those suggested, such as taking refuge behind a stack of not less than ten sandbags to fight such bombs, are hardly practicable on a house to house scale.

Operations Letter No. 80 of the O. C. D., Washington gives the following details of the new types of enemy incendiary and anti-personnel bombs:—

1. The usual 2.2-pound fire bomb, with an extension of the nose containing a larger explosive charge. The total weight is increased to 5 pounds. The bomb is 17 inches long without its tail or about 21 inches long overall. The incendiary section of the bomb ignites upon landing, but the explosive charge may go off at any time up to 7 minutes later. It would be possible to increase this lapse of time without major alteration of design so that there can be little dependence upon the present time interval. The explosive part may become detached but this does not lessen its effectiveness. This type of bomb has been employed by the Germans.

2. A combination of incendiary and high explosive bomb, in a casing, the same size and shape as the 110-pound high explosive bomb (about 30 inches long and 8 inches in diameter). On impact it throws out 60 small metal containers with thermite-type filling and 6 larger tumbler-shaped fire pots containing a magnesium type filling which is pre-ignited. Almost immediately after ejecting the incendiary units, a 12-pound charge of TNT. in the nose of the bomb explodes.

3. A phosphorous-oil bomb in a casing similar to that of the 110-pound high explosive bomb, but containing only the usual type of fuse to split the casing open on impact and scatter its sticky liquid contents. The contents ignite spontaneously because of the phosphorus. The phosphorus may be extinguished by water but will break into fire again if allowed to become dry.

4. A Japanese bomb weighing about 110 pounds and containing besides a quantity of thermite, a considerable number of rectangular-shaped rubber-impregnated incendiary pellets which scatter

widely and start a substantial number of small fires which may be attacked immediately.

The bombs without heavy explosive charges or those which explode upon impact, present only the problem of dealing with fire and thus require no additional instructions. The small fire bomb with delayed-action explosive charge requires a revision of instructions concerning the types of cover that provide full protection from the blast. A brick-wall  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inches thick is considered full protection against the explosive charge now being used with a time fuse in small magnesium bombs. In walls built of outside bricks of the best quality, a 3-inch thickness will prevent penetration. Lath and plaster walls, wooden doors, tables or chairs do not offer full protection from the explosion of this charge. Personal risk may be greatly reduced by assuming a crouching or prone position behind the best available cover.

Where fires are likely to spread rapidly—as in congested districts and where there is relatively little fire-proof construction—even bombs which may explode should be attacked promptly from behind the best available cover. Care should be exercised to expose not more than one hand while playing a stream of water on the area surrounding unexploded bombs, but this risk is considered necessary where unchecked fires might start a conflagration. Water may be thrown from a small (or 1 pint) container, dipping from a larger container if a pump has not arrived. Although less efficient than a jet of water, this method may permit the wetting of inflammable material within range of the bomb. Water should be thrown from a crouching position from the cover of a solid wall, as in other methods. In this case, the water need not be thrown on the bomb itself.

Use of a jet of water enables the operator to work at a much greater distance than the "short-range" methods of employing sand, or other smothering agents or a spray of water. Sand in the form of bags or mats cannot be depended upon, because these bombs upon explosion, have a greater fragmentation effect than the explosive incendiary bombs formerly used. The public should be warned against the use of all such smothering agents as "bomb extinguishing" powders; also against such devices as scoops, grabs and snuffers. They are entirely without merit and may endanger the lives of persons who depend upon them. The use of

spray and sand is no longer recommended because the possibility of fragmentation makes it too dangerous to approach the bomb sufficiently close to apply them.<sup>1</sup>

Latterly the Germans resorted to a more powerful type of explosive incendiary bomb. This explosive type<sup>2</sup> differs from the ordinary explosive fire bomb chiefly in the following ways :

The danger from flying fragments is greater since it contains more explosives. Since this is contained in an extension to the nose of the bomb, this may break off and fall away from the bomb and explode. Otherwise the explosion may take place after the magnesium starts burning fiercely. Finally its capacity for penetration into material and buildings is greater. Owing to increased weight, explosive fire bombs penetrate further than kilo-magnesium bombs. Except where a building has an exceptionally strong roof these explosive fire bombs usually penetrate the roof and one or more storeys. Bombs lodging in the roof will usually be of the familiar kilo-magnesium variety. Should they fall on two-storey houses, they may reach the ground floor.

The Ministry of Home Security, therefore, instruct that these bombs should be attacked from behind cover and have revised their instructions for dealing with incendiary bombs.

Bombs falling in places where they may start a fire must be attacked resolutely but Fire Guards should make the utmost use of cover.

The use of cover is also recommended when attacking bombs. Where there is a stirrup pump, No. 1 of the Team should attack the fire with the jet from behind the best available cover. The other members of the Team should also take the best available cover. Cover must be substantial, if possible, a brick wall 4½ inches is sufficient.

Where there is no stirrup pump handy or where the householder has to act alone, he should throw water through the door, in the direction of the bomb. He must take cover just as if he was using a stirrup pump. The water should be thrown from a pint pot or tin-can filled from a bucket of water. After seven minutes when the

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Civilian Defence, Dec. 1942, p. 89.

<sup>2</sup> For description and illustration, *vide* "Safety News", Dec. 1942, p. 387.

bomb has exploded he should enter the room and extinguish any remaining fire.

Where an incendiary penetrates to the ground floor, it will often be safer for the Fire Guards to attack it through the window from the outside in order to get the cover of the wall of the house. Wherever possible, No. 1 should operate the jet in the prone position in order to reduce the risk of being hit by fragments.

*On no account should sand mats be put on the bombs.*

Lath and plaster walls, wooden doors or shields made of table tops, etc., afford no protection from the larger splinters.

Bombs falling where they will do no harm should be left to burn themselves out.

Fire guards should keep away from such bombs. On no account should fire guards try to put sand mats on them.

When a fire guard has to pass a bomb burning in the open, he should do so at the double, taking the best cover available.

The fire, not the bomb, should first be attacked by the stirrup pump team.

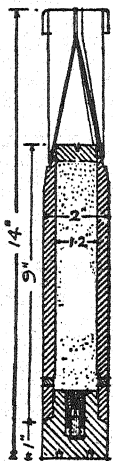
Bombs lodging in roofs: except where a building has an exceptionally strong roof, the explosive bombs lodging in the roof will usually be the old kind.

Since the main objective of an attack by incendiary bomb is the starting of more fires than can be dealt with by the available fire brigade services, authorities are certain that the 1-kilo magnesium electron bomb will be largely used.<sup>1</sup> It consists of a thick-walled tube 9 in. long and 2 in. in diameter, made of an alloy of magnesium with a small proportion of aluminium. On one end of this tube there is a tail 5 in. long to steady the bomb in flight. The tube is filled with a priming composition, of the thermite type. The bomb is fitted with an igniter which may be situated either in the nose or in the rear end of the tube.

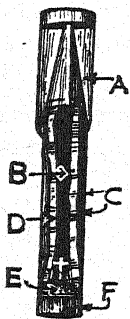
<sup>1</sup> 1-Kilo incendiary bombs are showered in thousands. In the brutal attack on Coventry hundreds of tons of incendiary bombs were showered indiscriminately. When Plymouth was blasted an incredible number of incendiaries were dropped at the start. There must have been many thousands, for it is said that they came down like hailstorm. It is estimated that within the first quarter of an hour 10,000 incendiaries were dropped. The R.A.F. dropped 20,000 incendiaries over the port of Bremen one night.

Some German incendiary bombs "shoot about like jumping crackers". Nazi pilots have also released oil bombs.

The bomb weighs about 2 lb. 2 oz. and with the exception of a few ounces in the tail and igniter, there is no dead weight, the whole being incendiary material. The bomb functions on impact. It does not explode but burns fiercely, the priming composition for 40/50 seconds at a temperature of 2,500 degrees centigrade. This ignites the magnesium tube and the molten magnesium burns for 10 to 15 minutes at a temperature of about 1,300 degrees centigrade and will set fire to anything inflammable within a few feet.<sup>1</sup>



Typical Kilo  
Magnesium  
(Electron)  
Incendiary  
Bomb



Pieces of molten magnesium may be thrown as far as even 50 feet during the first minute when the priming composition burns violently. The thermite composition contains its own oxygen, and cannot be extinguished by smothering while the magnesium depends for its oxygen, upon the air or surrounding materials, in order to burn. One large bomber could carry between 1,000 and 2,000 of these very light bombs, which would probably be dropped from a considerable height, so as to increase their velocity. They would not be dropped singly but would be released from containers each holding 10 or 20 bombs. Several may be released simultaneously. The bomb has very poor ballistics and cannot be aimed accurately. They spread out as they fall, and a group of bombs dropped simultaneously from 5,000 ft. would cover an area of about 100 yds. square.

Unlike the high explosive, incendiary bombs will not strike the target at an angle. Owing to air resistance they come down perpendicularly and hit the roofs of buildings.<sup>2</sup> Bombs dropped from a height of about 15,000 ft. would hit the target at a velocity of 400 ft. per second if it is of the 1-kilo variety. An idea of the penetrative capacity of incendiary bombs of various

<sup>1</sup> Incendiary bombs are also fitted with a new terror device that shoots about and spreads the fire. They were used during the aerial bombardment of Brussels in May 1940.

<sup>2</sup> Vide Felix Samuely. "Protective measures against Incendiary Bombs." The "Builder", Dec. 1, 1939, pp. 755-757.



weights can be had from the following table giving the minimum thickness required for protection against penetration by impact.

Bomb			Reinforced concrete	Sand*	Earth*	Shingle*	Mild steel plate
1	Kilo	..	3½"—4"	6"	6"	6"	¼"
2	"	..	5"—6"	3' 6"	5'	—	⅜"
5½	"	..	—	4' 9"	7'	—	—
10	"	..	—	6'	9'	—	1"

\*Approximate. 1 Kilo=2½ lbs.

The incidence of fires depends upon the speed at which the bomber is flying, the quickness at which the bombs are released and the height from which they are dropped. For instance, flying in a straight line, at 200 m.p.h. at a height of 5,000 ft. or over, and releasing 20 bombs per second, the bomber would drop its 1,000 bombs in a little under 3 miles and would start one fire every 60 or 70 yds. The number of fires would be very large since attacks would be made by formations. Assuming that the built-up area is about 15 per cent. of the open space, as is the case in Great Britain, one out of every 6 bombs dropped might hit a building and the others might fall in gardens, streets, yards, etc. A bomber carrying 1,000 bombs can secure 166 hits. Half of them might either glance off sloping roof, and not penetrate or penetrating might fail to function. The remaining 83, that is approximately 8 per cent. of the bombs dropped, would probably cause fires. Assuming the bomber flies in a straight line as noted above there might be one fire for every 60 or 70 yards.

In the absence of persons to deal with them immediately and effectively the fire brigades cannot cope with them. It will penetrate any ordinary roof (including tiles, slates, corrugated iron, and patent roofing materials, even though on close wood backing). But as it is not designed for great penetration it is likely to remain in an upper storey, and start a roof fire which is probably more difficult to deal with, than one on lower floor, since attics and roof spaces are usually less accessible and not so easy to move about in.

Molten magnesium may run through the cracks in the boarded flooring if any, immediately below the roof. The bomb will burn through into the ceiling below and roof timbers 2 or 3 feet above

the bomb, may also easily catch fire by its radiated heat. Floor boards 7/8 inch thick, may be burnt through in four or five minutes and lead would be melted almost at once. Corrugated iron (20 gauge) is proof against burning, but if during the burning of the composition a vent-hole of the bomb is against the sheet, the blow pipe effect may cause a hole. Also the sheet will get red hot and if in contact with the floor boards may set them on fire.

It is difficult to deal with this bomb. Sand does not extinguish the bomb, but by cutting off the supply of free air would cause the bomb to burn less fiercely and the glare and radiated heat are reduced. But the metal would still be burning underneath the sand and, if left, may burn through floor boards in a few minutes.

Pouring water from a bucket or can, does not help. In fact it is dangerous and should in no circumstances be attempted because the effect is not to extinguish the burning magnesium, but to cause an accelerated combustion, so that the magnesium, instead of burning in the ordinary way by combining with the oxygen from the air, obtains an increased supply of oxygen from the water. The hydrogen of the water is set free, and burns in the air.

But if a jet of water is turned on to the bomb, the effect will be to scatter the burning magnesium, a piece of which might hit the operator. The intense heat when the thermite burns makes it difficult to approach the bomb and it is advised that we must be not less than twelve feet away to minimise the risk to person while using the spray pump recommended to bring down the effect of the bomb and to avoid scattering and help the magnesium to be consumed in one or two minutes.

To prevent conflagration, the situation should be tackled as soon as possible, after the bomb has functioned. To deal with a bomb three people may be required; "one to take the nozzle, the two others to work the pump and keep up the water-supply; but two persons can manage quite well and even one might be successful if the situation were tackled very promptly."

For every bomber carrying 1,000 bombs it may require  $83 \times 3$  or 249 persons and for a squad of 20 such bombers we may perhaps require about 5,000 persons! If there is mass attack with incendiary bombs a large proportion of the city population would be needed to deal with them and they must be in their homes and not in shelters fearing the high explosive!

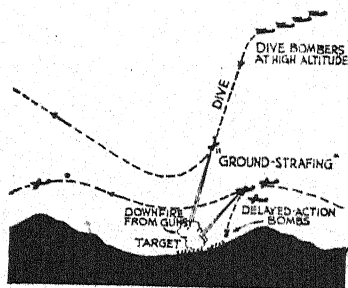
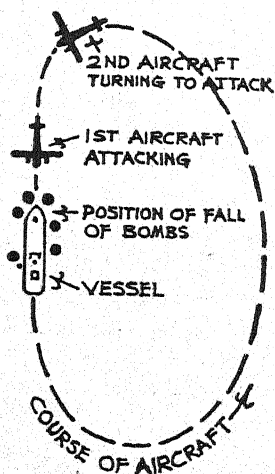
Half-kilo bombs are also considered likely for they are as good incendiary agents as the kilo variety and since the bombers can carry double the number, the spread of conflagration will be quicker and more serious. In fact this is even believed to be the secret weapon which Hitler announced to the world.

To congested cities incendiary bomb attack is extremely dangerous and towns in the tropics are particularly vulnerable. If broadcast over a city after driving the people into shelters by high explosives the consequences will be disastrous.

### Machine-Gun

Machine-guns are fixed to bombers and fighters and are used to harass the enemy. Defenceless people on land and sea, moving vehicles and trains, and even buildings and structures are machine-gunned. Russian bombers machine-gunned peasants and farm

#### METHOD OF ATTACKING VESSELS



Dive bombing

servants in the villages of Finland, and in many cities 'the raiders machine-gunned the civilians.' Solitary pedestrians and vehicles on roads were machine-gunned. Moving trains laden with passengers have been mercilessly machine-gunned in Poland and China. Nazi pilots have machine-gunned pedestrians in the streets of London, and Japanese, the people of Malaya and Burma.

Machine-gunning of trawlers and fisher folk in the North Sea by Nazi raiders was almost a daily occurrence. Harrowing tales have been recounted by lucky folk who escaped machine-gunning. The planes swoop down from the clouds and machine-gun the deck and the crew. In one of the most murderous attacks ever made (over a Trinity House vessel), the German planes intermittently machine-gunned the deck for half an hour injuring 32 men, some seriously and one fatally. Women and children were machine-gunned in the streets of London.

Children going to school in English Coastal towns have been machine-gunned, as also village schools. While firemen and A.R.P. workers are busy at their work after a raid, Nazi pilots have swooped low out of the sky and raked the area with their machine-guns.

Standing trains in London stations have been thus attacked. Once when a raider swooped down and machine-gunned a train, some of the bullets smashed through the roof but there were few people in the train and nobody was hurt. A running passenger train was once thus attacked. Passengers clearly heard the bullets striking the roofs of the carriages; the train proceeded to a suitable spot and the occupants took cover.

German raiders have also machine-gunned lighthouses, the bullets rattling on the domes and smashing the glasses.

In one of their biggest efforts for two years during the close of October 1942, the German raiders in a lightning attack used cloud cover to sweep in over the British coast and then swooped low over the countryside. As they came down their guns blazed. According to a resident in the main attack town, the raiders came in very low under the clouds. They bombed the working class area. Then they machine-gunned a street of shops. It was also terribly sudden. They chose a time when the streets would be full of shoppers.

Hurricane fighters have made low-level cannon and machine-gun attack on aerodromes, gun sites, buildings and parked air-craft in Burma. A formation of Blenheims bombed two satellite aerodromes at Akyab. Fighters have also sank small Japanese steamers with cannon fire.

The Japanese seem to have specialised in machine-gunning people. In the very first attack on Ceylon on Easter Sunday morning 1942, low-flying machine-gun attacks were made on Colombo

harbour and the Ratmalana area. The Japanese viciously machine-gunned refugees on their way to Corrigidor in the beginning of April, 1942.

The Japs extensively resort to this weapon in aerial attacks. They have machine-gunned people and planes below, combining this along with high explosive bombing. They dive-bomb and machine-gun simultaneously. The ground staff was machine-gunned at Port Blair in the first raid and in the second, various places were machine-gunned. Civilians were machine-gunned in the first raid on the city of Batavia as well as in the subsequent raids. In their raid on Bandoeing in Java during the close of February 1942, three waves of bombers in formation circled the city, came lower and sprayed odd sections of the town with machine-



Loading bullets into Machine-guns of Fighter-aircraft

gun bullets from their tails. According to *Reuter's* special correspondent "the bullets were of half-inch bore and weighed about a quarter of a pound each". Some crashed through the roof of the

building in which he was trying to type this news. Ricochetting around the walls and the stone flooring they spent themselves harmlessly. The casualties were slight because the civilian population took cover.

In the first air *blitz* on Australia on Port Darwin in the middle of February 1942, the Japanese planes swept over Darwin in seven or eight waves consisting of 9 machines each keeping perfect formation, giving the town only 2 minutes' warning before the first bomb fell. Waves arrived at intervals of 3 minutes dropping their bombs and immediately making off. Diving to within 800 or 900 feet the big bombers probably dropped 500-pound bombs. These were followed by dive-bombers which dived to within 100 feet of the ground bombing and machine-gunning. In another raid civilian hospitals were bombed and machine-gunned.

As pointed out by Prof. Haldane even in 1938, "the light fighting aeroplanes, which can manœuvre more quickly than the heavier bombers are particularly suited for killing people on the ground in this way".

To a vast country with poor defences and unarmed people this method would prove very effective to break the morale of the nation. It is less expensive, but at the same time equally frightful.

### Aerial Torpedo

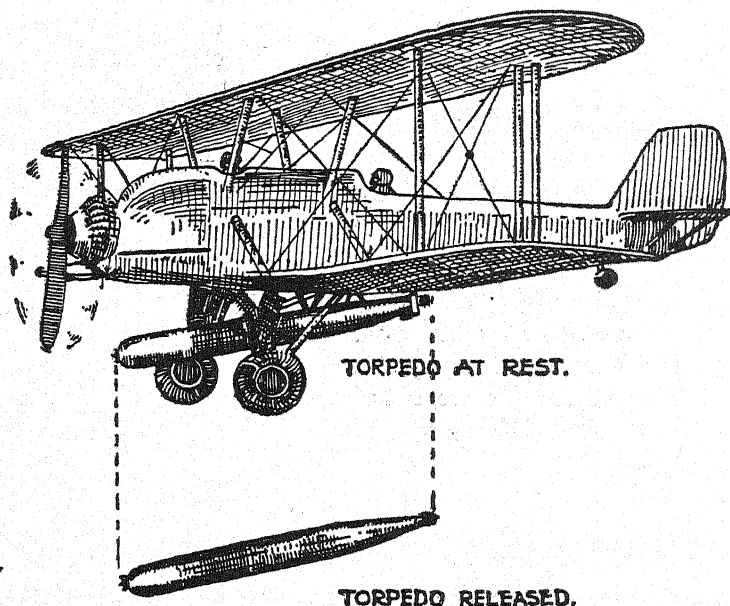
Torpedo attacks are also made from the air, by a special type of torpedo carrying air-craft. The torpedo, similar to that used by submarines and surface craft but of a smaller (18-inch) type, is slung beneath the fuselage of the air-craft, with the nose between the landing wheels. Approaching the ship at a great height to avoid detection, the torpedo bomber dives and throws his torpedo into the sea from a height of less than 100 feet, and within a thousand yards of the enemy ship. As the torpedo is released, a trigger starts the motor that drives it.

The torpedo is more deadly than the bomb. British naval planes had sunk four Italian warships with three torpedoes in a certain roadstead. The attack was carried out in daylight and there were no British casualties.

Taking off from aircraft-carriers, the planes of the Fleet Air Arm carrying torpedoes and bombs, were sent into closely protected harbour at Taranto. There in the face of anti-aircraft fire and

barrages from the Italian warships themselves, the British planes dive-bombed flying as low as 200 feet to launch their torpedoes in water. Only once before has a battleship been torpedoed from air.

Torpedoes were chiefly used hitting the Italian warships at Taranto, below the thinly-protected waterlines. The bombers swooped down, pulling straight at 50 to 100 feet over the water as they released the torpedoes towards the darkened sides of the battleships and cruisers.



Aerial Torpedo

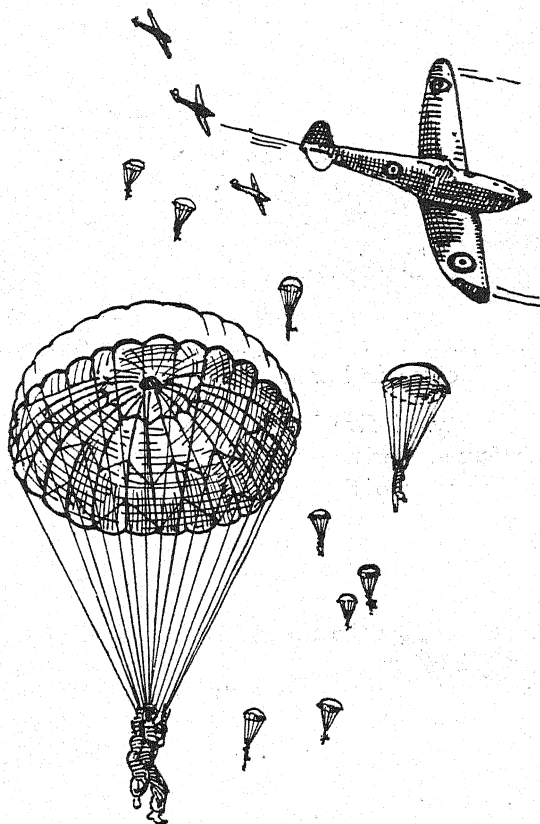
The aircraft-carriers, *Eagle* and *Illustrious*, stole under cover of darkness almost to the mouth of the Gulf of Taranto. The torpedo-bombing air-craft were hauled up to the flight deck. Attack was delivered by as many planes as could possibly concentrate on the target at one time.

All but two of the attackers made a happy landing on the mother-ships in the first major aerial torpedo attack in this war.

It is true that none of the Italian ships is reported to be sunk but the damage done has been considerable.

Many successful torpedo attacks have been made on enemy supply shipping by air-craft of the R. A. F. Coastal Command.

The aerial torpedo has proved a powerful weapon at the hands of the bomber and proved to be the death-knell of battleships. On the very first day of the Pacific war, the *Arizona* went down in



Method of dropping parachute flares and troops from a plane

Pearl Harbour, because the Japanese airmen successfully directed a bomb down the funnel. The same fate happened to the *Prince of Wales* and *Repulse*. The British showed at Taranto that aerial torpedoes well fired at unprotected battleships would be deadly. American bombers have similarly knocked out the *Haruna*. A six-inch cruiser of the *Attendolo* class in the Naples harbour



was damaged by torpedoes by American Liberator bombers on Dec. 4-5, 1942, which did heavy damage to harbour installations. The 35,000-ton battleship *Impero* was damaged when the R.A.F. attacked Geneva on the night of Nov. 13-14, 1942.

The first air raid on Colombo and the sinking of the Aircraft-carrier *Hermes* and the cruisers *Dorsetshire* and *Cornwall* have demonstrated that aircraft-carriers also carry dive-bombers. The accuracy with which they reach the target was remarkable. The Japanese planes made a non-stop air attack and sank the *Hermes*. They flew at a terrific height. *Hermes's* anti-aircraft guns and pom-poms opened fire. The barrage was intense. "Still it did not stop the Japanese pilots coming through the curtain of shell to dive-bomb and machine-gun..... They also dropped a stick of bombs. They made off and soon a much heavier attack followed. Flying in formation of six or three, many planes came over. Their bombing was pretty deadly, good enough for the *Hermes* to sustain several hits. Wave after wave of them came over. Some of the Japanese planes came in low despite anti-aircraft fire."

The possibility of dive bombing from carrier-borne air-craft gives the air force superiority in bomber *versus* battleships. This further makes any part of the world vulnerable to accurate bombing by dive bombers. Colombo in its first air raid during April 1942, suffered dive bombing and low-flying machine-gunning attacks.

Sometimes aerial torpedoes are released over land targets and great havoc results from the explosion; for instance during August 1940 an enemy bomber dropped an aerial torpedo on a south-east town in England reducing eight of a row of working class cottages to debris and partially wrecking others. It is feared that a number of people were killed; it fell in the road and burst the water-main.

### Poison Gas<sup>1</sup>

Poison gas is another weapon used in air raids. Italy used mustard gas extensively in Abyssinia and her victory at Ashangi

<sup>1</sup>Vide A.R.P.H.1 "Personal Protection Against Gas."

A.R.P.H.4 "Decontamination of Materials."

A.R.P.H.12 "Air Raid Precautions for Animals."

"The Protection of Foodstuffs against Poison Gas." Home Office Pamphlet.

A.R.P.M.3. "Organisation of Decontamination Services."

is attributed to the spraying of the shores of the lake with mustard gas. So very distressing is this form of attack that the use of poison gas in war was forbidden by the Geneva Gas Protocol of 1925. All the most important countries of Western Europe were parties. But no one doubts the possibility of its use to-day. Every one in vulnerable areas has been supplied free with a respirator, by the Government of Great Britain and the extensive anti-gas precautions taken in that country, indicate the danger.

The large scale use of gas in recent times comes from Abyssinia.<sup>1</sup> Italy used mustard gas on a large scale. It was first dropped in drums and there is some evidence that, so used, it had no considerable effect. Gas was much more effective when sprays were substituted for drums later on, and one eyewitness attributes Italy's victory at Lake Ashangi to the spraying the shores of the Lake with mustard gas. Air-craft and explosive bombs also materially contributed to the success.

During the six months for which the war lasted nearly 2,000 tons of bombs were dropped. Seventy-four tons were dropped on one day, the quantity German aeroplanes dropped upon Britain in the Great War. Its capacity for harrying a beaten foe was enormous. Three hundred and ninety-six tons of bombs were dropped within four days resulting in 3,000 casualties at the ford of the River Takkazewas.

Stray cases of German and Japanese use of poison gas have been reported. A Chinese communique from Chungking on the fighting of the Toungoo front asserts that Japanese used poison gas in their effort to dislodge the Chinese from their posts along the railway running through the centre of the town. On a previous occasion also the Chinese reported that the Japanese used poison gas during the battle of Changsha in Central China.

The Chinese High Command stated in January, 1943, that Japanese troops used poison gas on attack in North China. A change in the direction of the wind caused several hundred casualties among the Japanese.

We cannot therefore ignore the possibility of gas being used. Modern nations are prepared to resort to it if necessary. According to Major-General William Porter, Chief of the Chemical Warfare

<sup>1</sup> See A. A. Spaight, "Air Power in the next war".

Service at Edgewood, Maryland, the United States is fully prepared to use chemical warfare in any proportion, in any place, at any time it becomes desirable or necessary. Twenty-five years of chemical research and experiment have now borne the fruit in powerful service technically and materially.

Professor Haldane therefore, towards the close of October 1942 while addressing a Civil Defence Workers' Conference in London, warned of a possible gas attack on Britain and that the first raid would be a big one probably against London, Birmingham, Glasgow or some other large city—possibly against invasion ports—when the second front was opened. "Doubtless," he said, "Hitler has large reserves of poison gas. He will presumably use them and most probably the target is Britain." The study of poison gases, methods of attack and measures to resist and recover from them therefore becomes essential.

If gas, whose injuring power is so great, has not been extensively used it is due to the fact as explained by Prof. Haldane, "explosive bomb is very considerably (perhaps fifty times) more deadly than the gas bomb." Gas was not used in Spain for the simple reason a great many more people can be killed by a given weight of high explosive bomb than by the same weight of gas bombs.

By the term "gas" in warfare is meant any chemical substance, whether solid, liquid or vapour, which is used because it produces poisonous or irritant effects on the human body.

- They are liberated in the air as vapours or irritant smokes, and mix in the air and produce their harmful effect upon unprotected persons who are exposed to this atmosphere. Mustard gas and like substances cause serious effect either by direct contact or with objects which have become contaminated by the liquid.

Some of them form clouds of gas or smoke which drift along the wind, for instance, chlorine, phosgene and arsenic compound smokes. Mustard gas or other blister gases are usually liquids which evaporate slowly giving off dangerous vapour until all evaporate, and the contaminated objects will give rise to skin burns until decontaminated. While the latter persists the former do not and are less dangerous. In congested areas persistent gases do greater injury.

The more important war gases likely to be used are :

1. Tear gases :

- (a) Chlor-aceto-phenone (C. A. P.) (non-persistent).
- (b) Ethyl-ido-acetate (K. S. K.) (persistent).
- (c) Bromo-benzyl-cyanide (B. B. C.) (persistent).

2. Nose irritant gases :

- (a) Di-phenyl-chlor-arsine (D. A.) (non-persistent).
- (b) And similar compounds such as di-phenyl-amine-chlor-arsine (D. M.) and Di-phenyl-cyano-arsine (D. C.) (non-persistent).

3. Lung irritant gases :

- (a) Chlorine (non-persistent).
- (b) Phosgene (non-persistent).

4. Blister gases :

- (a) Mustard gas. (BB'-di-chloro-di-ethyl sulphide) (persistent).
- (b) Lewisite (B-chloro-vinyl-di-chlor-arsine) (persistent).

The tear gas has immediate effect upon the eyes causing intense smarting, a profuse flow of tears and spasm of the eyelids which generally make it very difficult for the person to see. The liquid gas may cause permanent injury to the eye but generally in pure air the effects of the vapour soon pass off. Chlor-aceto-phenone (C. A. P.) (non-persistent) has an irritating effect upon the exposed skin in high concentrations while Ethyl-ido-acetate (K.S.K.) (persistent) is a respiratory irritant also.

Nose irritant gases produce intense pain in the nose, throat and breathing passages during the exposure to the gas but these painful effects soon pass off in fresh air. They are non-persistent and no permanent injury results when the patient is removed into pure air after an attack.

Lung irritant gases otherwise called choking gases attack the breathing passages and the lungs. Chlorine and phosgene will produce death if breathed in sufficiently large quantities. They are non-persistent and a good wind can dilute them and blow them away.

Blister gases cause intense irritation or burning of the skin according to the amount of gas which has come into contact with the affected part. Deep and extensive blisters may be caused in

severe cases. No immediate pain is felt on contact with the mustard gas in the solid, liquid or vapour form, but the effects become apparent a few hours later. It also affects eyes and lungs but symptoms appear after sufficient attack. It is this absence of immediate effect which constitutes one of the greatest dangers of the mustard gas. The need for protection is not appreciated until too late.

Mustard gas is an oily liquid probably dark brown in colour and the substance is readily soluble in certain liquids such as oils, benzene and methylated spirit, and also in tar and fat. Owing to its solubility in fat, it is quickly absorbed by the skin. It is also readily absorbed in the tar surfaces of roads. It evaporates slowly at ordinary temperature and is very persistent. The liquid is more dangerous than the vapour when it contacts the body. Mustard gas is dangerous in a number of ways as shown below.

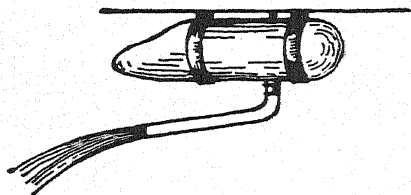
Its vapour given off by the ground or other objects splashed with the liquid, may injure the eyes, the lungs or exposed parts of the body. Clothing may absorb the vapour which will penetrate the skin and cause burns. Touching the contaminated ground or splashed object by the hand or other parts of the body will cause burns unless immediate precautions are taken. Contaminated persons or clothes are dangerous, for the vapour arising from them will affect others. Persons may also be contaminated by mustard gas spray directly.

As already noted neither liquid nor vapour produces any immediate recognisable sensation or effect. "The symptoms do not become apparent for from two to eight hours afterwards by which time it is too late to prevent injury."

It will also affect the eye seriously even if present in small quantities in the atmosphere. Liquid contamination of the skin needs immediate treatment for the effect will be serious. Even the vapour will burn the skin and if the concentration is high will blister it. Lewisite contains arsenic, has a strong smell, acts more rapidly than mustard gas and is noticed at once. Otherwise its characteristics and effects are generally similar to those of mustard gas.

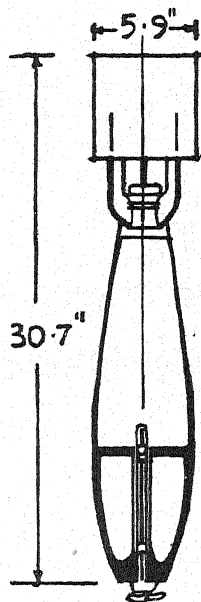
The effects produced by any war gas depend on the amount of the gas and the length of time a person is exposed to it. The stronger the gas the greater will be the injury produced in a given time. Lung irritants need a certain amount of breathing before their effect becomes dangerous.

There are two methods of using poison liquid gas ; by bombs from air-craft, by sprays from air-craft. Air bombs are particularly suitable for charging with gas because they do not have to



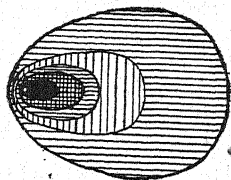
Container attached to the plane for spraying liquid gas

withstand the shock of discharge from a gun. Gas bombs range up to 500 lb. in weight and the quantity of gas which a bomb will hold is somewhere about half of the total weight of the bomb. They explode over the surface and not deep underground and liberate the gas. If it is non-persistent gas a cloud will form at the site of explosion and will drift with the wind becoming more and more diluted ultimately becoming harmless. A high wind may blow them away but also into places where it would not go otherwise. Generally speaking, however, the danger to be anticipated from a non-persistent gas will be very much reduced by high wind.



The combined high explosive and liquid gas bomb

If there should be no wind at all, only a slight drift, the worst situation will arise, though the effects will be more local. A dense cloud of gas will form at the point of burst and will remain in that particular area until it is gradually dispersed. It will find its way by diffusion and ventilation currents into areas, cellars, tunnels, etc., and once there, it is not so readily cleared as the gas in the open streets. Once the gas has penetrated into a confined space it is not subject to the influence of the wind and air currents prevailing outside, and may continue to be dangerous when the outside air has become clear of gas.



The spreading of poison gas

Production of gas from a generator contained in the bomb is also anticipated which will produce greater concentration over larger area.

Bombs containing mustard gas and other persistent gases, make a large splash of liquid at the place where the bomb is dropped and will also cover a considerable area with fine droplets. The size and type of bombs as well as the nature of the ground and the strength of the wind, determine the degree of contamination and the extent of the area affected. The liquid drops or splashes will cause serious injury to the body of men unless immediately attended to. Persons walking over gas contaminated ground will be liable to contaminate their boots by stepping in the liquid or picking up mud containing mustard gas. This danger will persist for a long period (usually some days) unless the area is decontaminated.

Unless the weather is very cold the contaminated area will continue to give off vapour until it has been decontaminated. Tear gas bomb will act similarly. Evaporation of the liquid on the ground will render a large area intolerable, and the vapour effect will continue for a number of days until decontamination is effected.

Small bombs will contaminate a large number of centres and are more difficult to locate and clear, while large ones may produce heavy concentration but in few areas only.

Mustard or other persistent gas can be sprayed from air-craft. The liquid falls in fine drops over a fairly wide area. The drops may indeed be so small as not to be noticed by persons upon whom they may fall. Such a spray may be a source of very great danger, because it may fall on the face, neck, and any exposed parts of the body, in addition to the clothing, without being noticed. Although there are difficulties in these methods the risk to persons in the open cannot be ignored but the danger may be avoided by remaining under cover.

The horrible nature of gas attack to personnel would become apparent when we realise that a respirator cannot protect men, for, it can be effective for about 4 hours only in contaminated atmosphere, and even during that time it can protect only the eyes, nose, mouth and lungs leaving other parts exposed to the dangers of mustard gas liquid and vapour. Even a full decontamination dress cannot help because "the protection against blister gas vapour

afforded by the heavy anti-gas suit is of limited duration, owing to the suction effect produced by movement.”<sup>1</sup>

Poison gas also affects food and clothing, buildings and structures, roads and public utility services, rendering them dangerous and unfit for use until proper measures are adopted. The danger to these mainly arises from the persistent gases, and is caused by splashes of the liquid or wind-borne spray. Temporary contamination may also be present in the disturbed earth of the crater of a bomb containing a non-persistent gas.

Food stored in the ordinary way is liable to be contaminated, and must be thrown away. Otherwise gas-proof packing will have to be resorted to in the entire area liable to be attacked. Clothing contaminated by liquid gas cannot be used unless boiled in water for one hour minimum, keeping the garments fully immersed. If they are greasy they should be boiled for two hours. Cotton and linen fabrics need half this time by this process. Anti-gas clothing and oil skin needs boiling for half an hour, gum boots for 2 hours. The civilian respirator cannot be made serviceable after liquid contamination.

To buildings and structures contamination may happen in three ways.

1. Fine spray from air-craft.
2. Gross spray from low-flying air-craft.
3. Heavy local contamination from gas bombs.

The degree of contamination depends upon the surfaces on which they fall. In an absorbent surface, they will penetrate it and take correspondingly longer to evaporate naturally or to be removed or neutralised artificially. The blister gases are of oily nature and are readily absorbed by other oils, by fats (in the human skin) and by tar products (road surfaces). Bricks, stone and concrete also absorb the liquid.

All our buildings and structures are therefore liable to be contaminated and rendered unfit for use. Decontamination is not easy, for not merely ample water-supply is needed, a suitable way of draining away the washed water is also necessary. If it is allowed into the underground drain, the walls of the mains and

<sup>1</sup> T. J. Muirhead, “Air Attacks on Cities”.



crevices may get affected and remain so for a long time. Weathering may take unduly long time in congested areas.

Probably the greatest risk is from the use of a persistent gas such as mustard gas in conjunction with high explosive bombs. Material damage will be produced by the high explosive; and the mustard gas, whether used as spray or in bombs, will render the task of rescuing and treating casualties more difficult and hazardous.

Road surfaces and vehicles readily absorb mustard gas, and transport services could easily be dislocated. Overhead telephone wires are affected by gross contamination of mustard gas. To underground systems too a gas attack is dangerous, especially when a high explosive bomb containing mustard gas penetrates the road surface and shatters the mains. Immediately attending to it would be almost impossible because of liquid gas splashes and the supply could be dislocated. Gas contamination might also be carried along the mains by water.

Particularly in the tropics gas attack will be most distressing because of congestion and heat which will vapourise the liquid rapidly resulting in very heavy concentration of poison in the atmosphere.

Liquid gas affects animals as well; and cows and bullocks and horses and other transport animals are liable to be affected particularly by blister gases, whose injury would require weeks to heal.

Animals are affected by mustard gas and lewisite, by choking gases like phosgene, but nose gases are not fatal to them and fresh air will cure the sneezing. They are not affected by tear gas. Even fodder exposed to the true gases, arsenical smoke or the vapour of blister gas may become unpalatable. No satisfactory animal gas mask has been yet produced.<sup>1</sup>

Liquid mustard gas causes deep ulceration after sometime and healing takes 8 to 10 weeks. When animals walk over contaminated ground, their legs are injured. Mustard gas liquid falling in the eye may injure it and it may take some months to heal but heavy contamination may blind them. Grazing contaminated pasture will ulcerate the digestive tract. Mustard gas vapour unless in very high concentration or prolonged exposure will not injure the skin of the larger animals but mustard gas vapour will

<sup>1</sup> A.R.P.H.12.

affect the eyes for weeks as well as the respiratory tract which may prove fatal.

A gas attack is, therefore, considered most distressing and efforts to prohibit the use of gas were made, with results, well known. Its use in Poland and Finland is suspected and the British Government expects it any day, indicating unmistakably the need to get prepared to meet this danger whenever national security is threatened by the air arm. In India too Government are taking steps to ensure that the whole population is in a full state of preparedness against gas attacks. Three thousand people are reported to have been killed during a Japanese air raid on Lungchowin August, 1940.

### **Bombers and Bombing Methods**

Modern bombers are gigantic and carry several tons of bombs and release them on targets situated at great distances. Otherwise aircraft-carriers can carry bombers to any part of the world and provide them a base for attack. Four thousand pound, high explosive bombs have been showered over distant Nazi targets in Europe by air-craft sent from England. These have also raided Naples and other Italian cities and have returned to their bases in England. Japan delivered a concentrated attack on such a distant target like the Pearl Harbour by sending planes on aircraft-carriers. Any place in the world could therefore be bombed, by carrier-borne aircraft. It is also predicted that U. S. A. would soon produce bombers that can fly non-stop round the world. Super bombers of to-morrow are expected to carry 50 to 100 tons of explosives and a thousand such craft would accomplish as much destruction in a single action as Germany has been able to score in six months of continuous bombing. At least 200 Coventries could be destroyed by one raid. The bombers of 1943 are expected to render the present ones tiny specimens.

The gigantic nature of bombers would become apparent from the size of the American B-19 bomber made by the Douglas Aircraft Company. It has a wing span greater than the height of a 17-storeyed building. A full-sized passenger transport train could be parked under each wing. The size of the rudder is 237 sq. ft. and the spread of wing 212 ft. Its gross weight is  $71\frac{1}{2}$  tons and its load capacity 28 tons. The diameter of the propellers is 16 ft. and the four main engines develop 8,000 horse power. Exclusive of gunners it has a flight crew of 10 and it could fly non-stop a third of the way round the world.

The British Blenheim Bomber has a maximum speed of 285 miles per hour and can cruise at 200 miles per hour for 5½ hours. It has a total wing span of 56 ft. and the machine is of all-metal-stressed-skin construction. Its successor, the Boston, can carry a load of 4 to 5 thousand pounds of bombs and is a high speed heavily armed day bomber. It is so fast that it is almost a flying-fighter.

Japanese bombers considered imitations of British and American models are lighter. Yet they are capable of considerable power, speed and destructive capacity as shown by recent events.

American big bombers are staffed with large calibre guns; some of their guns are in small turrets and some protrude from the nose flanks or tail of the air-craft. The gun turrets in British air-craft are slightly larger, more comfortable with consequent deterioration in the aerodynamic shape of the plane, while Americans have preserved perfect streamlining at the expense of a certain amount of comfort for some of the gunners. While British planes possess high rate of fire with 303 gun groups at short range, Americans have gone for the remarkably long range half-inch slugger. While British planes are built for the conveyance of enormous bombs and large numbers of them at the expense of high-flying qualities, Americans carry smaller bombs, but are capable of great altitudes. Each type of air-craft is best adopted for its specific purpose—to attack by day with a measure of safety or unload huge weight of bombs on enemy targets by night. While for the low level high-speed raids, De Havilland Mosquitos and Douglas Bostons and Lockheeds have been designed. These air-craft skim the land and in attacks on factories for example, almost seem to graze the roofs of chimneys as they release bombs.

Fighter Bombers are also in use for offensive and defensive air attacks. Fighters are also used to machine-gun and bomb enemy objectives where it is risky to send heavy bombers. A different type of air-craft is used for dive-bombing and recent events have shown that they can operate from aircraft-carriers also. Every nation has different kinds of bombers to carry out different methods of attack—high level bombing, low level day-light attack, hit and run raids, dive-bombing, long distance bombing and attack from aircraft-carriers.

These bombers may be sent in mass of a thousand or more with or without fighter escort for a concentrated attack upon

a target area or in small numbers and relays to deliver continuous attack on any particular target. To wear down the morale of the enemy, single or a few air-craft may be sent in succession to keep a city under warning the whole night as the Nazis did over London in their early attempts.

Where the ground defences and fighter forces are poor, day light low level attacks are made and the civilians machine-gunned. If this proves costly, raids are made at night. Moonlight raids are also made. With the increase in the air power of nations and improvements to the defensive power of the bombers, mass daylight raids are becoming frequent. Suicide squadrons are formed to destroy targets of great value and attacks are made and the targets destroyed, regardless of the cost of the attempt. The American aircraft-carrier *Hornet* was bombed and sunk after 50 Jap planes fell a prey to its pom-poms, anti-aircraft guns and fighters.

R.A.F. bombers have covered distances of over 1,000 miles in bombing Naples and Vienna. Axis planes covered a range of 2,000 miles in their bombing attacks when they bombed Casablanca early in January 1943. The bombing of Casablanca involved a flight of something like 2,000 miles to and fro from any known Axis base whether in France, Sardinia, or Tunisia. The Allied Head Quarters in North Africa considered it extremely unlikely that it was done by sea-borne air-craft. American long range bombers have carried out distant attacks from Australia upon Japanese bases on the surrounding islands.

Long range attacks upon distant targets have been delivered, by carrier-borne air-craft over Tokio, Pearl Harbour, Ceylon and even on the distant coast of America. Heavy attacks have been delivered by U. S. A. in Solomon Islands with the help of such air-craft.

The outstanding example of mass raids in recent times is the thousand-bomber raids of the R.A.F. over targets in Germany, while the Nazis used four to five hundred planes when they raided Britain in the early days of the war. Modern air-craft production has rendered such mass raids possible, in spite of their excessive cost. The loss in bombers have not been heavy to deter such attempts. From many of these raids only less than 30 bombers were lost. In the biggest day raid carried out in daylight over the great Arms Works at Le Creusot during the middle of October 1942, 94 giant Lancaster

Bombers took part and only one failed to return from this attempt, which involved a round trip of 600 miles unescorted.

The recent daylight raid on December 24, 1942 deep into France by American Fortresses and Liberators have drawn attention to the special bombing technique and equipment developed by Americans while the R.A.F. has been devoting its major attention to night-raiding.

Undeterred by warnings that daylight raids were bound to prove excessively costly, if bomber formations travel beyond the range of fighter escort, Americans went ahead, evolved their own technique and their own models of air-craft. It is now generally agreed that this persistence has been justified by results.

Mass raids are made not merely at night but also in broad daylight and in bright moonlight. The Japs have bombed and machine-gunned Eastern cities invariably during day. At the beginning of the war, costliness of such attempts, where defences were strong, deterred the Nazis. Later events show that if the target is vital the loss is ignored and suicide squads are despatched in daylight to destroy the target.

Lone raiders are also sent for hit and run raids, in daylight, to wear down the resistance of civilian population. A lone daylight raider on December 18, 1942 bombed several stores in a south coast town of England and several women and children, out for Christmas shopping, were buried in the ruins of several stores.

On December 16, 1942 under cover of cloud, German daylight raiders crossed the coast in a number of places and incidents were reported in over 20 towns and villages. Churches, shops, houses and offices were wrecked and some people were killed and injured. Germans made their attacks from as low as 500 feet. At some places, they used both guns and bombs. A train was attacked in the Home Counties and a number of passengers were taken to hospital with bullet wounds.

Several areas in southern England have been attacked in daylight by German raiders towards the close of October 1942, when they crossed the coast under the cover of low clouds.

The R.A.F. raid on Milan in October 1942, by large forces of Lancasters was made before dusk at 5 o'clock. The first bomb was dropped at 4 minutes past 5. Not until they were back over the

Alps did the sun set. The Lancasters were escorted by fighters to the coast of Northern France when they were alone for their long journey of more than 500 miles across the land. But only three out of the whole of Lancasters were missing. A 4,000-pounder burst and sent buildings flying. Most of the bombing was from under the base of the scattered clouds at about 4,000 feet. A great load of incendiaries as well as of 4,000 pounders and 1,000 pounders was dropped. Milan has some heavy anti-aircraft guns and a considerable number of light guns in addition to balloon barrage which was flying higher than the average height of the Lancasters bombing runs.

Even in day bombing low level attacks are becoming frequent. When the R.A.F. raided Dusseldorf at the beginning of August, 1942, intensely for 50 minutes, one afternoon, all the bombing was done at a less than 1,000 feet and some pilots bombed from only 20 feet, and one came back with a bomb splinter in his machine. Led by a Belgian Officer, these bomb-carrying Hurricanes attacked goods-trains, penetrating several miles inland. When some of the bombs were dropped one of the goods train went sky high. Trucks were blown off the line and lifted bodily into the air.

Raids are also made in bright moonlight. Lorient, the most important submarine base of the Germans in France, was bombed by British Halifax Bombers for one hour in bright moonlight on 14-1-1943. Nazi raids over England have also been made in moonlight and the Japs too in their opening raids on Rangoon took advantage of this feature to single out targets for attack. Full moon raiders visited London areas and the Home Counties, Midlands, north-west England and Northern Ireland early on 28th July 1942. West Midlands had its most intensive raids for many months, where flares were followed by incendiaries and then high explosive bombs. A number of families were made homeless.

It was on a moonlight that R.A.F. torpedo-carrying planes sank a large Axis tanker in the Eastern Mediterranean towards the close of August 1942. The plane torpedoed the tanker from a height of 50 feet.

Even high level attacks by modern bombers can be very accurate. With the help of bomb-sights the bombardier can locate his target and release his bombs with deadly accuracy. The raid on Citron Automobile plant outside Paris was carried out by German planes flying so high that they were out of sight in the clear sky

but their accuracy was terrific. Of all the bombs dropped the majority plunged right into the Factory. Dive bombers can attack their targets with a very great degree of success. Japanese pilots have directed their bombs through the funnels of battleships and have sunk some of the most reputed ones. Fast moving land targets could also be successfully hit by dive bombers. During the battle of the Bulge, south Kharkove, Marshal Timoshenko in his motor car was attacked by Stuka Dive Bombers while he was en route to a Soviet motorised-column. Bombs destroyed the cars in his immediate vicinity and even hit the one he was using. Both the Marshal and his guide were wounded and had to continue their journey by air.

Night flying and blind bombing have now been developed into an art. Enemy targets are pin-pointed and the pilots by direction, given before the flight, can successfully unload their cargo upon the target and return back blindfold. And bombing at night gives little chance for the enemies' defences to tackle the bomber.

Flares, incendiaries and high explosives are used in succession to light up the target for bombing. The flare is dropped with a small silken parachute and lights up a few seconds after it is released from a plane. It comes down very slowly and each flare is of more than 100,000 candle power. When a flare is dropped the area through which it travels and the area of the surface on which it impinges is lighted up, bright as daylight. Then follows a shower of high explosives. There is also the oil bomb which explodes and scatters oil. These bombs are very useful to the enemy as they set fire to a wider area more efficiently than incendiary bombs.

Technical improvements in bombers and bomber production have made possible heavier and heavier attacks upon enemy objectives. Remarkable progress has been made during the past three years. In the entire course of the last Great War 400 tons of bombs were dropped on Great Britain. The R.A.F. in their sixtieth visit to the German capital and the third in the month of March 1943, dropped some 900 tons of explosives and incendiaries one night on Berlin damaging the Head Quarters of the Nazi Party itself.

As Anthony Eden stated, in June and July 1940, the R.A.F. dropped 350 tons of bombs on Germany. In the same two months in 1941 they dropped 8,500 tons and in June and July 1942, 13,000 tons. In the first 14 days of September 1942, 5,000 tons were dropped in nine days. Only twice did the Nazis drop more than

400 tons on England in a night—each time in London—a vast area five times the size of Cologne where the R.A.F. dropped a thousand tons in 90 minutes.<sup>1</sup>

Apart from this increasing weight more and more heavy calibre bombs are now released over objectives. Two-tonners are now commonly showered by the R.A.F. and even four-tonners have been used. In the Duisburg raid mentioned below over 50 4,000-pound bombs were used. A two-tonner is said to wipe out a block of buildings and the Germans have called it "Block Bomb" because each brings down a whole block of buildings. Many two-tonners were dropped on the Lorient towards the close of January 1943: Over 150, 4,000-pound bombs, a great weight of other high explosive bombs of all sizes and hundreds of thousands of incendiaries were dropped on Dusseldorf in the 48th heaviest raid on it at the beginning of August, 1942. A great number of Lancasters did this most concentrated attack. Many 8,000-pound bombs and 4,000-pounders and tens of thousands of incendiaries were dropped on objectives in Turin by a force of Stirlings, Halifaxes, Lancasters and Wellingtons, of the R.A.F. Bomber Command, on December 9, 1942.

Increase in air-craft production and improvements in bombers have led to improvement in bombing technic, from which escape seems very difficult. Recent bombing by the R.A.F. of Nazi industrial centres form the pattern of the new technic of air attack. When the Germans blitzed Britain after the fall of France, they attacked in open formation, using bombs, which compared to those now used, were relatively light. But when the British attacked Cologne, they sent the bombers over in a continuous file and dropped high explosive bombs of such weight that the targets were practically obliterated. One of the reported results of this Cologne raid was the complete revamping of German air-raid precautions and the organization of national protective units, which could be moved quickly into any locality where they were needed.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In the fourth year of war ending September 2, 1943 96,000 tons of bombs have been dropped on Germany by R. A. F. bomber command. The tonnage for four years are : 1940, 300 tons ; 1941, 20,000 tons ; 1942, 33,000 tons ; 1943, 96,000 tons ; the tonnage dropped on Ruhr from January to August 1943 is 50,000. The seven German towns most heavily attacked in 1943 were : Hamburg, 11,000 tons, Essen 9,000, Cologne 8,000, Duisburg 6,000, Dusseldorf 5,000, Berlin 6,000, Nuremburg 5,000. Sorties made by the Fighter Command for four years are : 1940, 65,000 ; 1941, 173,000 ; 1942, 145,000, 1943 (first eight months) 145,000.—*The Hindu*, 5-9-1943.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Civilian Defence, Oct. 1942, p. 13.



The R.A.F. in Egypt and Lybia have successfully practised a new and very important style of bombing called "Pattern Bombing". According to this, bombs are dropped in such a way that the blasts from the bombs which are fused to explode on impact, are overlapped. Looked at from above the effect seen at the moment of explosion is like a regular "Pattern" of spots on a carpet or the corners of squares on Linoleum. The distance between the bomb explosions for any one caught within the area, subject to pattern-bombing, is never more than ten yards from bomb explosions and is in the immediate blast area of four such explosions. You can look at a Stuka bomber to see where its bombs are aimed at, but there is no escape from bombs dropping in this new pattern. This development follows the original "high-level precision bombing" by which a stick of several bombs is aimed at a single target and then "cascade bombing" by which bombs are "poured" by a succession of air-craft on the "Target area".<sup>1</sup>

Frequent raids have also been attempted to wear down the efficiency of the A.R.P. Organisation and to break civilian morale. Sometimes cities have had over ten alerts in the course of a day. Indeed Malta had over 600 alerts during the 11 months since Italy entered the war. In April 1941 there were over a hundred alerts.

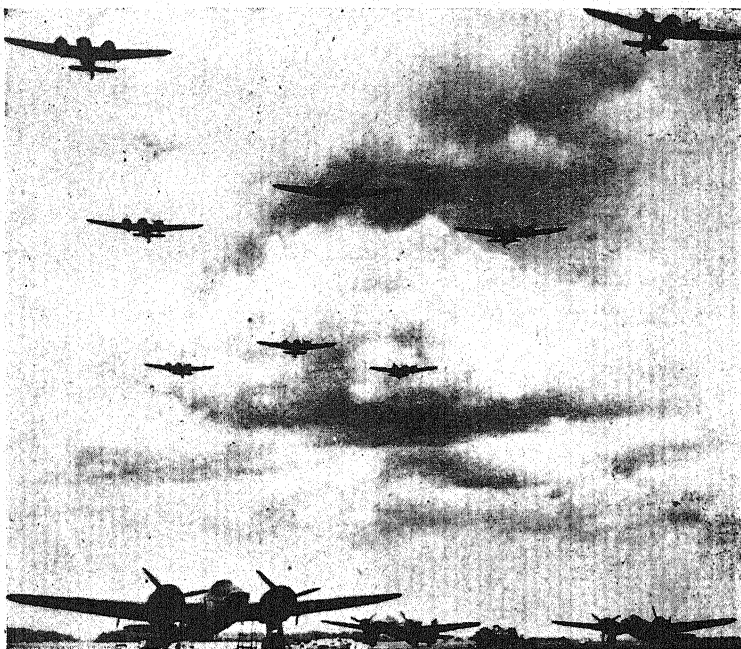
The R.A.F. in October, 1941, on Germany and German-occupied territory in spite of the very bad weather made over 300 attacks by air-craft of the Bomber Coastal and Fighter Commands. Some 30 ships have been sunk or seriously damaged in these attacks.

During sixteen months R.A.F. dealt 1,522 major attacks on German war bases up to 1-1-41; Hamburg on 61 occasions, Bremen 52, Wilhelmshaven 36. The heart of industrial Germany, the Ruhr District, suffered 500 raids, including 82 on the marshalling yards at Hamm.

"In 5,000 attacks on targets from Channel ports to the Dodacanese Islands in eight months, the R.A.F. have spread destruction in Germany, Italy and the territories they command which this Christmas should remind the Axis dictators....Two hundred and fifty raids aimed at air-craft and munition factories have undoubtedly interfered to some extent with Germany's attempt to make up for the terrible wastage of the *Luftwaffe*. There have been 866 large scale attacks on docks, shipyards and shipping in

<sup>1</sup> London Correspondent, *The Hindu*, 18-12-42.

harbours, including relentless and persistent blows at invasion bases, 683 on rail, road and water communications and incidentally 1,123 on German aerodromes. These daring and dramatic attacks were dealt with on the country stretching from all along the European coastline to deep into Poland. Apart from the heavy damage inflicted on Germany the Nazis have lost 109 air-craft shot down during these operations over their own territory."



Blenheim Bombers

During May, June and July 1941, the R.A.F. made 599 raids on Germany and German-occupied countries. Although slightly fewer raids have taken place on Germany itself, it is now revealed that out of approximately 1,58,000 bombs 100,000 have been dropped there.

On January 22, 1940 a raid on Willemsoord was made by a squadron of Hudson air-craft of Coastal Command and it lasted less than a minute. Nearly five tons of heavy and incendiary bombs were dropped. Besides two ships sunk and another badly

damaged, an oil storage depot was set on fire. Naval storehouses were destroyed. German machine-gunners were machine-gunned!

Between June 16 and July 10, 1941, in twenty-four days, the R.A.F. dropped over 2,000 tons of bombs in the Ruhr area, 1,000 tons on Cologne and over 500 tons on Bremen. During one month in 1941 the R.A.F. dropped about 37,000 bombs on Germany and German-occupied territories. The Nazi pilots have poured out 200 tons of bombs over London during one raid.

Thousands of tons of bombs have wrought havoc in Germany's two other greatest munition areas set deeper inside her western frontier. One is a hundred miles higher up the Rhine bounded by Frankfurt-on-Main and Stuttgart with Mannheim at its centre. The other is the Leipzig area some two hundred miles east of the Ruhr. Both continue to be heavily punished.

In the Leipzig area Leuna and Magdeburg, two of the most important centres of the synthetic oil industry have suffered some of the heaviest attacks made by the R.A.F..

Three hundred and ninety-nine were killed and 461 injured in Britain in June 1941, of whom 175 were men, 160 women and 64 children. The injured and detained in hospital numbered 461, of whom 239 were men, 175 women and children 47, under 16 years of age. In addition, 7 persons, all men, are missing and believed to have been killed.

Five thousand and three hundred were killed in May, 6,065 in April. During the first half of 1941 18,314 persons were killed by German air raids. In the previous six months the number killed was 23,960.

One thousand people died in Bremen and 7,000 were injured. Berlin's civilians also suffered terribly from bad shelters. Some of the "big beautiful bombs" to which Lord Beaverbrook refers, are massive 2,000 pounders with a devastating effect worse than any of those the Nazis have yet employed.

The R.A.F. has delivered approximately nine hundred attacks on particular target areas, containing one or more different types of objectives inside the Reich proper. Of these seven hundred were made in three months, July, August, and September 1940. In the same length of time upto New Year's day 1941 the total was five hundred.

According to a Turkish traveller who visited Hamburg, Emden, Bremen, Dusseldorf, Cologne and Essen in July 1940 "hardly a single factory remained intact in any of these cities." "Hamburg port," he declared, "was in ruins."

R.A.F. bombers made 87 raids on Tobruk during the day which preceded the launching of the Army's attack thus playing an important part in the capture of this Libyan port.

The *Luftwaffe* in the first nine months of this war maintained very heavy pressure over Britain. It has caused severe damage in the City of London, blasted Coventry, Bristol, Birmingham, Cardiff, Southampton, Liverpool and other towns and ports. In some places essential communications have been affected and dislocation has been caused to war industries.

London absorbed about 200 tons of bombs one night in what was one of the worst raids.

It is officially announced that British Civilian air raid casualties from January 1, 1940 to the end of June 1941 were approximately 41,900 killed and 52,678 injured and detained in hospital.

The Germans claim to have discharged twenty thousand tons of explosives upon Great Britain since the beginning of the war upto October, 1940. They claim that on one day 251 tons were thrown upon London in a single night.

### Air Raid Destruction

Recent experience proves the effectiveness of air bombardment. It is as General Valle, Italian Under-Secretary for Air observed in 1939 "beyond all expectations. From the Harbour quarters of Valencia and Barcelona we can get an impression of how an inhabited area could be reduced to a heap of ruins where no life could exist."

The raids on Barcelona during one day succeeded in killing 875 persons (including 245 women and 118 children) and wounding 1,500; 48 buildings were completely destroyed and 75 severely damaged. About 200 persons were killed and 500 injured, most of them being women and children in a Catalan town of 10,000 inhabitants, in one day.

It is estimated that one-third of Madrid's houses has been completely ruined and that half of its houses was damaged. The

same is true of many towns in the fighting area of Spain. One can see buildings destroyed everywhere. The railways are in the same condition as the railways of Central Europe after the war. The seats are missing, wood has been torn away for fuel, leather taken for shoes and slippers, the windows have been removed, and there were no lights in the carriages, owing to the large number of engines, trucks and wagons destroyed by gunfire, air raids, and over-use.

In China too, as in Spain, we see terrible manifestations of the destructiveness of bombardments from the air, cities grievously damaged, men, women and children slain and mutilated.

Chinese towns subjected to air raids are not different. Canton Port was destroyed as well as parts of Shanghai and Chungking. During a day's raid on Chungking whole blocks were levelled to the ground.

In the series of raids which began in the end of May, 1938 and continued for a week, the number of killed and wounded among the civil population ran into thousands, although apparently the Pearl River Bridge, the power station, waterworks, railway stations and factories were targets of attack.

Nazi raids in Poland, Belgium, Holland, etc. have also demonstrated the destructive power of aerial bombardment.

War correspondents in Russia have given us accounts of German air raid destruction over Russian towns and villages. *Reuter's* Special Correspondent in Russia wrote in September 1941 :—

"I saw much wretchedness, I saw many Guernicas. (Guernica was the historic Spanish town destroyed by German air raid during the Spanish Civil War). I saw towns and villages which have been wantonly burnt out by the Germans in their 'terror raids'. In one village which is exceptional, there were a few houses still standing. But the only inhabitants were one peasant, three children and one blind woman who had been rendered insane by the experiences through which she had passed. In another town, Elnia, which formerly had about 5,000 inhabitants, the only building intact is one church. The remainder consists mainly of chimney stacks and heaps of rubble and ashes. Even in villages, many thatched roofs had been blown away by blast. There were numerous craters on the roadsides. One town, Dorogobush was completely destroyed by terror raids in July 1941. There were nothing but

burnt-out houses showing through all the windows. One large, prosperous village was represented by a few burnt stumps, all that remained after a raid."

The German mass raids on the city of Belgrade on Sunday 6th April, 1941 left the city in a mass of ruins. On Sunday morning while the sound of church bells was calling, the bombardment eclipsed in horror all imagination. A veritable deluge of incendiary and explosive bombs turned the city into a mass of ruins and gutted homes while all the streets of Belgrade were covered with bodies of children, women and old men. German planes destroyed most of the hospitals, churches, schools and cultural institutions of Belgrade in broad daylight. The Royal Palace was destroyed by thirty bombs. The German planes even bombed isolated houses killing thus Dr. Koulovetz, the Leader of the Slovene people. German planes machine-gunned women and children fleeing from their burning homes.

Hundred and fifty Dornier and Junker dive-bombers launched the attack at 7-15 a.m. The principal city square was severely hit and victims were numerous. Second wave of raiders appeared at 9 a.m. The central Electric Supply was destroyed and the water-supply was upset and more fires broke out, in the industrial quarter at 2 p.m. A new onslaught followed notably on the centre of the city and not a single pane of glass was left intact. With one house in ten blazing, the whole street was soon destroyed. More raiders came over during the night. The attack ended at 3 p.m. on Monday. By then only a few thousand inhabitants were left. As night came on again, flames leaped from house to house and one could not put them out as the water-supply had failed. Later rain began to damp down the fires leaving Belgrade a picture of desolation, with enormous craters in the middle of the broad avenues, automobiles overturned, houses left frontless, dead bodies strewn in the streets. Over 20,000 civilians were killed and men were living like animals in the city after the raid.

A third of Rotterdam was destroyed by bombing. A communique issued by the Dutch Legation in Paris on May 19, 1940 stated that at least one hundred thousand people were killed and one-third of the city destroyed when the Germans bombed Rotterdam. Two squadrons of German bombers flew over the city in close formation dropping delayed action bombs that "ploughed a

veritable furrow of destruction." Bombs weighing two thousand pounds were dropped from a height of 4,500 feet. After passing over the town once, the planes returned and repeated the operation again and again. Houses and buildings over an area of fifteen to twenty square kilometers—one-third of Rotterdam—were completely destroyed.

It has been calculated that during the eighteen days of German *blitzkrieg* in Belgium 34,000 houses were damaged or destroyed. An additional 16,000 houses suffered to a lesser degree. Nearly 6,000 miles of highways also suffered in the onslaught.

Abbeville has been bombed to pieces in a casual raid.

The Germans in May 1940 on their way towards the Channel ports bombed Abbeville to pieces. It was one vast desolation of smouldering ruins with shattered streets strewn with dead and dying women and children. They bombed it apparently without thought of military objectives, dropping high explosive and incendiary bombs and incendiary darts.

The first air raid on Warsaw took place at 6 a.m. on September 1, 1939. On September 18, after the German ultimatum to the city to surrender was rejected, began the systematic destruction of the city by the artillery bombardment and air bombing which lasted uninterruptedly for ten days. By September 24, all public utility services were dislocated; the city lacked water, electricity and gas, and bread became scarce. The Germans increased the intensity of their bombing and the bombardment which they maintained for three days came to a climax on September 27. Next day the Warsaw Command, lacking all means of defence, capitulated. On October 2, the German Army entered Warsaw. Poland became the city of ruins, graveyards, hunger and disease in the words of Prof. Strongski, the Polish Minister of Information.

The German attacks upon the civil population have been concentrated mainly upon London in the hope of terrorising its citizens into submission. During the first half of September 1940 about two thousand civilians, men, women and children, have been killed and about eight thousand wounded by air bombardment. Four-fifths of these casualties have occurred in London. Many hospitals, churches and public monuments have been damaged.

Thousands in London, men, women and children, have been rendered homeless by indiscriminate bombing.

Eleven hundred people were killed in the German air raids of March 13 and 14 in the Clydeside area and 1,000 seriously injured.

29,000 people have been killed and 40,000 injured throughout Britain upto the end of March 1941. In 400 hospitals and institutions of all kinds in Greater London the casualties among patients were, 235 killed, 195 injured. Because elaborate precautions were taken to meet conditions of a heavy raiding the risk inside the hospitals was less than outside, although many hospitals have been damaged.

Upto June 1942, thirteen thousand three hundred and fifty churches, vicarage halls and schools had been damaged or destroyed by air raids in the London area. Virtually 2,000 churches in London and the provinces have been destroyed or damaged by German bombers in quest for military objectives. The actual number as given by Vatican Radio is 1,986, and comprises: destroyed in London—14 Roman Catholic, 250 Anglican and 350 Free Church; destroyed or heavily damaged in the Provinces—20 Roman Catholic, 300 Anglican, 514 Free Church. In addition, 45 Roman Catholic monasteries and convents were destroyed.

Ramsgate in England has been almost razed to the ground. Over 1,200 houses have been destroyed and the entire town rendered uninhabitable. More than 8 churches in London have been damaged including St. Paul's. The famous Cathedral at Canterbury has not escaped.

According to the Venerable E. N. Sharpe, Archdeacon of London, London's famous St. Paul's Cathedral suffered war damage amounting to £1,50,000 sterling. The high altar and organ had been destroyed and considerable local damage was done by a bomb which shattered the great dome of north transept and penetrated to the crypt during a raid in April 1941.

The Architect to the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury Cathedral has reported that apart from the Chapter House and the Library, the fabric had not been seriously damaged. It was estimated that the cost of repairs, including the rebuilding of the Library, would be about £25,000. The damaged glass and ironwork were being carefully preserved, and the cost of reinstating the stained glass, quarry glazing and iron frames, was expected to be at least £30,000.

Priceless books, some of them irreplaceable were destroyed when a German raider flying over Cambridge University at less than



a hundred feet dropped high explosive and incendiary bombs on the building where the ten thousand sterling Fairfax Rhodes collection was housed.

Some damage was done to buildings in Cambridge during a raid. The Union Library received a direct hit by a high explosive and several incendiaries and a number of the 50,000 volumes housed were lost, though steel stacks saved the majority from blast effects. Whewell's Court of Trinity College lost windows, but the Round Church, close to the Union, escaped with the loss of a stained-glass pane.

Lord Glanely, the famous race-horse owner and shipping magnate was killed in a raid on a south-western town one Saturday night at the age of 74. The well known Economist and Statistician Sir Josiah Stamp was killed when his country home, away from London, was hit by a bomb from a bomber flying towards London!

Exeter and its historic buildings suffered severely in the "reprisal" raids. Much of the centre of the City was wiped out, great damage was done to the Cathedral. St. James's Chapel was demolished, and three bays in the south side of the choir were wrecked and also two of the flying buttresses with them. Fortunately, nearly all the ancient glass has been removed to safety; what remained was smashed. Immense destruction was caused to the furnishings and monuments in the Choir. The Bishop's Throne, dating from 1316, was dismantled and was safe.

Other Exeter buildings destroyed are the Choristers' School; College Hall; Banmplyde House; and the James's and St. Stephen's are among the ruined churches, while the city hospital was extensively damaged and the modern city library destroyed.

Official record of the Civil Defence Department, entitled "Frontline 1940-41 issued by Mr. Herbert Morrison, Minister for Home Security" reveals that in the three months from September 1940, thirty-six thousand bombs fell on London and nearly thirteen thousand people were killed. The capital was bombed for 57 consecutive nights. In eleven months, not counting incendiaries, between 45 and 50 thousand bombs hit London of a total weight of about 7,500 tons. In the first 21 days London's newly-trained firemen, four-fifths of whom had never seen a fire, were called on nearly ten thousand times.

In nine months, 1,150,000 London homes were damaged and 375,000 people made homeless. During the whole air attack on

Britain 190,000 bombs were dropped. 43,667 civilians were killed and 50,387 seriously injured. Sixty-five thousand of Portsmouth's 70,000 houses were damaged. According to Herbert Morrison in London region alone in 9 months 150,000 had been destroyed by air raids.

The country protected by a most powerful air force is no exception. Several examples of heavy attacks on Germany and German-occupied territories have been noted. According to reliable reports received in Great Britain, *Reuter* learns that the total number of German casualties in two R.A.F. raids on Berlin were 900.

In the thousand-bomber raid on Cologne, the R.A.F. lost 44 air-craft towards the end of May 1942. Over 250 Factory Buildings and Workshops have been wrecked by R.A.F. raids on Cologne; an area of over 300 acres, in the centre of the city where public buildings and business premises were situated was completely devastated. A striking feature of the raid was the amount of damage done to railway communications causing serious interruptions of traffic. Ten thousand people were killed and buried in Communal graves and 140,000 officially evacuated from the city as a result of the Royal Air Force's thousand-bomber raid on the night of May 30-31, 1942. These figures have been received in London from a reliable foreign source which reports indescribable devastation. At least 16 factories, including railway workshops were demolished. In the city many banks and insurance buildings were destroyed.

The *New York Times* on the basis of private advices from the competent neutral observers in Berlin estimated the number killed in the Cologne raid as in the neighbourhood of twenty thousand and wounded fifty-four thousand. Reports also stress mass exodus of the population.

R.A.F. Bombers attacked Genoa on the night of 14-11-42 causing many large fires. Lancasters and Stirlings bombed Genoa. A cloudless sky was found over the city and with the help of flares targets were clearly identified. The attack was well concentrated and large fires were left burning. None of the bombers were missing.

The six R.A.F. bombing raids on Genoa, prior to this raid caused damage totalling about 4,000 million lire at pre-war rates, according to Yugoslav travellers from Italy. Genoa has been knocked out as an Axis supply port, for the time being, by R.A.F.

Genoa has been raided six times by the R.A.F. since the opening of the Allied Mediterranean offensive. All the raids together have lasted only two and a half hours. The total British casualties were twelve air-craft missing. In the harbour, two liners, "Augustus" and "Roma" which were being fitted out as aircraft-carriers, were damaged. Many warehouses were burnt out, the headquarters of the dock company gutted and fitting out yards destroyed or severely damaged. Oil tanks and installations were burnt out. In the centre of the town are two areas of very severe damage by fire. They include many public buildings and main shopping and business centres. Among the buildings destroyed or severely damaged are both the main railway stations, the Ducal Palace, now Government offices and the Assize Court. The Mussolini Barracks were badly damaged by fire.<sup>1</sup>

Mussolini speaking to Italian Officials and Fascist Party members has admitted that as a result of the R.A.F. raids and sea bombardments on Italian cities, in Turin 161 houses were destroyed and 3,069 damaged, total hits 3,230; in Genoa 187 houses were destroyed and 5,575 damaged, total hits 5,772.

Reconnaissance photographs of the industrial districts of Turin reveal many areas of devastation, including one of 40 acres and another of 22 acres. Many factories, engaged on production of war material, have been severely damaged.

An outstanding example of the destructive capacity of air attacks in recent times is the sinking of powerful battleships, destruction of aeroplanes, the disabling of air-craft and the death of military personnel at the Pearl Harbour. It also constitutes an outstanding example of what carrier-borne air-craft can do and how a powerful nation can utilise its fleet air-arm for a paralysing blow upon countries however distant they may be. It also demonstrates how fleet air-arm can resort to dive-bombing.

The air attack on Pearl Harbour commenced at 7-55 a.m. on December 7, 1941. Japanese dive-bombers swarmed over the Army air base at Hickam Field and the naval air station on Ford Island. A few minutes earlier the Japanese had struck the naval air station at Kanehe Bay. A bare few seconds later enemy torpedo planes and dive-bombers swung in from various sectors to concentrate their attack on the heavy ships at Pearl Harbour. The enemy attack which was aided by the

<sup>1</sup> Reuter : *The Hindu*, 23-11, 1942.

element of surprise and based on exact information was very successful. Torpedo planes assisted effectively by dive-bombers constituted the major threat of the first phase of the Japanese attack lasting approximately half an hour. Twenty-one torpedo planes made four attacks and thirty dive-bombers came in, in eight waves during this period.

A battleship ready with its machine-guns opened fire at once and these were progressively augmented by the remaining anti-aircraft batteries. Machine-guns brought down two and damaged others of the first wave of torpedo planes. Practically all the battleships' anti-aircraft batteries were firing within five minutes. From 8-25 a.m. to 8-40 a.m. there was comparative lull in the raid, although air activity continued with sporadic attack by dive and horizontal bombers. This respite was terminated by the appearance of horizontal bombers which crossed and recrossed their targets from various directions and caused serious damage. While horizontal bombers were continuing the raid, Japanese dive-bombers re-appeared, probably being the same ones that had participated in the earlier attack; this phase lasting about half an hour, was devoted largely to strafing. All enemy air-craft retired by 9-45 a.m.

Prior to the Japanese attack 202 United States Naval air-craft of all types on the Island of Oahu were in flying condition, but 150 of these were permanently or temporarily disabled by the enemy's concentrated assault, most of them in the first few minutes of the raid. Of the 52 remaining naval air-craft, 38 took to air, the other 14 being ready too late in the day or being blocked from take-off positions.

Of necessity, therefore, the Navy was compelled to depend upon anti-aircraft fire for its primary defensive weapon and this condition exposed the Fleet to continuous air attack. Careful analysis of all reports makes it possible to estimate the total number of air-craft participating in the raid at 21 torpedo planes, 48 dive-bombers and 36 horizontal bombers totalling 105 of all types. Undoubtedly certain fighter planes were also present but these are not distinguished by types and are not included in the above figures. There were a total of 273 army planes on the Island of Oahu in December 1941; very few were able to take off because of damage to runways at Hickam and Wheeler Fields. The enemy lost 28 air-craft due to Navy action and a few Army pursuit

planes that were able to take off shot down more than 20 Japanese planes. In addition, three submarines of 45 tons each were accounted. The damage suffered by the United States Pacific Fleet as a result of the Japanese attack on December 7, 1941, was most serious. The most outstanding fact contained in the United States Official report on the Japanese attack at Pearl Harbour is that 105 enemy air-craft were destroyed as also their own 177 Army and Navy planes, over 4,000 killed or wounded and 19 vessels including eight battleships sunk or damaged.

The United States Official Report on the Japanese attack at Pearl Harbour on December 7, 1941, admits that on the morning of December 7, 1941, Japanese air-craft temporarily disabled every battleship and most of the air-craft in the Hawaiian area. Other naval vessels, both combat and auxiliary, were put out of action and certain shore facilities, especially at the Army air bases of Hickam and Wheeler fields and the naval air stations at Ford Island and Kanehe Bay were damaged.

When the Japanese attacked Pearl Harbour, 86 ships of the Pacific fleet were moored at Pearl Harbour. Included in this force were 8 battleships, 7 cruisers, 28 destroyers and 5 submarines. No United States air-craft carriers were present. As the result of the Japanese attack 5 battleships, *Arizona*, *Oklahoma*, *California*, *Nevada* and *West Virginia*; three destroyers, *Shaw*, *Cassin* and *Downes*; the mine-layer *Ogala*; the targetship *Utah*, and a large floating dock, were either sunk or damaged so severely that they could serve no military purpose for some time. In addition three battleships, *Pennsylvania*, *Maryland* and *Tennessee*; three cruisers *Helena*, *Honolulu* and *Raleigh*, the seaplane tender, *Curtiss* and the repair ship *Vestel* were damaged.

Eighty naval air-craft of all types were destroyed by the enemy. In addition the Army lost 97 planes on the Hickam and Wheeler Fields. Of these 23 were bombers, 66 were fighters and 8 were other types. The most serious American losses were in personnel. As the result of the raid on December 7, 219 officers and enlisted men of the Navy and Marine Corps were killed, 960 are still reported missing and 876 were wounded but survived. The army casualties were as follows—226 officers and enlisted men were killed or later died of wounds and 396 were wounded, most of whom have now recovered and returned to duty.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *The Hindu*, 7-12-1942.

Mr. John Galvin who returned from Chungking and is the Director for the Ministry of Information says: "London's bomb damage is pretty heavy but nothing like Chungking's where an intact building is almost a freak. Bombed buildings are patched up with what can be saved from rubble and this has resulted in dwellings getting smaller and smaller."

Malta had 14 alerts in the 24 hours ending one Friday afternoon in the later half of January 1942. There were over 200 raids, over 90 by day and over 120 by night in five weeks between December 1941 and January 1942. Some of the night raids lasted all night, others nine hours.

The tiny isle of Malta has been raided more than 2,000 times within the last few years. It has endured the heaviest, longest and most persistent air-attacks ever delivered on a target in the history of war by day and night. Between December 19, 1941 and April 19, 1941, 11,000 enemy air-craft sorties were made against this island barrier. During these four months at least 200 enemy air-craft were destroyed and another 250 severely damaged. Recent attacks have been made by large number of dive-bombers escorted by fighters. There are shelters for the whole civilian population of about 250 thousand.

In two years the Island has had 2,537 alerts, 492 day raids and 574 night raids. Since December 4, 1941, to June 12, 1942, there has been only one consecutive raidless day and night. On February 7th, 1942, Malta had 17 alerts in 24 hours.

Six thousand seven hundred and four buildings in Malta have been destroyed or damaged by Axis air raids. Upto October 19, 1942 there had been 1,660 bombing attacks and 1,069 Axis air-craft were destroyed. Upto September 20, 1942, 1,386 civilian had been killed.

It is estimated that with normal supplies, it will take 60 years to re-build Malta's towns and villages. This is what happened to George Cross island. 15,500 houses (a block of flats is counted as one house in this tally) have been destroyed or damaged. Seventy churches, 18 convents and nunneries, 22 schools, 8 hospitals, 10 theatres, 8 hotels, 8 principal clubs, 5 principal banks and 48 public buildings. Many of the world-famous survivors of the siege of 1565 have been destroyed or damaged.

In Valetta alone, 75 per cent. of the houses are in ruins. The miracle of the whole thing is that casualties are so low—1,386 killed,

1,318 seriously injured and 1,299 slightly injured out of a population of 250,000. Malta's soft-rock underground shelters are chiefly responsible for this. Most Maltese sleep well. They have the finest shelters in the world. Now these old tunnels burrowed miles into rock, some eighty or a hundred feet down, ventilated, cleaned and strengthened, hold the whole civil population of the Island.

The damage to property in the first air raid on Darwin on 19-2-42 was considerable according to the Prime Minister Mr. Curtin. This severe blow on Australian soil was dealt by heavy forces of Japanese planes so suddenly that they had no more than 2 minutes' warning.

According to the Greek Minister for Justice, M. Dimitrakakis, the ferocity and savagery with which German airmen devastated the cities of Crete were "indescribable". "Canea, the beautiful defenceless capital of Crete, now is no more" he stated. "The last I saw of it was a gigantic heap of smouldering ruins. Not a single wall was standing. Its holy Turkish mosques and Greek churches were razed to the ground. The Nazi airmen had done their job well, to the satisfaction of their Fuehrer."

Hango, Abo, Viipuri and other towns of Finland also reveal the destructive power of air raids, the high explosive bomb and the incendiary. Abo suffered 30 raids during two months of war. Russian raiders dropped some twelve hundred bombs and eight hundred buildings were made uninhabitable. Further, air raids and the threat of attack by air-craft, forced the people of Abo to reverse their mode of life. For over five weeks they worked by night and spent the days taking shelter.

Even in towns equipped with anti-aircraft defences and fighter squadron, the risk to life is very grave as raids over Malta indicate. Twenty-three civilians were killed and several wounded in one of the raids on June 26, 1940. About 70 bombs were dropped. One bomb hit a bus, full of passengers most of whom were killed. The previous day 12 civilians were killed and several wounded. The bombers were driven off by British fighters and anti-aircraft fire. Destruction would have been far greater if bombers had their way.

Mass raids have been carried out by the Japanese over Eastern cities, both during day and in moonlight. Over 100 air-craft have been used at a time on Singapore. Indiscriminate raid and terror raids also form part of the Jap tactics. The bombing of

Manila has been described as savage and senseless. The planes flew low over the city and deliberately bombed churches and other centres of worship. "The enemy mercilessly bombed the open city of Manila using 63 bombers." Severe damage was inflicted to churches and dwellings.

The Jap raids have been shown to injure persons more than Nazi raids. Anti-personnel bombs are used in large numbers to obtain this effect. It is estimated that in the first Japanese air raid on Rangoon on December 23, nearly 1,000 people were killed or were dying before they were formerly admitted to hospitals, and 950 were injured. A number died in hospital. Official statistics give for two raids on December 23 and 25, killed 1,102, wounded 1,650. The latter figure is only approximate, for due to heavy rush in the hospitals the exact figure could not be obtained. The casualties in Singapore during one day towards the end of January '42, were 450 killed and injured. A week previous there was an attack. According to the Department of Information air raid casualties on that day at Singapore totalled 304 killed, 625 wounded and taken to hospital, and 100 slightly wounded.

Reports coming from the districts have also illustrated the cruelty of Jap bombing attacks in Burma. In the short raid over Tavoy on January 9, a Japanese plane attacked a passenger bus at low level and dropped three bombs separately, returning to the attack on each occasion. The passengers who were mainly women, took cover in a ditch by the side of the road and only two sustained minor injuries. The village of Wagon was machine-gunned from low level. In both the cases there was no pretext of any military objective for the attacks.

No aspect of life is left untouched by aerial warfare; the people of the nation subjected to prolonged attacks have to change their mode of life. The Government of Great Britain have decided that the British people must lead a more Spartan life and should reduce the consumption of food, clothes, travel and entertainment. The Home Secretary outlining the Government policy regarding public entertainment and sport in the House of Commons made it clear that Government permit them to continue on a restricted basis in the belief that within reason popular entertainment acts as a lubricant rather than a break on the war machine. Race meetings were already cut down to about 20 per cent. of the pre-war figure,



and further restriction was anticipated. Wrestling and professional boxing are already reduced to about 10 per cent. of the pre-war figure, greyhound racing to one day weekly for each track, and professional football to Saturdays and Public Holidays.

In fact this is the most distressing feature of air attack and its possibility. The strain of the people, the psychological effect of fear constantly harrowing the mind of the old and the young, the women and even animals are far more serious than what is indicated by statistics of deaths and injuries and damages to buildings. The amount of strain caused to people of vulnerable areas could be gathered by the fact that the threat is sometimes never absent for days together. Malta had over 600 alerts during the eleven months since Italy entered the war, which included over a hundred during April 1941. Since Hitler launched his big scale offensive against England during August, London has spent a total period of 1,056 hours, or six weeks, under air raid warnings. The Capital has had nearly 400 day and night warnings, ranging in time from a few minutes to an all-night alert, lasting over 14 hours, which is the longest record so far, although the greater part of the 24 hours has frequently been intermittently under warning. We cannot overlook the "far and wide terrorisation of the populace, women and children, sick and old, especially. The ill-health of vast numbers must be counted in, and the misery caused. The constant obsession of mind with a dead weight of fear to the exclusion of everything else must be reckoned."<sup>1</sup> And above all we must remember that all these happen to people who dwell at home far from the fighting fronts; who are powerless to do more than suffer passively the tragedy and the grief. This is evident from the condition of the people of England during the Great War when the threat of air attack hung over them for four years, although air raids were very much less deadly than what they are to-day. In fact more bombs have been dropped in one day recently than the total number that was dropped during the entire period of four years in the last war.

The estimated total damage during last war by air raids in England was: 1,414 killed, 3,416 wounded. The material damage

<sup>1</sup> L. E. O. Charlton, "War over England". For the following account see Part I.

was just under three million pounds.<sup>1</sup> About 270 tons in deadweight of bombs fell on British soil throughout the war in the course of 103 raids, air-ship and aeroplane combined. In all some 8,500 bombs were let fall small and great, from the light-weight incendiaries to the high-explosives upto a ton weight. Within two days in January 1940, some 3,000 bombs fell in Finland and within a month, 234 were killed, 264 seriously wounded and 210 slightly wounded by air raids.

Yet the threat of raids made the life of people intolerable. "It was a strange England: strange in city and town and strange over the country-side." For the better part of the two whole years until the air-ship ceased to raid, the whole country lived and suffered under a Zeppelin psychosis.

Full moon days were special nights of terror to the teeming masses of the Metropolis, and dark nights were dreaded when Zeppelins continued to raid. Panic was particularly severe among the foreign folk in the crowded East End. In the shelter of the tube stations the distress of Jewish mothers and children was very difficult to soothe. They would scream loudly, tearing their clothes and beating their breasts, while old men amongst them would pluck the hair from their beards in the fashion of the Scriptures. Too often, bands of young aliens belonging to neutral or allied countries, shedding every vestige of manhood, would behave like animals of the wild, sometimes brutally trampling people to death in a mad, insensate rush for safety.

Nightly, except when weather conditions obviously prevented raiding, hordes of people would slowly progress towards the tube stations nearest to their homes and there take up quarters for the night. They would throng the staircases, passages and platforms, occupying every square inch of available space. As many as a quarter of a million would find accommodation in this manner, the able-bodied accompanied by the sick and the halt. In such circumstances babies were born and those at the last gasp died. Sanitation there was none. Food litter lay around, and worse still, to add to the squalor of the scene, passengers on the system were sometimes unable either to take train or to alight at their destination, so densely packed was the multitude.

<sup>1</sup> The damages caused by the German bombing of Aalesund alone is estimated at several million kroner.

People left London to suburban terminus to camp in the fields till dawn. Groups of people belonging to this superadded local population would behave distractedly, praying for deliverance in camp-meeting style and cursing loudly, with arms extended, the brilliant autumnal moon.

This refers to London the Mecca of the raiders. The same things though in lesser measure happened over half the rest of the country. The eastern coastal fringe was particularly affected, and especially places such as Hull, Tyneside, Edinburgh and Harwich, important objectives and clearly demarcated by their situation at the head of estuaries. In those places also similar scenes of death and destruction resulted from the raids, and there as well murder of the mind conjointly with murder of the body was committed.

In the provincial hospital wards, likewise, babies were born deaf, deformed and blind owing to the terrorization of the expectant mothers. The case of the children was sad indeed and those of tender age suffered cruelly from nerve shock.

At school, the day after a raid the children would be encouraged by their teachers to sleep through the lesson hours so as to restore the nervous strength which the night of terror had dispersed.

False alarm, and numerous were the occasions, had as much force as actual attack in the sense of fear awakened. The harassing effect on old and young alike, of the nightly migrations from the towns to the shelter of mine workings and colliery drifts in the Midlands and North; to the open fields, caves, subterranean passages, and disused chalk pits by the dread of a raid, "is beyond computation."

Black-out had dangers and depressions. Pedestrians could only grope their way home by the light of hand-held electric torches fitfully switched on. Mill-working lasses in the Lancashire cotton factories were in jeopardy for darkness provides an opportunity for the violator. Here and there prosecution resulted for striking matches in the open. The motorist's plight was deplorable if his car headlights were on.

Even the very birds and animals developed air raid nerves. It was for them their war-time malady. Dogs would howl piteously. Cats sought the darkest recesses. In open country cows lowed uneasily and the horses in the fields stampeded up and down. Sheep lamented in the fold. In the coverts and amongst the stubble the

birds chattered when they should have slept and noises of alarm came from the pheasant and the partridge. Their alert and animal sense of hearing could detect the hum of engines in the air long before the sound reached the ear of man.

The people "were like patients in a hospital ward. They were reliant on the treatment and the medicines and felt certain they would get well if they did what the doctors told them to, refusing to say 'die'. They were as helpless and as passive."

This grave consequence is not accidental but deliberate. For demoralising the civil population and destroying the morale of the nation is one of the objects of air attack, and raids are planned accordingly.<sup>1</sup> Therefore it is that in addition to aerodromes, aeroplane manufacturing centres, seaplane bases, naval bases, harbours, bridges, railways and other military objectives and nerve centres and sources of production of essential supplies such as electric power-houses, telephone and telegraph centres, reservoirs and dams, hospitals, hospital ships and trains, educational institutions, historic memorials, even frightened civilians fleeing for life are attacked. In addition to towns and villages, isolated farms and peasants' homes were ruthlessly attacked in Finland by the Russians. Not a single place which the British Labour Delegation saw which had been hit in Hango was a military objective but in many places workers' houses were destroyed completely. The Russian bombers "primarily concentrated on demoralising the civilian population." No

<sup>1</sup> During the last two years in England, juvenile crime has shown an increase.

Sir Alexander Maxwell, Permanent Under-Secretary of the Home Office in his first report on juvenile delinquency in Britain since World War II began, has stated that the first four months of 1940, showed 50 per cent. increase in crimes committed by children under 18, chief offences being stealing, breaking into homes and shops.

Manchester suffered a record increase in juvenile crime-wave, namely 77 per cent. over 1939. Of 1,323 children indicted, on criminal charges, 797 were boys and girls of 14 or less. The rest ranged in age from 15 to 17.

If the immediate havoc wrought by the war on children's morals are appalling, the long-range damage it can cause is even greater and practically irremediable. Medical psychologists draw pointed attention to juvenile delinquency which is admittedly and alarmingly on the increase in Britain. The demoralising effect on the impressionable minds of children of the wanton and colossal destruction of property by air attacks is bound to develop in them a spirit of recklessness and destruction, to begin with breaking window and breaking into houses, etc.

Since the war began forgetfulness has increased by 50 per cent. Of the 20,000 gas-masks which have been mislaid in London Transport Vehicles, since the war started 4,000 remain "in stock". There is also a choice selection of tin helmets and torches complete with batteries.

more evidence is needed to make this apparent than the machine-gunning of civilian population and unarmed fishermen.

The destruction of property and the dislocation in the supply of services necessary for the normal functioning of the community have also become evident from recent raids. To achieve these aims crowded and congested cities are extremely well suited as experience proves. The three basic constituents of the civic organism, namely, the citizen, the city structures and the supply of essential services, are vitally affected by weapons used in air raids. If poison gas affects men by contaminating the atmosphere and buildings and roads, the high explosive bomb is dangerous because of its blast and splinters and the indirect damage through flying and falling masonry, and the incendiary bomb because of its power for effective conflagration. Liquid gas (persistent) incendiary and high explosive bombs are all dangerous to structures of all kinds normally found. Underground systems, particularly if they are not laid very deep are liable to be damaged by the high explosive if it strikes the road and incendiary bombs can set fire to buses and transport systems as it happened in Finland. The high explosive can dislocate transport services by destroying railways and roads, electric power-houses, and telephone exchanges, etc. A combined high explosive and liquid gas bomb is particularly dangerous to underground mains, and Lewisite gas used in adequate quantities can poison city water-supply sources and render the normal functioning of the community impossible.

---

## **CHAPTER II**

---

### **PREVENTION AND ESCAPE**



## CHAPTER II

---

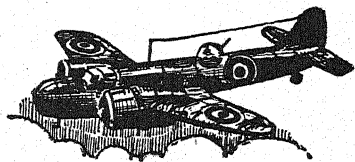
### PREVENTION AND ESCAPE

Since the destruction caused by aerial bombardment is terrible, the ideal method of dealing with the air menace would be to prevent the bomber getting through and discharging deadly weapons upon the targets below. No effort is, therefore, spared to concert measures which would prevent bombers from getting through.

Interceptor planes or fighter air-craft have been designed to chase bombers away and shoot them down. Anti-aircraft guns are erected to throw a barrage of fire and shatter them. Balloon barrages are being used to keep them high and prevent low-flying attack. Measures for escaping the bomber, should it succeed in forcing its way through our defences, are also devised. By ingenious measures targets are rendered inconspicuous to escape attention. Artificial lighting is obscured and the detection of objects made difficult at night. People are removed from vulnerable areas to places of safety and others given protective accommodation.

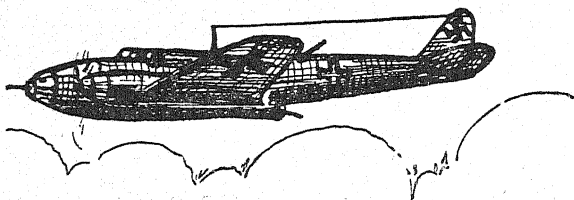
#### Fighter Air-craft

Fighter air-craft are lighter and very much faster than bombers. These form the first line of defence for they are intended to drive the bombers away or shoot them down. The Defiant, Spitfire and Hawker Hurricane of Great Britain are endowed with incredible speed. Such planes could chase the bombers, but although speed is essential to chase the bomber, success depends on other factors as well, such as the number of air-craft engaged and the mode of attack, the capacity of the pilots and climatic condition.

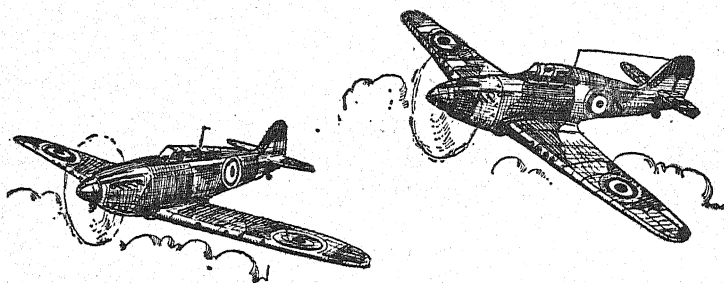


The celebrated Bristol "Blenheim" long range bomber. Capable of cruising at 200 m.p.h. for 5½ hours and with a maximum speed of 285 m.p.h. These machines are of all-metal-stressed-skin construction and have a total wing span of 56 feet 4 inches





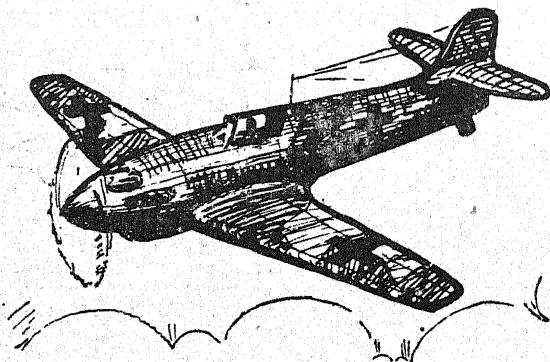
The Heinkel bomber "III K"



Fighter air-craft.

(a) The Supermarine "Spitfire" has eight machine-guns mounted at the wings and can develop a maximum speed of 367 m.p.h.

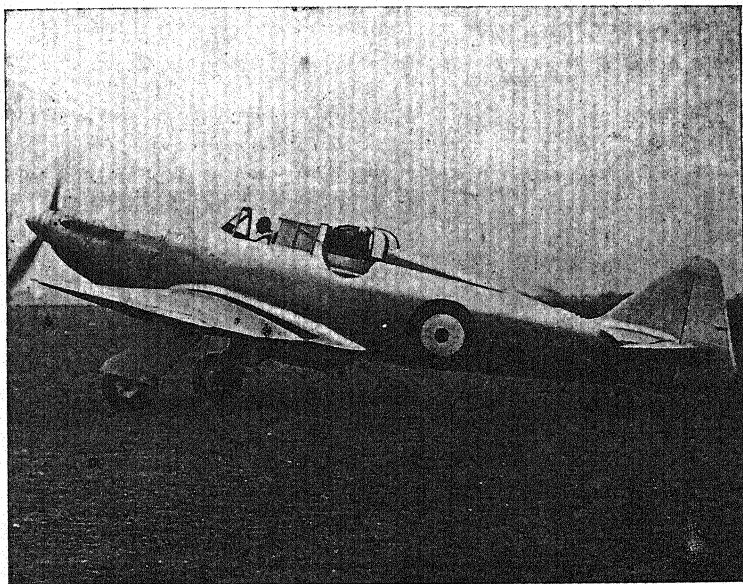
(b) The Hawker "Hurricane" single seater fighter has eight machine-guns and can develop a speed of over 330 m.p.h.



(c) The Messerschmidt "Me 109" fighter, considered the fastest air-craft in the world; has a speed of 354 m.p.h. It carries two machine-guns in the wings, two synchronised machine-guns above the engine and a 23 mm. cannon firing through the boss of the air screw.

Expert opinion asserted years ago that an air attack cannot be repulsed and met by the air arm alone. In his book, "Behind the Smoke Screen," General Groves set forth his conclusion thus :—

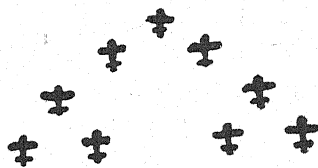
1. Air attack upon cities cannot as a rule be met and defeated in the air ;
2. Anti-aircraft guns cannot as a rule be relied upon to bring down aeroplanes ;
3. Local defence can only, in favourable circumstances, afford partial protection against aerial bombardment, and then only if it is proportional to the scale of attack ;
4. Under weather conditions such as are quite normal in England, local defence may be greatly discounted or entirely useless.



British Fighter-aircraft 'Defiant'

<sup>1</sup> Quoted in "The Menace of our National Defence," by Sir Norman Angell, pp. 67-68.

This is because aerial warfare involves action in three dimensions. The vast scale upon which it may be carried on greatly reduces even the chance of air forces meeting and engaging each other. According to Air Marshal Brooke Popham,<sup>1</sup> late Commandant of the R.A.F. Staff College, "Fighting in the Air on a large scale only takes place by accident or by mutual consent."



Major Oliver Stewart, the Air Correspondent of the *Morning Post* and distinguished fighting pilot in the last war supports the view and emphasises the difficulty of locating enemy planes. "In



Bombers flying in formation

order to pick up aeroplanes from an aeroplane with certainty, it would be necessary to be able to look everywhere at once."<sup>2</sup>

The air defence of a city does not imply merely the protection of the perimeter of the town; it necessitates the guarding of that area to a height of 25,000 feet. For large cities this would mean the guarding of many cubic miles of air. To find the enemy in this immensity, in any but the clearest weather, may be as difficult as finding a needle in a haystack.<sup>3</sup>

Recent events in Europe have shown that intercepting bombers is extremely difficult. The problem of intercepting enemy air-craft moving at speeds of four miles a minute and upwards at any height up to 20,000 feet and taking advantage of cloud and haze conditions is obviously one of great difficulty.<sup>4</sup> It can never be claimed however thorough the defence system may be that enemy air-craft "would not on occasion penetrate it."

<sup>1</sup> Quoted in "The Menace of our National Defence," by Sir Norman Angell, pp. 67-68.

<sup>2</sup> Vide Norman Angell, p. 70.

<sup>3</sup> Major-General Ashmore; quoted, *ibid.*, p. 72.

<sup>4</sup> Sir Kingsley Wood. Reply in House of Commons.

For instance in the North Sea air battle fought in the beginning of January 1940 the "twin-engined multi-gun Messer-Schmidts, latest of Germany's fastest fighters diving with the advantage of the sun behind them, were unable to shake the formation of the British planes. . . . Even the heaviest close range attacks were successfully beaten off by the British planes, keeping 'shoulder to shoulder' in tight formation."<sup>1</sup>



'Hurricanes' on patrol

When the R.A.F. air-craft in the last week of February 1940 attacked warships near Heligoland with bombs "anti-aircraft fire was encountered from ships and shore batteries. One British air-craft was attacked by three enemy fighters without success and it is believed one enemy fighter was forced down. No casualties or damage was suffered by any British air-craft during the opposition."

In another reconnaissance flight over the same territory "one of the British air-craft was attacked by five Messer-Schmidts. Having repulsed the five separate attacks, British air-craft returned home safely after completing their task."

<sup>1</sup> The succeeding account is based on official *communiques* and *Reuter's* news published in the "Hindu", Madras, during Sept., 1939 to June, 1943.

An authoritative description of the air battle states that a British bomber was attacked from above, from the left and from astern by five Messer-Schmidt fighters of 109 type. Despite the enemy's superior speed, and the fact that it was hit six times by machine-gun fire and one of the British machine-guns was virtually out of action, the bomber succeeded in evading its pursuers and returned safely to its base with valuable photographs previously obtained over enemy territory. All members of the crew escaped injury.

Many German raids on the East Coast of Great Britain have been carried out during daytime when fighters failed to make contact. Maybe it is due to mist and bad visibility, the better ability of enemy pilots and the suddenness with which the attack was made; but these factors cannot be ignored. When air-craft under cover of mist attacked with bombs and machine-gun fire, merchant ships on the East Coast of Scotland on the 10th January 1940 and dropped a number of bombs "fighter air-craft was sent up, but owing to bad visibility no contact was made." British planes arrived shortly after two large German bombers attacked a steamer off east coast but the Air Ministry does not know "whether they made contact with the enemy."

"British fighters ascended but failed to make contact" a fortnight later when three planes flew over the Shetlands. The planes dodged behind the clouds and spent nearly two hours flying backwards and forwards across the island. A few days later a Heinkel which attacked an armed British trawler at Great Yarmouth "escaped into the clouds off the Scottish coast after being intercepted by fighters."

"Two German planes bombed and machine-gunned the *City of Bath* off the Firth of Tay. The liner replied with anti-aircraft guns and the planes flew away just before the arrival of three British fighters. After a game of hide and seek in the clouds the planes made a second attack on the *City of Bath*."

Two enemy bombers were observed off the East Coast of Scotland on one morning, during the close of January, at less than 600 feet high with a British plane in close pursuit. The Heinkel bomber swooped down on a patrol vessel, dropped two bombs and made off. "The plane appeared playing hide and seek in the cloud with R.A.F. planes which had earlier driven off another big grey plane. After they had chased the first one out to the sea, the other

appeared further south ; the " enemy aircraft . . . was pursued by fighter and coastal patrol air-craft with results not yet known."

" Ships batteries, shore defences and fighter air-craft combined to drive off the enemy," says an Admiralty *Communique* which, however, admits that " German air-craft made a raid on the Fleet Anchorage at Scapa Flow. About fourteen enemy air-craft reached their objective. A considerable number of bombs were dropped, one hitting a warship . . . ."

More than 50 high explosive bombs as well as many scores of smaller incendiary bombs fell in West Orkneys ; " despite strong fighter and anti-aircraft defence the German planes carried out their orders successfully."

Bombers come escorted by blocks of fighters on both sides or escorted by fighters circling in front and above them, or by blocks of fighters " stepped up " into the clouds to attack the targets.

The bombing planes approach the enemy area in a tightly packed mass at great heights, about 8,000 feet, " stepped up " in the sky above and behind or in successive tiers of escorting fighters. When the enemy fighters approach the bombers the escorting fighters dive down on the intercepting planes while the bombers keep on flying to the destination. Interception by fighter air-craft becomes very difficult.

Moreover fighter-bombers are now used and they are hard to deal with. Fighters are also now used to attack the enemy. The consensus of opinion from Greece and Crete is that low-flying fighters are more deadly than dive-bombers !

German fighters claimed to be incredibly fast, seem to be no more successful. In the course of a daylight reconnaissance of Heligoland Bight on March 16, 1940, British machines bombed a number of German Naval Patrol vessels between Borkum and Heligoland. The next day one British air-craft swooped from 6,000 to a few hundred feet and dropped a salvo of bombs on vessels. The bomber came under concentrated fire of the patrol vessels but was not hit. Other machines encountered anti-aircraft fire and fighter attacks but all returned safely. Why did the British bombers succeed against the faster and heavily armed Messer-Schmidts in the battle in the North Sea in the second week of January 1940? Well-judged leadership, fighting discipline and steady formation of flying are considered responsible. The bombers were nine Blenheims, flying

in formation, at a height of 5,000 feet. When the leader sighted the Messer-Schmidts he closed up the formation and turned off his course in order to lead the Germans further from their bases and dived to sea-level in order to reduce the number of directions from which an attack could be made.

The Messer-Schmidt's top speed is reported to be about 365 miles an hour and they are heavily armed with machine-guns and cannons. "The fight lasted twenty minutes during which the Messer-Schmidts delivered attacks with great rapidity both from ahead, from on the beam and from astern. Despite the simultaneous attack from different directions, the Messer-Schmidts failed to make any appreciable impression on the steadiness of the British formation."

A careful review of the war in the air during the first four months of the struggle, September to December 1939, makes it clear that bombers have successfully escaped fighters. In the words of a well-known authority on matters aerial, "the single-seat and two-seat fighters—interceptors as we call them, pursuit ships in America, *appareils de chasse* in France, and *Jagdflugzeugen* in Germany—have had plenty of practice in all belligerent countries. The comparatively few bombers on each side which have flown over enemy territory have been intercepted and chased by so many defensive fighters that the wonder is that any of them returned.

In some of the bomber *versus* fighter affairs we have discovered that a four-gun power-driven turret in the tail of a bomber is well able to tackle a four-gun chaser."

The problem of countering the night bomber, which is engaging the best scientific brains of all belligerent countries, still defies solution. Britain is "very hopeful of finding the means to defeat the night bomber but the problem is still very far from being solved," according to Air Marshal Sir Philip Joubert. He said:—"In this war we are coping with an enemy flying up to three times as fast as he did in the last war and flying twice as high with all sorts of aids to help him to escape detection. Our fighter boys have a stiff problem before them. They have to have something more than cat's eyes to see the enemy."

The *Luftwaffe* attempted to invade England in daylight and by sheer force of numbers to beat down its defences. That effort cost them dear. They sent over individual bombers using the cloud as cover to attack vital objectives. Loss of many of these lone raiders

made the change again. The third scheme was to send occasional strong forces to bomb British air fields and communications. One of these attacks lost 20 per cent. of its numbers. Then they tried escorting small numbers of bombers with powerful fighter forces to vital points. In this fighting British losses became heavier, but led to a greater toll of German Air Force and in particular its fighters.

Germans then adopted night bombing, "a form of attack hard to parry," in the words of Air Marshal Joubert.

Even the German air expert, General Milch, has admitted to the German public the difficulties of aerial defence. Exhorting Germans not to expect miracles from German anti-aircraft defences, General Milch said, that there were technical limits for every night defence. Defence by the night fighter was the most difficult of all, it could only be solved after the air-craft had been located by search-lights.

An official *Communique* about air battles over London issued in September 1940 stated: Enemy bombers rarely get through in daytime; most people carry on work during the day raids. But night raids are a different matter altogether. German bombers get through despite gun barrage and by nine o'clock the streets are deserted. Since shrapnel from guns can cause injuries, all travel is considerably restricted. As early as 6 o'clock people enter underground shelters equipped with blankets, food, books and many thousands sleep in underground railway stations. Shelters above the ground which were recently built all over London are unpopular, for people prefer to sleep well below ground level.

Great improvements have been made in the last two years in fighter air-craft but this has not prevented bombers getting through. On the other hand fighters themselves are produced to harass the enemy and escort bomber squadrons in their deadly missions. Bombers are also improved and day light raids are again coming into vogue by improved bombers now manufactured in large numbers.

The Dieppe raid has demonstrated that defence by air-craft is not very effective. In the Allies' descent on Dieppe, air-craft covered these landings as arranged and then continued to cover ships and men throughout the operations. It was a heavily defended section of the coast. The greatest air battles of the war took place. The Germans were forced to call up air-craft reinforcements from



all parts of occupied France, Holland and Belgium. Many of these enemy air-craft were engaged before they ever reached the areas of operations, large formations being broken up and dispersed particularly over the mouth of the Somme. During the engagement, 91 German air-craft are officially known to have been destroyed and about twice that number have probably been destroyed and damaged. In all these operations 98 of allied air-craft were lost and the pilots of 30 of these were saved.

Allied bombers carried out an air *blitz* over Western Europe one morning early in October 1942. American Flying Fortress and Liberator bombers destroyed or damaged a number of enemy planes and attacked industrial targets in Northern area. Of the 115 American Bombers all but four got back and all the 500 British bombers returned unscathed. It was reported by the Headquarters of the Bomber Command of the Eighth Air Force of the United States Army that 48 enemy air-craft were destroyed by Flying Fortresses and Liberators during this bombing attack upon the steel and locomotive works at Lille. Thirty-eight were probably destroyed and nineteen damaged. One flying Fortress destroyed four of nine Messer-Schmidt 109's which attacked it over Lille. The ball turret gunner himself shot down three of the Messer-Schmidts. The fortress was attacked from below, but skilful manœuvring and deadly firing by the gunners turned the tables on the attacking air-craft. Another Fortress accounted for two of six Fockewulfe 190's which attacked it. Another Fortress also shot down two Fockewulfe's 190's.

On the night of Jan. 21, 1942 air-craft of the bomber command four of which are missing, attacked objectives in the Ruhr. The Germans made a great effort to defend the Ruhr area with night fighters and anti-aircraft guns of all calibres when the R.A.F. resumed the offensive pounding the target for the ninth time in January, 1942. Several bombers fought off attacks by German air-craft and returned safe after bombing.

When American bombers attacked the Northpoint power station at Hong-Kong, all bombs landed in the target area and the power station was destroyed. Later they attacked successfully the White Cloud aerodrome, north-east of Canton. The Japanese attempts at intercepting this Bomber formation, proved unsuccessful. According to General Stilwell's communique, ten

Japanese fighters were destroyed and five probably destroyed by an American formation of bombers and fighters after attacking docks and shipping in the Hong-Kong-Kowloon area and dropping 20 tons of bombs.

Twenty Zero fighters pounced on the allied heavy bombers while they were returning home after bombing ships in Amboina Harbour. But all allied planes returned after shooting down two Zeros for certain and probably one other.

Four Liberator Bombers shot down 12 Japanese fighters and damaged 6 more of a formation of 25 in a violent running fight lasting an hour over the north coast of New Guinea when an allied attack was made on Rabaul by the light of a nearly full moon in January 1943.

Although the Germans had a considerable number of night fighters and there was a bright moon to help them and in spite of the many German air-craft both along the route and over the city itself a large force of British four-engined bombers raided Berlin on the night of January 17, 1943 for the second night in succession, and dropped their loads of incendiaries and high explosives including 4,000 and 8,000-pound bombs.

For the loss of only one air-craft the R.A.F. carried out its biggest raid of the new year early in 1943 by a large force of bombers all of them four-engined, raiding Berlin for about an hour dropping great weight of bombs including 8,000 pounders and tens of thousands of incendiaries. In all their four attacks in July 1942 over such well defended areas as Hamburg and Duisburg, the percentage of losses did not exceed 5, of the total number of bombers employed, according to the Air Ministry News Service.

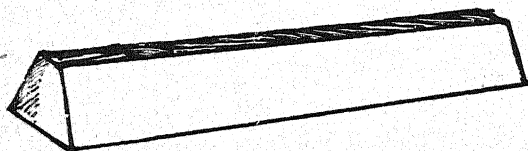
When modern fighter-bombers are used defence becomes more difficult. Designed to deal effectively with fighter air-craft, the fighter-bomber has proved its superiority in bombing the enemy. In the most dangerous fighter-bomber mission of the United States Air Force in China towards the close of November 1942, American planes shot down in air battles over Canton 23 Japanese planes and destroyed probably six more. Communiques from General MacArthur's Head Quarters testify to the formidable character of American Fighter-bombers. Towards the close of August, 1942 they attacked and sank several transports and in an attack on Buna,

locators and constitute a potential danger to bombers. Mounted in strategic positions or near important targets they are intended to keep bombers away. It is now part of the defence organisation in most European countries. The anti-aircraft army which was



A typical Anti-Aircraft Gun

6,000 strong three years ago, is to-day one hundred and twelve thousand strong in Great Britain. British anti-aircraft guns and search-lights are spread in a white chequer board over the land, by lonely copses, alongside farm buildings, in hills, and in fen country keeping increasing watch over the country day and night.



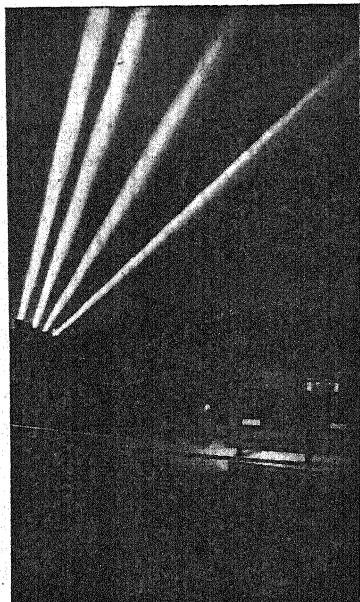
Anti-aircraft shell shrapnel picked up in Spain. The disc is about the size of a penny and the rod is  $2\frac{1}{2}$  inches long.

The anti-aircraft shell fragments and explosion can shatter the aeroplane, and even a nearby bursting of the shell is dangerous.

but the fact is that even a nearby explosion is difficult to obtain.<sup>1</sup> For as the British Ministry of Munitions pointed out during the last war, "Assuming an aeroplane to be travelling at 100 miles an hour at an altitude of 8,000 ft. it is obvious that during the time a project-



A.-A. Gun Shells



Search-lights in action

ile from an anti-aircraft gun took to reach this height the aeroplane could have altered its direction and movements in three directions over a very wide range. In order to secure a hit on it no less than 162,000 anti-aircraft guns would have to fire simultaneously."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is reported that a new type of anti-aircraft shell has been developed in the United States. "The shell is fired in the usual manner, but it releases a parachute trailing hundreds of feet of steel tape designed to foul the propellers of the raiding air-craft." (*The Hindu*, Jan. 15, 1940). Another type is reported to be used in Germany, and are described as picturesque by the R.A.F. pilots against whom they were used. The efficacy of these shells is yet to be proved.

<sup>2</sup> Quoted ; Norman Angell.

*Flying Mine* : A floating "Parachute barrage" from which cables and mines are suspended, is the latest Nazi anti-aircraft invention. "An aerial mine is projected like an ordinary anti-aircraft shell. When it explodes, a cable about 230 yards long is unfurled and is kept in place by a parachute which opens at the same time.

A charge of explosive is suspended at the end of the cable. When a plane approaches, its air-stream drags the parachute forward and the explosive bursts against the plane, it is claimed. The charge is so timed that it will not explode after ten minutes. This invention is said to have been successful the first time it was tested during an R.A.F. raid on an industrial centre.

Recent experience supports this view. In the fourth R.A.F. night survey of Germany carried out in February, over heavily fortified areas in Western Germany, the bombers were caught in beams of multi-coloured search-lights and this activity was greatest ever encountered in the neighbourhood of Cologne and Dusseldorf. One section of the flight was under intense fire for some minutes and for another spell dodged spasmodic bursts. "Screaming onions" (incendiary shells which in some cases are linked by chains designed to wrap them crashing to the earth in flames) were discharged at the air-craft but they missed the mark. One battery of four guns fired greenish coloured tracer balls, and elsewhere red and orange fire balls were shot under the air-craft. These long distance bombers "ran the gauntlet of the whole German anti-aircraft defence with one exception."

These flights were carried out at a high altitude, but the British attack on Sylt at the end of March 1940 provides an instance of low-flying raid carried out over specific targets protected by anti-aircraft defences. Successive waves of bombers attacked during a bright moonlight night, the seaplane base at Hornum. For seven hours singly and in relays they maintained continuous assault on the seaplane base and obtained direct hits between the hangars and close to them. A vast quantity of bombs was dropped and reports indicate extensive damage done to hangars, workshops and slipways. All the British bombers returned safely with the exception of one. When two British bombers suddenly swooped from low-lying clouds at terrific speed followed by other planes over Sylt the sirens began to wail and anti-aircraft guns and search-lights came into action. The barrage was heard over whole of the island, and the effect was that of a giant fire-works display. Yet the raid was successful and was carried out by waves of bombers every half an hour from 8 p.m. onwards. One of them dropped several bombs on the Hindenburg dam resulting in huge flames.

The damage to Sylt include direct hits with high explosive on two hangars, on the railway connecting Hornum and List, on the land entrance to the jetty, on or near the seaplane slipway, and on the oil storage tanks.

"Forty-nine planes took part in the raid and each worked strictly to the time-table. Each plane bombed the base at the appointed time and from the appointed height in spite of the big barrage of fire from the German anti-aircraft guns, shore batteries

and from which projected reddish missiles like the Roman candles. The planes returned back in the order in which they had left. They dropped altogether forty-two tons of bombs. Each plane carried about two tons of explosives including several other missiles and incendiary bombs."

A formation of British Bombers penetrated enemy defence in the Jade estuary in April 1940, and successfully reconnoitred the Wilhelmshaven naval base, where an enemy warship was attacked with bombs. Further south, four enemy destroyers were also attacked. No damage or casualties were suffered by British aircraft all of which returned safely.

A German warship lying off Bergen was attacked and bombed subsequently by air-craft of the R.A.F. Bomber Command. One large cruiser was hit and other ships were probably damaged. The attack which was made by relays of air-craft in quick succession was delivered by a strong force of long range bombers in the face of intense anti-aircraft fire from the warships. A series of bombing attacks were made by air-craft in sections in line astern. "Despite the intense fire to which they were subjected all British air-craft returned safely making a night landing at their base after a flight of approximately eight hours' duration."

Russian air raids over Viipuri further prove that even if they were alert and active the target can be bombed successfully. Forty-seven Russian planes raided Viipuri on the 3rd February, 1940, poured over 500 bombs into the town and obtained 150 direct hits, damaging all principal buildings. It was a daylight raid and the sirens wailed without break all day. "The machines flew too high to be in danger for anti-aircraft guns."

Especially for an attack with incendiary bombs which can be rained over a town, air-craft need not come low. Even those who pin their faith in active defence, in fighter air-craft and ground batteries to deal successfully with bombers, hesitate to assert their effectiveness. They feel that mass attacks on Britain had not yet been made to judge the efficacy of preventive measures and admit, "if the Germans were prepared to loose, say 1,000 out of 2,000 of their bombers, . . . they might inflict serious losses."

A new method developed to counter night bombing is the method called box barrage. It is in operation now over London at night. Having determined the height, course and speed of

the incoming air-craft, 4 anti-aircraft guns working in conjunction "box in" the invader; unless the enemy pilots are very quick and dive and evade they are apt to be disabled if not directly hit.

The anti-aircraft defence of London against night flying raiders is now worked on two separate methods, the anti-aircraft guns firing with the aid of a new predictor system and night flying fighters co-operating with search-lights. Each system of defence is allotted a separate area of sky.

A new predictor for the guns is the essential part of the new system. It predicts with greater accuracy, "plotting of the position and height of the bomber" and sends the message to the A.-A. gun position. "To reduce the margin of error and increase the chances of an aeroplane flying into a burst even though it should change course between the moment of prediction and the arrival of the shell, a method of firing termed the "box barrage" is used. That means that four or more guns served by the predictor fire practically simultaneously, endeavouring to "box" the aeroplane between four shell-bursts, all or any of which may cripple it. Which-ever way the machine turns it still finds itself within the box. Rapid changes of height is perhaps the best method of evasion. But when such action has to be taken one object is achieved—bomb aiming is impossible."

Prediction is a most delicate operation in which allowance must be made for atmospheric conditions, the fact that the target sometimes travels two miles between the instant a shell is fired and when it bursts, and the evasive tactics of the enemy flying on a curved course and changing course after the gun is fired.

A large number of high explosive bombs were dropped damaging a hospital, commercial premises and many private houses, although the ground defences put up a heavy fire in a South East coast of England, in the beginning of April, 1942. Intense anti-aircraft barrage was put up against the raiders continuing without break for some time while concentration of search-lights swept the sky. After a lull there was more anti-aircraft fire but bombs were again dropped!

The R.A.F. has shattered Field Marshal Goering's dream of inviolability of Germany's aerial frontiers by its thousand-bomber raids. The Norway chapter contained a stirring record of what a few determined young men can do under hazardous conditions

against heavy odds. Then in France and the Low Countries the R.A.F. made great holes in the armour of invincibility which appeared like a shield of the German Army, from above.

It is estimated that British bombers have flown more than three million miles over a country, where, Marshal Goering boasted, no British aeroplane could penetrate. British pilots flew so low that at times one felt the machines would strip the roofs off the houses.

British bombers attacking the centre of Berlin one night in March 1941, had to make their way through an intense box barrage. In spite of this attempt to protect the heart of the German capital, a large force of British bombers crossed and re-crossed Berlin. Some flew along Unter Den Linden—within a mile or so of which are five of the main railway stations—keeping on a steady course in order to take their aim.

According to the Air Ministry "compared with the successes of the British night fighters, the *Luftwaffe's* attempts to counter British night bombing have proved a signal failure."

An Air Ministry News Service states that Anti-Aircraft batteries had been bombed in the face of terrific fire and search-lights machine-gunned and put out of action in July 1940. Concrete runways had been hit and wrecked, hangars set on fire and machines destroyed on the ground.

The R.A.F. has scored direct hits in several important places in Berlin. Bombs have been dropped in the Hermann Goering Strasse, only 10 feet away from the house of Dr. Goebbels.

The interruption of work during air raid alerts is more widespread and more serious in Germany than in Britain, according to an official survey based on the latest and most reliable reports reaching London.

Nazi pilots have sailed through the barrage of A.-A. gun shells on south-east coast of England, with incredible recklessness.

The R.A.F.'s new Beau fighter air-craft which sprang into fame at the beginning of the "battle of the full moon" scored a further brilliant success in March 1941. Two pilots flew over an enemy aerodrome in France during one night. Bombers were on the ground, but the R.A.F. pilots braved a heavy anti-aircraft barrage to come down low, destroyed two search-lights, damaged anti-aircraft guns and set at least one enemy bomber on fire.



Many waves of British bombers penetrated a curtain of anti-aircraft fire over Kiel, but dense clouds of smoke soon hampered the search-lights and in the end the very weight and resolution of the attack bore down the defences of what had been one of the most heavily defended areas in Germany.

Enemy warships under construction in Bolhm and Voss ship-building yards of Hamburg were heavily attacked by R.A.F. bombers. Tons of high explosive and over one thousand fire-bombs were dropped on shipyard and docks in the immediate vicinity in a raid which began soon after dark. A heavy ground haze, great search-light activity and intense anti-aircraft fire made conditions difficult for the raiding crew, but by making individual attacks from different directions and heights they were able to evade ground defences and press home their attacks.

The heavily defended naval base at Wilhelmshaven has been attacked by relays of heavy bombers of the R.A.F. as also numerous anti-aircraft batteries in Germany and the German-occupied territory.

In high altitude level-flight bombing, air-craft are out of sight in the clear sky. Harold Francis McEnnes, European representative for the Bendix Aviation Corporation, told of a raid on the Citroen automobile plant outside Paris. "There were about 250 planes in the attack," said he. "They were so high you could not see them but their number was estimated by the number of bombs dropped. Their accuracy was terrific. Of all the bombs dropped . . . the majority plunged right into the factory."

Such high level and at the same time accurate bombing is made possible by modern bomb-sights, which help the pilots. It is claimed that a Canadian pilot has perfected a bomb sight which would enable bombs to be dropped from planes four miles off with the accuracy only possible now from "tree top" heights. The pilot himself will aim the bombs by simply pressing a button when the target is spotted on a panel about a foot square, which he watches.

The modern bomb sight for example is a most valuable instrument and was used by the late Capt. Kelly to sink the Japanese Battleship *Haruna*.

•

Level-flight bombers which fly at high altitudes are out of effective range of anti-aircraft batteries, and also force pursuit planes to climb higher and farther to give battle.

Thirty thousand feet and more was the common height at which raiders crossed the coast and made for London in the eventful days of 1940. *Reuter's* Air Correspondent pertinently pointed out that interception well over five miles up is difficult since manoeuvrability of the defending fighter is very much reduced near its ceiling where the controls are apt to be sluggish. At that height, the enemy is well out of range of the anti-aircraft fire. This Nazi tactics coupled with superiority in numbers accounted chiefly for the small losses the *Luftwaffe* suffered laterly.

By skilful evasive tactics and gliding attacks, the R.A.F. night raiders are slowly getting the measure of the ground defences with the result that casualties have been remarkably few. In daylight raids, they have attacked the aerodromes at Schipol and Haamstede.

Shooting down a bomber does not seem to eliminate the danger of air raids. When the bomber is shot down, its load of bombs may explode and cause severe damage to surroundings. A huge crater was caused when a bomber with a load of bombs fell in S. W. London and exploded.

When a Jap plane over Rangoon was machine-gunned by an R.A.F. Fighter one moonlight night in January 1942, the plane like a meteor crashed to the earth with a terrific roar and simultaneously its bombs exploded.

According to an Air Ministry Communique towards the middle of January 1943, a small force of raiders made London their target and were harried for hours by a thunderous and spectacular barrage. The raiders flew through anti-aircraft fire which some Londoners described as the most shattering of the war and remarkable for its great curtains of fire which rose from all parts of London. Still incidents of bomb damage were reported and fires started by incendiaries. The raiders flew across London at high speed. In the second attack, Londoners saw a spout of flame shoot up just before a bomber fell in a blazing mass. A plane crashed on a small recreation ground missing several houses and other buildings, which would otherwise have been destroyed. There was terrific explosion as it hit the ground. During the raids an anti-aircraft shell fell in the garden at Buckingham Palace, destroying a plot of Brussels

sprouts. In one London road high explosive bombs damaged 20 houses extensively.

Mr. Churchill as First Lord of the Admiralty in his speech in the House of Commons in April<sup>1</sup> 1940 revealed that 60 German air-craft successfully attacked Scapa Flow on 10-4-1940. "In all there have been five raids on Scapa Flow—in the first a cruiser was hit which necessitated several weeks' repairs . . ." According to Churchill's testimony Scapa Flow could deliver the "heaviest concentration of anti-aircraft fire in the world," but in the April raid in which 60 air-craft took part and raided in waves the enemy suffered a loss of "6 air-craft" not very much when compared to the defensive fire.

In the Norwegian campaign Nazi planes succeeded in bombing British battleships and cruisers. Two cruisers were damaged by splinters. One very heavy bomb hit the flagship *Rodney* but her very strong deck armour resisted the impact and she was unaffected in any way by the explosion except that three officers and seven men were injured. The cruiser *Aurora* subjected to five successive bombing attacks pressed home with courage, escaped, but the destroyer *Gurkha* accompanying her was hard hit and sank.

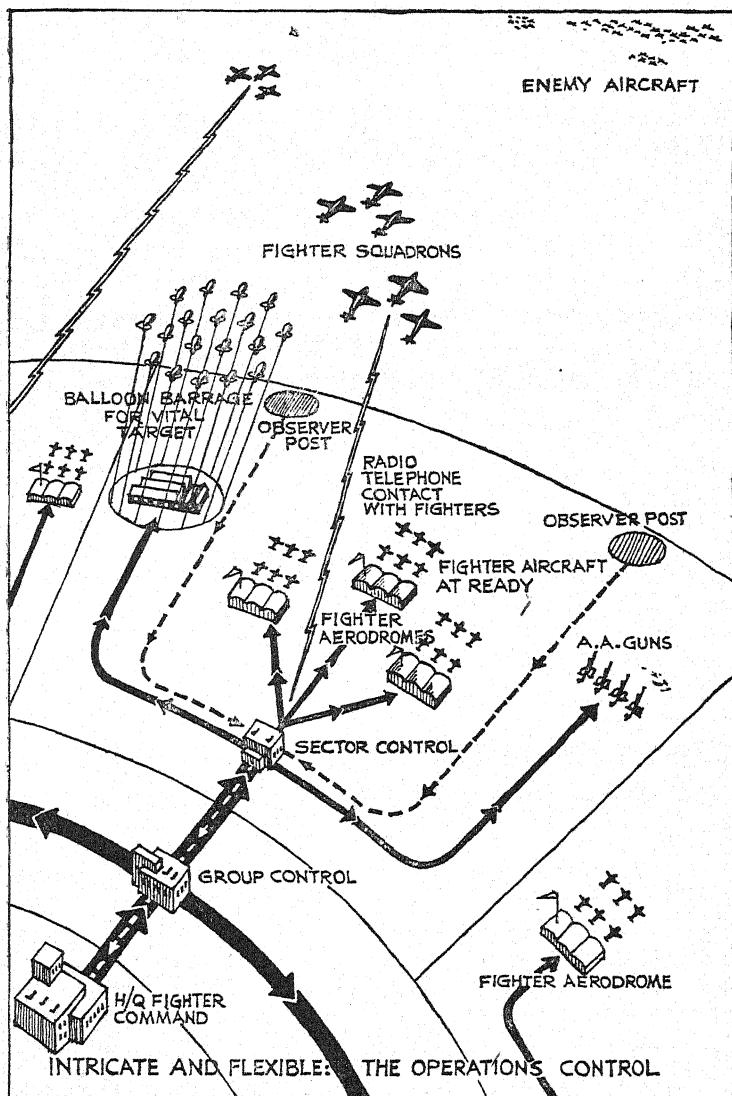
A highly successful daylight raid was carried out by the R.A.F. over Rotterdam, a well protected area, in July 1941 resulting in damage to twenty-two ships. Direct hits were made on many ships including one vessel of over 15,000 tons. A 10,000-ton ship was hit in the middle. In all seventeen ships of an estimated tonnage between 90,000 and 100,000 tons were put out of action either permanently or for a long time to come. Five more ships totalling between 40,000 and 45,000 tons were severely damaged.

The R.A.F. has succeeded in straddling with sticks of the latest type of heavy bombs the German battle-cruisers *Scharnhorst* and *Gneisenau* at Brest. British pilots in a suicide dive, dropped to 1000 feet before releasing their loads, in a region so well protected by anti-aircraft devices.

A huge fire broke out in one of the cruisers and could be seen 80 miles out at sea.

Japanese bombers and fighters, considered out of date and of "a low quality", have managed to sink one of Britain's latest and

<sup>1</sup> *The Hindu*, 11-4-1940.



Organisation and plan of operations to detect and intercept enemy raiders by fighters and anti-aircraft guns

mightiest battleships. Japanese bombers, considered to develop a speed of under 300 miles per hour maximum, escorted by fighters caused terrible destruction to Pacific harbours and American battleships.

A new tactic already come into vogue threatens to undermine seriously the efficacy of anti-aircraft batteries. Raiders come without making noise and no warning is possible of impending attack, as reports of Russian raids over Finland indicate. Twenty were killed and fifty wounded in a series of air raids over Abo during the close of January 1940. Dozens of houses were destroyed. "Fifty Soviet bombers silently swept down on the city with engines cut out. The raids were the worst Abo hitherto suffered."

Gliding long distances is possible and it is estimated that by reaching high altitudes and gliding after closing the machine a distance of even 100 miles could be covered. Sirens and sound detectors could be deceived and anti-aircraft batteries would never come into action.

It is also considered possible to aim bombs upon targets protected by anti-aircraft guns without bringing the bombers into their range.<sup>1</sup> The rocket glider type of bomb is mentioned as the weapon which would neutralise the value of anti-aircraft guns and ground defences.

Modern pilots risk their life if the target is worth the sacrifice and attack it with suicidal recklessness. No defence can save it from such attack. A German Battle Cruiser at Brest on April 6, 1941 was severely damaged below the water line, by Mr. Kenneth Campbell, posthumous V.C., in a suicide attack, in the face of withering fire from the protective batteries behind. His air-craft did not return.

The United States air-craft carrier "Hornet" sunk in the battle of Santa Cruz Island on October 26, 1942, was attacked by Japanese bombers in two waves. They lost 50 out of the 54 machines in the first attack and nine out of ten in the second attack. Two Japanese planes fell on the deck starting furious fires. The Japanese scored many hits especially with the second raid which was composed of six torpedo bombers and four dive bombers.

It was revealed by Petty Officer James H. Prince that a woman was at the controls of one of the Japanese planes which made

<sup>1</sup>"Ajax," Air Strategy for Britain.

a suicide dive on the aircraft-carrier "Hornet."<sup>1</sup>

We should also reckon the danger of A.-A. shell splinters falling on the ground. When a shell from the anti-aircraft gun bursts, it forms a number of splinters and also sends out shrapnel bullets. These fall to the ground with great speed and can easily kill a man, though a steel helmet gives a good deal of protection. They killed a number of Londoners in 1916-1918; according to Prof. Haldane in some raids they caused as many casualties as the enemy bombs.

The sharp attacks on London in the third week of January 1943, with a heavy loss of life among London school children, although not comparable with the heavy raids of two years ago, gave something like a shock to the public. The worst feature of these raids and one perturbing to the official mind was the laxity of the public to warnings to get under cover when the enemy was about. Quite a number were killed by falling metal and bursting anti-aircraft shells. As a Press Correspondent in London pointed out, when scores of tons of steel are being shot up 15,000 feet into the air all of it must come down. Yet the complaint of Civil Defence officials is that people will rubberneck or stand gazing up to the heavens when aerial combats are waged. The R.A.F. and ground defences can handle the enemy in the skies but cannot save fools who unnecessarily expose themselves.

### Balloon Barrage

Bombers flying low and fast render the task of anti-aircraft batteries difficult, for the heavy guns cannot be quickly adjusted to take successful aim at rapidly moving objects. To prevent low-flying attack which is particularly destructive, the Balloon Barrage is improvised. The idea behind the barrage is simple. They are light balloons floating all round the city or other important objectives and anchored to earth by fine but very strong steel cables. These make a veritable tangle of wires all round the target to a height of some thousands of feet. It is considered almost impossible for aeroplanes to dodge in and out among them particularly at night. Bombers attempting to get through would hit one of these wires and although these may be broken, its propellers or wing or tail would get torn off and mark the end of the bomber.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *The Hindu*, 18-1-43.

<sup>2</sup> L. Matters, "The Balloon Barrage." *The Hindu*, 24-9-1939. For the Balloon Barrage exercises and the Opposition view on the matter, *vide* the issues of the 26-7-1939 and 29-7-1939.

The main purpose of the balloon barrage seems to be to keep the bombers high up, and to prevent them from coming low and effectively bombing the targets. Higher up, the bursting shell of the anti-aircraft guns and fighter planes would deter the bomber. These three are complementary and are intended to keep the bomber very high from where it could bomb only at random.

The purpose is to prevent dive-bombing and low-flying attacks and to drive enemy planes up so high that they come within range of anti-aircraft guns and can better be dealt with by fighter planes. The steel cables to which the balloons are attached are strong enough to cut through a colliding plane.

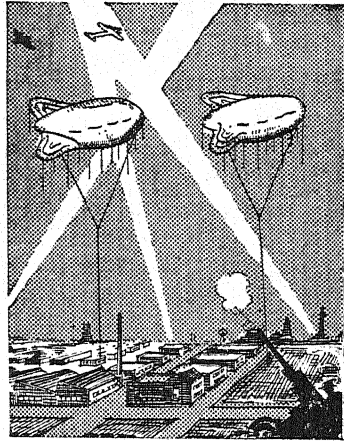
Vessels sailing in convoy are now equipped with barrage balloons against the dive-bomber. The technique of the bomber pilot is to swoop at great speed almost vertically over his intended victim, to flatten out at the very last moment, and then discharge his bombs from a very low altitude. The balloons are an effective answer to these low-level attacks, for dive-bombing under these conditions becomes an extremely risky business. The balloons are flown by patrol vessels, which are all manned by R.A.F. personnel.

Balloon Barrages serve London and other British cities as part of the defence. British balloon barrages operated by British technicians are aiding in the defence of the United States Pacific Coast. There may be 500 to 1,000 balloons around the city of London, and the system has been extended to ports and harbours and other important areas in England and Scotland. Bombing planes will always endeavour, if they can, to unload their deadly cargoes on specific targets, and these would naturally be what are called the vulnerable spots. The chance of success in such aiming is obviously greatest when the bomber can get close ; if he cannot fly low, his aim must be erratic. He can drop his bombs from any height and get some destructive result somewhere, but while he flies high he has to take " pot luck ". More than that he is in his greatest danger when he flies high and cannot swoop, dive and dodge.

The Germans have a device similar to the balloon barrage. These are known as *Flaming Onions*. These are a number of parachute shells linked together by wire and when fired into the air drop slowly and provide a spectacle as though a number of onions are strung together. Yet another device reported are shells which release miles of coiled wire in mid air. A barrage of

these wire fences in the sky would indeed be a very effective defence against raiders.

If the Air Staff thinks highly of the efficacy of the balloon barrage, there are others who hold that the balloon barrage is an over-rated protection—who point out that cutting edge planes are being experimented in Germany. It is announced that a bumper device is also fitted to bombers to cope with balloon barrage cables. German Heinkel bombers are attached with this device. Recent events have confirmed their belief. Royal Air Force bombers successfully dodged through the wires and bombed railway lines in Germany. And Nazi pilots have shot down the balloons in flame and attacked the targets.



The Balloon Barrage

German fighters over Dover have also shot down barrage balloons. Thick fog and low cloud above which the balloons floated, obscured the raiders from the anti-aircraft defences, but they were given a hot reception. Some balloons were shot down.

During the afternoon of 29-8-1940 a lone Messer-Schmidt over a South East area played a daring game of ninepins with the town's barrage of balloons. It cruised so casually over the town that it went unchallenged and then swooped on a balloon and shot it down in flames and zoomed away returning a few minutes later, shooting down two balloons close together. Then sailing recklessly through a furious barrage the raider dived so low that the Swastika on the wings was visible in the streets and attacked and felled another balloon before hurtling out apparently unscathed.

In the closing days of August 1940, during a savage attack over a South East Coast town by Nazi "Yellow Nose" squadron, the ace pilots of Germany shot down some of the balloon barrages. A savage attack was launched in the glare of early morning sunshine. Some balloons fell in flames as twelve of the "Yellow Nose" squadron



swooped on them from different directions, their machine-guns spitting incendiary bullets. Anti-aircraft guns of every calibre thundered into action, filling the sky with bursting shells and "flaming onions". The raiders pressed home the attack with suicidal recklessness. Shrapnel and spent incendiary bullets littered the streets of the town like hail. Finally the raiders made off towards the French coast. In the London balloon barrage a team of girls were hoisting a balloon in January 1943, when it was hit and fell blazing round them. Several were taken to hospital.

Reports from the German frontier state that a new type of Junkers plane made of transparent material and stated to be scarcely visible at a height of 2,400 feet is being constructed at big air-craft factories at Wiener and Neustadt in Austria. The machines are reported to have engines of 1,100 horse-power and a speed of 390 miles per hour.

Neither side is yet in sight of a solution of the night raider problem although Britain is showing that she is just a step ahead of Germany. Both appear to be relying chiefly on night fighters who now operate over enemy's bases over the sea, over the approaches to targets and over the targets themselves—in fact, endeavouring to switch to gradually as big a force of fighters as are available.

The warning that the night bomber menace has not yet been mastered and every town must prepare for the worst has been uttered by Mr. Herbert Morrison, the Home Secretary, "I do not know whether we shall be triumphant over the night bomber."

To quote Mr. Churchill, "Every method of dealing with air-fighting by night is being studied with passionate zeal by a large number of extremely able and brilliant scientists and officers but hitherto we have not been more successful in stopping the German night raiders than the Germans have been successful in stopping our raiders, which have ranged freely over Germany and struck very heavy blows. Although we have noticed a considerable improvement from our search for remedies, we must expect a continuance of these attacks."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Lee de Forest, an American Scientist, suggests bombing by television. A small plane, loaded with bombs, but with no humans aboard, is manoeuvred by remote control from another plane 10 miles or more behind. A television camera is also carried by the 'bomber,' enabling it to be steered accurately by the pilot in the controlling plane, who sees on the screen all the objects ahead of the pilotless plane. Thus, from a comparatively safe distance in the rear, the man in the control machine can guide the 'bomber' direct on to a military objective. Crashing on the target, the little plane and its television apparatus are completely destroyed in the explosion; but as all materials are the cheapest possible, the loss is relatively small.

In Europe, the new four-engined British Bombers are constantly smashing at German cities in spite of their most powerful air defences, their bomb loads being massive in comparison with the two-engined machines that used to reply to the enemy in the first two years of the war.

As Sir Charles Portal, Britain's Air Chief has testified lately bombers are taking war into enemy territory in a way that has not occurred since the Napoleonic wars, destroying the legend that Germany is secure and unassailable and that war can take place only in other countries. What the R.A.F. have achieved is nothing compared with what they are now beginning to achieve. It is now possible to develop a new technique of delivering highly concentrated and destructive raids. The first was a raid on the Renault works outside Paris on March 5, which, in one night, were put totally out of action.

Berlin was bombed on August 26 and 29 by the Soviet Air Force. British bombers attacked Berlin for the 54th time on 17-1-42. In September 1942, Moscow announced that Berlin had been raided 12 times by Soviet Bombers during the preceding twelve months.

According to Sir Charles, the Russian in the east and the R.A.F. in the west are preparing in Germany a state of demoralisation. No town in Western Germany can now consider itself safe and as nights lengthen the area which the R.A.F. bombers can cover in darkness, extends.

In spite of the best defences the German Capital itself has been bombed in broad daylight. A small force of Britain's Mosquitoe bombers was able to penetrate defence lines and force the chief of the *Luftwaffe* and his high officers to take refuge in shelters. The R.A.F. first daylight raid in the war on Berlin on Jan. 30 made it impossible for Field Marshal Goering to deliver his radio speech in time. Goering failed to begin his broadcast at the scheduled time of 11 o'clock and the Berlin Radio announcer four times apologised for the delay. Goering was to have spoken from the ceremonial hall of the German Air Ministry where high officers of the armed forces and Nazi party leaders had gathered to listen. All indications suggest that Field Marshal Goering's speech was held up by this daylight raid on Berlin forcing Goering and his audience to take refuge in cellars.

All authorities, therefore, agree that so long as other nations possess aeroplanes, no defensive force whatever can prevent some getting through the defence, and doing an amount of damage which might seriously injure national strength and help the enemy to conquer the nation.<sup>1</sup>

### Evacuation

To reduce the quantity of destruction and minimise the expenses and difficulties of protecting large numbers of people, their buildings and structures, evacuation, camouflage and obscuration of light are adopted. Every country threatened by the air arm has resorted to these measures. In fact a plan for evacuation was prepared even in 1931, in France. It was the first step Marshal Petain took when he was appointed Inspector-General of Aerial Defence. Warsaw, London, Berlin, Oslo, Helsinki, etc. adopted it. Evacuation, if very successful, can reduce the expenses and trouble of making adequate provision to deal with casualties, but experience however shows that effective evacuation is not possible and that voluntary evacuation almost fails to disperse the population.

The aim of evacuation is to remove from the more dangerous and congested areas to less dangerous areas of certain groups of people whose removal is desirable on both national and humanitarian grounds. But even the most elaborately planned scheme of England has disclosed several disadvantages—set-back to education for the younger generation, trouble to householders in receiving strangers, difficulty of food supply, articles of consumption and medical aid, break up of family life with all its serious handicaps, and above all, the risk of the homes of the evacuees being burnt down by incendiary bombs. The battle of the flames needs millions of people to keep watch and if large numbers evacuate the task of dealing with incendiary bombs would be extremely difficult. If a large proportion of people has to remain, the task of protecting them is in no way reduced. This is the dilemma which evacuation gives birth to.

A most elaborate organisation has been set up in Great Britain. From London and other vulnerable centres over a million and a half children, mothers, and hospital patients were removed to less vulnerable zones in Great Britain, during the first week-end of

<sup>1</sup> Norman Angell, p. 59.

September. In the shadow of the breaking storm, the great movement took place. The first surprise came early. The numbers coming forward to be evacuated under the official scheme were unexpectedly low. Less than half of those for whom billets had been promised, went away.

Before the end of the first fortnight of evacuation it was evident that a considerable drift home from the reception areas was in progress. The expected air raids had not taken place. The drift back was most noticeable in the case of mothers with young children.

Whatever might be the cause of failure, the English experiment has made it clear that evacuation is difficult however thorough may be the scheme and however much willing the people and Government may be. There is, however, not much to choose between failure or success because the latter leads to grave consequences to the individual, the family and the nation, the inconvenience to householders, the difficulty to the evacuees, the break up of family life, and the loss of education.

Husbands have been parted from wives, children from parents. Domestic privacy has been invaded. Urban and rural ways of life have been brought into sharp conflict. Class barriers have been not so much broken down, as ignored, often with heartening, but sometimes with unfortunate, results. The education system has been reduced temporarily to a shamble and a great strain has been placed upon local Government authorities in areas which have received a great influx of population.

From the point of view of air defence, the task is not apparently lightened, unless a very large section evacuate and remain outside vulnerable areas for the duration of war. This has proved impracticable since modern wars continue for long periods. Even if practicable this would prove dangerous to city structures, particularly if large scale incendiary bomb attack is made. Immediate attention which is necessary to deal with them needs a large army of fire fighters and fire watchers.

### Camouflage

Buildings and structures cannot be evacuated, but they might secure some immunity if they escape the notice of the bomber. Camouflage measures are adopted to important objectives and installations whose destruction would paralyse resistance. Details

of camouflage are dealt with later, but it would suffice to point out that the most perfect scheme cannot guarantee security to objectives in crowded cities where indiscriminate bombing will be resorted to. It is impossible to camouflage the entire city. The design, construction and location of many of the important objectives are such as to render disguise measures very ineffective.

Other difficulties too present themselves. Modern factories are so large that they could be considered to have no surroundings. Factories are so big that it would be a waste of paint to do anything to them. The idea of enveloping them in smoke is impracticable, for wind will blow it away.

By suitable painting it might be possible to make quite a large building look like a meadow from one aspect and in one light, but the illusion would disappear when the building was seen from another aspect or in another light, although the meadow may look the same in both cases. The reason is that while the structure is three dimensional, the ground is more nearly two dimensional. The Home Office of Great Britain, therefore, recognise this difficulty. They point out :—

Imitation of purely rural surroundings is difficult because the variations of light and shade on the roof slopes of the building itself are greater than those of the ground ; the tones of the ground remain more or less constant except for the shadow cast by the building, while the tones of the building are continually changing.

Another difficulty is the selection of material suitable for merging the target in the neighbourhood. Paints should be durable and at the same time should have a mat finish to avoid tendency to shine, two characteristics that are considered almost incompatible.

Disruption focusses the attention of the observer to something to the exclusion of all else. Structural disruption is, however, very expensive, although sound in principle. " The fixing of such excrescences so as to withstand the weather is not a simple matter " observes the Home Office which is fully aware of the need for camouflage. It adds further " It is not practicable to distort the buildings by shaped excrescences since they have to be so big." Camouflaging the roads is also very difficult. There is no known method of colouring existing concrete roads permanently. Bituminous emulsions most suitable for camouflage measures would absorb mustard gas and complicate the situation. R.A.F. activities over Germany

where the most elaborate schemes of camouflage are in vogue have amply proved the inadequacy of such treatment to protect the targets in crowded and vulnerable areas. Crowded cities cannot be camouflaged wholesale.

### Obscuration of Light

If camouflage is intended to prevent enemy detection during day, black-out is designed to escape airmen's attention at night. Night raids are particularly disastrous and lights are useful pointers to night bombers. Obscuration of light aims to secure "that as far as is practicable, hostile air-craft passing over the country at night would see no light which might serve to guide them to a particular objective or to assist them to determine their position." The restriction accordingly imposes general darkening as a permanent condition from the outbreak of hostilities. In every country threatened by the air arm black-out or brown-out restrictions are enforced.

The value of black-out cannot be belittled and its benefits cannot be ignored. But we should realise that four factors neutralise its effectiveness. Modern pilots are trained for blind flying, and reach their objectives with the aid of mechanical devices. Night raid was common even in the last war, and it has been improved since then. Large urban areas are, therefore, easily raided at night.

Secondly, in modern raids incendiaries are showered and conflagrations set up to detect objectives over which high explosives are aimed. If this illumination is insufficient or impossible, flares are dropped and the ground below lighted. So bright is the light shed by flares which are dropped singly or in chandelier type that Londoners one night were able to read the newspapers with their help. Nazi raiders dropped numerous flares and at one time about fifty were floating over Plymouth when it was blasted in April 1941. In the same month the West End, the centre of London's Theatre land and night life, was bombed, blasted and burnt by 'early raiders dropping chandelier-type flares, and in their wake, searching for the prey, came more and more droning bombers.'

If the Nazis ran short of incendiary bombs, they use flares to pick out their targets. The flare is dropped with a small silken parachute and lights up a few seconds after it is released from a plane. It comes down very slowly and each flare is of more than 100,000 candle power. When a flare is dropped the area through which

it travels and the area of the surface on which it impinges is lighted up, as daylight. Then flows a shower of high explosives. There is also the oil bomb which explodes and scatters oil. These bombs are very useful to the enemy as they set fire to a wider area more efficiently than incendiary bombs.

Fourthly, the efficacy of a black-out is greatly reduced on bright moonlit nights. Several raids have been carried out by the R.A.F. and by Nazis with the help of moonlight. When the R.A.F. raided Hamburg in May 1941 a clear sky and a full moon showed up the ground in detail. The R.A.F. swept through the barrage and carried out a formidable bombing with marked success against the enemy fighters and ground defences. The reprisal raid on Canterbury was carried out by the Nazi pilots who came low in the brilliant moonlight.<sup>1</sup>

The German Air Force took advantage of the moon to deliver their night attacks in October 1941. Five attacks were attempted in one night and over 450 air-craft took part in the raids. On May 10, 1941 when the moon was full raiders were over London and attacked on a big scale. They swooped low to hit the objectives 'almost as low as the roof tops.'

The Japs have similarly resorted to moonlight and daylight bombing. Where ground defences and fighter protection is not of a very high order, day raids become the rule. For nearly four hours from 3 a.m. on 6-2-1942 Jap planes came over Rangoon in six separate waves. The bombers came over in continuous waves almost every quarter of an hour. The city area was attacked but the main objective as before was the aerodrome north of Rangoon.

Therefore, although illuminated objectives offer easy targets to the night raider the absence of illumination is no guarantee of safety. On the other hand, black-out produces serious disadvantages and dangers such as traffic accidents, anxiety to road users, depression and gloom to citizens, danger to health, risk of law-breakers and more than all hindrance to the quick and efficient functioning of A.R.P. services. Instances are already reported of how fires could not be immediately and effectively dealt with owing to the difficulties of darkness.

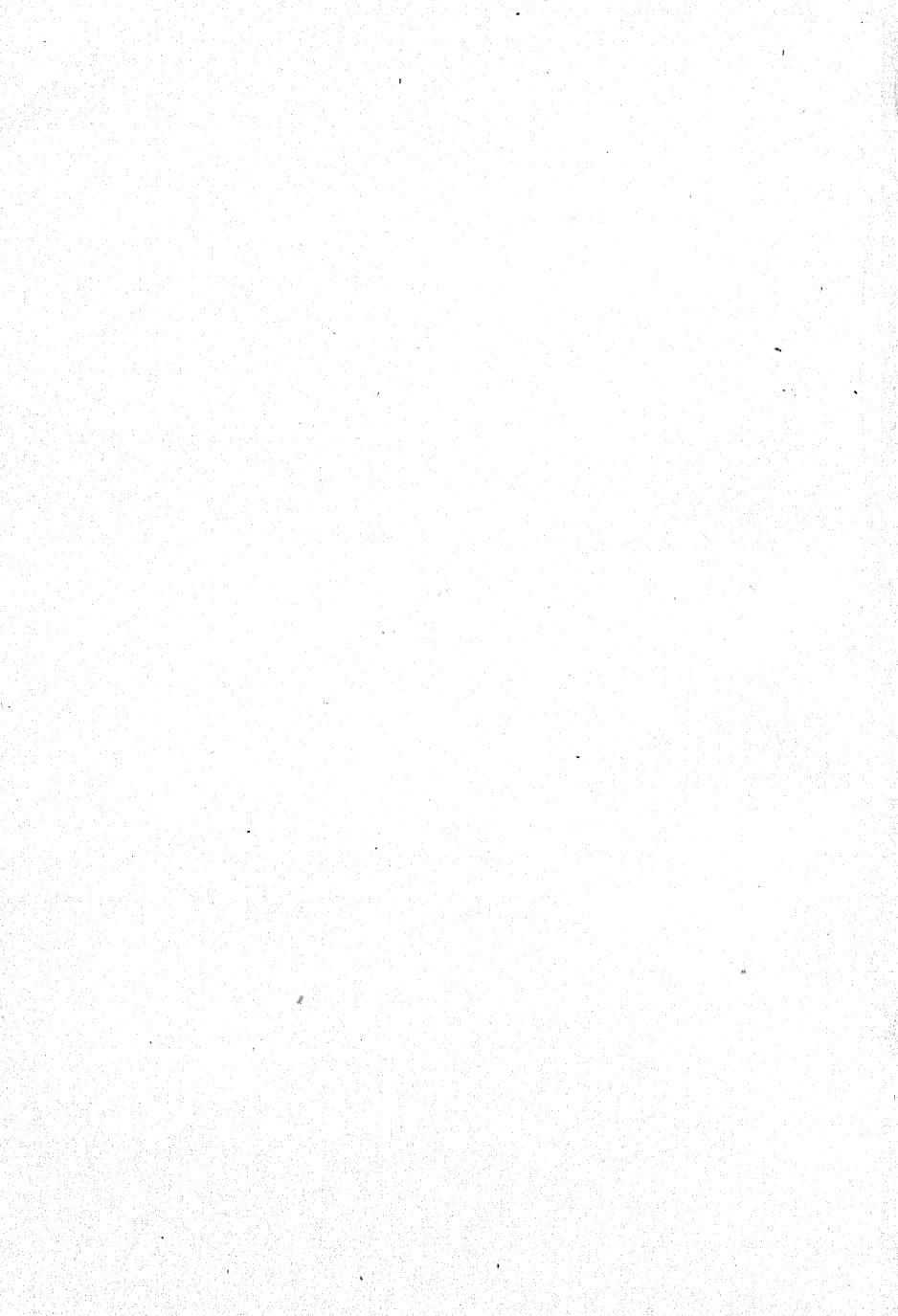
The value of measures for prevention and escape cannot, however, be denied. The battle of Britain could not have been won but

<sup>1</sup> *The Mail*, 2-6-'42.

for these measures and English cities would have succumbed and been destroyed as were Ramsgate and Coventry. The amount of destruction which the bombs that succeeded in penetrating the defences of London created for the Empire Capital is sufficient to prove the necessity for organising measures to deal with the consequences of raids. Baldwin's dictum "the bomber will get through" has not been falsified, and the incidents that support his prophecy are enough to tell us that every possible measure should be adopted to resist the weapons used in air raids and protect the people and their property from their effects, if cities and civilization should survive the air menace.

---

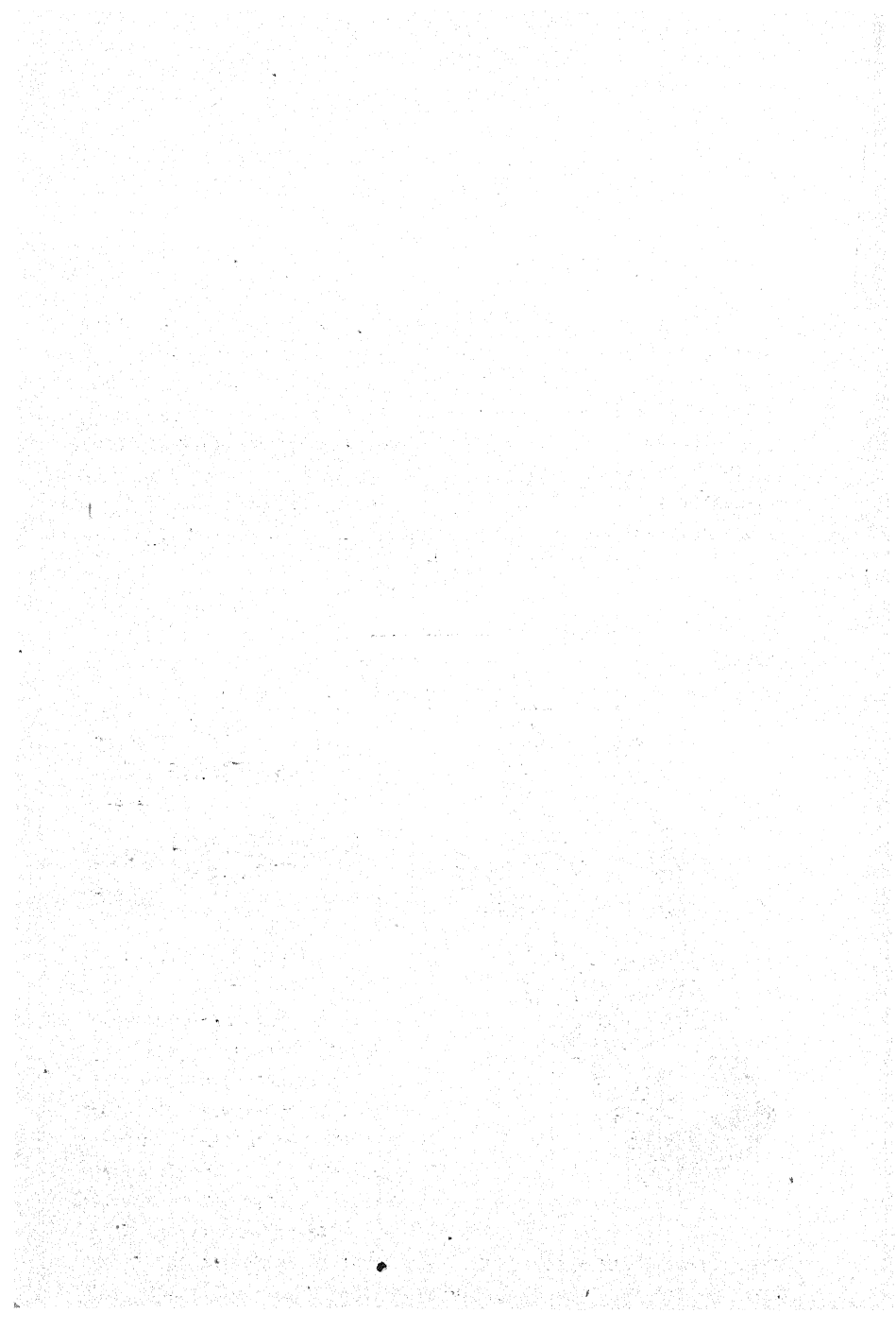




## **CHAPTER III**

---

### **PROTECTION TO PEOPLE**



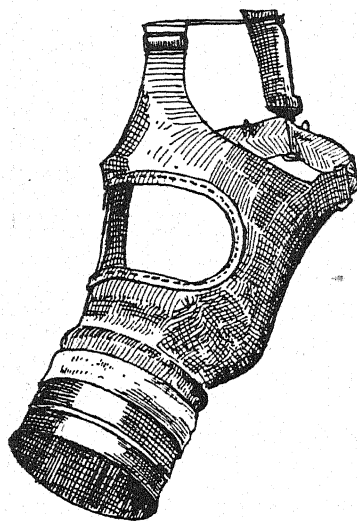
## CHAPTER III

### PROTECTION TO PEOPLE

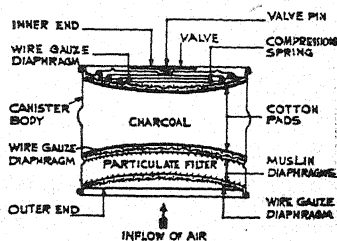
It is evident from the previous Chapter, that if inhabitants of vulnerable areas should survive a carefully engineered air attack, measures should be devised to protect them from poison gas vapour and liquid; fire and its consequences to city structures; shock, splinters, blast, as well as the demolition of buildings and falling masonry caused by the high explosive bomb. In addition they should be saved from the falling fragments of anti-aircraft shells. In an intense air-raid most of these would happen simultaneously.

#### Gas Protection

Protection against gas has been considered essential and respirators have been distributed free by the State to all the



Civilian Respirator



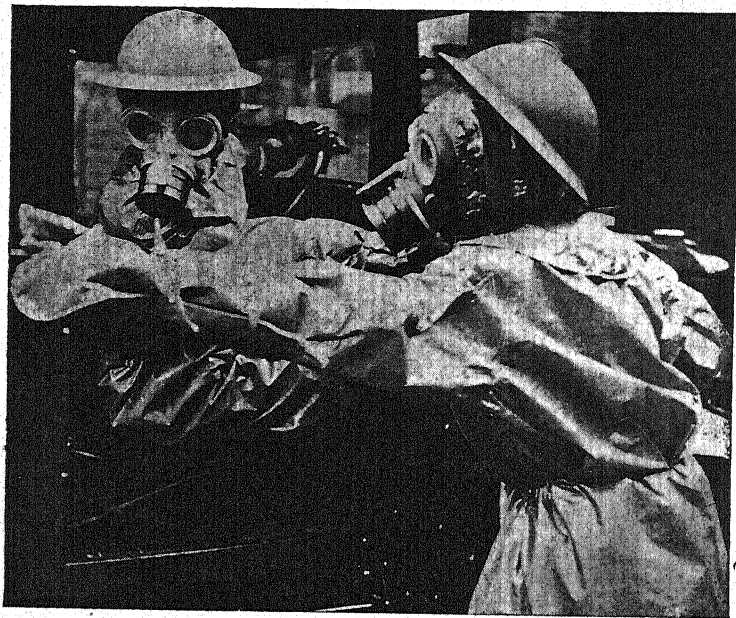
Civilian Respirator Container

people in the vulnerable zones of Great Britain. This, however, does not mean that the "mask" will protect people against gas attack. This is clear from its function and form. A respirator consists of a rubber facepiece with a

transparent window, and a container which holds the gas filters. If properly put on, it protects the eyes, nose, mouth and lungs, and

ensures a supply of pure air for breathing, by means of filters which are able to absorb any gas known to be capable of being used in war.

It offers no protection against ordinary domestic coal gas or carbon monoxide. It does not protect other parts of the body from poison gas vapour and liquid. It can be effective for about four hours only in contaminated atmosphere. At best it can be regarded only as second line of defence.



Anti-Gas Suit

Anti-gas clothing, no doubt, covers the whole body, since it consists of a jacket, trousers, hood, gloves and boots. But mustard gas liquid can penetrate the best materials of which anti-gas suitings are made. In hot weather it can offer immunity for four hours when new, and for three hours when used and decontaminated by boiling. It is also inconvenient to resort to that protection, for the non-porous nature of this oilskin material causes the heat and perspiration from the body to be retained inside the clothing. In hot weather the amount of manual work that a person wearing oilskins can accomplish is consequently limited owing to fatigue and exhaustion.

Owing to the exhaustion caused by the heavy anti-gas suit they should not be worn unless the circumstances make it essential. Where adequate ventilation can be arranged to avoid dangerous concentrations of vapour, so that the only danger is from touching contaminated objects, the lesser forms of protection may be adequate and will cause much less reduction in efficiency. If work has to be carried on in a confined space with heavy vapour contamination present, necessitating the wearing of the complete outfit with hood,



Service Respirator and Civilian Gas Masks

it is probable that only three spells of from half an hour to an hour could be performed during each 24 hours. This depends on the temperature. In cold weather, or in less severe concentrations which do not necessitate the wearing of the hood, men might be able to work for three spells of two hours. The protection against blister gas vapour afforded by the heavy anti-gas suit is of limited duration, owing to the suction effect produced by movement. The inside of such suits should therefore be ventilated at regular intervals by opening the coat and letting down the trousers in an atmosphere free from blister gas vapour.

Satisfactory protection is possible only by getting into gas-proof rooms and refuges, large enough to keep the inhabitants comfortable for long hours. This is now realised and gas-proof shelters are built and wherever practicable gas-proof accommodation is improvised in the home. In essence "gas-proofing" a chamber entails the sealing up of all the openings and crevices, and making it air-tight, and providing its entrance with suitable devices to facilitate entry and exit. Usually this consists of a gas curtain of heavy material carefully attached to the door, the frame being lined with felt or similar material.

That gas-proofing rooms in a tiled house is impracticable will be readily realised, but even in terraced houses ill-fitting doors and windows would create difficulties. The problem is further complicated by the intense heat of the tropics. Granting these difficulties are overcome, safety is not assured, since the incendiary and high explosive bombs can destroy them together with the inmates. For no normal residence and building can stand the high explosive, and, most cannot resist the incendiary. If the people who reside in vulnerable areas are to be assured protection of life and limb it is essential that they must be provided with accommodation, proof to gas, incendiary and high explosive bomb. This has been realised and bomb-proof shelters have been built both by governments, civic authorities and factory owners.

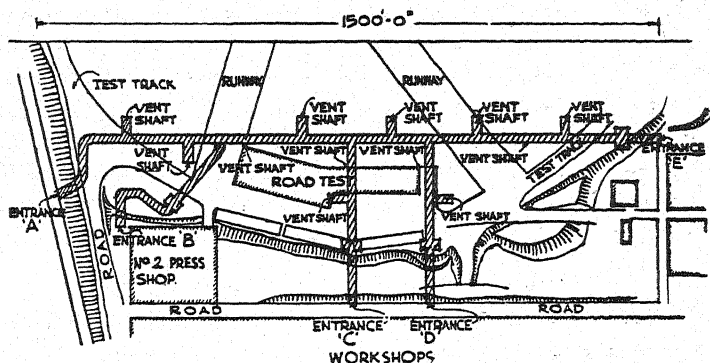
### **Bomb-Resisting Accommodation**

Such accommodation has been improvised in the underground tunnels of Barcelona for one and a half million people, by the Spanish Government. The Austin Motor Factory in England has a bomb-proof shelter deep underground for its 10,000 employees.

Undoubtedly the most effective protection is provided by a tunnel shelter many feet below ground, but the opportunity of providing this type of shelter is not frequent, owing to the presence of sub-soil water in some cases and to cost in others. Several comprehensive schemes of tunnel shelters have, however, been carried out and they must be considered as approaching the ideal form of air-raid protection.

Built at a cost of £25,000, it is no less than a huge subterranean tunnel system excavated out of sandstone rock and conforms to a standard semi-circular design with a floor width of 16 ft. 9 ins. and a height of 9 ft. being reinforced with steel arches and steel sheeting.

Their average depth will be 55 ft. below the surface and with access through the gently inclined adits, it will be possible for full occupation to be effected in a few minutes after receiving an air raid warning. The tunnels would have a length of 1,000 yds. providing sitting accommodation for half the number of occupants. The air inlets situated 18 ft. above a very high ground which, it is anticipated, will be clear of any surface concentrations of gas, will provide efficient ventilation, and the entrance and exit adits are provided with air locks. Drinking water supplies, rest and first-aid rooms, lavatories and all essential amenities are included in this scheme which also will combine auxiliary generating sets in case of failure of mains, and loud-speaker equipment throughout the system for broadcasting instructions, music and news items to those taking shelter. It has been estimated that this involved the excavation and removal of 18,000 tons of sandstone.



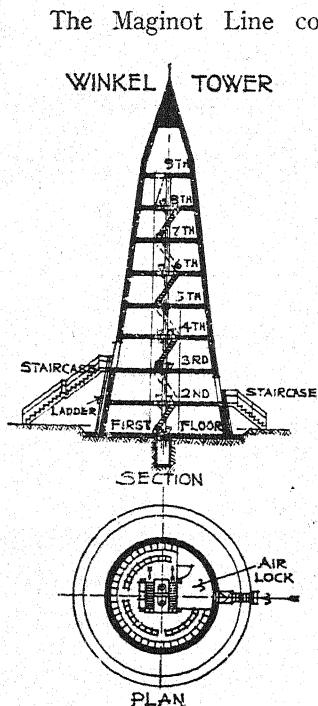
Austin's Tunnel Shelter for 10,000 people

Conical and parabolic shelters above ground have been built to a limited extent on the Continent which are intended to avoid impact by offering the least possible surface to it normal to the surface of the shelter. Their unit cost is high.

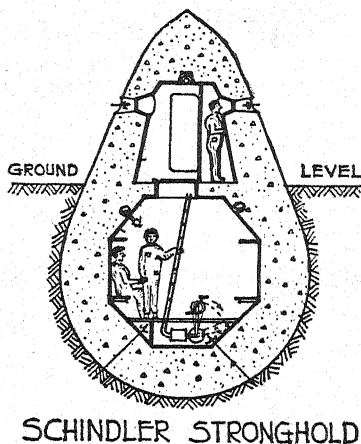
Bomb-proof surface shelters have been erected in Valencia. Such shelters accommodate from 250 to 1,250 persons, and are provided with sandwich roofs either domed or flat. The flat roof has steel and concrete protection in addition to a 2-in. concrete slab, two 3-in. layers of sand and a 5-ft. slab of concrete. The shelters are mechanically ventilated with electric power and have emergency dynamo equipment.



The Winkel Tower named after its German designer is also above the surface and conical in shape. This is intended to deflect bombs and prevent penetration. 'For that reason the outer walls have only to resist the effects of detonation, but have to be of constant thickness for the full height of the tower. It is also claimed that even heavy bombs exploding near or under the foot of the tower cannot imperil the stability of the structure. The Winkel Tower has been standardised in four sizes, with a capacity, 400 people for the largest and 168 for the smallest.'

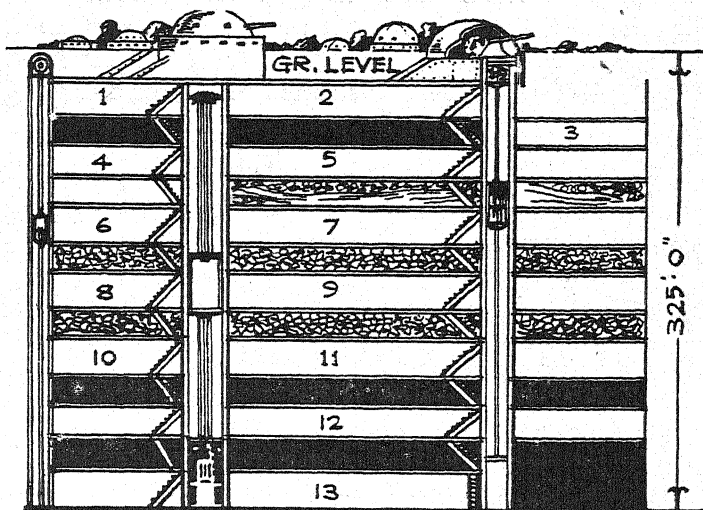


The Maginot Line contains large underground chambers absolutely proof to all known weapons of air attack. The pressure of air inside is kept higher and excludes the possibility of poison gases entering in. Equipped with kitchen, store, sanitary conveniences and efficient lighting,



telephone, etc., they are spacious enough even for parade. The towers of the Maginot Line weigh some 120 tons, are monolithic and no shell can penetrate the concrete wall. On the other frontier are equally formidable structures comprising about 12,000 steel and concrete forts extending from Holland to Switzerland. Some of them are built deeply into the hill side and some are in open territory, massive concrete towers with conical roof intended to deflect the bombs.

The Maginot Line is 325 feet deep and cost France over one hundred million pounds to build. The Siegfried Line cost Germany seven hundred and fifty million pounds, according to Mr. Neville Henderson.



A section of the Maginot Line

In Gibraltar, underground fortresses have been cut out of living rock. They are large enough for defence exercises and to provide food and shelter to the army. Bunks have been fitted for men's quarters and there are wash and cook houses all of which are capable of providing food for 5,000 people.

Though incomplete, the Rock now contains three-storied barracks capable of housing thousands of men. There is a fully equipped hospital, an electric power generating system, well fitted wash rooms and cook-houses. Vast quantities of oil, water, food, tobacco and even boiled sweets have been stored in subterranean tanks.

Malta, the world's most bombed Island has a splendid system of air raid shelters for every one of the population. At dusk whole families find their way to shelters for a sound sleep, away from the noise and dangerous bombing. Cut and tunnelled out of solid rock they number about 600 and more under construction. They are mostly over a hundred feet deep and house as many as 1,500 people

with a bed for each person. Nearly every shelter is equipped with electric light, wireless, washing and cooking facilities. Some of them even have small altars built in a quiet corner where regular evening services are held.

Two of the finest examples in the world of rock shelters of course are Malta and Gibraltar. One of the shelters in Malta that has been completed has accommodation for 3,000 people and a second and even larger shelter was being constructed which would take 6,000 people, with steel bunk sleeping accommodation for 4,500 people.

Many instances of direct hits on air raid shelters have been reported. A miracle saved the inmates of a shelter from a Russian bomb. A bomb struck the air raid shelter in which Swedish Foreign Minister M. Sandler took cover during his visit to Finland, with a number of other people and shortly after the raid began a bomb hit the shelter causing the pillars to collapse. He played a leading part in exhorting the people to keep calm.<sup>1</sup> Eleven war planes flew over Abo on January 20, 1940 and dropped bombs from 16,000 feet. Several bombs fell on a maternity home some penetrating the air raid shelters. Mothers carrying the new-born babies, escaped miraculously by climbing a covered staircase.<sup>2</sup>

Several instances of direct hits on air raid shelters have now been reported from all parts of the world.

In the first biggest raid on London in September 1940, over five hundred enemy air-craft took part. Ninety-nine were brought down, of which 21 by anti-aircraft fire. The bombing was widespread and indiscriminate. Some services were seriously interfered with. Civil defence services did marvellous work.

Four hundred people were killed and 1,300 to 1,400 were seriously injured. Children sleeping in perambulators and mothers with babies in their arms were killed when a bomb exploded in a crowded shelter in the East London area in the last raids.

A Press reporter who visited the shelter afterwards wrote: 'the bomb fell directly on a ventilator shaft measuring only about three by one foot. This was the only vulnerable place in the

<sup>1</sup>*The Hindu*, 23-1-1940.

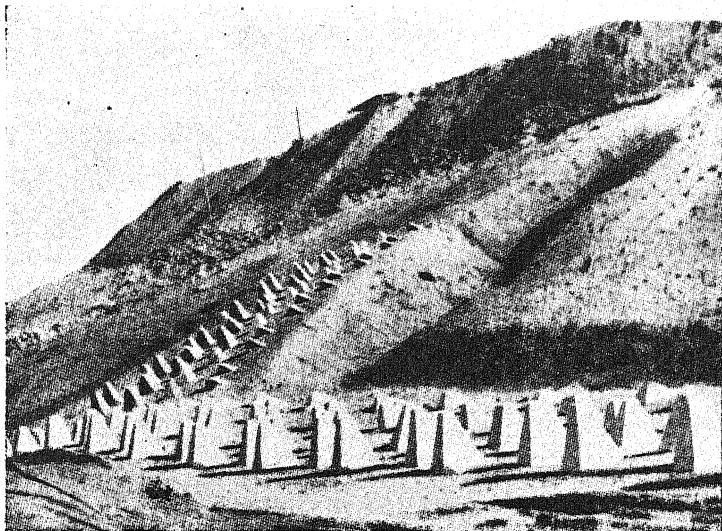
<sup>2</sup>*The Hindu*, 22-1-1940.

powerfully protected underground shelter, accommodating over a 1,000 people. The bomb fell just as families from scores of nearby streets were settling down in the shelter to sleep there for the night. Three or four roof support pillars were torn down and about fifty people lay stunned in heaps.'

It is believed that 14 persons including children, were killed and about 40 injured one night when a bomb fell on a shelter in one East End area crowded with over a thousand people, although bombs were still falling nearby.

A London sub-way leading to an underground railway station was hit during a Saturday night's raid. Nothing recognisable remained of the sub-way in which numbers were sheltering when a heavy bomb fell. A huge crater was created. The crater was so large that one hundred royal engineers, pioneers and other demolition squads working therein appeared to on-lookers like pigmies. Four huge cranes were placed round the edge to swing tons of debris into lorries.

The worst effect was on an underground shelter which was covered with debris when a neighbouring building was struck,



German fortified Siegfried Line

hitting off a number of people. Not one property escaped damage in an area extending over a quarter of a mile in radius in one Central London area.

Communal shelters were bombed during widespread night attacks on London and provincial areas in October 1940. Fatal casualties occurred in them in a north-east town.

An underground station was struck by a bomb and damage was caused during a night's raid on London.

A number of persons sheltering in a public house in a town in East Scotland were killed when it was demolished during a raid.

Most of the fatal casualties in Bristol area one day were caused when a public shelter received a direct hit.

A public air raid shelter received a direct hit in London in September 1940. It was a covered trench in a public square. Fortunately one casualty resulted from 70 people who were sheltering. The roof covering was blown off over a few feet.

A Belfast air raid shelter received a direct hit in April 1941, killing a number of people.

While one shelter provided for members in the House of Commons had resisted explosion when the Mother of Parliaments was bombed in May, another shelter provided for the use of the Prime Minister and other members of the Cabinet was badly wrecked.

A surface shelter was hit in Portsmouth and several people were killed or injured in April 1941.

Over a thousand people marched in order from a shelter 60 feet underground to near-by surface shelters when the roof of a famous London building above them was set ablaze by a bomb one night. Despite its depth, the vault was shaken by the force of the explosion. In a North London area a bomb fell on one of London's most famous streets causing a great crater and blowing out windows for a considerable distance.

When a West Midlands town on the night of 1st August 1942, experienced one of its sharpest raids since the war started, high explosive and incendiary bombs were dropped and several fires started, some in business premises. A number of people were

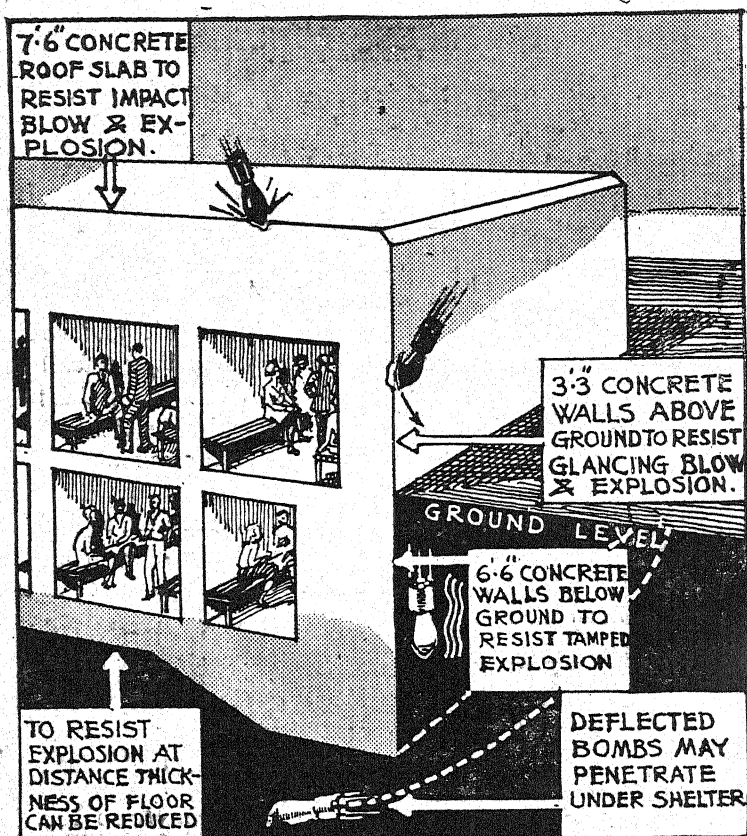
admitted into hospital. Seven people are believed to have been trapped in a shelter. One man was killed.

Massive structures designed with great care are essential, because, experience and research have disclosed that structures less massive and strong cannot resist the impact, penetration, explosion, blast, earthquake effect and splinters of the deadly high explosive bomb now used in aerial attack. The medium size high explosive bomb can penetrate 5 feet of reinforced concrete, can attack the side as well as the floor of a structure by glancing blow and tamped explosion respectively. Protection worth the name should resist all these and technical experts and leading institutions therefore strongly plead for erecting bomb-proof structures for protection. Even the Government of Great Britain which pinned its faith in blast and splinter-proof shelters for every home have been forced to focus attention upon this question. From the suggestions made by the expert committee appointed by the Home Office Air Raid Precautions department to "prepare design methods and type designs for protection of varying degrees, against the high explosive bomb," it is clear that to assure protection to people from the effects of 500-lb. high explosive bomb the shelter must be built with roofs, walls, and floors of the thickness indicated in the illustration in the next page.

These designs are based upon the shelters being divided into compartments with not more than 200 persons in each compartment. The shelters designed consist essentially of two-storey structures of a box form, either rectangular or circular formed of reinforced concrete and placed generally half above and half below ground, easy access to the basement storey being obtained by means of staircases. Shelters placed at a considerable depth below ground were not considered in any detail, although it was realised that there should not be any great difficulty in designing them to provide degrees of protection similar to those afforded by the recommended designs.

To meet the combined effects of direct impact, disruptive force of explosion and spalling effect on the inner surface, of a 500-lb. heavy case bomb striking at its maximum velocity, the thickness of the concrete recommended is 7 ft. 6 in. for the roof (5 feet only for medium case bombs of 500 lb. and for heavier bombs with lighter

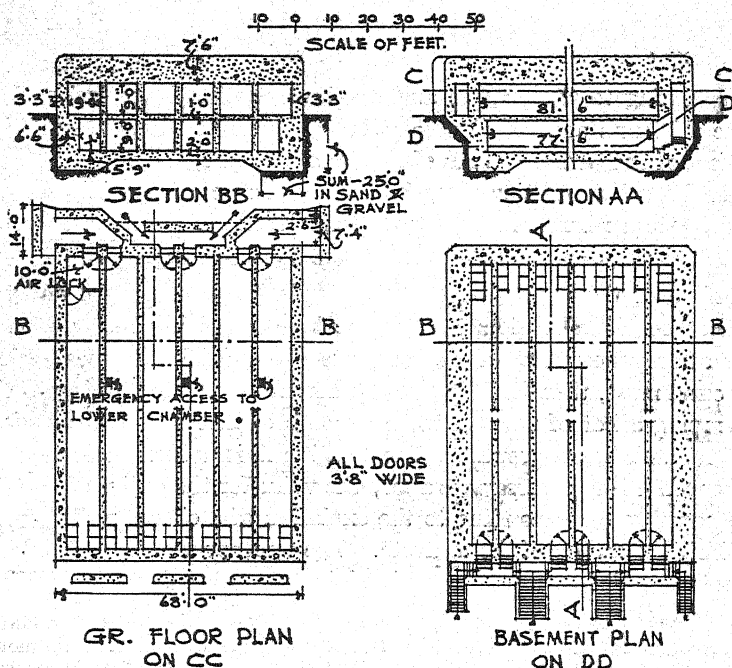
Detailed perspective view of the shelter recommended to afford protection against direct or near hits by heavy bombs, by the Design Panel set up at the request of the Home Office by the Institute of Civil Engineers<sup>1</sup>



<sup>1</sup>Mere blast and splinter-proof shelters "give no more of that kind of assurance and sense of security that are the real basis of civilian morale when the bombing is heavy and eccentric. The former official opposition to deep underground shelters is now seen to have been stupid, if not wanton, and although the authorities have constructed an enormous number of fairly reliable brick street surface shelters to supplement the individual house 'Anderson Shelter,' there still exists no confidence in those areas of crowded population where the people have seen half a block of ramshackle dwellings blasted into rubble by one bomb." Practically every newspaper has demanded the provision of shelters that can offer complete protection. Because it is known that they cannot be built quickly, the public resorted to the subterranean railway tubes and stations as refuges, although official opinion did not relish the idea. (The London Correspondent, *The Hindu*, November 21, 1940).

case) 3 ft. 3 in. for walls above ground, and 6 ft. 6 in. below ground; 6 ft. 6 in. for the base except in large shelters, where under certain conditions the thickness could be progressively reduced to 2 ft. 6 in.<sup>1</sup>

This overhead cover of concrete of special quality adequately reinforced 5 ft. and 7 ft. 6 in. thick respectively, for the medium and heavy case bombs of 500 lb. should preferably be a single slab. The one providing an air space between is difficult and costly. If an air space of not less than three feet in depth were provided above a roof slab 1 foot 6 inches thick, the thickness of the main slab might be reduced by 1 foot. But the possibility of using such a



Bomb-Resisting Shelter for 1,200 persons recommended by the Institute of Civil Engineers

<sup>1</sup>See A.R.P.H.5a. "Bomb-Resisting Shelters".

A New York Engineer is reported as having claimed that from the point of view of protection from bombs, concrete is not so effective as cotton.

A 2,000-pound bomb falling 15,000 feet would penetrate six feet of reinforced concrete, he says, whereas a bomb three times as heavy falling twice as far would not penetrate a seven feet thickness of raw cotton. And the material could be made fire-proof. *The Hindu*, 10-8-1941.



protective covering in two thicknesses has been given up mainly for the above reasons.

Those who feel that surface type of shelters with a sandwich type of roof protection is necessary to save the inmates from the shock wave effect of an explosion recognise a further difficulty.

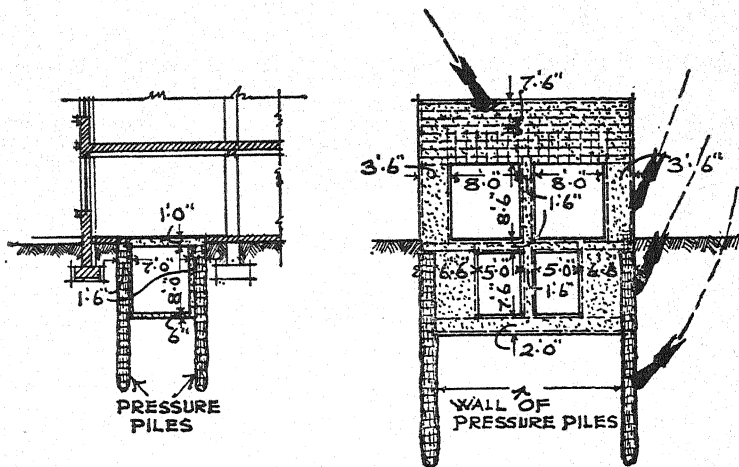
If the bomb should penetrate right through the upper detonating slab and into the pocket before exploding, the tamping effect of thus confining the explosion between the two layers may have very greatly exaggerated effects upon the shelter structure beneath. Methods of providing against this danger by sectionalising the detonating slab do not appear to be satisfactory, mainly because the sections would be considerably less likely to withstand the penetrating effect of the bomb than a continuous slab.

Owing to the oblique angle of impact with a vertical surface the thickness of vertical walls is largely governed by the explosive effect of the bomb, instead of the total impact and explosive effect. For lateral protection over ground, concrete of special quality, adequately reinforced, 3 feet 3 inches thick is required.

If the explosion occurs at or above ground level and on the surface of the protective wall, the explosion is untamped and the effect considerably less than if the bomb explodes below ground or after penetration of the concrete slab. Wall thickness below ground must, therefore, be greater than above ground, owing to the tamping effect of the soil when a bomb explodes near the surface of the wall below ground. Since the bomb is unlikely to penetrate the wall it is unnecessary to apply the value for the radius of rupture in concrete corresponding to the explosion of a charge well tamped within the surface of the concrete. The appropriate degree of lateral protection below ground is offered by concrete of special quality, adequately reinforced 6 feet 6 inches thick. Where the clear span between adequate buttresses is not more than 10 feet or where in a circular shelter the internal diameter is not more than 30 feet, the wall thickness below ground level may be reduced to 5 feet 6 inches.

Owing to the considerable depth of penetration of medium-case bombs into the ground and to the possibility of a bomb pursuing a curved path through the ground, it is necessary to provide for the contingency of a bomb exploding under the base of the shelter except at points well within the periphery of the vertical walls. The standard thickness of base protection should be 5 feet.

It is important to remember that the soffit must be lined. In order to prevent spalling the lower surface of the roof slab should be faced with steel which should be anchored not less than 12 inches and should be not less than 3/16 inch thick in the case of flat plates. Alternatively a close mesh reinforcement, attached to the lowest layer of 3/4 inch reinforcing bars, may be used to prevent spalling. The width of the mesh should not exceed 1-1/2 inches, and its weight should be not less than 3-3/4 lb. per yard super. A similar protection is also required for the inner face of the external wall in addition to the normal reinforcement.



## BOMB-PROOF SHELTERS.

With pressure piles used as an alternative

Since the use of exceptionally heavy bombs may wipe out the whole of the occupants of the shelter it is necessary that shelters with a roof slab 5 feet thick should not accommodate more than 400 persons, those with 7 feet 6 inches, preferably not more than 1,200 persons. The internal partition wall should not be less than 18 inches thick in reinforced concrete and shall be provided between each group of 200 persons.

The designing of air raid shelters in connection with a complete scheme for the civil defence of a city is "not an ordinary engineering problem.... It is rather a question of designing structures giving an undefined degree of protection against destructive forces about which very little is known." The only effective way of dealing with

the problem is to devise a method by which emergency measures for immediate protection could be improved upon by gradual stages to reach a degree of protection which would suffice to resist the largest of the high explosive bombs used in raids."<sup>1</sup>

### Shelter Equipment

It is estimated that the cost per person for the rectangular shelter for 200 persons would be about £25 9s. and for the larger shelter for 1,200 people about £21 8s. per person. Massive construction alone is not sufficient to assure "safety". Sanitation and equipment are equally important. Insufficient ventilation, and inadequate equipment can do as much harm as a bomb. Shelters must present as small a target area as possible; they must be as dispersed as we could afford, not to invite special attention from bombers; they must be properly ventilated and equipped with proper entrances and doors, lighting and sanitation.

Regarding the target area we should remember that it is not necessarily the same as the floor space required for inmates. The target area can be cut down by arranging the shelter in two or three tiers or by halving the floor space by installing higher capacity ventilating plant.

Secondly, lest we should invite special attention and attempt of the bomber to a particular area, dispersal is necessary. No very great distance between shelters is required but they should be not less than 25 feet clear between external walls below ground level of adjacent shelters. Where more than 1,200 persons have to be accommodated and the construction of separate shelters is not practicable, the case should receive special attention.

The third factor in safety is ventilation and this is complicated by the necessity to make the shelters gas tight. "In the case of an unventilated shelter accommodating more than twelve persons intended to be permanently sealed against gas during the whole period of occupation, it must have for every person accommodated:—

not less than 6 square feet of floor area,

not less than 50 cubic feet capacity,

not less than 75 square feet of surface area of all walls backed by earth, other walls not less than  $8\frac{1}{2}$  inches thick, floor and ceiling or roof.

For the purpose of computing the floor area, when there are seats beneath which the floor does not extend (as in a shelter in the

<sup>1</sup> O. N. Arup.

form of a horizontal tube), the area of such seats may be deemed to be floor area.

In the case of a shelter not intended to be permanently sealed against gas, and ventilated by the entrance and exit or otherwise efficiently ventilated by natural means, or by mechanical means at a rate of not less than 150 cubic feet of air per hour, per person, it must have for every person accommodated :—

not less than 6 square feet of floor area,

not less than 50 cubic feet capacity,

not less than 25 square feet of surface area of all walls backed by earth, other walls not less than  $8\frac{1}{2}$  inches thick, floor and ceiling or roof.

The following table summarises the requirements prescribed by the Home Office of Great Britain.

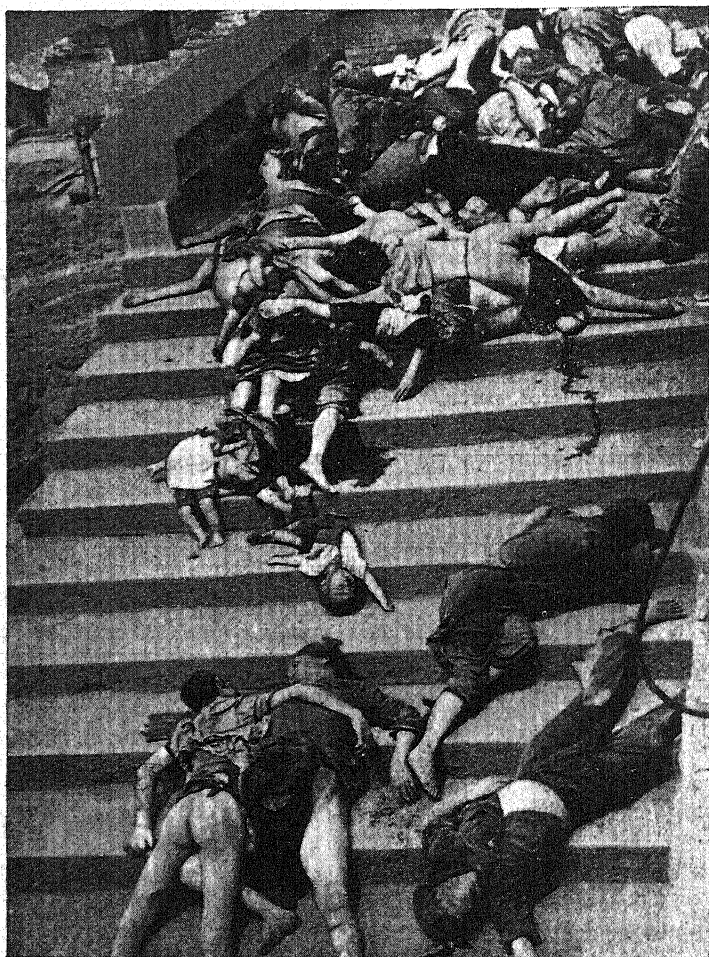
Period of occupation	Unventilated gas-tight shelters—total surface area required, per person	Mechanically ventilated shelters	
		Total surface area required per person if shelter is ventilated at the rate given opposite in column 4	Ventilation rate per person
1	2	3	4
3 hours	75 square feet	30 square feet if shelter is above ground	450 c. ft. per hour
		40 square feet if shelter is above ground, or 20 square feet, if the shelter is underground	150 c. ft. per hour
12 hours	100 square feet	50 square feet if shelter is above ground, or 25 square feet, if the shelter is underground	450 c. ft. per hour

Provided that the floor area, capacity or internal surface area of any such shelter may be of less extent subject to the following conditions—

“That the shelter is ventilated mechanically at a substantially higher rate than the normal (exceeding 450 cubic feet of air per hour for every person in the shelter) and provided that satisfactory arrangements are made for emergency operation of the ventilating plant, when it will be sufficient if there is a floor area of  $3\frac{3}{4}$  square feet for every person in the shelter.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>“ Air Raid Shelters for Persons working in Factories, Mines and Commercial Buildings.” Revised Code, August, 1939. Home Office Statutory Rules and Orders, 1939, No. 920. Also Memorandum on the Revised Code “ Air Raid Shelters for Persons, etc.”

"The comfort of the occupants of a shelter depends to a certain extent on the degree of ventilation, *i.e.*, the rate at which the air is removed and replenished, but to a much more important extent on



Some of the six hundred people who were killed in a Chungking's air raid shelter when the ventilating system failed

the rate at which the bodily heat of the occupants is removed. Thus a greater degree of discomfort results from a rapid rise in the temperature of the shelter than from the vitiation of the air."

The dissipation of the body heat emanating from the occupants may take place mainly in two ways; by its absorption by the structure of the shelter, and by the removal of the heated air by ventilation.

As pointed out by a London doctor recently in the 'Lancet', people who have been compelled to spend many hours in air raid shelters have suffered illness, not so much from epidemics of cold, sore throats, skin diseases and other complaints against which thorough precautions have been taken, but from pulmonary embolism.

This is a condition in which clots of blood form in the arteries of the lungs, usually of elderly people inclined to stoutness, and it sometimes proves fatal—deaths from this cause are reported to have increased sixfold in Britain since the outbreak of war. It is said to be brought on by long hours of sitting or reclining in the refuges from fear of enemy bombing.

The shelterer sits in a deck chair or similar seat, the front edge of which presses into his legs, compressing the veins and causing first obstruction, then stagnation of the blood, followed by swelling and finally clot formation.

More space is required in shelters to prevent this. People who are compelled to spend long hours in air raid shelters should lie down at full length. The provision of bunks in many of the public shelters in Britain has reduced the number of fatalities from this complaint.

Where there is not an efficient system of natural or mechanical ventilation (and it must be remembered that when a shelter is "gas-proofed" the natural system is put out of action) conduction must be relied upon to rid the shelter of superfluous heat. For this reason the heat absorption capacity of the walls, floor and roof of a shelter is an important factor in the determination of the permissible accommodation. In the absence of sufficient ventilation, the necessity for the conduction of the internal heat to the earth cannot be over-emphasised and it is rarely advisable to cover the lining and floor with heat-insulating materials.

There are two main conditions of ventilation for shelters to be considered. The shelters may be entirely sealed for the duration of an air raid against the possible entry of gas, by air-tight doors and

with air-locks at the entrances. An air-lock is simply two gas-proof doors or curtains 4 feet or more apart, with a space between them sealed like a refuge-room. Persons can then pass through without admitting gas, provided they close the first door or curtain when they are inside the air-lock before opening the second. An air-lock at the door of a communal refuge-room or at main outer door or in a corridor used frequently is a great advantage. In such cases it may be useful to provide mechanical ventilation with some form of manual or pedal operation as an alternative to the normal power supply which might fail in an emergency.<sup>1</sup> With gas-tight, mechanically ventilated shelters it is important that the incoming air should pass through a filtration unit capable of removing war gases and, as an additional safeguard, the air inlet may be situated at a high level. With sealed shelters, not mechanically ventilated, it is necessary to limit the number of occupants.

In the second condition shelters will not normally be sealed against gas and their entrances and exits will be left open whilst they are occupied. Should gas be released in their vicinity the openings would be temporarily closed by blankets or similar devices, and the shelters would be evacuated when the attack was past. When normal entrances and exits of shelters are left open the bodily heat of the occupants will set up air convection currents which will normally suffice to ventilate the shelters when continuously occupied.

With the increase in the air strength of nations waves after waves of raiders coming in succession has become a possibility. For instance during the close of January 1940, when the Russian Air Force raided Central and Southern Finland "Large sections of the population have been forced to spend many hours in air raid shelters." Helsinki had six air raid warnings during one day, forcing civilians into shelters for several hours. Several births and deaths took place in them. High officials have been forced to stay

<sup>1</sup> World's best air raid shelters are in China's wartime capital. A tragedy in Chungking's air raid shelter cost hundreds of lives. In world's largest dugout (estimated capacity: 30,000) hundreds of Chinese died. They died not of bombs but of suffocation, in mad frenzy, as they clawed and tore at each other to fight their way to fresh air. In one of the longest (five hours) air raids in Chungking's three years of experience, the dugout's ventilation system had failed.

The thousands within had grown restive, then in panic had tried to force their way out all at once through the narrow twisting slits in the rock. Last official count of the dead : 461, a full half season's toll in a single evening.

The confidence of Chungking's fighting little men in their Air Raid Protective system still the world's best was, however, shaken.

in shelters for long hours in China. A shelter will have to be very much larger to accommodate a given number of persons if there is no provision for mechanical ventilation, and considering the enormous cost, the latter is to be preferred. The advantages claimed for it are :

1. It reduces the size of shelters to one quarter of what it would be if unventilated.
2. Constructional costs are proportionately reduced.
3. Vulnerability to explosion and gas is lessened.
4. They make shelters an economic possibility.
5. They will help to combat panic, because plenty of fresh air for the occupants will help to relieve the strain on nerves ; also, more people can be accommodated in well-ventilated shelter.

Shelters are kept in a comfortable livable condition for an unlimited period for any required number of persons by ventilating plants.

The basic principle of these gas filtration and ventilation sets for shelters depends upon the use of small compact apparatus consisting of a casing of special design, and connecting steel duct. In the casing the activated carbon is packed, along perhaps with other material such as porous paper and the fan sucks in air from the outside, contaminated with gas, which is then passed through the apparatus and the poisons absorbed, the purified air being discharged into the shelter, which has an outlet to the atmosphere fitted with a non-return valve. They are also provided with a small electric fan and there is also large crank handles, so that if the electricity is cut off during an air raid then the fan can still be worked by one or two people inside the shelter.

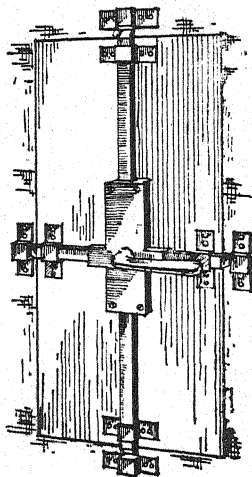
The latter is also provided with refrigerator type of door constructed of wood and having rubber tubing fixed all round, laid in grooves, so that when the door is shut with refrigerator handles the rubber makes an absolutely gas-tight joint.

The principle adopted in gas filtration plant is the same as that used in gas mask. Activated carbon combined to some extent with special varieties of porous paper is used. The former is a variety of almost pure carbon somewhat resembling charcoal but enormously increased in absorbent reactivity for a wide range of



gases and vapours. There are a large number of varieties of activated carbon made in different countries. But the details are supposed to be more or less a secret. Their minute cells almost atomic in size, actually liquefy the gas and retain it in the liquid condition, and until methods are discovered to make possible the use of poisonous gas that cannot be easily liquefied, such as carbon monoxide, these plants might be useful.

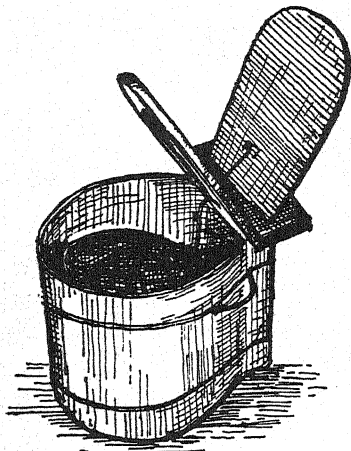
Blast splinter and gas-proof doors are required to render shelters safe and steel is the material generally recommended both for doors and shutters. Gas-proof steel doors equipped with clamping handles or double-operated bolts for operation on both sides can efficiently resist blast and splinters. An observation window is provided. Window shutters are similarly provided and steel plates of desired thickness is used to overcome structural difficulties by manufacturers specialising in pressed steel plates. The principle underlying safety lies in heavy four-way bolts to wedge them at four points, as shown in the adjoining illustration. The keyhole is also covered outside preventing insertion of key or entry of gas into the shelter. Strong lever handles operate latch bolt and when engaged, the door is tightly drawn into frame. The thickness of the steel plate varies from  $\frac{5}{8}$  of an inch to  $\frac{1}{2}$  of an inch according to the degree of protection required. A popular model consists of solid framed and laminated red cedar, made fire resistant. The fastenings are heavy refrigerator type and the door is gas-proof by rubberised linen. Thermite-proof panel or steel-sheet is fitted to face. Gas-proof observation panel of double reinforced glass bedded in rubber is provided. The price ranges from 87 shillings.



Blast, splinter and  
gas-proof shelter  
door

Some of their features are patented but in essence conform to the Home Office Specifications of height and breadth, the provision of a gas-tight spyhole and a gas-tight frame. Doors calculated to resist direct hits are not commonly sold in the market.

Every air raid shelter must have proper closet facilities at the rate of not less than one seat per 25 persons accommodated, and also such subsidiary buckets and urinals as may be necessary. Such conveniences must, where practicable, be contiguous with the shelter and divided therefrom by a partition extending the whole height of the shelter. Here again the need for gas-proofing leads to complications. The usual varieties do not suffice. The type considered most suitable depends upon the use of chemicals to deal with deposits and decomposition. The



A typical chemical closet

chemicals supplied along with the set sold by manufacturers immediately deals with deposits and decomposes them. An anti-splash tray is fitted and is automatically flushed. A separate container is also provided to enable refuse to be easily removed. They remain perfectly hygienic independent of outside drainage which would be vulnerable to air attack. The sewage disposal is postponed without risk of odour or infection. A closet for 20 persons occupies one square foot and for 30 persons 2 square feet. These chemical closets which fulfil the needs of A.R.P. sanitation, for women as well as for men, range in price from 50 to 60 shillings. It is claimed that maintenance cost is extremely low.

There is also the problem of drainage especially for shelters with decontamination units. Pumping out the water is necessary, if shelters are sunk below ground level. As this is not convenient deep underground shelters are not recommended.

“ Every air raid shelter must be adequately lighted, and a system of independent lighting must be installed sufficient to afford such light as may be necessary in the event of the failure of the normal lighting service. Where generators or large storage batteries are employed for such purpose, they must be isolated and have separate ventilation.

" Pipes, tanks or containers which might prove a source of danger (such as pipes or containers conveying or holding steam, gas, compressed air, refrigerants or noxious chemicals) must not be permitted in any air raid shelter, and water pipes connected direct to the mains or to large supply tanks, and gas pipes, must be provided with such valves as may be necessary to permit of their being isolated where they pass through any shelter.

" Where water-mains or sewers are of such size or in such proximity to an air raid shelter as to be hazardous such provision must be made as may be necessary to exclude their contents from the shelter in the event of damage."

The question of shelter lighting has received ample attention and the British Standards Institution have prepared their specification at the request of the Home Office. The point stressed, however, is to ensure emergency lighting by a standby equipment to be worked by man power when electricity fails by bombing to come up into operation upon partial or complete failure of mains.

To protect against gas and to help decontamination as far as possible walls, particularly the lower 6 feet, should be finished with impervious material which can be washed and decontaminated. Very few materials comply with this recommendation and at the same time are proof against acids, gases and the like used in modern chemical warfare. Mustard gas, phosgene, lewisite, chlorine or hydrocyanic gas readily attack building material, containing lime, especially cement and plasters, which readily disintegrate in their presence. Slate is recommended as the most economical material and it also gives structural stability for it is almost free from calcium in the form of lime in chemical composition. Other measures are also recommended. Non-absorbing paints are suggested for painting shelter walls.

To make shelters efficient particularly when they are large, first-aid rooms, cleansing facilities and even kitchen would become necessary and such provision has been made in some of the shelters in Europe. Recent air raids over England demonstrate that people might be forced into shelters for long periods sometimes compelling them to sleep in them.

Since Hitler launched his big-scale offensive against England during August 1940 London spent up to December 1940 a total period of 1,056 hours or six weeks under air raid warnings. A

*Reuter's* correspondent keeping a daily log of the alerts says that the capital has had nearly 400 day and night warnings, ranging in time from a few minutes to an all-night alert, lasting over 14 hours which is the longest recorded so far, although the greater part of 24 hours has frequently been intermittently under warning.

In almost every big shelter in London, there is now a "miniature hospital" and some shelters have a resident or full-time doctor. Over 200 doctors pay nightly visits and nearly 300 more are available if called. The transfer of nearly one million mothers and children from London and big cities has also been a complex problem which has been carried out with considerable success.

One of London's finest and deepest air raid shelters was recently completed at the Liverpool street underground station. The shelter which has fitted sleeping accommodation for a thousand sleepers is provided with all modern conveniences, including water-borne sanitation. It has its own medical aid post and sick bay; a fully equipped canteen, recreation rooms where shelterers can attend sewing classes, take part in community singing or listen to concerts; and an efficient ventilating system which ensures a plentiful supply of fresh air.

It would seem to be necessary for the populations of the majority of our large cities to spend at least a considerable part of each 24-hour day in shelter, often during the time when bodily resistance is most lowered by fatigue resulting from the day's work. The adoption of suitable principles of shelter design to minimise both the occurrence and spread of disease may well, in the course of time, become almost as important a design consideration as providing protection against attacks with high explosive bombs.<sup>1</sup>

All these are necessary to ensure safety to inmates and make their stay possible. It is, therefore, considered that large shelters alone are advisable.

A careful study of the relative advantages of the large communal type of shelters and the small domestic shelter reveal that large ones are considerably more economical than dispersed shelters and therefore even the same expenditure per head will make possible a much higher standard of protection.

They can be readily provided with lighting, sanitary conveniences and furniture, and existence in them can be made reasonably comfortable.

<sup>1</sup> The "Builder", Jan. 10, 1941, p. 32.

More important than all these is this consideration, namely, in the most vulnerable areas, *viz.*, the centres of large towns and cities, for a large proportion of the population, it is not possible to provide any of the various "dispersed" or "family" shelters. This is, in the main, due to lack of sufficient space immediately adjoining each house, although flooding and unsuitability of site generally are contributory factors.

Finally as the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee points out, large communal shelters can be built in two stages; immediately blast and splinter-proof and strengthened later to resist direct hits. It thus solves the problem of combining an immediate and long time policy for partial and absolute protection.<sup>1</sup>

Small bomb-proof shelters cost very much per person but have been erected in important centres. A bomb-proof shelter for 25 persons, which can be used as a strong room during peace, has been erected for a public authority in Westminster. The floor area available measures 12 feet by 8 feet. The height is 7 feet. An air-filtration plant is installed. There are two sumps, a water tank, two gas-tight doors, a telephone and an emergency exit. The shelter is approached by a flight of steps through an air-lock 3 ft. 2 ins. wide by 6 ft. long between the two steel floors. The reinforced concrete walls and roof are 5 ft. thick and the floor is 4 ft. thick. Above the roof is 2 ft. of soil, which has been turfed over. The underside of the roof is lined with Lewis dovetail sheeting.

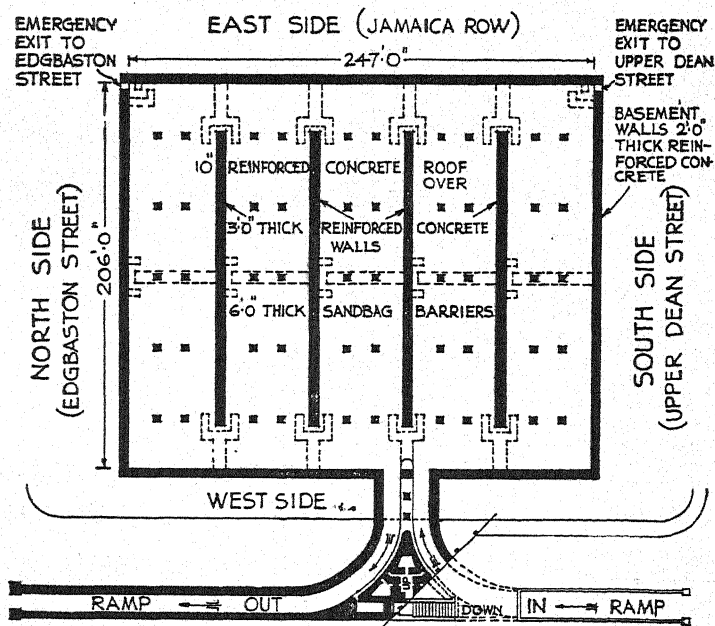
Seats are fitted against the walls, and the authority's documents can eventually be kept in steel boxes 1 ft. 6 ins. wide stored under the seats and over the heads of those sitting in the shelter. The height between the top of the seat and the underside of the upper shelf carrying the steel boxes is the same as the height of a standard filing cabinet.

### Shelter Economy

Those who defend the policy of blast-proof shelters for every home point out that bomb-proof shelters are expensive and impracticable. This is based on the assumption that during peace they are useless.

<sup>1</sup>For details of the scheme see extracts in "The Builder," Dec. 22, 1939, pp. 852-854.

The shelter for 3,500 persons erected in Birmingham and the proposals made elsewhere disprove this assumption. A large air raid shelter in a busy area, convertible into a garage, solves both the problem of congestion and finance. A peace-time use can make expensive shelters economic and the Birmingham example is illuminating. This local authority made arrangements for the adaptation in the plan stage of an underground car park—for 260 cars—under the new St. Martin's Toll Market. In the space of a



The Birmingham underground car park and air raid shelter

few minutes the car park can be converted into an air raid shelter capable of accommodating 3,500 persons.

The entire scheme, including the market hall, underground car park, air raid shelter, and a two and three-storey building for shops is of reinforced concrete.

A total floor area of 5,800 sq. yds. has been planned for the car park, which will be 250 ft. long and 209 ft. wide. Entrance and exit are by inclined ramps on opposite sides 10 ft. wide, with

<sup>1</sup>Birmingham Underground Car Park Scheme, J. T. P. I., Dec. 1938, pp. 75-76.

a gradient of 1 in 9. They connect the car park to the new road by a tunnel running underneath the street. Emergency exits are provided for use in case of fire or as entrances when the building is used for air raid precautions.

Reinforced concrete walls, 3 ft. thick, will divide the park into five sections, and arrangements have been made further to divide each compartment into two sub-sections in time of emergency. This will be effected by the erection of sandbag barriers 6 ft. thick, thus providing ten separate self-contained compartments 100 ft. long and 47 ft. wide, each of which will accommodate 350 persons.

The reinforced concrete walls to the basement of the market hall are increased to 2 feet 6 inches in thickness, and the roof of the car park, which is the floor of the market hall, is divided into reinforced concrete panels 10 inches thick; these panels are expected to provide protection against incendiary and small high explosive bombs. The system of division into ten compartments ensures, in the event of direct hit, that the number of casualties will be reduced to minimum. It is emphasised that it is not sought entirely to prevent the roof being penetrated by heavy bombs, but rather to localise their effect should they reach the basement.

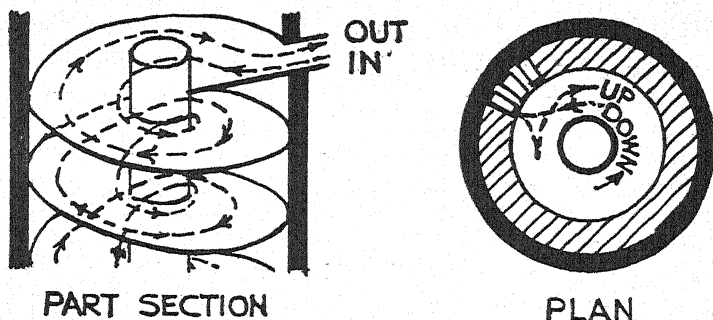
A ventilation system is provided for, to extract car fumes at ground level and supply fresh air, while moveable screens are provided to isolate cases of fire, and the concrete floor grooved and sloped to aid escaping petrol. In time of war the ventilating system would be reversed to maintain a slight pressure of air inside the shelter.

It is expected that the erection of the building will aid the reduction of traffic congestion in Birmingham by taking 260 cars off the city streets. These cars will be parked under a system which will obviate the handling by attendants, while movements of vehicles will be facilitated by placing the columns of the building 37 ft. 6 in. apart, giving a depth to the wall of 16 ft. on either side. Central gangways are 15 ft. wide, and a system of one-way traffic will operate, cars being parked within sections denoted by white lines marked on the floor.

Total estimated cost of the air raid shelter and car park is £48,000 of which £7,000 has been allocated for the adaptation of the car park for air raid precautions, with a possible further £6,000 for air-filtration plant.

A convertible car park and air raid shelter has also been suggested under the Russel Square in Holborne.<sup>1</sup> Another useful variety is the multi-storey garage triangular in shape. Some idea could be had from the plans prepared by the joint effort of well-known experts in their particular subject. This will serve as a modern up-to-date garage in peace time, and could be converted on the possibility of war into an Air Raid Shelter, Decontamination Unit and First-Aid Clearing Station. It could be erected on a site chosen as a detached building and if possible of a shape to avoid right-angles.<sup>2</sup>

It is a ferro-concrete structure throughout, including the external walls, the external walls themselves also to be faced with



Another type of car park and air raid shelter

4-in. stone supported by the concrete construction with 2-in. hollow space forming an air cushion 'behind the stone as provision against blast.

The floors are arranged to make it possible for ramps to be used as a means of access from floor to floor. In addition, there is a central stair-case and a lift. The whole of the inside of the building is left, with bare concrete to be distempered and the structure throughout will be of the most economical kind except that special provision is made by means of properly constructed steel shutters, so that all windows and openings can immediately be sealed against attack.

<sup>1</sup> For plans and sections see the "Builder", Jan. 6, 1939, p. 9.

<sup>2</sup> The "Builder" A.R.P. Supplement—Feb. 24, 1939, p. XVI.



Of necessity provision must be made for additional electric and other services, which would be essential for war conditions.

To provide quickly for the building to be divided into several units in war time, special metal divisions and shutters should be provided and housed in the basement until required.

In case of any breakdown in the electric services a standby electrical installation is necessary.

Lock up shops could be provided where there would be demand.

The roof is specially designed to resist the small bomb and incendiary bomb.

The upper floors, in case of a raid, are to be used as the air raid shelter and provision is made for sanitary services, also for kitchens.

The ground floor and the basement floor will be used for the Decontamination Unit and the First-Aid Unit. The Decontamination Unit is complete in itself with separate access to First-Aid Unit and the shelter above.

Apart from the Decontamination Unit there is a separate entrance on the ground floor for those going to the shelters on the upper floors, and separate entrance on the other side of the building for the cases arriving for the First-Aid Unit. In this Unit the male cases are dealt with on the ground floor and female cases in the basement. In the basement, in addition, two 20-bed wards are provided, one for male and one for female, with services and nurses' quarters. Both in the male and female First-Aid section is provided a small operation unit with anæsthetic room, theatre and sterilising room; the whole building will be air-conditioned by means of plant placed on the roof, adequately protected.

A number of towns, including London, are adopting this sensible principle of erecting dual purpose air raid shelters which in the future will form underground car parks, in which connection of course a substantial Treasury grant is obtainable, as with most public air raid shelters.

In the Technical Press in the United States attention is being given to another and at the moment relatively minor problem so far as concerns Great Britain, that is, parking in larger cities. Since 1930 the number of motor vehicles in America has increased by more than 4,000,000 while at the same time the average mileage

of each vehicle has increased by 28 per cent., that is from 7,000 to 9,000 miles per annum. The value of what is termed "Planned Parking" that is, provision of open spaces in the middle of cities for the purpose, does not therefore require emphasis, since motor transport is rapidly approaching the stage of chocking itself down to an average speed which is less than that of horse-drawn vehicles of say half a century ago, or even later. In fact before 1939 it was often literally quicker to walk than to take a motor vehicle in the middle of London with thousands of buses, vehicles, cars and taxi-cabs all mixed up and rapidly reduced to a standstill or to a crawl of one to two miles per hour. Under these conditions parking of vehicles in the streets even for a relatively short time, is intolerable.

On September 14, 1942, San Francisco's new Union Square Garage believed to be the largest structure for this purpose in the world, was opened to the public. The underground building with 3,000,000 sq. ft. of floor space affording storage for 1,700 cars, supports on its roof Union Square Park, which has been restored since the garage was completed. Inside the building an extensive signalling system, man-lifts and slide poles facilitate the delivery of the cars so that patrons waited on an average for less than two minutes, a week after the garage was opened. A new staggered floor design eliminates ramps of more than  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet rise between any two floors. The ventilating system which is not air-conditioning but air-replacing is a mechanical one which changes the air throughout the structure six times an hour at the rate of 390,000 cubic feet per minute. Fresh air is drawn in *via* the ramps and six expel the stale air. Dislocation of street traffic has been avoided by having an entrance on each of the four sides of the garage and by providing an extra traffic lane for garage patrons. The United States army assisted in the planning of the structure, so that the underground space would be suitable for use as an air-raid shelter, emergency hospital or evacuation centre should the need arise. The garage cost the city nothing. It was built by a non-profit organisation to which the city is remitting \$5,000 in rent and about \$13,000 in taxes annually. This is to continue for an estimated period of 25 years after which the building will become city property.

In the May 1940 issue of "Concrete and Constructional Engineering," there is described, with detailed drawings, a scheme for a

car park and air raid shelter, below the ground level, at Kingston-on-Thames, which is a fine example of what can be accomplished in this connection. This is a concrete building consisting of six adjacent bays each 107 ft. long, which has cost £8,000, and will, in the future, after the war, be converted into a car park at an initial cost of about £500. Accommodation in the shelter is sufficient for 1,200 persons and the accessories are of a very complete character, including water-supply, drainage, lavatories and lighting. When used as a car park the accommodation will be 174 cars and the space above, constituting a flat roof, level with the ground, will be converted into public gardens.

Another small shelter for 170 people is in the form of a reinforced concrete building with the floor, walls, and roof designed as a cellular raft to carry the heavy load represented by the erection in the future of four storeys upon it. The space allowed is 3.75 sq. ft. per person with mechanical ventilation, the plant for this latter purpose having cost £100. For use as an air raid shelter it is fitted also with stand-by lighting, lavatories, and other accessories, and has cost £875, whilst for ordinary peace-time use it will be fitted with racks and bins and used as a fire-proof store-room for inflammable oils.<sup>1</sup>

Another dual-purpose air raid shelter is at a large factory, built entirely of reinforced concrete in three storeys, one of which is below the ground. The latter constitutes the main shelter whilst the ground floor is used for first aid and decontamination, and partly as a shelter, and the second storey forms a third emergency shelter. The total accommodation throughout is for 300 people. When the war is over this heavily built shelter will form a works canteen on the first floor, a cycle store and two garages on the ground floor and an engineer's stores in the basement, the total cost involved having been £2,500, which, however, includes very elaborate equipment such as drainage, water-supply and electric lighting.

To residential zones where convertible garages are neither necessary nor paying, community centres capable of conversion into air raid shelter during emergency has been suggested.<sup>2</sup> The primary purpose of the building is to be a centre suitable for use by the various bodies engaged in social work, musical and operatic societies and local gymnastic and physical training clubs. It would also provide accommodation for the local voluntary fire brigade

<sup>1</sup> The "Builder" A.R.P. Supplement—Feb. 24, 1939, pp. 16-20.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, p. XVI.

and also committee rooms which are for use of local bodies for various purposes. The organisation to be built up for A.R.P. purposes could usefully be housed in the same building as an A.R.P. centre and first-aid post without involving any structural alteration.

The structure may be of ferro-concrete frame and roofs faced with brick. The roofs must be flat, with parapets on all sides to facilitate protection by sandbags when the necessity arises.

Further people could accustom themselves to the idea that in times of crisis this is the building to which they should apply for advice, instruction and possible treatment.

It is considered that the psychological effect of this permanent provision of such facilities should be very valuable. It is estimated that the cost of such a building will be about £10,000 in Great Britain.

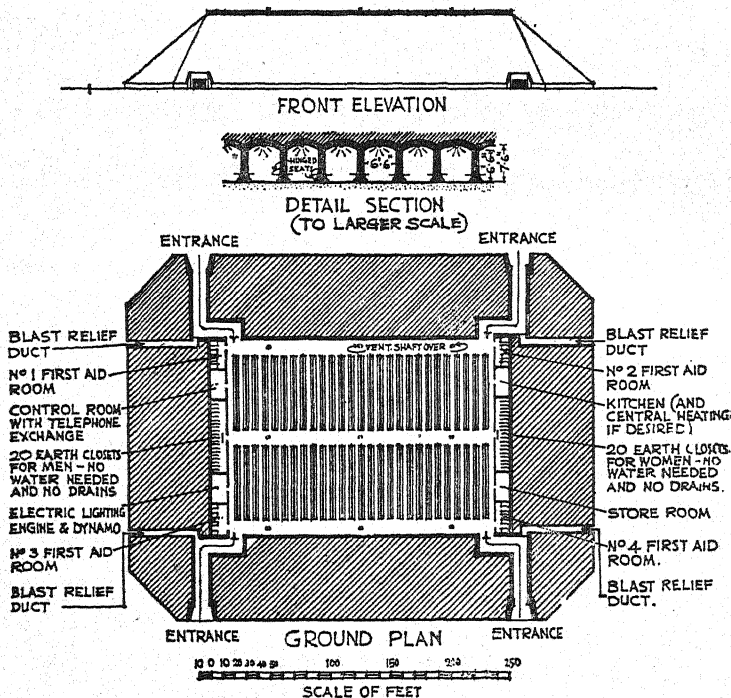
The plan for an overground bomb-proof air raid shelter given in the next page needs careful consideration. With suitable modifications it would ideally serve residential areas in any properly zoned and laid Indian city. It is entirely above ground, with no stairs, no flood risk, no interference with any underground sewers or pipes. It has scope for ample natural ventilation and unobstructed and ample entrances at all four corners on the ground level. Built of common bricks in lime mortar with reinforced arches and lime washed inside with a solid earth cover 20 feet thick it is on a  $2\frac{1}{2}$ -acre site which includes spaces for terraces of flats on the four fronts of the grassed mound.<sup>1</sup>

This would offer accommodation for 5,000 people. The cost estimated in England is £5 per head and it would be less in our country. The internal arrangement consists of separate tunnels interconnected by three transverse tunnels. Where the density of population is 100 persons per acre, each shelter would serve 50 acres or a rectangle of 1,524 ft.  $\times$  1,434 ft. The distance from extreme boundary of area served by each shelter to shelter itself will be 191 yards and it could be reached in approximately 2 minutes. 'The 5,000 people on a 50-acre site can all reach the shelter within two minutes.' Kitchen store room, power room, control room, etc., are all possible. The two-and-a-half acre site permits the

<sup>1</sup> See "Builder" Supplement, March 24, 1939, p. 26 for Ground Plan and Elevation; Supplement, May 26, 1939, p. 35 for perspective view and details.

addition of 48 good shops (or garage accommodation for 400 motor cars, all on ground level) with 96 good flats above; and as the top of the one acre mound could be used as a communal playground this feature would be very attractive to tenants. It is considered that building societies would find them attractive and paying.

## OVERGROUND BOMB-PROOF AIR-RAID PUBLIC SHELTER (ACCOMMODATION-5000 PEOPLE)



Such structures could be used as schools in peacetime and especially in wartime in the interests of the security of children at school who are singled out for bombing in recent attacks. German air-craft dropped bombs at several places in south-western and southern England at the close of September 1942, causing a number of casualties and some damage. According to an Air Ministry Communique a school in a small south of England town, was bombed by a lone enemy raider. The death roll was 23. Of these 20 were children. Further, 34 boys were injured. Thirty-one children, all injured,

were dug from the ruins. The Headmaster and his woman assistant were also killed and another teacher was rescued seriously injured.

### Location and Accessibility

Thoughtfully located garages and carefully laid out community centres capable of conversion into air raid shelters would successfully meet the other argument that large communal shelters are not accessible and streams of people running towards it would be caught in a raid and perish. The Home Office prescribes :

Every air raid shelter must be boldly marked and so situated and accessible by day and by night that the persons for whose protection it is intended may from the place where they work get into their shelter within seven minutes.

Further every large air raid shelter must have at least two exits as remote as may be practicable from each other, one of which may be the normal entrance if suitable.

The question of accessibility leads to the problem of adequacy. For, to be accessible to all the citizens there must be enough shelters. Further, unless a reasonably high proportion of the people can get into these, before bombing begins a frightened population may crowd the streets and cause panic while masses of shrapnel and pieces of anti-aircraft shells begin to fall seriously hindering fire engines and ambulances from fulfilling their necessary duties.<sup>1</sup> The authorities will have to face a double task of looking after the bodies and minds of the survivors as well as salvaging the devastated areas. In the main streets of Barcelona a shelter is said to be available at every 200 yards which must have contributed largely to the civilian resistance. And again they must be known and be familiar to the public. In Germany adequate precautions are taken to familiarise the citizens with their location, by permanent signs and notices and this is necessary especially if air raids happen at night.

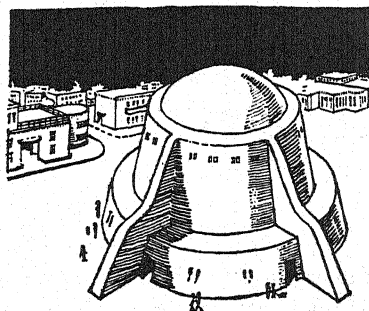
If shelters are not adequate, there may be rush during alerts and serious accidents might happen. The British Ministry of Home Security issued a statement about a serious accident which took place one night early in March 1943, in a London tube shelter, involving the death of nearly 200 people. They were going as usual

<sup>1</sup> "It should be borne in mind that any policy should apply to the whole population of a district ; any scheme which protects only a part of the population can be shown mathematically to give a poor return for the money spent, quite apart from any consideration of fairness." O. N. Arup: *Vide Ante*.

to the shelter on hearing an alert when a woman with a baby fell down. This caused a man behind her to fall and in turn more behind them. Those coming from the street could not see what happened. In a minute hundreds of people crashed together. One hundred and seventy-eight people are believed to have lost their lives. Sixty more have been sent to the hospital. The woman who fell down was recovered alive but her baby was dead. No bombs fell in the district throughout the evening. The Ministry had to order a full enquiry to be made.<sup>1</sup>

Protection to people is possible only by massive structures that could resist the high explosive, the incendiary bomb and poison gas. Full protection is possible according to Haldane, by a system of deep tunnels and he advocates them for the eight million people of London. He does not mention a peace-time use for them because of the problem of making shelters is according to him so urgent that it cannot be allowed to wait for the Report of a Commission on Underground Motorways or Railways. The only practical kind of security against air raid is collective security. "It is as ridiculous to expect every citizen to erect his own shelter as to make his own anti-aircraft gun."<sup>2</sup>

For the 30 million people of Britain his estimated cost is 400 million pounds. His shelter for the London City would consist of 1,400 miles of brick-lined tunnels at a depth of about 60 ft. with entrance tunnels sloping down to them. Considerations of safety leads to large initial outlay but proper design can render such schemes economic and practicable. But adequate numbers should be there to make them accessible. The lay-out of modern cities require too many to provide this facility for all inhabitants. Crowded and congested areas would not only make their erection impossible but access difficult. With business, commerce and residences mixed



Bomb-proof shelter in a residential zone

together without zoning more numbers would be needed for the population than we can build if they were properly distributed. To economise in the number of shelters it is possible only if business

<sup>1</sup> *The Hindu*, 5-3-'43.

<sup>2</sup> A.R.P., pp. 211-24.

houses and residences surround dual-purpose air raid shelters. An altered lay-out zoning and planning of residential suburbs are necessary to make protection possible to all. The problem is therefore complementary to Town Planning, for this alone can meet the objection put forth against communal shelters by the advocates of partial protection, namely all cannot use them and have access to them.

Until cities are reformed, caves, underground passages, tunnels in hill sides and natural shelter existing around vulnerable areas should be explored to render them fit for occupation during raids. If Chungking has used her hills to provide air raid shelters to her citizens, the citizens of Detroit, the motor car engineering and ship building centre, are contemplating converting the City's old salt mines into air raid shelters for emergency. They occupy 160 acres at a depth of 1,100 feet. There are 25 miles of passage ways 50 feet wide and 22 feet high. The temperature is constant at 58 degrees. The entire population of sixteen lakhs can take shelter in them. The town might be bombarded and ruined, but the shelters would be safe.

The Finns have perfected measures to protect civilians and are giving the final touches to vast bomb-proof shelters blasted out of solid rock. One will house a complete hospital and another a fire brigade.

There are  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles of tunnels, 60 ft. deep, in Southark capable of holding 60,000 people, 24 entrances with underground connecting tunnels permit everybody to be in the main shelter. Within 5 minutes of the alarm men, women and children eat and sleep here in complete safety. At a cost of £60,000 these shelters were erected before the war. Over 500 high explosive bombs were dropped during one raid alone. 1,000 houses were destroyed. But only 28 people were killed in the great terror raid.

The underground shelter is semi-circular in shape and accessible to everyone in 5 minutes. Every night, men, women and children barring those employed in Civil Defence go "downstairs" to bed.

Nightly visits of Nazi raiders should lead people to a search for the deepest shelter, so a troglodytic influx to London's Tube Station platforms resulted. Even the unused escalators are providing comfortless perches for shelterers. People begin to arrive as early as 4 p.m. with their bedding, and shopping bags filled with food. By the time the evening rush hour begins,



they have already selected their pitches for the night. Business people, homeward bound, wave from the trains to the mothers and children. Some of the older children do their homework, using the platform as a desk for their copy-books. Later on, men, women and children remove their boots and shoes, and sleep in spite of the thunder of the trains. The L.P.T.S. have appealed to able-bodied men not to use Tubes as shelters. Although two Ministries have asked the public to use Tube stations as shelters "only in cases of urgent necessity," the natural instinct to seek the refuge



Londoners taking shelter at night in an underground tube station

of depth from indiscriminate bombing continues. The Ministry of Home Security has promised more and better night-time shelters. But the London Public is taking no notice, and is unlikely to leave the Tubes for surface shelters, or even for basements. The station platforms are filled to within a foot of the edge. The question of ventilation is one of the drawbacks of the Tube, in which the renewal of fresh air is dependent to a large extent on the passage of trains throughout the system. With people sleeping in an unused Tube, additional means of ventilation have to be considered.

Eight New Tube Tunnel Shelters four north of the Thames and four south have been put in hand to the direction of the Ministry

of Home Security. All are sited below existing tube stations and each is capable of holding just over 8,000 people. These deep shelters would accommodate about 64,000, about half the existing accommodation of all the tube stations. The shelters will not be opened until actually needed, a decision which rests upon the Minister in consultation with the Regional Commissioners. The shelters are to form part of an express line to be completed after the war.

The construction was undertaken by the London Passenger Transport Board as agents of the Ministry of Home Security. The basis of the design is, two main twin tunnels about 1,200 ft. long and 16 ft. 6 in. in diameter, lined with reinforced concrete with cast-iron linings at junctions. The tunnels are at a depth of from 75 to 110 ft. below ground level, and run immediately underneath the existing tube railway lines. Each tunnel is divided by a concrete slab into an upper and lower deck. Cross passages divide the shelter into four sections of approximately equal length, and there are, therefore, 16 sections in each shelter; each section is fitted with bunks for about 500 persons. Near the centre of their length the tunnels are connected by a cross passage from which leads a staircase to the tube station at station level. At a quarter of their length from each end, cross passages are provided, out of which medical aid posts, lavatories, machinery control rooms, etc., are formed. At these points vertical shafts lead to the surface and these are fitted with a goods lift and with twin spiral staircases as a means of direct access from the street. Each shaft is provided with a protective cap. The tunnels are mechanically ventilated. In the lavatories are provided chemical closets ventilated into the main ventilation system. Cold water is laid on to wash-basins, etc. Sewage is raised to street level by compressed air ejectors.

To ensure the greatest possible degree of freedom for circulation of traffic a system of folding bunks has been devised. Transverse bunks occupy one side of the gangway and longitudinal bunks on the other. The former consist of three tiers and the top bunk can be lowered to form a back rest to the middle one when used as a seat. In effect, the transverse bunks form alcoves each with six bunk spaces. The longitudinal bunks, when lowered for occupation, provide five places on the upper floor and four on the lower, the gangway being then 4 ft. 3 in. wide. When the bunking is folded

back against the tunnel, continuous seating becomes available and the width of the gangway is increased to 6 ft. At the four tunnel ends on the upper floor longitudinal bunking is continued on both sides for 50 ft. When the bunks are folded back, a central clear space is available for social or welfare purposes. Four canteens have been provided at suitable points on each floor. Each is equipped with electrically heated cupboards and boilers. Two medical aid posts have been formed on the upper floor of each shelter fitted up and partitioned off as a sick bay, observation bay and examination room. When the shelters are occupied, a doctor and nurses will be in attendance.



Inside a typical shelter in Chungking, when the Japanese raid the city

Each shelter will be in charge of a shelter superintendent. The cost of construction and maintenance of the shelters is being borne by the Exchequer.<sup>1</sup>

Full use is being made in Great Britain of the highly efficient material ready to hand in the form of hard rock which on excavation forms extensive shelters which are completely proof against a direct hit of the heaviest and largest bomb. On the whole Great Britain is well situated in this connection with extensive areas of sandstone, limestone, and chalk often in the immediate neighbourhood of thickly populated centres.

Some interesting information has been published in the press concerning the shelters that are being excavated from the solid rock

<sup>1</sup> The "Builder," Sep. 25, 1942.

in a certain area in the north of England. One of these shelters, recently completed, has 1 1/4 miles of excavated passages which have been drilled and blasted out of solid sandstone with 40-70 ft. thickness of rock above and proof against any bomb. These shelters are in general 18 ft. wide and 8 ft. high being also brick lined, floored and bunks installed. There is in addition electric lighting and such rock shelters are dry and comfortable.

Existing tunnels if any are also by suitable measures adapted to provide air raid shelters. In the city and country of New Castle-upon-Tyne, a tunnel was constructed many years ago. Internal dimensions were 7 feet 5 inches high by 6 feet 3 inches wide. The cover on the tunnel varied from 30 ft. to 85 ft. and for the greater part of its length was greater than 40 ft. The brickwork of the existing tunnel was in a remarkably good condition, but it was very dirty and the bottom covered with mud and slime. A considerable amount of work on cleaning and scraping of walls was therefore necessary before the more permanent work of seating, etc., could be carried out. It was necessary to provide an entrance which would give reasonable protection against blast in the event of an H.E. bomb being dropped either on the surface near the entrance, or on the entrance at a point where the cover was insufficient to prevent penetration. Baffle walls 3 ft. thick were built at the junction of the entrance with the existing tunnel. Eventually it was decided to construct the entrances with one or more angle bends. In addition baffle walls 3 ft. thick were built at the junction of the entrance with the existing tunnel. The tunnel cost £37,000 with a capacity of 9,000 seated, and this worked out at approximately £4 per head. The culvert cost £13,000 with a capacity of 3,500 seated; it also worked out at approximately £4 per head.

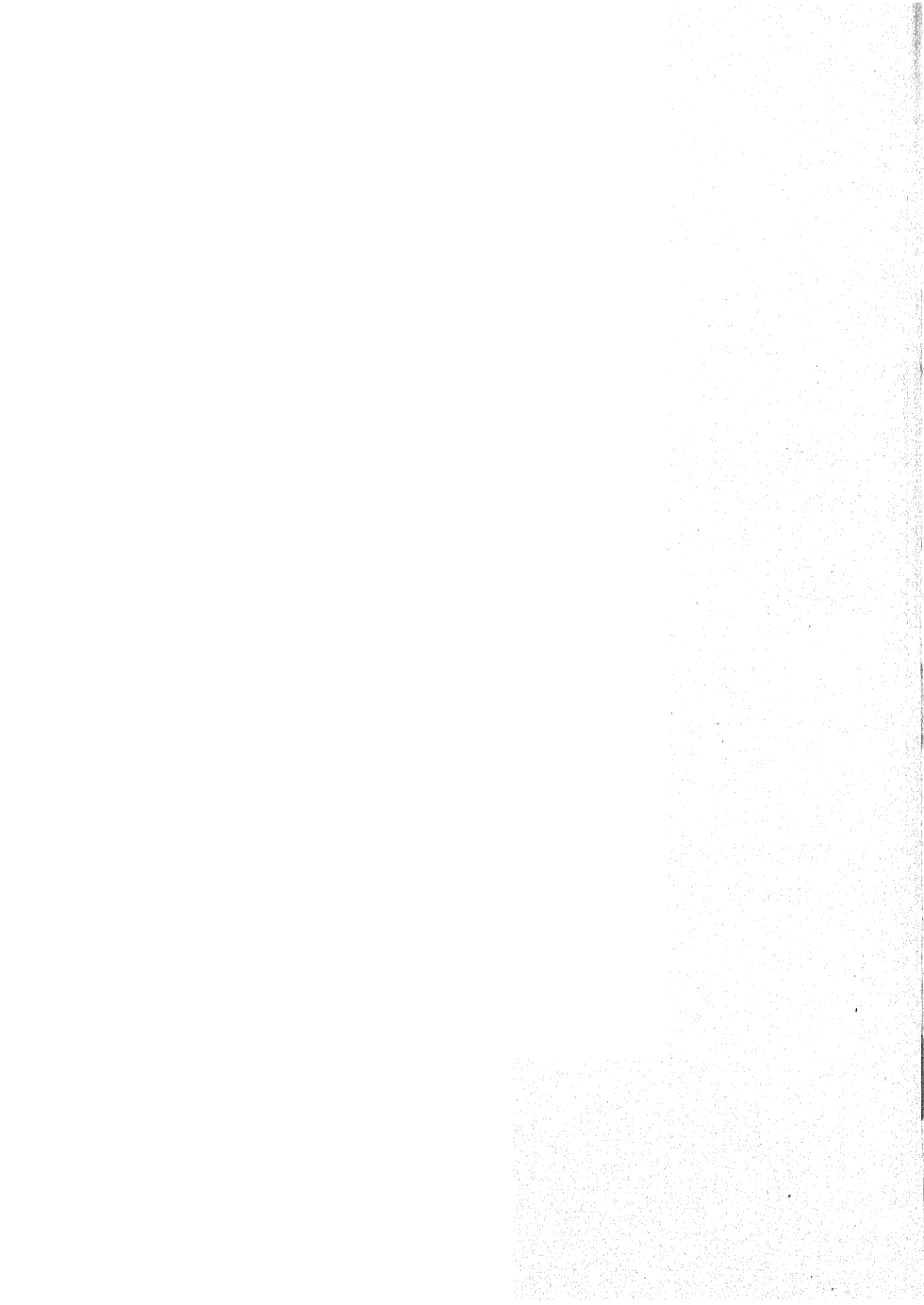
Bomb-proof shelters are also being built in U. S. A. One bomb-proof shelter that has been built is of corrugated metal and accommodates fifty persons. It is complete with toilet and cooking facilities, games, emergency lighting and heating, and has an emergency escape tunnel. One of the interesting features of this shelter is the 3-foot explosion wall formed of earth which protects the front of the 60 feet structure from high explosive bombs. The army engineers who inspected the shelter feel this is especially important because of the very powerful bombs now being used on defence plants. The new theory in shelter protection is to build them so that the force of an explosive bomb will be

deflected upwards while no shelter has yet been devised which will withstand a direct hit by a big bomb. The precision bombing now practised makes shelters of this type essential to any war plant which wishes to provide employees with protection against exploding bombs as well as gun fire.

## **CHAPTER IV**

---

### **RESISTANCE TO STRUCTURES**



## CHAPTER IV

---

### RESISTANCE TO STRUCTURES

A successful scheme of bomb-proof shelters would protect the people from air raids but life in the city would be impossible if the buildings that provide accommodation for living and work are rendered unfit for use, when they emerge from their shelters after a raid. If urban communities should stand a raid, city structures should be in a position to resist and recover from the weapons used. That is, they should be blast and splinter-proof ; immune to earthquake effect and the dangers of demolition arising from the high explosive bomb ; they should resist penetration and fire of incendiary bombs ; as well as contamination from liquid gas. If this is not possible they must at least be capable of being rendered fit for use without great effort and expense. In short they must be in a position to recover from the blow easily. This should be considered more practical for from Chapter I it would be evident that total resistance is impossible until we cover the entire city with a reinforced concrete roof thick enough to prevent penetration by the heaviest bomb. Absolute protection is uneconomic, but a fair measure of security could be obtained if city structures are so designed and located as to :—

1. render contamination of poison gas difficult and decontamination easy,
2. prevent the penetration of the kilo incendiary bomb and prevent or minimise the spread of fires caused by them,
3. prevent more than superficial damage to buildings by the high explosive bomb of 500 lb. weight exploding not near than 50 feet.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>T. E. Scott : " Structural Precautions in New and Existing Buildings." The " Builder ", April 21, 1939, p. 744. •



For liquid gas contamination for the structure of buildings the following treatment is recommended for decontamination :—

Material	Treatment for liquid contamination
Stone or brickwork ..	Hose down with water if this can be done before the liquid has had time to soak in, but not otherwise. Spray or brush surface with cream of bleaching powder and water. Leave in contact as long as possible (not less than 24 hours). Repeat treatment.
Concrete floors and tiles ..	Hose with water. Apply bleaching powder and water cream and brush thoroughly over surface. Leave in contact for 6 hours. Hose with water. Apply sodium silicate solution, when available. Prolonged exposure to gross contamination may necessitate breaking up and re-laying floors in rooms which have to be inhabited.
Glazed tiles ..	Hose with water and treat with cream of bleaching powder and water. Give special attention to the joints.
Distempered walls ..	Paint or spray with paste of bleaching powder and water. Apply alternate layers of bleach paste and paper, and leave in position for at least 48 hours. Finally wash off and treat wall with fresh distemper or sodium silicate solution.
Papered walls ..	Strip off paper and then treat as for distempered walls.
Painted walls (wood or plaster)	If immediate treatment can be applied, that as for distempered walls and finally re-paint. If the contamination has been prolonged, remove the paint completely.
Wooden floors ..	Absorb visible liquid with fresh earth which should be burnt or buried. Scrub the surface with cream of bleaching powder and water, and sand. Leave bleaching powder in contact for 24 hours, then brush off and wash with water. Repeat treatment two or three times when necessary. Boards soaked in blister gas should be removed and burnt.
Unpainted woodwork ..	General treatment as for wooden floors. Hard wood articles and mouldings should first be swabbed with paraffin, and then treated with paste of bleaching powder and vaseline, which should be left in contact for a short period, and then wiped off, leaving a thin film on the surface.

### Resistance to Gas<sup>1</sup>

Preventing contamination is impossible since building materials commonly used absorb liquid gas and a heavy spray or bomb explosion will bring the liquid in contact with them and even vapour would be absorbed though explosion may happen at a distance. As we cannot avoid brick, lime, concrete, and wood in our buildings the best remedy lies in designing the structures in such a way as to secure natural ventilation to prevent concentration of vapour and to facilitate washing them down thoroughly.

The interior should be as simple in design as possible. Mouldings, unnecessary fittings, etc., should be avoided. At least lower portions of the room should be constructed of smooth surfaced non-absorbent materials which can be readily washed and decontaminated.

Good ventilation is necessary to clear away concentration of gas, and particular care must be taken.

Flooring materials should be non-absorbent to blister gases and be capable of decontamination by the normal methods. Concrete with a granolithic or cement finish, and periodical treatment with sodium silicate solution is most suitable. Quarry tiles also provide a satisfactory material. But they should be set in cement mortar with a fine joint and treated as above. Unglazed tiles retain mustard gas. Rubber flooring should not be used as this material absorbs mustard gas. Flooring of an asphaltic or bituminous nature is also unsuitable.

Bare wooden floors may be used but repeated decontamination will injure the timber, and preservatives and varnishes add no advantage.

Walls, as far as possible, particularly the lower six feet, should be finished with smooth surfaced impervious materials which can be washed and decontaminated. Glazed bricks or tiles of the best quality set in cement mortar with a fine joint are most satisfactory.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* A.R.P.H.1, A.R.P.H.4 and other H.O. publications.

Smooth portland cement and sand as well as plaster finishes of either lime plaster or gypsum plaster as practised in this country form a satisfactory finish which is improved by periodical treatment with sodium silicate solution. Corrugated galvanised sheets could be used, fixed with the corrugations vertical, with the joints done with special care.

Fairfaced brick work where ordinary building bricks are used is unsatisfactory. Wall finishings of an asphaltic or bituminous nature should not be used.

Wall linings and panelling of match-boarding, plywood, fibre board or asbestos cement sheeting are unsuitable unless all joints are covered and the whole finished with a varnished paper or a resistant paint coating to eliminate joints and porosity.

Mouldings and panelling should be avoided, and the angles between the walls and floor should be coved either with tiles or cement ; wood skirting should be avoided.

The use of paint is not desirable, because ordinary paints are not satisfactory. The use of materials which require painting should be avoided as much as possible. Even hard drying enamel paint under repeated contamination may prove dangerous.

Fittings should be reduced to the minimum and should be of the simplest possible design and where practicable must be situated on the upper half of the walls so as to be out of the zone of heavier contamination. Doors should be of the flush type without moulding or panels; metal windows should be provided. Hard ebonite materials are not recommended as they absorb mustard gas. Bakelite or Beatek Scarab ware are most suitable for fittings. Glazed porcelain is also satisfactory and metal pipes and fittings may be used but should be treated with a suitable paint to prevent corrosion by bleaching powder. Oiled fabrics may be used but as they should be boiled to free them from gas poison, it is better to avoid them.

•

METHODS OF DECONTAMINATION FOR HOUSEHOLD ARTICLES<sup>1</sup>

Articles	Treatment
Furniture (hard woods) <sup>2</sup>	.. Swab thoroughly with paraffin, then give prolonged treatment (not less than 48 hours) with mixture of bleaching powder and vaseline.
Upholstery	.. All upholstery must be stripped from the wooden framework. In many cases it will probably be quicker and easier to destroy it by burning and replace with new material. When it is necessary to undertake decontamination, use the following methods :—  Woollen fabrics—immerse in boiling water for 1 hour.  Leather—expose for prolonged period in a current of hot air, but if heavily contaminated, it is safer to destroy by burning.  Padding—Hot air treatment may occasionally be applicable but in general it will be safer to burn.
Bedding	.. Treat as for clothing according to whether textile is wool or cotton. Mattresses may be treated in a steam disinfectant.
Carpets, rugs, etc.	.. If lightly contaminated hang in open air to weather for 7 days in mild weather, and 14 days in colder weather. If wetted with blister gas, spray with soda solution before hanging out to air to prevent tendering of the fabric. If carpets are heavily contaminated they should be destroyed by burning unless arrangements can be made to immerse them in boiling water for 2 hours.
Linoleum	.. If in good condition and only the upper surface is contaminated, treat with bleach and water cream. If it is worn and the basic fabric is contaminated, it is safer to destroy by burning.
Metal fittings	.. Swab well with paraffin or petrol and rub dry with clean cloths.
China glass and earthenware	.. Treat in boiling water or strong bleaching powder solution, or swab with paraffin or petrol, (swabbing not suitable for unglazed articles).

<sup>1</sup> Vide A.R.P.H.4, Appendix D.<sup>2</sup> Owing to possible danger from personal contact with furniture hasty decontamination should not be attempted. •

It is evident from the methods suggested in the above table that in addition to simplicity of design and construction and suitable materials, furniture and household goods should also be simple and few and of material easily washed and decontaminated. Upholstery, excessive bedding, carpets and rugs and wall paper and paint, are not suitable to resist mustard gas attack. But they are not needed in our country where climate is very kind. Simplicity is not inconsistent with comfort and furnishing our homes with furniture, utensils and vessels of the traditional type seems desirable if we should face this new danger.

Ventilation is as important as design, for when properly secured it would almost completely eliminate the danger from the non-persistent gases. It would help evaporation and weathering in the case of persistent gases. But care in design alone cannot help because ventilation depends also upon the location, the neighbourhood, the lay-out of the roads, etc. The best design will fail to succeed when these are unsatisfactory. An open lay-out and a road system that would help the breeze to "blow through" the streets and homes is also necessary.

Decontamination involves copious use of water, and need for it would be aggravated by the demands of fire-fighting if simultaneously incendiary bomb attack is made. Adequate water-supply should therefore be provided, but this is not enough. The washed water may carry contamination down the drain and wherever it spreads.

Care must be taken to ensure that the water can drain away satisfactorily to a place where it will not become a source of danger. It should not be allowed to flow into streams or ditches where the contamination might be carried to some place where it would be dangerous. If it flows into pools or ditches near at hand where it is considered that it can be allowed to remain, those pools or ditches should be marked as contaminated. Where there is nowhere for the water to flow away safely, the method of decontamination by hosing cannot be used, and alternative methods must be employed.

Adequate water-supply and drainage facilities are both required to enable hosing down to be carried out. If a gas attack should be prevented from rendering our city structures and buildings unfit for use, their design and construction should be improved, their lay-out bettered, road system rationalised, and provision made for adequate water-supply and suitable drainage. And this is especially necessary for residential areas where the use of gas is most probable.

### Resistance to Fire and Incendiary Agents<sup>1</sup>

To render the incendiary bomb innocuous, it is desirable to prevent penetration and check the spread of fire. Fire-proof materials in construction, fire breaks and ample water-supply are necessary to solve the problem successfully. The incendiary bomb is especially dangerous as is evident from the destruction of Warsaw and other European cities ; and Spanish experience also tells us that fire-proof construction would reduce the danger very effectively.

It is very difficult to check the spread of fire once the incendiary bomb gets into the building and the most desirable measure is to prevent penetration by impact. Fortunately these bombs have poor ballistics, cannot be aimed accurately and hit the target perpendicularly. A resisting roof will largely solve the question and the following minimum thicknesses give the required protection, against penetration by impact of incendiary bombs of various weights.

Bomb	Reinforced concrete	Sand*	Earth*	Shingle*	Mild steel plate
1 K. 2½ lb. ..	3½" — 4"	6"	6"	6"	¼"
2 K. 4½ lb. ..	5" — 6"	3' 6"	5'	—	⅜"
5½ K. 12 lb. ..	—	4' 9"	7'	—	—
10 K. ..	—	6'	9'	—	1"

\*About

Since the one-kilo bomb is most likely to be used, mild steel plate ¼ inch thick or one layer of sandbag (laid as closely as possible) or 3½ inches to 4 inches good quality reinforced concrete for the

<sup>1</sup>Vide A.R.P.H.9. Also Felix Samuely, in the "Builder."

roof would be enough. But considering economy, practicability and utility buildings with a flat roof 4 to 6 inches thick in reinforced concrete is preferable, both for domestic dwellings as well as for large buildings. For the latter type 6 inches might be preferred. Erecting pitched roof of combustible material and strengthening it in emergency is expensive and less effective.

The following materials give protection against burning of the magnesium (electron) incendiary bomb:—

Materials	Min. Layer in ins.	Weight per. sq. ft. in lbs.
Household ash .. .. .	2 $\frac{1}{4}$	5 0
*Slate dust .. .. .	1 $\frac{1}{4}$	5 0
Red Ash .. .. .	1	6 0
Boiler House Ash .. .. .	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	6 0
Refuse Destructor dust .. .. .	2	11 5
Brick dust .. .. .	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	9 5
Sodium Bicarbonate .. .. .	1	5 0
Kaolin .. .. .	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	5 0
Pumice (ground) .. .. .	1 $\frac{1}{4}$	4 0
Dry (virgin) Earth (sifted) .. .. .	1 $\frac{1}{4}$	6 0
Dry sand .. .. .	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	13 5
†Foamed slag (ground) .. .. .	2	5 5
‡Powdered chalk .. .. .	—	—
§Asbestos sheet	}	}
„ wool		
„ wall-board		
(Types which do not fracture under heat)		
Preparations of the plaster type made up mainly of ground rock anhydrite .. .. .	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	—
Asphalt (certain types) .. .. .	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	—

\* As efficient as sand and lighter.

† Has advantages over sand (much lighter).

‡ Not recommended. It will react with the bomb.

§ 3 $\frac{1}{2}$ " gives fair protection.

To provide against burning, dry sand 2 inches thick, foamed slag 2 inches thick, household ash 2 $\frac{1}{4}$  inches thick, earth 2 inches thick (reasonably free from vegetable matter) preparations, for instance, of the plaster made up mainly of ground rock-anhydrite, about 3 $\frac{3}{4}$  inch thick, asphalt (certain types) about 3 $\frac{3}{4}$  inch thick are suggested but they must be carefully placed, for a loose covering such as sand will be disturbed by the fall of a bomb and the protective cover

would be diminished. And this cannot be avoided unless we make the layer very thick which may be too heavy for the floors or roof to bear. Even to existing buildings dismantling the pitched roof and erecting a R.C.C. roof 4 or 5-inch thick is recommended to resist the danger and wherever possible this measure must be adopted, particularly for residential areas where incendiaries will be used, and people cannot afford to maintain expensive fire-fighting organisation. Fire-proof windows and doors are desirable, and external features of buildings should be of non-combustible material.

The menace of the incendiary bomb has resulted in a vast amount of research and investigation into the fire-resisting properties of various materials, and a most interesting new publication in this connection has now been issued by the Linoleum and Floor Cloth Manufacturers' Association of Staines (Middlesex) and has been reviewed by the Technical Press. In the case of the ordinary thin wood floor an incendiary bomb soon burns through, and most fire-proof paints do not seem to be much of a protection. According to these experiments when the wood is covered with Linoleum the bomb will not burn through, although giving a very severe charring. Bombs resting on Linoleum cause no penetration for over five minutes, and tend to char the wood underneath in about 11 minutes. If thicker linoleum is used the resistance is much greater and it is not necessary to emphasise the importance of increasing resistance in this way since the fire brigade is given ample time to get on the spot and prevent any serious conflagration. Further plain cork carpet of only 6.55 mm. thick is stated to give the same beneficial results, and certainly in general it would seem that the menace of the incendiary bomb has been exaggerated, which seems to apply also to other sections of aerial warfare.

Wherever a resistant roof is not practicable as in the case of large factories, etc., or where the target is so important as to invite heavier bombs that will render 5 or 6 inches reinforced concrete ineffective, special attention should be paid to check the spread of fire. Fire breaks are necessary and distances between different types of buildings are indicated in the following table:—



Exposing Building	Exposed Building	Fire breaks (distance between buildings)		
		Dangerous	Moderately Safe	Safe
High Fire Risk	1. With roof and window drenchers, wired glass windows in fixed metal frames	feet 20 (30)	feet 30 50	feet 40 (70)
	2. Without the above	70 (80)	80 (100)	90 (120)
Low Fire Risk	1. As above	10	20	30
	2. As above	40	(50)	60

*Note*:—These figures presuppose an adequate fire-fighting service and a fair water-supply. Figures in brackets apply where there is no such service or supply; figures apply only if exposed building is of fire resisting or of brick and joisted construction with slate or tiled (or better) roof, or of iron; flying brands are not allowed for; heights of exposing and exposed buildings are taken as 50 feet. If higher, breaks should be increased by 5 feet for each additional 10 feet in height in case of either or both of the buildings; in high risk areas where valuable buildings are situated close together and intervening roads do not provide satisfactory fire breaks, the following measures are recommended to provide some protection:—

1. Fit wired glass in fixed iron frames to windows.
2. Fit roof and window drenchers on the ridge of roofs and over every door and window.
3. Provide water-supply, adequate to enable portable directors to be used.

Incendiary bombs might be aided by high explosive bombs particularly in commercial and industrial zones with large and massive buildings and dangerous conflagration might be started. Even high explosives themselves could start an effective fire. In addition to fire breaks and open lay-out, provision for adequate water-supply is essential. Proximity is a vital factor but an idea of the quantities required for different types of buildings could be had from the following estimates made by the Home Office:—

Class A.—2,700 gallons a minute.

For large business premises, warehouses, large works, shops and stores, munition stores and factories, aeroplane stores, docks, timber yards, railway depots, oil and petrol depots, refineries and similar risks.

Class B.—1,100 gallons a minute.

For small factories, medium-sized shops, warehouses not exceeding three storeys, store yards excluding timber yards, public garages, small oil depots and similar risks.

Class C.—250 gallons a minute.

For residential and small shop properties.

Tanks and reservoirs suitably placed both in residential areas and in other zones appear suitable because the requirements for decontamination may aggravate the need for water, and underground mains may get shattered by high explosive bombs.

An efficient road system is also necessary to resist and recover from the incendiary danger. Broad roads would help to provide fire breaks, and facilitate quick movement of fire fighting services. This is impossible in narrow streets blocked by debris and bomb craters and immediate attention so very essential will be prevented.

### **Resistance to Blast, Splinters and Demolition**

The high explosive bomb is far more difficult to deal with than the incendiary bomb and liquid gas. All that is practicable is,

1. to reduce the likelihood of total collapse in the event of part of the building being seriously damaged.
2. to reduce the amount of secondary damage to the building and to adjacent buildings caused after the explosion itself by flying missiles and falling masonry.
3. to ensure that the building will resist blast effects to the maximum extent possible with the form of construction used.

As the high explosive bomb will be selected for important objectives, large structures and strategic centres the problem of big buildings should be first considered.

To achieve these, six factors need consideration.

1. The force of impact of the bomb upon the surface which is directly struck.
2. The force of the explosion throughout its immediate zone.

3. The pressure of air or suction caused by the explosion.
4. Vibrations set up through the surrounding ground.
5. The effect of large blocks of building material and fragments of the bomb itself being thrown about.
6. Fire.

What type of building is best constituted to resist these forces and what special precautions should be observed in designing it? It is considered hazardous to lay down definite rules in the present state of our knowledge. Abstract theorizing may not prove useful. When all these forces act together the position is difficult to judge. But certain observations of the results of air raids during this war, in China, Spain, Poland, Finland and Western Europe recently, enable a few guiding principles to be suggested which may serve as direction posts to the further study of the problem.

Framed structures have been able to withstand high explosive bombs better than unframed ones with load bearing walls. Direct hits were made on the Shanghai Administrative building by one-ton high explosive bombs but the damage rendered was more or less local. The building is of conventional design having reinforced concrete frame, and R.C. floors and roof.<sup>1</sup> Similar instances come from Spain. Photographs taken during the Spanish Civil War show the effect of direct hits on reinforced concrete frame buildings. The infilling panels give way, and some bays of the structures partly collapse but the edifices are not demolished.<sup>2</sup>

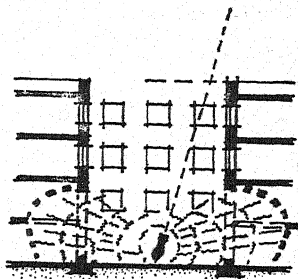
The fact is blast has terrific force and the lateral pressure exerted is so high that the walls get shattered if they are near. When those walls support the roof and the structure, their collapse leads to the destruction of the building. Separation of the load

<sup>1</sup>"Indian Concrete Journal," Oct. 15, 1939, p. XVII-XVIII.

<sup>2</sup>The "Builder," Oct. 3, 1939, p. 544.

*War-time Building Bulletin*, No. 17, issued by the Building Research Station of the Department of Scientific and Industrial Research gives notes on the resistance of reinforced concrete structures to air attack. Evidence obtained from an extensive survey of damaged structures show that reinforced concrete framed structures of good design stand up remarkably well to high explosive and fire, but that certain precautions may be taken in design which increase the resistance of the normal structure to air attack without any appreciable increase in cost. The Bulletin, which was prepared with the assistance of Mr. W. L. Scott, M.INST.C.E., M.I.STRUCT.E., contains a list of these precautions, intended for the use of architects and engineers working on the design of wartime buildings. It is published at 6d by the Stationery Office.

bearing and enclosing functions of walls is absolutely essential if the destructive power of blast should be reduced. The infilling panels subject to damage or destruction could be replaced or repaired. This method is absolutely essential for large and multi-storeyed buildings in densely populated areas, industrial works, etc., likely to be the objective of repeated attacks, and where the probability of a direct hit or a nearby explosion, is greater. The maximum security against the effect of explosion is afforded only by a framed structure in which the walls are so constructed that they will yield readily to the air pressure resulting from the explosion of a bomb inside the building, and thus prevent injury to the structural framework itself and permit of the repair of the building in the shortest space of time.



Effect of blast upon walls of buildings in a narrow street

This does not mean that the safety valve type of walls must be fragile. A reinforced wall in which the reinforcement is not tied to the frame will suffice. But as such walls are liable to cause great damage in falling and parts of them are likely to form very dangerous and destructive missiles, it is better that the panels are of light construction. The danger of splinters is increased by thin panels but as high explosive bombs penetrate to the ground floor before explosion it is enough if the walls enclosing the upper floors are as light as possible. 13½ inches thick wall of brick or stone in cement mortar for the ground floor is considered suitable in the interest of safety.

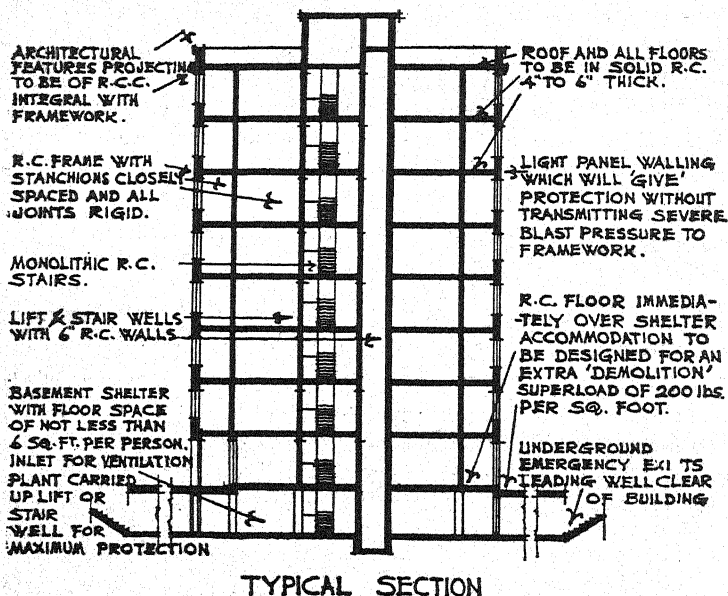
Research and Experiments Department of the Ministry of Home Security has issued a Bulletin (C18) dealing with "Recent Developments in Protective Wall Design for Factories".

Hitherto the commonsense form of protective wall has been built of 13½ inches brick, sometimes with pier buttresses of arbitrary height up to about 8 feet. Although such walls give protection to the standard for which they were intended, experience shows that when bombs explode near them they can themselves be a source of serious damage.

Much research has been done to design walls which will not only give protection against close explosions, but which will not form missiles or overturn on to nearby plant and workers. The relation between plant and processes and the walls to protect them has been studied. It has generally been found possible to take much of the sting out of enemy attack without seriously obstructing normal production.

## MULTI-STOREY BUILDINGS

### DIAGRAM ILLUSTRATING RECOMMENDED PRINCIPLES OF DESIGN FOR MAXIMUM STRUCTURAL A. R. P.



It is not yet possible, and it probably never will be possible, to produce a universal guide to design, but rationally designed protective wall schemes are being tried in many factories. It is almost as common for explosions to occur at roof level as on or below floor level. Realistic protective design has to take this seriously into account.

A protective wall subjected to a near bomb explosion may fail by being shattered into fragments forming destructive missiles ;

by overturning causing serious casualties to workers taking emergency shelter and in damage to plant ; or by being blown bodily across the shop, sweeping all before it. The designs have been developed to lessen the possibility of these sources of failure. A principle of the design is that the resistance of that under excessive blast, the wall will bend over a comparatively short distance, without overturning or disintegrating. The wall consists of panels of reinforced concrete or reinforced brickwork spanning between steel verticals. These verticals are attached to feet in the form of spreader channels resting on or preferably sunk in, the floor.<sup>1</sup>

Cases have occurred in which panel walls built into the webs of steel stanchions (columns) have been subjected to severe blast and have bowed the stanchions (columns) out, shearing off their cap connections and producing collapse of the roof.

The ideal wall construction therefore consists of panel walls giving the code standard of lateral protection built independent of the steel framework so as to ensure that in the event of a near miss, they are blown in without involving the steelwork. This independence can best be achieved by casing the steelwork in concrete not bonded to the wall panels.

Careful designing of the roof is also essential but bomb-proof roofs are impracticable. Apart from the fact bombs may strike the walls, a very thick and heavy roof is a possible source of danger, as the impact shock of a large bomb might cripple the supporting members and bring the whole roof down. A number of solid concrete floors for cumulative stopping and bursting effect, is recommended as the better proposition, especially as some of them would probably be in the path of a bomb penetrating the wall obliquely.

A solid concrete floor with light reinforcement running both ways is to be preferred to a hollow floor of equal strength since they offer less resistance to penetration except at the joints.

Windows are very vulnerable. Hundreds of windows of houses and shops were shattered in a south-east coast town by the blast of four explosions. The roofs of some buildings were stripped, the blast carrying huge quantities of debris into the roadway. Several people were slightly injured by flying glass.

<sup>1</sup> Vide the "Builder," August 8, 1941, p. 127.

Apart from direct hits, deaths and injuries caused by bombs, arranged in order of their importance are glass splinters, bomb fragments, blast, and miscellaneous debris. There is no question of course that in modern civilisation the presence of glass is an extremely serious danger, so far as aerial warfare is concerned, even worse for example than the explosive and poisonous town gas represented by thousands of miles of mains mostly cast iron with rigid joints very easily fractured, resulting in many deaths from gas poisoning.

Once when a German aeroplane crashed at Clacton, most of the injuries were caused by splintered glass. Various measures have been recommended to prevent or limit this form of damage; and manufacturers are experimenting with new materials and with new types of windows designed to withstand the effect of bombing.

A London firm has produced a window claimed to stand up to blast of 500-pound bomb exploding 50 feet away. Instead of a large sheet of glass, the window consists of many small panels, with cross-ribs of concrete. The glass, about an inch thick, is toughened by a special process and constructed of two lenses side by side. According to the makers, it provides a high degree of safety against small incendiary bombs, and is by no means inartistic.

Windows are a problem. The requirement for blast and splinters have to be compromised and they do not always blend happily. It has been suggested that windows should be rather at a higher level and be smaller or omitted if possible. This is desirable for the ground floor of multi-storeyed buildings, which could be used as garage. Blast and splinter-proof walls would make these garages fit for conversion into shelters, if other accommodation is not available.

Splinter-proof glass is now available and light need not be sacrificed for safety.<sup>1</sup> It could be suitably used to light the

<sup>1</sup>Glass considered brittle and unfit for use structurally during war times, has by recent improvements been made fit enough for war-time use. Experiments carried out show that some forms of glass show considerable resistance to blast and glass bricks can be used, where gas proofing requires windows should be closed without excluding light. In several London Hospitals windows opening on to landings where special protection is required have been partially bricked up, leaving a narrow vertical slit which is glazed with "insulight" glass bricks. It admits light and can be easily and cheaply blacked-out at night (for illustrations see "Builder," Nov. 24, 1939, p. 471)

blast and splinter-proof interior. Armour-plate glass has been used in some of the hospitals in London. Lift stacks, staircases and store rooms could be effectively lighted this way and yet rendered splinter-proof which would be impossible by windows in general use.

To reduce the dangers of demolition and flying masonry from endangering the neighbourhood, a streamlined exterior is helpful. Or the projecting members should be such as being capable of getting tied to the frame. Open railings well anchored and stayed are to be preferred to solid parapets, since these are difficult to anchor, stay or buttress. But where solid work is to be used it should be reinforced, anchored, stayed and buttressed as solidly as possible. Coping stones are readily dislodged by blast or shock from blast and should be anchored down or linked to the vertical reinforcement in the parapet. External balustrades, balcony walls and the like should be strengthened if they cannot be omitted in the building. Open metal railings and balustrades should be used as they are safer, easier and more economical.

Canopies, balcony slabs and like cantilever features should be omitted since these are liable to catch the violent upward blast of nearby explosion; otherwise they should be as small as possible, and more heavily reinforced, and well anchored to the structural frame.

Chimney stacks are not many in this country, but where they are to be erected they should be built against adjoining construction for the greater part of their height or else kept as far away as possible from adjoining buildings, so that should they collapse the damage will be kept to a minimum.

Incendiary bomb-resisting roofs cannot prevent high explosives getting through and starting an effective fire. It is necessary to adopt precautions to check the spread of fire. For it is impossible to make the contents of buildings all fire-proof. Both horizontally

"Armourplate" glass is blast-proof to 500-lb. high explosive bomb detonating at a distance of 50 feet. Triplex armour plate  $\frac{3}{8}$  inch, of laminated design is bullet-proof, but affords considerable protection against flying splinters. The toughened lenses when used on concrete roofs withstand thermite and electron incendiary bombs and their heat.

*Vide* the "Builder," Nov. 24, 1939, Supplement p. 17 for "Triplex" products. For insulight glass bricks and the view of the bricked up window at the St. Stephen's London County Council Hospital, see "Builder," Supplement, Jan. 21, 1940, p. 62. •



and vertically the building should be divided with fire-proof barriers, into a series of relatively small cells, each capable of confining the fire, should the bomb explode within the cell. The design and planning of buildings should be such as to develop "a simple type of fire-resisting door which will be self-closing in the case of fire, but can be opened and shut in the normal way."

### Designs for Factories

Single-storey Factory Designs for war time have been issued by the Ministry of Home Security (Research and Experiments Branch) recently. According to this bulletin, the main object of air attack is to paralyse production. By dropping high explosive and incendiary bombs the enemy seeks to demolish or burn out factory buildings, ruin the plant and kill, maim, or at least demoralise the workers. Fortunately for the defence, war-time designs can do much to make factories highly resistant to collapse and difficult to fire; damage can be localised and the steadiness of the workers reinforced by giving them cover at hand.

Up to the present far more steelwork has been destroyed by fire than by high explosives.

The simplest way of minimising fire damage is to limit the combustible materials in the factory to the essential minimum. This applies also to the roof, where timber purlins or any form of slates or tiles on boarding should on no account be used.

The tendency towards very large buildings which is so marked to-day, should be reversed. It is preferable to subdivide a factory into as many units as possible, rather than to concentrate everything into one large building.

The first principle is that all loads should be carried by a framework of steel or reinforced concrete.

It is known that a reinforced concrete member is more severely damaged by a direct hit than a comparable steel member.

It may, therefore, be impossible to eliminate collapse entirely in reinforced concrete-framed buildings. The evidence so far available suggests, however, that where reinforced concrete is used the most satisfactory way of minimising damage is to divide the framework into as many discontinuous units as possible, thus localising any collapse that may occur.

The second principle is that the steel frame should resist collapse notwithstanding the sudden removal of any one main member.

An explosion inside a factory forces the roof upwards and the steelwork should be designed to resist this by using angles rather than flats for all tension members and by attention to the roof covering.

The external walls of a war-time factory should be regarded as simply protective screens against weather and bomb fragments. Panels and sheeting should be so designed that blast damage shall not be transmitted by them to the framing. To ensure that the sheeting shall blow in harmlessly it should be of asbestos-cement or other brittle material with anti-scatter protection by means of wire or sisal netting which may be of large mesh, securely fixed to the steel framing behind the sheeting. The use of corrugated steel sheeting is not recommended for walls, as although it will blow out harmlessly from a hit inside the building it is liable to cause considerable buckling of the steelwork under the effects of a near miss outside the building.

Load bearing brick piers are to be preferred to continuous brick load bearing walls if brick walls are to be used. The use of lightweight internal partitions to subdivide a factory should be avoided. Such partitions are particularly liable to blast damage. Substantial internal partitions can afford considerable measure of protection.

Roof covering could be :—

1. Flat roof incorporating monitor lights and giving overhead protection by a 4-inches reinforced concrete slab. Anchor the slabs to the steel framework, to withstand and uplift pressure on the roof of at least 100 lbs. per square feet. Alternatively the slabs may be linked together.

2. Sheeted Roofs—corrugated steel sheets is ideal covering. The hook holes being slightly weaker than the purlins, the sheeting will be blown off without damaging the purlins. Proprietary forms of sheeting consisting of flat or corrugated steel sheets coated with water-proofing compounds could be used. Insulating board lining under sheeted roofs should on no account be used. Roof glazing should be entirely eliminated from new factories work being carried out solely by artificial light.

Services: In many cases cast iron and other buried pipes have been fractured by ground movement at a distance from the bomb explosion.

This danger can largely be eliminated by isolating the service pipes from the effects of ground movement. The principle should be to provide an air space between the pipe and the surrounding ground. This can be done in several ways. The pipes can be laid in ducts or in certain cases guard trenches can be provided on each side of important service pipes.

Protection of personnel: Wherever possible shelters should be in the form of covered trenches under the floor of the shop with entrances suitably traversed at frequent intervals.

Protection of plant is vital and can be provided simply. Individual machines should be protected against blast and splinters wherever possible by traverse walls, at least as high as the machine, and where practicable, by a substantial roof.<sup>1</sup>

It is now recognised that Air Defence measures should form part of the design, construction and layout of factories in the future. The research and experiments department of the Ministry of Home Security emphasises the following P. A. D. Measures for work connected with the erection of new and adaptation of existing factories.

The subject of P. A. D. if fully expounded would cover many pages and moreover would as soon as completed need amendment, to bring it into line with the development based on continuous research. These principles hold good for adaptation of existing factories also, the only variation being the extent to which circumstances permit the principles to be applied.

The choice of site should depend upon the following factors all of which require careful consideration.

Safety from ground attack;

Concealment and camouflage from air attack;

Adjacent risks;

Availability of labour;

Electric power, gas and water supplies;

Housing for labour;

Availability of alternative supplies;

Transport for labour and raw materials and finished products.

<sup>1</sup> Vide "Builder," 14-2-41, p. 184-85.

Specialists can say how easily the enemy could find and attack the proposed site. Proximity to conspicuous landmarks, including other factories or buildings of outstanding air visibility, reservoirs, railways etc. should be avoided as far as possible. Natural features such as trees, hedges, ditches, etc. should be retained wherever possible and worked into the Factory plan.

Much concealment from the air can be effected by departure from stereo-typed design and by the utilisation and retention of existing natural features.

P. A. D. Measures fall into two main categories ; those designed (i) to protect personnel, (ii) to ensure continuity of production by protecting the buildings and plant from the effects of bombing by high explosive and from fire.

The selection of the type of building must depend largely on the nature and importance of the process to be carried out. Where possible individual buildings should not exceed on overall size of 200 ft. by 200 ft.

(i) *New Single-storey sheeted shed type buildings.* This is probably the cheapest type of construction. It does not give protection against incendiary bombs and therefore should not be used for inflammable processes. External walls may be of  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. brickwork to give lateral protection against near misses. Perimeter shelters and other forms of protection will need to be considered with this type.

(ii) *New Single-storey Building.* This type should be used where good protection against incendiary bombs and against blast and crater debris from near misses is important. The roof should be resistant to the penetration of the kilo incendiary bomb and the walls should be  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. in stock-brick and cement mortar.

(iii) *New Multi-storey Buildings.* Multi-storey buildings may well be more efficient than single-storey buildings for certain uses. Upper floors can give protection for lower floors and blast effects will be less acute on upper floors. The target area of the building will be less but camouflage may be more difficult. Framed construction and fire-resisting construction are essential.

A method of providing areas of greater safety in wall-bearing buildings is to construct independent framed structures within buildings, able to resist lateral loading and capable of carrying the collapse load of the structure above.

Under-ground factory is an alternative solution, where bomb-proof protection is required. Different factors than those mentioned will determine the choice of site, production method, site layout and constructional detail in such cases and special advice will be needed.

Plant-layout should incorporate protection by distribution *i.e.* duplication of identical processes in separate buildings so that the destruction of one unit will not involve the complete stoppage of production of the whole factory.

Regarding protection from fire attention should be paid to water supply and fire-fighting equipment. Mains may be duplicated and separated; static water should be provided; access to rivers, ponds, and canals should be made wherever available.

Major fire appliances such as trailer pumps, hose-stand pipes and minor fire appliances such as stirrup pumps, etc. should be provided. As for the layout of buildings ancillary to production such as offices, which are the nerve centres of the Factory, their situation must be considered in conjunction with the protection of personnel, records and office equipment. Records which are irreplaceable should be copied by micro-photography if necessary and copies stored in other premises. Shelters must be provided affording protection to code standard for 100 per cent. of the largest shift, sited within or round the shops or so closely adjacent, as to permit all personnel to take cover within one minute thus permitting work to continue during alert till raid is imminent.

All factories with a shift of over 30 persons require a first aid post. Large factories may require more than one. They should be designed as day-to-day ambulance rooms and planned so as to be capable of conversion after the war to buildings with normal requirements of daylighting and natural ventilation. They must afford code protection and be gas-proofed. Cleansing stations are required for all factories with a shift of 500 or over. Smaller factories may need them in isolated places where local authority facilities do not exist. Raid spotters' posts are required to warn employees of imminent attack. They will be unprotected except from weather, but must have standard shelters close at hand.

Regarding gas services, duplication of supply from the same external source is not of much value. Where gas supply is essential,

stand-by producers should be installed. In addition to the ordinary business telephone lines, the factory should be, if possible, linked to the Post Office Exchange by a special line direct to the Control Post and divorced from the factory exchange.

Regarding electricity, gas and water services where separate mains are deemed necessary they should nowhere run together. Adequate lighting in shelters is essential. Oil lamps vitiate the air.

Tests on new materials and treatments are continually being made and latest information available should be used in selecting glass substitutes, glass protection and for observation. The choice of site, the planning and the construction of housing for workers should receive special consideration.

According to a report in the "Manchester Guardian", Douglas Aircraft Company, manufacturers of the Boston aeroplane, are building a huge factory at Long Beach, California. The factory has been designed so as to be invisible at night from the air and to be as nearly bomb-proof as possible. Completely windowless and without skylights, the buildings will have a special internal lighting system giving a shadowless and glare-free illumination. An automatic air-conditioning plant will be installed and the air will be warmed and cooled according to the season.

The different buildings will be so spaced as to minimise the risk of damage from bombs, and petrol and oil will be stored in deep vaults. Key departments will be duplicated underground also. Entry to and exit from the works will be through tunnels linking the establishment with roads, and the entire plant will be camouflaged.

The lay-out of the new works has been planned with a view to gaining an extremely rapid output. Every production operation will be made as simple and automatic as possible. Manual effort will be reduced by wide use of conveyor belts, power-driven monorails, overhead cranes, and jig tracks. The greatest possible use will be made of hydraulic presses. Two of these will be six-sided and will be of 2,500 tons capacity. These machines, with many others, will enable all sheet metal forming operations to be done at very high speeds.

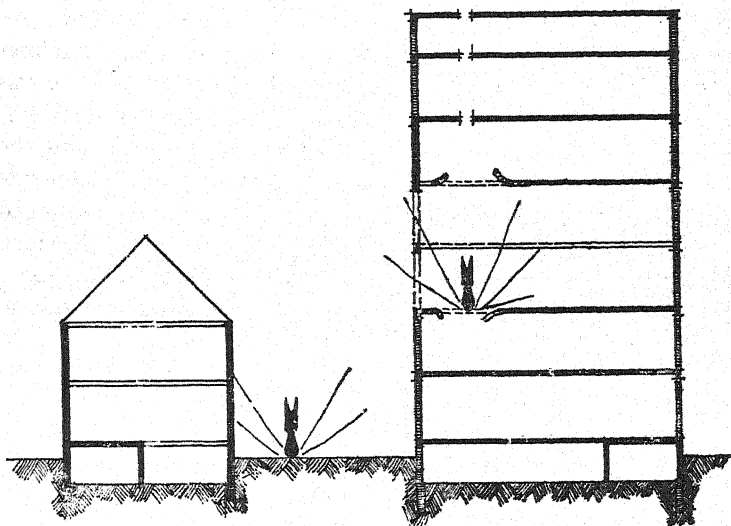
The final assembly of air-craft, the wings and fuselages will be built on jigs mounted on tracks and moved along by power winches to a set schedule.

Most of the principles mentioned regarding large structures apply with equal force to smaller ones. Steel or concrete frame construction may be expensive compared to their size and use. Since the probability of a direct hit is less, in detached buildings and small ones the "protective wall" type could be used. In this case the building will be constructed as a structural framework, and the external walls, which will be designed to withstand the pressure or suction of air following the explosion of a bomb outside the building, will be monolithic with the frame. It is considered essential to incorporate in the construction some form of frame which although it need not carry the building wholly in the accepted sense of the term "framed construction" should nevertheless be so designed that it will support the building in an emergency should some part of it be destroyed." But the adoption of frame construction in small buildings does not produce economy proportionate with those obtained in large tall buildings. Framing may increase the cost by about 25 per cent. and it is doubtful whether the increased resistance offered by it would be proportionate. With blast and splinter-proof walls  $13\frac{1}{2}$  inches thick and with the frame members so close to each other the blast force will have nearly equal effect on the entire structure. The difference in force will not be appreciable and the cost of repairs would be equally great. As shown in the opposite diagram, protective walls are to be preferred.

The use of reinforcement in brick work to form columns in the walls are suggested to provide the necessary vertical framing but this will not cost less than reinforced concrete.

For a large residence a frame is desirable. Reinforced brickwork may be used. A subsidiary framing may also be adopted. "If horizontal reinforcement is provided in the brickwork at floor level and vertical reinforcement at intervals throughout the length of the wall, a subsidiary framing will be formed which can be designed to carry the floors and superstructure should the panels of brickwork between be destroyed." The interior walls should be similarly treated so that a beam is formed on every wall at each floor level unless a wall beam is formed in the floor construction.

The linking of reinforcement is also necessary. Throughout the work the horizontal reinforcement in the external and internal walls should be linked together wherever possible, and the vertical reinforcement in the walls should be linked to the floor construction to provide a tie to resist the suction wave from an external explosion.



'Protective' and 'Safety Valve' type of Walls and Floors

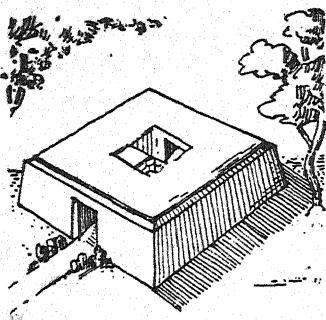
The wall areas between the sections which are reinforced vertically as columns can with advantage be reinforced horizontally to increase their strength, this reinforcement should however in no circumstances be linked up with the columns.

Stated summarily<sup>1</sup> small buildings in addition should incorporate the following features, if they should reduce their vulnerability to destruction.

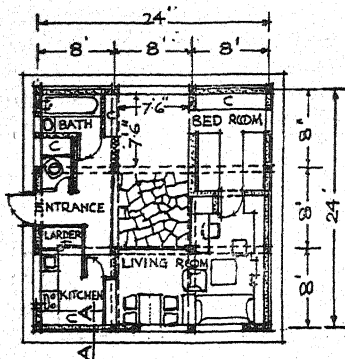
1. Walls should be 13½ inches in brick and cement mortar or its equivalent.
2. Roofs should be 5 inches solid reinforced concrete or its equivalent.
3. Windows in some circumstances should be protected.

<sup>1</sup>Vide Oscar Bayne, "Structural Precautions against Air Attack". "The Builder," A.R.P. Supplement, Jan. 13, 1939, p. 11.

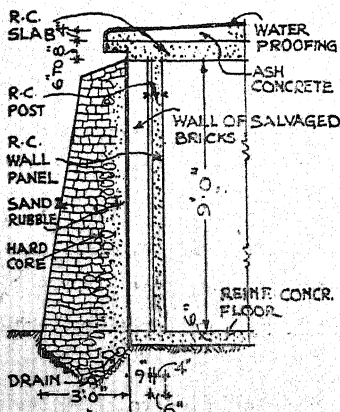




PERSPECTIVE



PLAN



SECTION A.A.

A type of house designed to offer greater resistance to air raids

4. Cornices, hoods and other projections should be avoided or else be abnormally well anchored.

5. Parapets should be avoided, and open grilles, or railings used. If parapets must be used, they and their copings should be abnormally well anchored to the structures.

6. All external members liable to be dislodged or torn away by the blast of an explosion should be avoided.

War-time Building Bulletin No. 7 issued by the Department of Scientific and Industrial Research is particularly concerned with the building of small houses using as little iron and steel and timber as possible, being chiefly devoted to concrete. The above bulletin is also concerned with the flat roof for houses chiefly, however, because it takes less material than the ordinary sloping or pitched roof.

In spite of all the research work, however, the elementary fact remains that concrete for house construction is much inferior to brick or stone, that is under the climatic conditions of Great Britain. Concrete is cold and "dead," largely because it is not porous and there seems to be no question that the ideal material is brick, a fact that has been recognised in a number of areas of the world for several thousand years past.

It may be remembered that in the last war (1914-1918) a number of houses were constructed of steel or of cast-iron plates and sections, but these are also inferior to brick or stone, and largely for the same reason. (*Hindu*, 10-1-1940).

7. All structural work, finished surfaces, furniture and fittings should be fire-proofed as far as possible.

In fact the two most important problems affecting small structures and residences are incendiary bomb and liquid gas. Here again we have to stress the provision of fire breaks between buildings as well as water-supply.

Building them entirely with gas-proof material is impractical as in the case of larger ones already noted. We could only facilitate decontamination, washing them down thoroughly and making air circulate freely inside ; large windows are necessary. The flooring should be of concrete or like material fit for washing.

Although some precautions helpful to resist gas and incendiary bombs may go against the resisting requirements for the high explosive, for instance, large windows, the weight of reform should fall on the side of the former since, when small structures and residences are separated from large buildings, the use of high explosives is less probable.

As in the case of large structures, detached buildings with space around could stand a high explosive raid better than closely packed houses. The vibration effect would be counteracted and no more than one building would suffer for each bomb if they are spaced 50 feet apart. A compound with 25 feet of space all round would be needed to provide some garden and could be secured if residences are properly zoned and planned in convenient suburbs ; when the commercial, industrial and other activities of the city are separated from them.

The Coventry city architect has designed plans for "bomb-proof" houses ; 2,500 were under construction during April 1941.

The homes are two-storeyed, and have concrete roofs and ceilings and are so constructed as to reduce the effect of bomb blasts. Danger from incendiary bombs will be minimised as the bombs will not penetrate the heavy concrete roofs. Even doors will be made of asbestos concrete composition. No wood will be used.

The seven-room houses have miniature shelters, with walls 23 inches thick, built in the corner of the kitchen and also under the concrete stairways, space will be left between the walls ; so

"damp pockets" will be eliminated and will make heating of the buildings a comparatively simple task. A house can be built to these specifications in three months at a cost of £600.

The New City Centre which will spring up in the place of the one that was *blitzed* in 1940 is estimated to cost 7 million pounds.

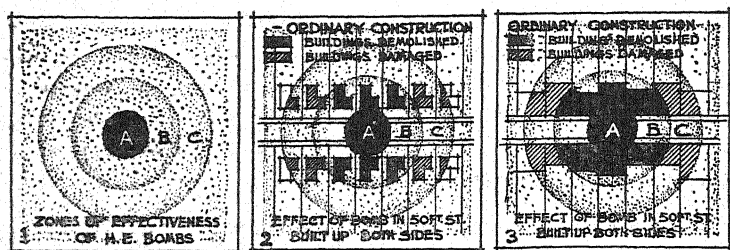


Diagram showing the value of space around buildings in reducing destruction by high explosives

The housing scheme for the Ministry of Supply recently completed from the designs of Mr. G. A. Jellicore also gives us an idea of the houses of the future. The whole building is designed for strength, with the parlour as the particular A.R.P. shelter. There are to be neither parapets nor overhanging eaves and in fact, the block of the house tends to become in shape not unlike the ordinary street shelter. The floors and ceilings are also so planned to give additional structural strength against blast in any one direction. But for the fact of the windows, it would have been possible to make the whole house itself a shelter. But the windows proved insuperable and therefore the maximum protection was confined to one room. This is achieved by  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. walls, approved ceiling slabs and small temporary windows protected by shutters. It is of interest that the light in these rooms is dull but not unsatisfactory.<sup>1</sup>

The Government of Madras have issued orders imposing certain requirements as to lay-out, materials and construction of buildings which may be erected, extended or altered. The object is to render these structures less vulnerable than they would otherwise be to air raids and to provide increased protection to persons using them. Under the order those responsible for the erection, extension or alteration of the structures have to apply to Government

<sup>1</sup> Vide "the Builder", May 22, 1942, p. 453.

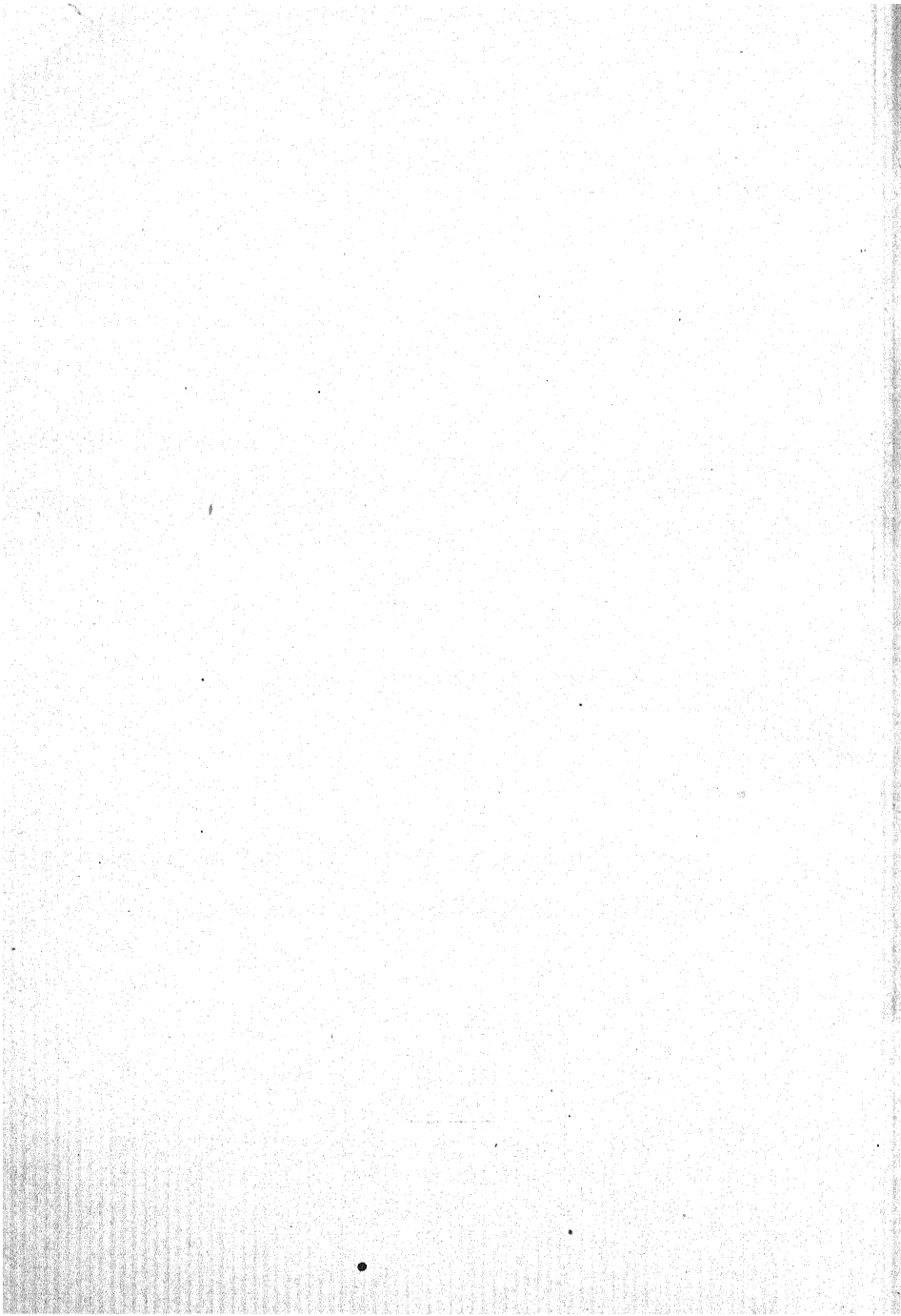
or to Chief Inspector of Factories for a ruling whether the details of this order and the provision of a schedule to it apply to the structure concerned.

The Government of Bombay have ordered that in certain specified areas, no factory providing for the employment of 200 or more workers shall be erected or extended for the purpose of carrying on any manufacturing process, or working any vital plant, except with the permission of the Government in the Home Department (Political—A.R.P.) and in accordance with such requirements as to lay-out, materials and construction as the Government may impose for the purpose of rendering the factory less vulnerable to air raids, or for the purpose of affording better protection to persons using or resorting to it.

Proper designs and plans however should be evolved after great care and research to render structures less vulnerable. The Japanese Government have decided to create an Air Defence Research Laboratory costing £50,000 for the purpose of studying building materials which will be best to withstand air attacks. The Government buildings in Tokyo are to be reconstructed on the basis of the results of the studies and experiments carried out under its auspices.

Whether it is a small or large structure it is now apparent that in addition to improvement in design and construction, open space around, ample water-supply, proper road system, open lay-out, parks and gardens are necessary to make city structures survive an air raid. Whether it is the high explosive, the incendiary or gas or a combination of all these we are again led to the problem of planning and zoning if we should save our city structures from destruction.

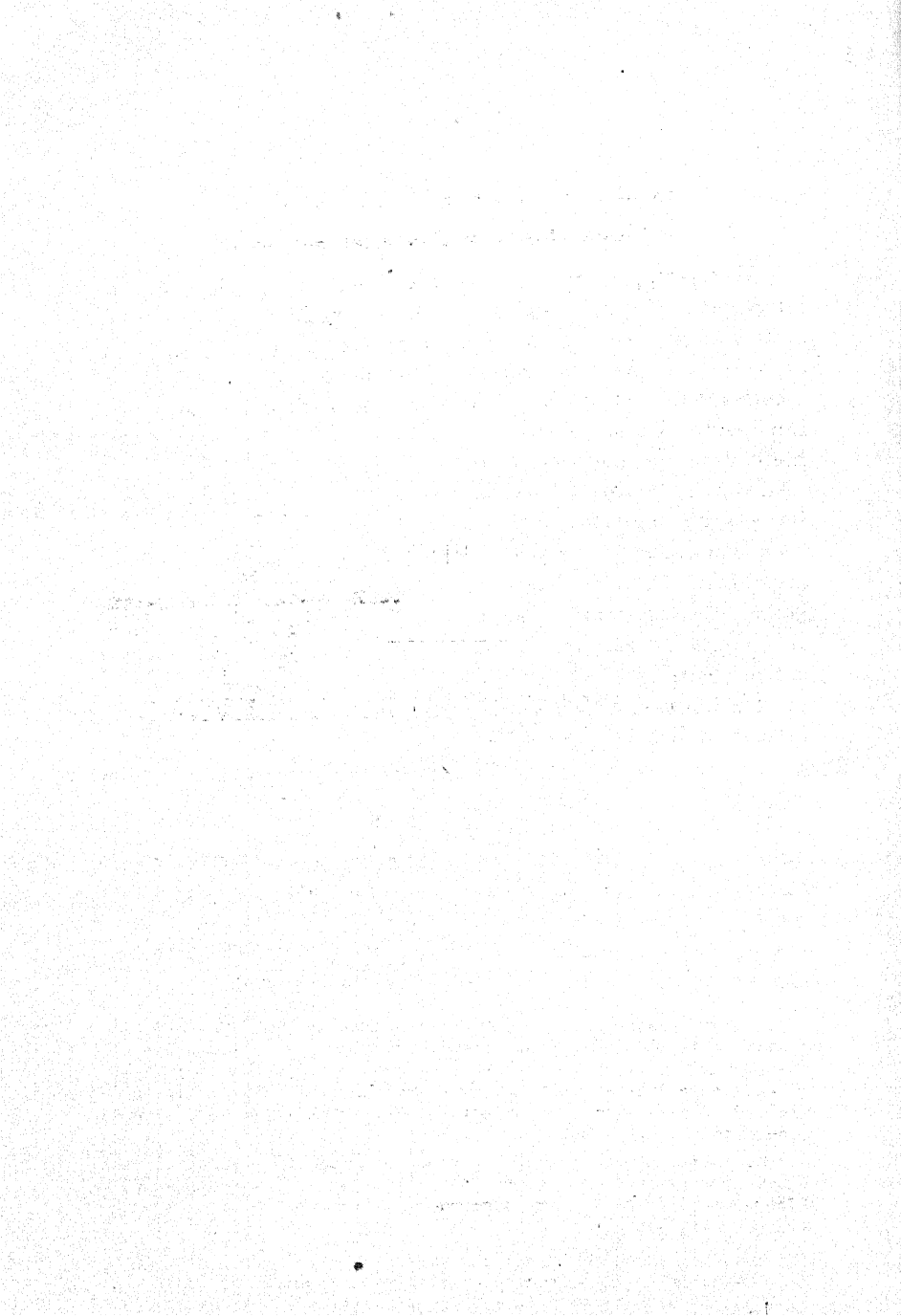
---



## CHAPTER V

---

### IMMUNITY TO ESSENTIAL SERVICES

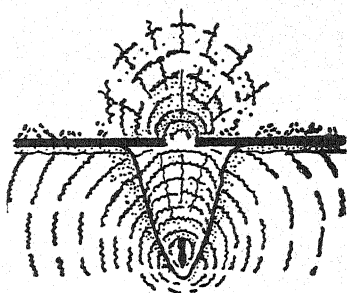


## CHAPTER V

### IMMUNITY TO ESSENTIAL SERVICES

#### Vulnerability of Essential Services

Water-supply, drainage facilities, electricity, telephone and telegraph, efficient transport system, regular supply of food and food articles, as well as dairy products and vegetables are essential for the normal functioning of modern urban communities. Their destruction or dislocation will make this impossible. Unfortunately the methods of production and distribution of these essential services in modern cities render them extremely vulnerable to air raids. The high explosive bomb, the incendiary bomb and liquid poison gas either independently, or when used in combination will affect the present system. The underground system is generally adopted for water-supply and drainage and they are not laid deep. They are shattered by bombs as recent happenings in England show, and precautions are being taken to prevent the consequences. Lengthy channels connect cities to the sources of supply of water which is either a large tank or a river. The large filtration plants could also be destroyed or poisoned.<sup>1</sup>



High explosive bomb with delayed fuse exploding in a street

<sup>1</sup> The Metropolitan Water Board of London deals directly with a population of about 7,000,000 with on the average a daily supply, winter and summer, of approximately 301,000,000 gallons per 24 hours which necessitates the use of nearly 9,000 miles of mains. Incidentally this supply does not cover the whole of what is known as Greater London, which approximately has a population of about 8,500,000.

The largest reservoir in the world is the Queen Mary in the Thames Valley, which cost over £2,000,000. This has a storage capacity of 6,750,000,000 gallons of water, representing a water surface of 723 acres, while the retaining wall is about 4 miles round.

Calcutta is supplied by a huge overhead tank. The vulnerability of the water-supply system of such cities needs no emphasis.



Electric mains are also laid underground but less deeper, electric power-houses are generally overground. Telephone wires are overhead and telephone exchanges are similarly situated. Railway stations, docks, harbours and aerodromes are not merely overground but in or close to congested quarters or residences. The railways sometimes traverse through cities and in many industrial centres serve as the means of transport for large numbers. Narrow streets rendered increasingly inadequate by uncontrolled growth of towns form the distributive system defective also from the ventilation point of view.

Markets and food storage centres are generally located in crowded residential and commercial areas, and cow sheds and stables are found all over. Dairy products are largely produced within the urban area and transport animals are kept within its limits.

Even in times of peace some of these have been found inadequate and when the stress is greater in times of war they are bound to fail and their destruction by weapons of air attack could easily break the resistance of the inhabitants. Water-supply is inadequate to meet the needs of peace in many urban centres in India and the road system is getting unbearable with the lateral and vertical expansion of cities. Roads that cannot take a holiday crowd could rarely cope with the demands of evacuation and the needs of fire-fighting and decontamination squads. And when bomb craters cover the roads they would be practically useless.

Two branch lines of the central underground system were ordered to be closed at Berlin owing to damage caused during a night raid by the R.A.F. It was reported that the entire underground power system of Berlin was put out of order.

After a heavy raid in July 1941, most of the manhole covers over the telephone and electric power cables in Ludgate Circus were "blown out. Gas mains had caught fire somewhere else in Fleet Street and minor or secondary explosions had been caused. No gas, no water, no electricity, and no lift and no telephone. Same story of hard going to get in from their homes, of no sleep through the night, of incendiary and high explosive bombs."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>London Correspondent, *The Hindu*, 22-7-41.

During the German raids on Belgrade the electricity station and water-pipes were smashed by bombs so that the city was deprived of light and water.

A heavy German bomb made a big crater alongside a railway line in Poland. A Polish armoured train which was carrying retreating troops was wrecked by this damage.

Reports of widespread damage in Berlin due to R.A.F. raids have been received in authoritative quarters from reliable neutral sources. Charlottenburg went without gas for two days, according to a reliable report. Dislocation of the city's railway traffic increased by the damage to underground—now the most popular means of transport. One attack destroyed many vehicles in the city's main tram and bus depot.



Three tracks of the London and North-Eastern Railway were knocked out by a German bomb

All communications were dislocated and traffic was further interrupted by raids on railway sidings at Potsdamer and Anhalter stations by the R.A.F. Damage seriously affected the transport system and one traveller from Berlin for the Rhineland spent three days instead of twelve hours on the journey. Much changing was necessary and travellers had often to walk some distance from one train to the next. Transport on waterways, was also dislocated. The Miteland Canal was interrupted for five days and on the Dortmund Ems Canal, the east wall north of the old aqueduct was broken.

Gas and water-mains have been broken and fires started at a number of points in English coastal towns by Nazi bombs.

In the West End of London in September 1940, a bomb damaged a street and a subway. A crater affected the water-main near a large hotel where guests were removed from the underground shelter to the ground floor in case the water percolated through to refuge.

Underground Telephone Cables in London were damaged by a heavy bomb. London Port Office Engineers worked at the bottom of a bomb crater to restore the lines in February, 1941.

The Rumanian oil pipe-lines near Ploesti—the centre of oilfields—have been damaged by bombs.

The famous Dortmund Ems Canal, a vital junction in the German canal system, was rendered unrecognisable and practically useless as a result of R.A.F. bombing.

High explosive bombs can easily affect transport facilities by hitting and destroying the transport units, buses and trams and by creating bomb craters in the middle of roads. Instances of both classes have happened in London.

During a severe blitz Oxford Street, centre of London's West End shopping district, was hit by a high explosive bomb and a deep crater was created. An emergency bridge had to be erected for buses and pedestrians, to pass over.

Transport difficulties have been aggravated by bombing in London and suburban areas.

During the R.A.F. raids in Africa, an air-craft of a Rhodesian squadron raided stores and dumps in Africa. A direct hit completely wrecked a railway station building at Adarti, while goods trucks on the sidings and a group of huts near the station were also badly damaged.

In Midlands a train was machine-gunned and a few persons were slightly injured. In the Home Counties a number of persons were killed and seriously injured by bombs and machine-gun bullets. The dining car of the train was damaged but the bombs dropped did no damage.

Trams have been hit during daylight raids on London. Once three people were killed. A woman, a driver and a conductor died as the result of this direct hit from a Nazi fighter-bomber. Windows

and woodwork were blown out, seats were shattered and buried in the roadway. Women ripped their clothes to provide temporary bandages for the injured. Many were cut by flying glass. Windows in buses were also shattered.

During a raid on London in September 1941 damage to utility undertakings caused gas to be cut off over a wide area. Thousands of East London workers found normal trains not operating in the morning.

A high explosive bomb, dropped by a German raider during a daylight raid in London on 25-10-1940 exploded in a street crowded with traffic. It fell on a tram which was crushed and badly damaged four others. All the five trams, some of which were filled with workers, were drawn up close together near traffic lights. A number of other people have been seriously injured. Buses in the same street had their windows shattered by the blast and the passers-by injured by the flying fragments.

A bomb which fell on a main London thoroughfare seriously damaged two omnibuses and killed and seriously injured a number of persons during Nazi activity over London. There were, however, some fatal injuries among railway passengers when a train was hit by debris.

A blast wrecked a crowded bus. It overturned and caught fire. Most of the passengers were killed while passers-by, people waiting at a bus stop and sheltering in doorways, added to the death-roll.

A caravan bus was wrecked when South-West London was attacked on 16-8-1940. Its coach work was perforated by machine-gun bullets.

The blast of a bursting bomb on 8-9-1940 flung a stationary bus against a building, pinning the radiator to the window sills of an upper floor.

Of the London Passenger Transport Board servants, 116 were killed, 322 were injured by enemy action while engaged in the performance of their ordinary duties. The death and injury to persons employed in transport system should also be reckoned in addition to the destruction and damage which may be caused to vehicles and the tracks. It is believed that casualties would have been heavier than the above in the early days of the blitz, if the *Luftwaffe* had concentrated their attention on London and suburban transport systems.

It is officially stated that 101 persons were killed in a train which was hit during a Japanese air bombardment of the French-owned railway between Yunnan and Haiphong in French Indo-China in February, 1940. Five of the killed were of French nationality, who include two women and a child and sixteen others were native railway employees. The remaining eighty were Asiatic passengers, and in addition 120 people were wounded.

During a raid on the Suez Canal damage was done to telephone communications in that area.

Experience in Poland and Finland, Norway and Holland bring to light that these are made the objectives of attack. Electric power-houses, aerodromes, railways, bridges and moving passenger vehicles are attacked. Precautions have been taken in several European countries to prevent dislocation. The Civil Defence Act of Great Britain compels the owners of public utility services to camouflage their premises and even a grant is made by the Exchequer. According to Clause 39:

“There may be paid out of moneys provided by Parliament towards approved expenses of public utility undertakers in taking measures, whether before or after the passing of this Act, to secure the due functioning of their undertaking in the event of hostile attack, grants not exceeding one-half of those expenses.”

They are further subjected to obscuration of light in the interest of safety. Clause 45 insists that along with factory premises or mines, these public utility undertakings may be compelled “to take over or complete such measures as may be specified in the notice to secure that the factory premises, mine or as the case may be, any of the premises of the undertaker, can be made less readily recognisable by air-craft in the event of hostile attack.” The Government grants half the expenditure incurred by the party who is compelled and if they do not comply they are liable to a heavy fine and conviction.

In France the height of buildings is regulated to prevent demolished buildings blocking the road and hindering movement of traffic when it is most needed. The Town Planning regulations of Poland, according to an order issued in May 1939, prescribe: “roads and streets must be straight and should run in the direction of prevailing wind, leaving at least 60 yards between the fronts of buildings on main thoroughfares.”

In India, soon after the outbreak of hostilities in Europe, police guards were placed near aerodromes, electric power-houses, water-supply sources, etc.

In U. P. an Act has been passed called the U. P. Water-Supply and Fire Services (A.R.P.) Act, 1941, with a view to making better provision for the creation and maintenance of water-supply and fire services for the protection of the general public from the dangers of air attacks.

The Punjab Government have decided to provide structural air raid precautions at a number of hydro-electric sub-stations in the Punjab at an estimated cost of Rs. 1,74,000.

Measures to ensure that the labour population in Calcutta and the industrial area remain at their posts in the event of enemy air raid were considered at a Conference held at Calcutta in August, 1941. Government felt that labourers must be made to realise that during an air raid, or in anticipation of an air attack, they should not leave their places of employment.

Col. A. J. Reeve, Director of Training and Operations, Government of India, suggested a complete overhaul of the water-supply service of Karachi.

That these precautions cannot prevent damage will be evident from the experiences already recounted. Attempts are being made to prevent the flooding of underground systems by the damage done by high explosives. The effort made in London is noteworthy. The London Passenger Transport Service has taken steps to prevent flooding in the tubes in case of severe damage by air raids. They consist of the installation of massive steel doors or gates at stations where the railways pass under the Thames and also in the immediate neighbourhood of water-main or sewers which might probably be burst by bombs. By closing these new steel gates flooding of the underground system may be prevented. Special sector gates have been placed between the foot of the excavators and the platforms on the northern line at Charing Cross which if necessary will close the passages leading from the district station above. At Charing Cross there are six of these sector gates each weighing  $4\frac{1}{2}$  tons. During an air raid they could be raised or lowered in two minutes by electric motor with a push button control. In addition there is emergency hand gear for raising the gates.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Hindu.

When the war started these openings now controlled by the steel gates were completely plugged up with concrete as a precaution, the one at Charing Cross weighing 25 tons. Such costly precautions would become inevitable if underground systems are to be adopted. In residential zones for Indian cities an underground system is undesirable both by its initial cost and by the risks and the expensiveness of protection.

To underground systems if they are not very deep, gas bombs may prove doubly dangerous when they combine high explosives with them and when they are equipped with a delayed action fuse, they may damage service mains under the roads. The water, gas, and electricity mains may be contaminated by gas and may also be damaged by explosions. The gas may burn and water may carry contamination down the sewers; electric cables may absorb the liquid. They might have to be cut off before decontamination work could begin and after decontaminating the crater, metal pipes carrying gas and water may have to be cut out and replaced. Drain pipes of concrete or stone have to be treated with bleach paste. Electric cables may absorb the liquid in their bitumen coating. The copper strands may get corroded. If the rubber coating is heavily contaminated that section of the cable must be replaced. Underground telephone wires if encased in stoneware ducts would have to be washed with paraffin or petrol.

Overhead telephone wires are unlikely to be heavily contaminated unless they are blown down by an explosion but telephone exchanges would be rendered unfit for use by gas spray or a combined high explosive bomb. Gas can similarly dislocate the transport system by contaminating the vehicles. If the contamination has been heavy it is possible that corrosion will develop later.

Several methods have been suggested to prevent dislocation. Removal of plants and power-houses is advocated. But a spasmodic removal is inconvenient and costly and sometimes impossible. Now that the threat of air raids prevail for fairly long periods this measure cannot help. A permanent removal outside the city limits would appear desirable but cannot eliminate the danger unless the distributive system is rendered bomb-proof. Keeping more than one source is suggested on the principle that if one is destroyed others would function. This is uneconomic and impossible for drainage

systems and the like. Alternative source to be harnessed during emergency might be adopted for railway stations but such a measure may not be feasible for water-supply.

Although the problem is simpler in our country the preceding chapters would show that protective measures are uneconomic, otherwise unreliable. Public utility services liable to dislocation when one part of the organisation is affected are unsuitable from the point of view of air defence. The desirable system should be one which will make dislocation by throwing a few bombs impossible.

That this is possible is now disclosed by researches in Public Health, Nutrition, Sociology, Town Planning and other sciences directly affecting human welfare. A proper combination could give birth to a system immune to dislocation.

### **Water-Supply and Drainage : Residential Zones**

The needs and finances of the residential and non-residential zones of a city differ fundamentally and in approaching the solution, the two aspects need to be viewed separately. Regarding residential zones the supply of water could be immuned by tube wells, one or more for every house or groups of houses. This would provide protected water-supply immune to gas attack and dependable during emergency. Wells properly constructed and protected would also serve and help the needs of fire fighting and decontamination. The problem of drainage can be solved if adequate open space is allotted for every residence. A kitchen garden would provide necessary green vegetables and would prevent underground drains and cess pits. The plants will use the water of the household. "Sanitation is purely an agricultural question and the country where every cottage has or should have its patch of garden there ought to be no difficulty."<sup>1</sup> This observation made by a well-known medical authority has great significance in planning for air defence. The problem of sanitation will be automatically solved by this method.

The need for sufficient space around is also stressed by sociologists who emphasise the need for a correct balance between men, occupations and land for ensuring optimum welfare for humanity. The neighbourhood unit idea is rapidly gaining ground in U. S. A. and space around the house, garden and vegetation are deemed

<sup>1</sup> Vivian Poore: Essays in Rural Hygiene.



essential, to give the correct perspective to life and to make man healthy. Town Planning principles restrict the number of houses per acre to twelve and individual town planners consider six or nine better. A system of suburbs where six to nine or twelve families live per acre, water-supply and drainage could be made immune to air raid. Where more density is inevitable Dr. Poore's idea could be applied by combining groups of families in residential estates or blocks of houses each self-sufficient for water-supply and drainage. Where even this is not possible small colonies could be made self-sufficient by locating them in proper surroundings. Three to five hundred families, it is considered, offer optimum unit for ensuring social intercourse, personal contact, and community interest, after years of research in American Universities. Recent opinion considers 750 houses as the minimum number for a self-sufficient community and was advocated at the International Federation for Housing and Town Planning at its 16th Congress at Mexico by those responsible for the Green belt town now being built by the Federal Government.<sup>1</sup>

The optimum size for groups of families have yet to be discovered for India but 750 families may not be unsuitable to form residential estates, that could be rendered air raid proof regarding essential services. The average village in India contains from 200 to 500 families and these were autonomous self-governing and self-sufficient units over which India's prosperity flourished for centuries. Indian Town Planning insists on tanks, open spaces, water-courses and fields around as essential parts of the village plan. Indian villages in the early Buddhist age more or less conformed to the requirements for resistance dictated by the needs of air defence. A cluster of houses with streets laid to harness light and breeze to help ventilation, with tanks and gardens surrounded by pasturage, can defy raiders better and it is not impossible to form a city with such residential surroundings.

### **Water-Supply and Drainage : Non-residential Zones**

Non-residential areas of large cities create a problem owing to lack of space and the necessity for multi-storeyed structures. Open drains and independent systems are not possible. But the occupiers could pay for a bomb-proof system. In fact a deep underground system has been suggested by experts in the West.

<sup>1</sup> J. T. P. I., Oct., 1938, p. 412.

Drainage, water-supply, gas, electric power, light and telephone should be grouped together and run below the roads and made safe from bombing by running in tube subways constructed of reinforced concrete, and kept about 20 feet below the surface. The road surface should be formed of heavy reinforced concrete to serve as a detonating slab. "This road surface would never require to be cut up for alterations and renewals of the service conduits, as they could be freely got at from the armoured tubeway formed for this purpose."<sup>1</sup>

### Power Stations

Regarding power stations; the bombing aeroplanes are already causing considerable reform. The dangers of "all-the-eggs-in-one-basket" policy are becoming obvious. It is a dangerous policy to erect new gigantic central power stations of say 500,000-1,000,000 K.W. capacity which might be put out of action by a single concentrated attack from air-craft. The sensible policy is to have half a dozen widely scattered stations inter-connected of the same total capacity.

Already power stations have been designed and in some cases constructed with heavy concrete walls, up to 2 feet thick, with no windows to reduce the dangers from splinters and blast from a considerable distance. A new development is the construction of special completely bomb-proof emergency power stations which it will be impossible to put out of action, say by burrowing into a hillside or by construction underground with an enormously thick concrete and earth roof. For these emergency stations not only are diesel and petrol engines being employed but also super-pressure forced circulation boilers and steam turbines. Manufacturers on the Continent are already producing bomb-proof power station plants, suitable also for ordinary peak loads.<sup>2</sup>

Lighting could be made independent for each unit and in emergency the dwelling could be lighted by mineral or vegetable oil. Overhead electric cables connecting one suburb to the other or any hydro-electric station could be suitably laid and camouflaged by vegetation abundant in the tropics.

<sup>1</sup> W. Braxton Sinclair, "Town Planning in Relation to A.R.P."

<sup>2</sup> For a short description of a plant of 9,400 K.W. comprising a "Velox" forced circulation super pressure steam generator and condensing steam turbine plant supplied by Brown Boveri & Co., Ltd., of Baden, Switzerland, vide the *Hindu*, 5th May, 1940.

The protection of utilities so as to permit continuation of service under air attacks is of paramount importance in maintaining industry and production.

Utility organizations in regions where there may be danger of attack should make plans for the following:—

1. Continuation of electrical service and measures to be taken to minimize the effect of bombing.
2. Measures of defence in the construction of new power installations to minimize the effects of bombing.

1. CONTINUATION OF SERVICE AND PROTECTION OF EXISTING FACILITIES. One of the best methods of providing continuation of service is that of having all sources of power interconnected so that even complete destruction of an important plant would result in the minimum interruption to the power supply. All vital control apparatus and conductors should be duplicated in so far as is practical and should be so arranged that in the event of destruction of one unit, its duplicate could be put immediately into service. Another protective measure, where feasible, is to have replacement units and parts of equipment strategically located and designed for rapid transportation to replace a partially destroyed element.

High-tension lines are not easily destroyed or broken down by aerial bombing. Few direct hits can be made by enemy planes unless they have the most favourable conditions for attack and fly very low and along the transmission right-of-way. Even in such cases, direct hits resulting in the destruction of the steel towers seldom occur. Towers are sometimes damaged by fragments of exploding bombs, but in most cases this damage is not sufficient to interrupt the power supply. Multiple transmission lines having different routings or widely separated rights-of-way, and selective relay protection for the different circuits, will reduce the interruption of power service to a minimum.

2. NEW CONSTRUCTION. New buildings of permanent construction which house important equipment or operations should be of framed, fire-resistant construction, with walls of sufficient thickness to resist fragments and roofs at least heavy enough to stop light incendiary bombs.

Power-plant machinery and other vital equipment should be given protection against fragments. Provision should be made for adequate fire-fighting equipment, and for concrete fire walls or barriers to prevent such spread of fire as might happen when oil-filled transformers and switches are used.

The construction of outdoor stations should be arranged so that sectionalization or cutting-off of damaged sections may be done quickly and service restored over undamaged sections. A wider separation of the more vulnerable units, such as transformers, will serve to decrease the liability and extent of damage. Outdoor substations preferably should be of latticed angle-iron construction, and the transformers and oil switches may be protected by walls of concrete, brick, or sand-bags, as previously described.

Penstocks, gates, etc., which are particularly likely to be damaged, should have adequate control equipment and valves to localize the damage.

Outside flow line of equipment, including penstocks, oil piping, gas pipes, and other vital appurtenances of hydro-electric plants should be placed underground or in strongly constructed concrete ducts or tunnels, wherever this is feasible and financially practical.

Many of the points covered under the protection of buildings and utilities are applicable to industrial plants. Steam-boilers, machinery, essential water and gas mains, switch-boards, and electrical cables should receive special attention. Besides causing disruption of operations, the destruction of supply pipes by bombs might involve flooding or explosion.

Communications must be maintained for emergency service. Duplication of lines and location of telephones in shelter and first-aid stations are necessary for adequate control.

Wooden boxes filled with sand are an excellent substitute to sand bags.

Reserve supplies of water in static tanks or other reservoirs should be provided.

Auxiliary power plants should be provided and maintained in working condition. Duplication of power and communication lines, switch-boards, and other utilities is desirable.<sup>1</sup>

### **Road System and Transport Facilities**

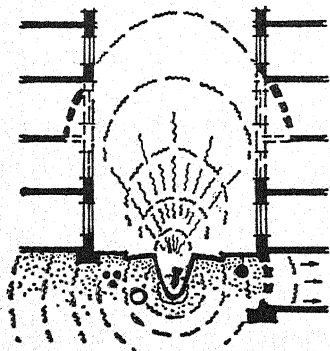
A strong impervious road surface is essential to prevent contamination and facilitate decontamination. A gas spray on concrete paths or paving stones need no treatment other than

<sup>1</sup> Vide "The American City," July, 1941, pp. 87-103.

hosing. But if they have been splashed with the liquid they must be left to weather in addition. In a congested centre elaborate methods of decontamination are essential and the road surface should as far as possible resist absorption. In warm or mild weather as in India it is unlikely that any danger will persist by fine spray after one hour. If the streets can be kept clear for an hour after the spray has fallen there will be little danger.

But traffic must be closed at least for three hours and constant hosing at intervals of one hour and immediate attention will be required for gross spray and decontamination. Pavement stones or slabs or concrete do absorb the liquid and porous joints surrounding stone setts will do similarly. "If the stone or concrete is hot, as may be the case in sunny weather or in a tropical climate, a good deal of the liquid will be vaporised in a short time and the remainder though quickly absorbed will be given off again later as vapour. This means that the danger from vapour in the streets will be great, though the problem of decontamination will be less."

This consideration indicates that roads must be so laid as to facilitate the breeze blowing through, to clear away the vapour. The need for wide roads will now become apparent. This factor should also determine the location of different zones of a city.



The dangers of a hard surface in narrow streets for the walls and foundations of buildings

Cities in India should be prepared to meet heavy vapour from mustard gas. Tar and bitumen dissolve blister gas especially in warm weather and should not be used for road surfaces. Tared macadam, bituminous and asphalt surfaces are equally unsuitable, for decontaminating them is particularly difficult if immediate action is not possible. Heating up the road surface is necessary if the liquid has been completely absorbed but this will damage the road surface. Water-bound

macadam surface may not absorb much blister gas but its rough surface renders hosing down with water less effective. Hard brushing will damage the surface and would be wasteful.

<sup>1</sup>A.R.P.M. 3 "Organisation of Decontamination Services."

## METHODS OF DECONTAMINATION FOR ROAD SURFACES

Surface	Method of Treatment <sup>1</sup>
<i>Treatment for Fine Spray.</i> All surfaces	In busy thoroughfares hose down with water if this can be done within 30 minutes.  In all other circumstances leave to weather.
<i>Treatment for Gross spray and outer zone of bomb contamination.</i> All surfaces	Hose down with water as quick, as possible for 10 minutes. Repeat treatment. Pavements for immediate use can be brushed with thin cream of bleaching powder and water.
<i>Treatment for Gross contamination round bomb craters.</i> Stone setts	Cream of bleaching powder and water. Brush well into joints. Leave in contact for 15 minutes. Finally hose down with water.
Stone paving and concrete	Hose with water for 10 minutes. Sprinkle with dry bleaching powder. Brush well into surface for 5 minutes. Also treat gutters. Finally hose down with water.
Wood paving	Hose with water for 15 minutes. If jointing material is soft, cover with sand. (If heavy liquid splashes visible, treat with bleaching powder and sand before hosing : brush well over surface and leave in contact for 1 or 2 hours).
Tarred macadam, bitumen or asphalt	Hose with water for 15 minutes. Use dry bleaching powder treatment for grossly contaminated areas. In certain cases road heating machines may be used.
Water-bound macadam	When possible leave to weather. If treatment essential, sprinkle with bleaching powder and leave for 10 minutes. Then hose gently with water for 10 minutes.
Natural earth, grass, etc.	Cover with 2 to 3 inches of fresh earth and leave to weather. If contamination very gross and near to occupied premises, add top layer of earth and bleaching powder 3 to 1.

<sup>1</sup>Vide A.R.P.H.4 Appendix B.

A hard surface no doubt increases the danger of blast and splinters to adjacent structures but sufficiently wide roads would reduce this danger. They would further minimise the danger of vibration of traffic and bomb explosion and is also essential to prevent traffic congestion.

These considerations need not be literally applied to open country and residential zones for, weathering might be depended upon to do the task of decontamination. As the Home Office handbook recognises elaborate methods "may be entirely unnecessary and wasteful on an open high way."

The road system therefore requires great attention and care. Its lay-out, its surface, its width, etc., need special attention. It also forms the physical basis of the system of transport and to satisfy the requirements of air defence the road system should, (1) facilitate quick movement, (2) protect underground systems if any, (3) increase the resistance to vibration of buildings, (4) reduce vulnerability to gas contamination, (5) help ventilation by securing sunlight and breeze and (6) provide fire breaks.

These are essential if the road system should offer resistance to air raids and make transport possible. But these are equally necessary to make them useful in times of peace. The military requirements coincide in the main with civil needs of the population, so that the ideal military road system of communication would well serve civil needs in peace time.<sup>1</sup> A number of important planning questions converge around the type of road plan adopted equally vital to military and civil needs. The military demands require an excellent service of straight broad roads, free of risk from falling brick debris, linking up the many defensive positions, such positions to be distributed at required intervals, generally through the city

<sup>1</sup>Refugees cumbering the roads were a constant cause of disorganisation during the fighting in France; and often seriously hampered the operations of their own side. Instructions now issued by the Home Office to householders on what to do in case of invasion lay it down as a first principle that no one should move until ordered to do so. Columns of refugees on the roads often hampered the allied Defence. The Germans deliberately exploited the refugee problem by Machine-gun attacks.

Mr. Churchill's message in May 1941 has warned that the same apply to the people inland if any considerable number of parachutists or airborne troops land in their neighbourhood; he emphasised that above all they must not cumber the roads.

area and would have a spread of about 10 to 15 acres, each to give an ample field of vision.

Civil requirements dictate that roads should form a network to divide up property into business units and the main arteries to be adequate for traffic and provided with diagonal connections with subsidiary centres, which should occur about every square mile of city area.

As Professor Haldane has pointed out we make huge numbers of motor vehicles but not the roads needed for them. Or if we make the roads they are soon so surrounded with factories and residences that we have to go along them very slowly. Road systems need change even for peacetime requirements.

A road system that would fulfil all these various requirements is a combination of the chess-board plan with a simple system of spider web plan to subsidiary centres which would give the best road results, and at the same time provide an elastic basis for the open spaces of greens and parks: thus the dark squares of the chess-board would indicate the varying disposition and area of the open spaces or defence positions according to the density required. This type of plan would give excellent opportunities for the town lay-out with open squares, small parks, gardens, athletic grounds, and at the same time would produce a very effective part of the camouflage of the disposition of city zones and buildings when viewed from the air. Large groups of trees and parks in cities and towns have the effect of breaking up the forms and making identification of targets more difficult from the air.<sup>1</sup>

In addition to the lay-out of roads, the transport units that convey passengers and goods must be capable of surviving air attacks. Railway trains are vulnerable to bombs and machine-gun fire and should be discouraged within urban areas. If economic conditions warrant goods may be conveyed by a deep underground line to the heart of the city from a station situated in the outskirts. They must be sufficiently deep, otherwise they would be very vulnerable. When air-craft of the Fighter Command attacked railway targets in northern France on 11-12-42, in an attack on a railway tunnel, 40 miles north-west of Paris the pilot of a Mosquito dropped a bomb, with a short delayed action, right into

<sup>1</sup>*Vide* Braxton Sinclair.



the western mouth of the tunnel. A second bomb struck the woodwork round the mouth. The pilot then saw a train enter the eastern entrance of the tunnel. He stayed around for ten minutes but the train did not reappear at the western entrance from which black smoke was drifting. The exit was evidently damaged. Bomb craters would hamper the movement of tramcars and they must be discarded. Although instances of machine-gunning moving buses have come to light small mobile units have better chances of escape and are preferable in the interest of security.

Cleansing station for vehicles or vehicle decontamination depots also form part of this scheme. Yards large enough to accommodate contaminated vehicles must be situated in localities where the risk of vapour from them will not cause danger or inconvenience. Provision for ample water-supply to these depots must be made. "The process of decontamination would involve copious use of water and the actual decontamination stands on which the vehicles would be washed should therefore have a hose water-supply (a high pressure of water is unnecessary), and ample drains for carrying away the contaminated water." Since washing road surfaces also requires copious water, tanks and reservoirs suitably placed on the road system form part of a system of transport and communication which might be considered reasonably safe.

### **Food Supply**

The production and supply of vegetables, milk and dairy products as well as food grains and other essential articles also need protection. Modern urban communities depend for their protective food on cattle housed within city zones. Markets, oilman stores, restaurants and boarding houses are situated in the most crowded parts of cities. Their contents are liable to be affected by poison gas and cattle and other animals are seriously injured and disabled particularly by mustard gas.

It is suggested that edible articles should be packed with gas-proof materials and they must be kept covered as far as possible. The Home Office insists that attention must be bestowed during transport and distribution and advises to make "all store-houses as gas-proof as is practicable." The protection of food-stuffs against poison gas is the subject of a special booklet. Air-tight bottles or sealed tins offer complete protection against all forms of gas. Air-tight glass or earthenware jars offer similar protection if covered

with glass, metal or bakelite. Sealed wooden barrels provide complete protection against vapour and moderate amount of liquid gas. For prepared edibles however, waxed cartons and cellulose transparent films give good protection against gas and liquid.<sup>1</sup>

The problem of protecting food supply thus covers the location, design and protection of hotels and markets, etc., the preservation of pasturage and fodder for cattle and their housing, and the provision of cultivation in close proximity, to supply as far as possible food grains and food articles.

Restaurants and hotels should be housed in gas-proof structures or in buildings which could be converted into gas-proof ones. Their design and construction should be such as to render contamination difficult, and washing down easy. Their location should also be helpful to defy contamination. Uncovered food-stuff should not be displayed in windows or on counters or shelves. The period of warning before an air raid is likely to be short and would not give sufficient time to pack away large quantity of food which was displayed without protection. This precaution against gas is equally welcome in times of peace for health and hygiene.

The storage of food grains in large quantities in the suburbs and the surrounding agricultural belt also needs attention. As a result of air attack near Hamburg docks, three silos containing about 10,000 tons of wheat have been completely destroyed. Terraced houses which could be rendered gas-proof are preferable. Where this is not possible, as during the harvest, they must be covered by large tarpaulins and left in the field. Strong thatched stacks of grain could also be similarly protected. Grain silos, not very tall, granaries convertible into air raid shelters in the surrounding areas would help the storing of grain not merely for protection but for better prices.

Not merely protection of food, but its production and supply to citizens must be ensured. Careful observation and experience has now proved that production must be as far as possible close to the centres of consumption ; preferably in an adequate green belt of pasture and agriculture encircling a city. Where such a system does not exist acute hardship has resulted, not only during war but in the years of peace that follow. Because, as Dr. Mackenzie

<sup>1</sup>The Protection of Food-stuffs against poison gas.

has stated in his "Medical Relief in Europe", there will be under-nourishment, due to the failure of crops in areas where the male population go for fighting and neglect to till the ground. Horses useful for ploughing would go with the armies, milk cows would be killed for meat. The milk supply for the city of Vienna in 1920 was less than one per cent. of what it had been in 1914. Transport difficulties render large areas unable to get their usual food-supplies. So the general nourishment and fitness of many countries will be at a low ebb, and diseases, epidemic or introduced—will take a terrible toll of life. For example, measles in Rumania killed 80 per cent. of its victims in 1921. Many doctors have left home to join the war; also relief organisations and hospitals in many places, will have been destroyed and diverted from their natural functions, so the plight of many sufferers would be made worse still. After the last Great War transport and economic systems broke down and mal-nutrition was almost universal, varying from under-nourishment almost everywhere in Central and Eastern Europe to acute famine in certain countries. Diseases spread rapidly and thousands of lives were lost unnecessarily owing to the absence of any priorities in supply or transport and the overlapping of relief work, some areas being served by three or four organisations, whilst others were left without any help at all. Proximity of the centres of production to the centres of consumption is therefore essential to avoid these dangers during the war and post-war periods.<sup>1</sup>

Since 1914 the amount of arable land under crops in Great Britain, had actually decreased by four and a half million acres. For every thousand acres of cultivated land in the last war there were 1,195 human beings to be fed and the figure now was 1,424. Moreover, there had been general decline in the fertility of the British soil, taking the country as a whole.

Between the outbreak of the last war and this war the production of fodder and root crops for live-stock had fallen by no less than one-third. As Mr. Lloyd George has pointed out, in this grave hour, the life of the nation depends on agriculture. Germany was beaten in spite of her great victories in the last war because she had no food. She neglected her agriculture partly before and almost entirely during the war. She flung her men into the battle-field as if the only field that mattered was that of battle and not the fields behind the battle-front.

<sup>1</sup> *The Hindu*, 22-11-'42.

Citizens in England have been advised to eat less and conserve food as a precautionary measure. Girls are being taught how to make the best of the rationed foods.

Digging for Victory has therefore become a part of the war effort. Every space available is brought under cultivation. The lawns surrounding universities and famous tennis courts have also been ploughed for agriculture.

The grounds at the All-England Lawn Tennis Club at Wimbledon are ploughed up for war-time food production.

The extension of the war to the Pacific led to a further cut in the rations permitted in England. Rationing regulations issued on January 12, 1942 permitted for domestic purposes: sugar 8 ounces weekly; butter and margarine 6 ounces weekly of which not more than 2 ounces may be butter; cooking fats, 2 ounces weekly; domestic cheese 2 ounces weekly from 9-2-1942. The proposal has also been made by Government to limit meals to three courses. The serving of food after 11 p.m. was prohibited except to residents in hotels and Government discouraged other than for public purposes, the holding of luncheon dinners attracting large number of people.

Thousands of English housewives are, for the first time in their lives, making use of horse meat in the family meals. They are mostly North-country and Midlands housewives, and the horse meat is contained in a meat roll, or galantine, which is being manufactured in ever-increasing quantities in London, writes a *Sunday Dispatch* reporter.

Even His Holiness the Pope is now on rations;  $3\frac{1}{4}$  oz. of meat and  $10\frac{1}{2}$  oz. of bread daily. Three and a half ounces of butter has been allowed weekly and  $17\frac{1}{2}$  oz. of sugar monthly.

The need for "Ploughing for Victory" has been emphasized even in India. Mr. Marsh, Adviser, U. P., pointed out that those who live by cultivation and could not participate directly in war could help victory by making two blades grow where one grew before.

The entry of Japan into war and the loss of Burma focussed attention on the problem of self-sufficiency in food supply and in every Province the "Grow More Food" campaign has gained

ground. At the All-India Food Drive Conference, in April 1942, the desirability of Nutrition experts in Provincial and Central Advisory Committees to advise on the growth of cereals, vegetables, etc. to help people to provide a balanced diet was emphasised. A Press Note issued by the Government of Assam visualised the difficulty which a possible decrease in transport facilities would cause and stressed the principle of regional self-sufficiency. The Food Production Drive started in that province includes onions which are not grown to any extent except in one area. This nutritious and necessary vegetable which is easily stored and transported has therefore been included in the food production drive. Leaders in India have exhorted the people to grow rice instead of cash crops like cotton or jute. The Food Production Conference which concluded its sessions at New Delhi in April 1942 also drew attention to the question of transport. It recommended to the Government to take steps to revive, encourage and develop indigenous transport in order to meet increasing transport difficulties. It is needless to point out that the ideal method of solving the problem of production and transport would be to grow food as near as possible to the centres of consumption, to avoid the difficulties of transport. A green belt of agriculture and pasture around cities is the ideal solution. Every household wherever space is available should try to produce vegetables for the same reason. The Director of Agriculture, Madras in his broadcast talk in April 1942 aptly indicated that extensive compounds to some of the bungalows belonging to Government would be brought under cultivation. The Governments of Calcutta and Bombay have also launched the food production drive.

The "Grow More Food" campaign has been taken up by the Government of India also. But, as 'The Hindu' has pointed out, the instruction has been mechanically passed on to the officers of the Agricultural Department. Every villager is accustomed to grow something of his own. It requires but organisation, propaganda and small help to him to stimulate an increase in the production and use of vegetables. A proper approach would make each household self-sufficient for its green vegetables. Open space surrounding the residence thus becomes inevitable.

Houses with gardens to grow vegetables would also help to solve the garbage disposal, drainage and other problems that may arise in times of air raids. Mobilisation to war effort and the scare might make the availability of labour for municipal services difficult. Already in America interesting experiments have been made. In San Diego garbage men will no longer make rear yard collections according to Fred Rhodes, Public Works Director of San Diego, Calif. This restriction has been necessary because of the shortage of crews in the sanitation department. Under pre-war conditions, garbage collection was performed by crews of three men to a truck. However these crews have now been reduced to only two men and even with this restriction Mr. Rhodes stated that sometimes he has difficulty supplying enough crews to man all the trucks. Householders must now set their containers in the alley or between the curb and the sidewalk in the front of their homes.

The opening raids on Calcutta scared the Municipal Sweepers who fled from the city. Refuse accumulated in bustee and byelanes areas in the city as a result of the shortage of scavenging labour.

The Mayor of Calcutta had to appeal to young men in Calcutta immediately to form cleaning squads. After mentioning the shortage of scavenging staff, his statement said :—" The scavenging lorries are not working in full strength so lots of refuse have accumulated in bustee areas and in areas beyond the main roads. In the interest of the health of the city, the Mayor of Calcutta is making an appeal to young men of Calcutta to form themselves into small groups and work as cleaning squads and to remove all garbage from bustee areas and bye-lane areas. All garbage should be stacked on the main roads to be removed by the lorries working as much as possible. District Engineers were instructed to help cleaning squads.

The question of maintaining an adequate supply of protective foods leads to the problem of protecting animals during air raids, and ensuring them with fodder and food. Horses and bullocks used for transport purposes need protection.<sup>1</sup> But they could be treated along with the milch cattle. Sheep and goat should be

<sup>1</sup> A.R.P.H.12 Air Raid Precautions for animals.

reared to make meat available. Fortunately pets, dogs and birds do not give us as great a problem as they do in England.<sup>1</sup>

“Animals, like human beings, will be exposed to the risks of air attack in a modern war, and everything possible to protect them should be done. Around docks, railway goods depots and industrial centres there may be considerable number of transport and other animals and such areas are likely to be attacked. On the other hand it is unlikely that the destruction of farm animals would be considered as a primary objective of hostile attack owing to their normal dispersal, and if such stock were affected it would probably be merely incidental, but the effects would be no less serious on that account.”

Evacuation is not possible in the case of transport animals, or food animals, awaiting slaughter. To some extent milch cows could be evacuated but this will lead to inconvenience. No satisfactory animal gas mask has yet been produced and gas and bomb-proof stables in city zones are not practicable. Although fodder exposed to the true gases, arsenical smoke or the vapour of blister gas will not remain dangerous, if aired for a few hours, they may become unpalatable.

The ideal remedy is to remove them outside the city zone and the residential areas and to house them in pasturages surrounding the city. Ample water-supply, open air and sunlight necessary to help resisting and recovering from a gas attack are possible only in this green belt. The general advice given regarding A.R.P. for animals and their treatment tend to show that protection is possible if live-stock are kept in the outskirts of cities with plenty of open space, with ample water for washing and drinking and plenty of sunshine and open air to make them recover quickly from contamina-

<sup>1</sup>Even the scare of possible air raids on Bengal has affected the import of milch cattle into Calcutta. While in normal times more than 2,000 milch cattle used to be imported into Calcutta every month there was no import of such cattle into the city during the whole of January 1942. There was also a dearth of goats and sheep in the city.

Reports indicated that the Government demand for them could not be met as “goat keepers do not visit the city now with their flocks.” The price of meat consequently went up by stages from 8 annas to 12 annas a seer in the course of the month of January.

The advisability of using the meat of animals such as goats, cows and sheep killed in air raids, for human consumption is engaging the attention of the Government of Bengal.

tion. Even in non-urban areas it is considered advisable as far as possible to keep large animals such as horses, milch cows, etc., in the fields rather than in stables. The remedies suggested to recover from gas attacks prove this need. For mustard gas affection of the skin the animal should be hosed down with water for half an hour. Affected eyes should be freely irrigated with water and if it is a respiratory tract plenty of fresh air and rest are essential. Lewisite gas injuries need washing with soap and water or water alone within 20 minutes after contamination. For phosgene gas attack, first essential is to remove the animal from the dangerous atmosphere. The animal should be kept in open air, rugs and bandages being put on for warmth.

All these require plenty of fresh air and expansive areas. Non-persistent gases can do little injury if cattle are housed and grazed in a green belt surrounding the town. Persistent gases cannot be made to cover the entire belt and even if one part is endangered grazing could be had in the other. Dairies are best situated in the wide areas surrounding the city. The high explosive and the incendiary bombs cannot then dislocate milk supply.

### Self-Sufficient Units

Vegetable gardens in the adjoining areas would ensure steady supply and if the food grains needed for the city are raised in the land adjoining this green belt the problem of 'grow your own food' during war will not arise. A nation composed of cities and villages whose food supply is assured from the surrounding area can resist aggression successfully. It will also help to achieve the correct balance between occupations, industry and food supply and population and thereby a stable foundation to civilisation.

The decentralisation of food and the consumer's food industries and the establishment of a nation-wide system of small and medium plants to utilise only local raw materials is ordered in a decree published on January 12, 1941. It is signed by M. Stalin and M. Molotov, Prime Minister and Commissar for Foreign Affairs.

Under the existing system of central planning, the decree points out, local resources have been neglected, with the result that there has been an inadequate supply of man's essential commodities.



The mobilisation of all local resources and the utilisation of by-products will also reduce the burden on transport.

More and more restrictions on food developed in England as a result of the dependency on imported food. In May 1942 the Food Ministry had to restrict the courses of meals to three and the time to 11 o'clock. The 'austerity meals' order banned all meals after midnight in London and 11 o'clock outside except for night workers. From 1st June 1942 the maximum number of courses per meal was three and fish, game and poultry were prohibited on certain days of the week. The top price for meals was fixed at 5 shillings and tips at the rate of 6 pence in each 5 shillings.

Restrictions on clothing too have been imposed as well as on transport and travel. For communications and transport facilities are dislocated in this total war. Practically the whole weight of the R.A.F.'s all the four home based operational commands with the exception of the Coastal Command aeroplanes on anti-submarine patrol—is now being thrown more or less directly against Hitler's transport system in the north and western Europe. The raid targets have practically always been towns with important rail links which suffer heavily.

Great damage has been done to tracks and rolling-stock at Cologne, Dusseldorf, Karlsruhe, Stuttgart and other German cities. The railway workshops have been singled out for attack both day and night. Heavy damage has also been caused to Nippe's Locomotive works at Cologne and the Henschel Works at Kassel. The Lille works in France and Hengelo, have been raided heavily. Fighter attacks on Nazi railways in France and the Low Countries go on every day and the number of locomotives damaged or destroyed since this form of attack was developed on a big scale last spring must now run well into hundreds. Specially significant in relation to the African Campaigns have been the attacks on important rail junctions in Germany linking the two Axis countries and great attacks on Genoa and Turin which have caused havoc to Italian railways.

As stated by Sir Herbert Morrison, "Scientific bombing of Italy which has produced the evacuation order in Italian cities finds its most effective targets at major rail-road junctions and on lines joining Italy to Germany."

American Army air planes have bombed and completely destroyed many railway bridges in Burma. The October 2, 1942, attack was carried out from a low altitude. In addition to the destruction of a bridge, a number of railroad cars and six hundred feet of track were damaged. Continuing the offensive on October 3, bombing attacks were made on the Japanese barracks south-east of Loiwing and on the large suspension bridge ten miles south of Tingka. Two small river crafts and a large steamer north of Katha were attacked by machine-gun fire. The steamer was forced ashore.

The Japanese too have paid particular attention to attacks on roads, railway and river traffic. Recent raids all over the world has shown that communications are destroyed. They form the principal targets of attack.

The importance of decentralisation and self-sufficiency in the production and supply of essential articles of consumption and essential services can no longer be ignored. Life and civilization built up and sustained on goods and articles transported over long distances—land or sea, are liable to be seriously affected. Even if bombing does not take place exigencies of war and the war machine and the defence forces, would render the peacetime transport facilities inadequate. Even within the same country movement of food articles from one place to another may become difficult owing to non-availability of transport facilities. The proximity of food production to centres of consumption becomes essential.

This same lack of transport facilities would render the availability of protective foods, milk and dairy products, fresh vegetables and fruits difficult, to the inhabitants of blitzed cities. The small producers from the neighbouring areas would not like to come to the city threatened by the air arm. Production close to cities is necessary for these vitally essential food stuffs, needed every day and which cannot be stored for a long time in advance. When we remember that scavenging labour and municipal menials desert a city during *blitz* complicating the city's sanitary problems, the vital importance of this measure would be apparent.

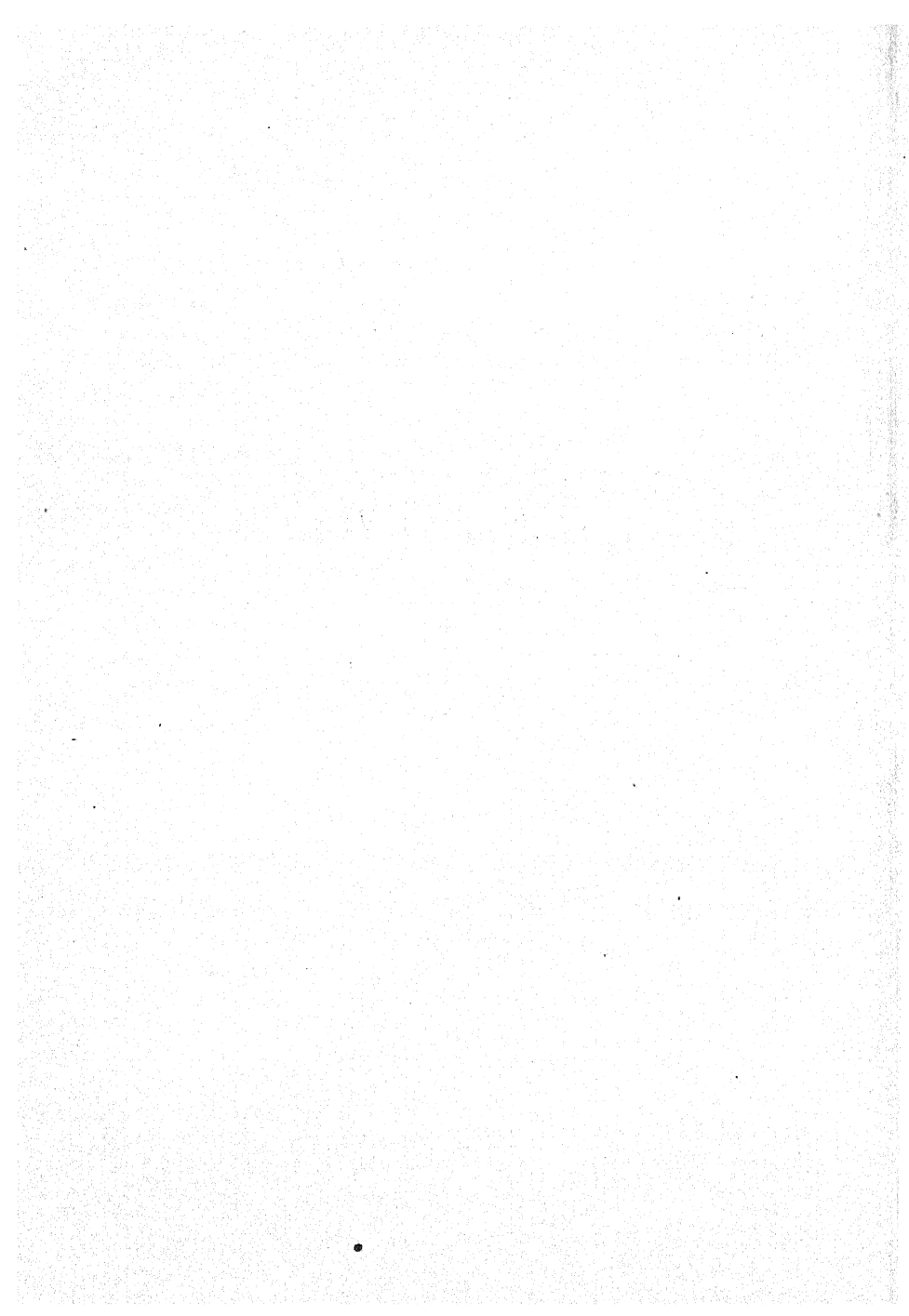
The main difficulty, however, is the absence of data to determine the various standards and quantities to form the ideal patterns and compositions.<sup>1</sup> Whether it is the residential unit and the kitchen garden, the quantity of food and population, the number of cattle and the grazing area, adequate data are lacking. The size of the group of domestic dwellings in residential suburbs that would be the optimum unit; the size of the plot for each residence; the proportion for the built-up area to the open surrounding; their location with reference to the air raid shelter as well as to open parks and vegetation; the arrangement of different groups of families according to their occupation and economic condition; the optimum size for the urban community and the ideal pattern of spatial arrangement; the proportion of population to business, administration, occupation and work, etc., all these must be discovered to plan a successful scheme and to evolve the ideal pattern. This alone can make it possible for the normal functioning of the society during air raid and make dislocation by destroying essential services well nigh impossible. Elaborate precautions now being taken in the West are too expensive to our country and a peaceful agricultural civilisation cannot afford to be extravagant for emergencies. Self-sufficient and self-reliant units capable of making their parts work independently during emergency would form the ideal basis for the urban community particularly in this country where labour, land and nature are abundant.

<sup>1</sup>Admirably constituted Government research stations and departments already exist in our country. There are, besides, other bodies organised for research in universities and under the authority of other independent institutions. We should also reckon the potentially vast research resources that could be mobilised by the captains of industry. Co-ordination, the fundamental requisite, is however needed.

## **CHAPTER VI**

---

### **ESSENTIALS OF AIR DEFENCE**



## CHAPTER VI

---

### ESSENTIALS OF AIR DEFENCE

It would be evident from the previous chapters that the essentials of air defence are, bomb-proof shelters for all the people, structures that would resist and recover from air raids and services the supply of which is immune to dislocation. To these should also be added a suitable contingent of anti-aircraft guns, ground defences, balloon barrages, fighter planes, etc., to reduce the scale of attack. Without such active defence the task of the raider would be enormously simplified and passive defence measures would prove inadequate. A defenceless city will fall a prey to a handful of bombers and machine-gun fire as did Steinkjer in April 1940. These are needed to force the raiders to attack the targets from a great distance and in great hurry—the two factors which render destruction difficult. If anti-aircraft defences are not successful and effective now, it is largely due to the defective lay-out and development of modern cities which impose too heavy a burden upon them. A properly planned city will be a helpful combination, minimise their difficulty and enhance their effectiveness.

These four fundamental requirements would assure to people reasonable security from the air menace. Where these four features are combined to produce the optimum effect, the community housed there, would defy the most carefully engineered air attack. This would produce a degree of resistance that would make air raids uneconomic and not worthwhile and would undermine the enemy's incentive to adopt this course as his method of aggression.

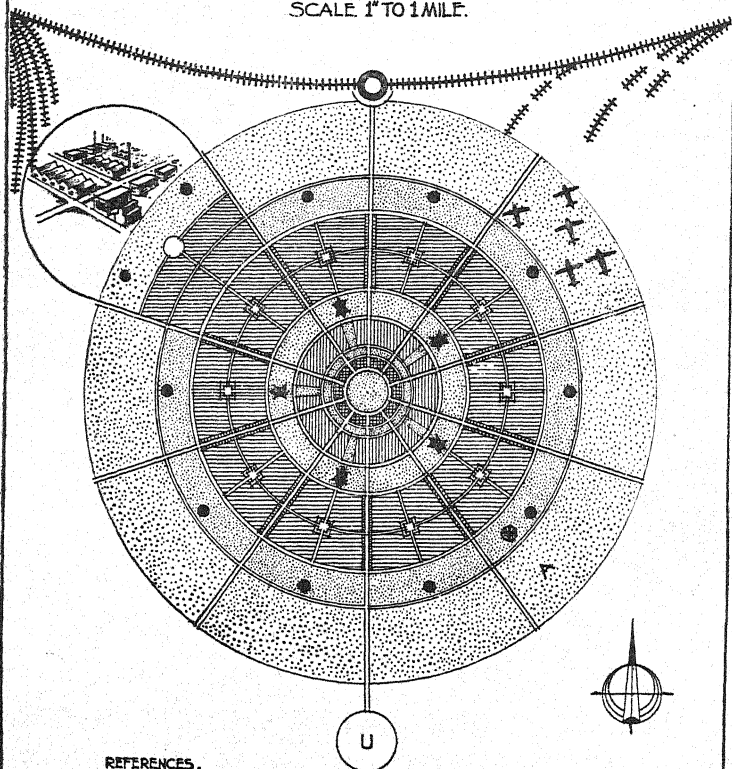
### Cities for Air Raid Protection

What is the ideal combination and how will this pattern of a city look like? Local conditions and requirements would affect this a great deal, but the disposition of the different parts of the civic organism would be more or less as shown in page 226.

Around a large central park would be located the civic buildings, surrounded by a green belt of parks and vegetation separating the

## AIRRAID-PROOF CITY

SCALE 1" TO 1 MILE.



## REFERENCES.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| = OPEN SPACES : PARKS, GREEN BELTS AND PLAY FIELDS.   | = RESIDENTIAL ZONE : RICH, MIDDLE & WORKING CLASSES. |
| = CIVIC CENTRES : MUSEUM, AUDITORIUM, ZOO, STADIUM, TOWN HALL, THEATRE & PICTURE GALLERY.   | = SUBURBAN AMENITIES.                                |
| = NERVE CENTRES : ELECTRIC POWER HOUSE, TELEPHONE EXCHANGE, BROADCASTING STATION, AMMUNITION STORE, TELEGRAPHIC CENTRE, WIRELESS, BOMB PROOF VAULTS FOR SAFE DEPOSIT. | = PARKWAYS.  |
| = CITY ZONES : BANKING, COMMERCE, INSURANCE, ADMINISTRATION, TRADES, MINOR INDUSTRIES, SHOPS AND MARKETS.   | = ANTI-AIRCRAFT GUNS.                                |
| = DAIRIES, PASTURAGE & VEGETABLE GARDENS.   | = RAILWAY STATION.                                   |
|   | = UNIVERSITY.  |
|   | = AERODROME.   |
|   | = INDUSTRIES.  |
|   | = AGRICULTURE.                                       |

*O. M. S. M.*  
 F.R.I.B.A., A.M.T.R.L.  
 CONSULTING ARCHITECT  
 ORIENTAL BUILDINGS,  
 G.T. MADRAS.

city zones, business, commerce, administration, etc. A green reserve of 500 to 1,000 yards would separate this area from the surrounding residential suburbs, and prevent the bombs aimed at City Zones from harming them. These suburbs would be self-contained, in matters of drainage and water-supply; amenities would be provided suitably. Preferably with a population of 10,000 each, the suburbs will have suitable areas for the residences of working class, middle class and rich class. Pasturage and vegetable gardens, will surround the suburbs and help to improve urban nutrition. The University, however, will be taken out of the busy city zones, as well as the factory and heavy industry. Encircling the city will be an agricultural belt to avoid "digging for victory" during war. The city's requirement in cereals and pulses and other food grains would be obtained from this area. Around this would be village units separated from each other by green belts. They would be attractive enough and draw townsfolk to them, at frequent intervals.

An efficient and economic transport system would help this scheme and connect the city with other important centres of the nation. The road system within would combine the spider web plan and the rectangular scheme to ensure easy and quick movement of people and vehicles in normal and in war conditions and provide sufficient visibility and ventilation and other requirements of civic welfare.

The railway would provide easy access both to the industrial zone and the city and the emergency line will come into use if the main line is destroyed. The aerodrome is so located that the anti-aircraft guns would help the defence of the railway and the industry in addition. In times of war fighter planes and ground defences would dot the encircling pasturage. Playgrounds, wide open spaces, tanks and reservoirs in the green belts and built-up areas will help to defy gas attack and the spread of fire. All zones will possess air raid shelters which would ensure safety to people in emergency and serve as community centres and garages in times of peace. Buildings would be dispersed and carefully located to reduce the chances of direct hits. The design and construction would be improved and they would render, gas and incendiary bombs ineffective and considerably reduce the destructive effects of the high explosive. Although air raids cannot be made impossible they would be rendered uneconomic and not worth the while.



Now it will be clear that the fundamental needs of air defence are zoning and planning and the dispersal of men and buildings. These simple and wholesome principles are not merely effective in times of war but are essential for the welfare of mankind in times of peace. When these principles are properly applied we obtain urban communities invulnerable to air raids. The essential features of such urban communities, in other words, the essentials of air defence are, green belts, parks, vegetation ; a rational road system ; wells, tanks and reservoirs ; carefully laid out residential estates and non-residential zones ; industries and universities, drawn out ; nerve centres located with care and adequate anti-aircraft devices.

It is now realised even in the West that these essential features of air defence should form an integral part of the city of the future, and are recommended for London, Birmingham, Coventry, etc. Describing the essential features which replanned London should have, Mr. A. C. Bossom in June 1942, pointed out that in planning, towns must have breathing-spaces ; architectural treasures such as St. Paul's, Westminster Abbey and the Houses of Parliament must have a fitting setting. London's green belt should be completed and extended and on the inner side a circular perimeter railway built. All main railway lines should terminate here, be connected with the perimeter railway built, and this in turn linked with the centre of the city by the existing under-ground system and surface arteries. Storage depots, fuel dumps, markets, hospitals, playing-fields and market gardens should all border on the green belt and adjacent to the perimeter railway ; our great aerodromes should send planes to all parts of the world and themselves, connect up with the inner metropolis by an adequate air-taxi service. Industrial and residential areas should be set apart from each other. Pendentive towns can arrange for every house to have running water, gas and electricity and in large communities, municipal heating or thermostatic control can be installed at the time of construction. The wealth of the nation is in its men, women and children and everything possible should be done to cater for their health and happiness and to remove all narrowing restrictions. This national investment will, in turn, create greater national assets.

These features are considered essential by the experts entrusted with the re-building of the blitzed cities of England. The Coventry re-development scheme incorporates new roads, central park, garden squares, dispersal etc., the features suggested above.

A system of radial and ring routes has been planned, using existing roads where suitable ; this street lay-out will allow an easy flow of traffic and free the centre from the undesirable heavy goods vehicles which so congest the city streets to-day. One ring road connects the railway station and goods yard with the radial roads, so providing convenient access to all parts of the city for both passenger and goods traffic. The new roads have been planned to accommodate the anticipated increase in future traffic, and the buildings set back well, to provide wide side strips for parking clear of the carriage way, garden strips and tree planning. A new type of shopping centre has been designed, based on the comfort and safety of the shopping public ; the shops front to a series of garden squares with all display windows arcaded, so that one can proceed from one end of the centre to the other entirely under cover. Wheeled traffic is completely excluded from the squares so that the shopper may pass from one shop to another in perfect freedom and accompanying children need not be in danger. Provision will be made for mothers to leave children, while making purchases, in a small play-ground in one of the squares, with an open air cafe adjoining, for use in the summer months. Accommodation for delivery vans and shoppers cars is provided by service roads at the rear of the shops with large car parks adjoining. These are approached from the shopping squares through arcades which also give access to the new Market Hall.

The Cathedral Spire, Holy Trinity Church and St. Mary's Hall form a group worthy of a fine display. With this in mind, an open green has been planned around them, giving views from Broadgate Trinity Street and Pool Meadow.

The congested area with its motley array of shops, factories and slums, is to be cleared to form a central park in which will be sited the Civic Centre.

The park will have a lake, a bandstand and open air theatre, and the central swimming baths, now demolished, will be rebuilt in the park with additional open air swimming facilities for the summer months. The Civic Centre will be a dignified group of buildings forming a front to the Cathedral on the South and East, and will include a Central Library, City Hall, Museum, Police Office and Law Courts, Art School, Art Gallery and Adult Education buildings, a group of cultural buildings sadly lacking in Coventry to-day.

Large areas in the centre of the city are in need of clearing; some of the worst slums imaginable are to be found there, mixed up with factories and scrap dumps in an indescribable state of congestion.

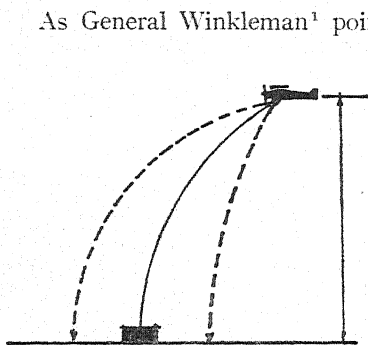
Brazil's newest capital city, Goiania was formally opened early in July 1942, is perhaps the first city to be built on a direct air line instead of on a direct rail line. For purposes of controlling development the plan has been divided into five units.

Units 1 and 2, planned by Correa Lima and including the main plaza capital buildings, business center, etc., have been built and are gradually being filled up. Unit 4 separated from the others by a broad natural greenbelt is made up of part of the nearby old village and of extension of the village along modern lines. This old settlement was filled up and even expanded during construction of the new capital, because the size of the undertaking made the newcomers wonder whether or not the project would ever be finished. Today the city is the pride of all citizens of the state of Goyaz. Unit 5 is a centrally located site as yet unplanned but under study at present by the planning firm of the Coimbra Bueno brothers young engineers, who undertook the courageous job of building the city under a three-year contract.

The city has no fixed population but the present lay-out allows for about 100,000. As new units are needed they will be planned and added on sites separated by the natural greenbelts of the wooded canyons. Goiania has many features of a much older city, features that have been acquired rapidly to fill the needs of the personnel of the state Government which has come in during the several years. The Government buildings are completed; the plazas are planted with gardens and trees; water and electricity are assured by the building of an artificial lake nearby, which is also being used for recreational purposes. Wooded canyons have been saved for public use as green belts and for recreation. The air port is located on high land in a location close to the centre of the city. In all some 3,350 buildings of all types had been completed up to the spring of 1942. Modern Brazilian built buses provide transportation.

## Green Belts

Green belts, parks, playgrounds, and pasturage are needed for separating the different units of the city as well as for encircling in and fulfilling "a military need to enclose and limit the city boundaries and to provide dual encircling road communications with ample scope for the provision of aerodromes, anti-aircraft gun positions, searchlight stations, etc. within the belt area." The parks, playgrounds and open spaces within would help to separate the different aspects of the city and ensure safe distances from likely targets to residential areas. Bombing is a very inaccurate job particularly when bombers are in hurry and thus arises the need for separating residences from important objectives.



The probable range of variation  
in bombing a target

As General Winkleman<sup>1</sup> pointed out while explaining why he abandoned resistance to German invaders, "in a densely populated country like ours, it is difficult to distinguish between military and civilian objectives. Rotterdam has undergone a dire fate which a total war brings to towns and cities. Utrecht and other towns would have undergone the same fate . . . we were unable to defend the country against the invader." Green

belts and parks are eminently suitable and desirable to help zoning a city.

The Official German Wireless broadcast a warning in Flemish to the Belgian population that to attempt to leave their towns and villages at present was tantamount to suicide.

It stated that it was impossible for bombers to distinguish between civilian and military objectives on the roads. The people were told to stay at home, and go to shelters during air raids.

<sup>1</sup> The *Hindu*, 14th May, 1940.

Half a mile width is considered to be the minimum at a radius of five to fifteen miles from the centre, by some. In India a greater width may be allowed to be used as pasturage and an inner belt about half a mile in width is preferable to separate the city zones from the residential areas. In times of peace these would serve a very useful purpose. In the inner green belt could be situated schools, community centres, health clinics, etc. as well as small industries such as laundries, to cater to the needs of the people. The outer belt would help to provide the city with vegetables and dairy products and protective foods. It is now realised that towns of to-morrow should provide for an optimum diet and "food" must be fresh and the citizen should draw the greater part of his protective food from his neighbourhood.<sup>1</sup> The surrounding region should therefore be planned to give the maximum efficiency to an association of recreation and agricultural needs. The Barlow Commission on the Geographical Distribution of the Industrial Population of Great Britain after exhaustive enquiries observe: "it is important to have high cultivation near large centres of population" and agriculture should be considered regionally, and the best possible use should be made of the agricultural land in the region.<sup>2</sup> To secure a proper local balance between rural produce and urban needs, building schemes or industries must be prevented from encroaching on rich agricultural land necessary for fruits and vegetables for city consumption.

The medical profession claim the importance of a close relationship between agriculture and men for healthy living. Healthy soil and healthy people are inter-related. A better agriculture in close connection with a neighbouring city will do far more towards abolishing the disease of tuberculosis than any of well known methods adopted under the guidance of sanatorium experts. An anti-tuberculosis campaign based on agriculture would do untold good in our country.

A belt of agricultural land around the city will help to solve the drainage problem. Urban dietary, the purification of sewage and urban waste, a belt of agricultural land around the city are inter-related.

<sup>1</sup>"Requirements of To-morrow Town," by A. A. Rowse, Principal, School of Planning and Research for National Development, London.

<sup>2</sup>*Vide* extracts from the Report of the Royal Commission on the Geographical Distribution of Industrial Population J.T.P.I., March-April, 1940, pp. 69-85.

A wide green belt is further necessary to maintain the distinction between town and country. Wide country belts should be preserved around all cities and towns and the density of urban areas limited sufficiently to permit of the building of houses with gardens for all who desire them, and also to permit of the provision of playing fields on some accepted standard at reasonable distances from all houses.

The problem of food supply in times of war also necessitates agriculture surrounding the town and immunity to animals is possible only if they are maintained outside cities. The "Grow Your Own Food" campaign should serve as the eye-opener and a green belt of pastures and fields must surround a city both for air security as well as human welfare.

As many large trees as possible should be preserved in these green belts and parks and pasturage and their preservation encouraged to maintain the correct balance between the animal and the vegetable kingdom. They are essential to mitigate the severity of tropical heat and to help camouflaging likely targets. Experts predict that the present rate of consumption of wood would lead to a world timber famine in thirty years. Wars with less planting and more cutting may bring the famine appreciably nearer.<sup>1</sup>

The world is just becoming conscious of the folly of neglecting forestry. Forestry is being carried out in many countries. The "New Deal" in the U. S. A. has kept thousands of men permanently at work planting trees. Britain formulated a forestry policy after the Great War. Even a thick wood adjoining the agricultural belt around urban communities is desirable while trees and parks and pastures are essential.

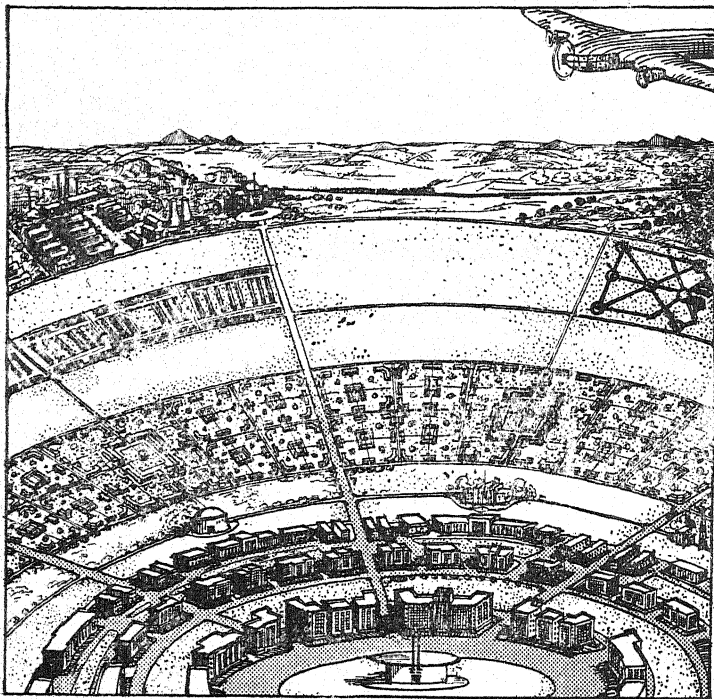
The need for creating a green belt has also been stressed for Birmingham in "When we build again" based upon a very careful survey into the condition of living and working in Birmingham. A tremendous work by twenty-nine experienced social workers, the findings of the investigators as to the more important ways in which rebuilding should be planned points therein "the limitation of any further expansion of Birmingham's present solid city area by enforcing the maintenance of an agricultural or green belt.

<sup>1</sup>Vide D. G. Johnston, "Disappearing Forests," the *Hindu*, 5th May, 1940.

....the development of improved communal and social centres on the new housing estates, with the object of making them living communities."

### Rational Road System

The next requirement is a sound road system. Here again requirements of defence coincide in the main with civil needs of the



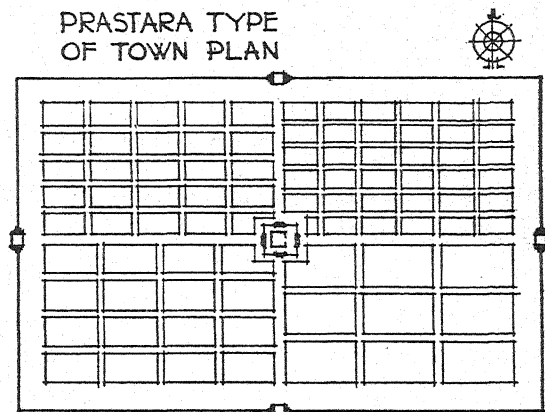
Perspective view of a city which would resist air attacks

population so that the ideal military road system of communication would well serve civil needs in peace time. A number of important planning questions converge around the type of road plan adopted, equally vital to military and civil needs. The military demands require an excellent service of straight broad roads, free of risk from falling debris, linking up the many defensive positions, such positions to be distributed at required intervals, generally through the city area and would have a spread of about 10 to 15 acres each, to give an ample field of vision. Civil requirements dictate that roads

should form a network to divide up property into business units and the main arteries to be adequate for traffic and provided with diagonal connections with subsidiary centres, which should occur about every square mile of city area.

In Britain non-essential traffic has been prohibited during emergency by an order of Government. The Minister for Transport has made an order empowering the Regional Commissioners to prohibit the use of any class of vehicle in their areas. The primary object is to prevent roads urgently required for military movements being blocked by non-essential traffic.

A road system that would fulfil all these various requirements is a suitable combination of the chess-board and spider web patterns. This would give the best road results and at the same time provide an elastic basis for the open spaces of greens and parks. This type of plan would give excellent opportunities for the town lay-out with open squares, parks, gardens, playing fields and at the same time would produce a very effective part of the camouflage of the disposition of city zones and buildings when viewed from the air.



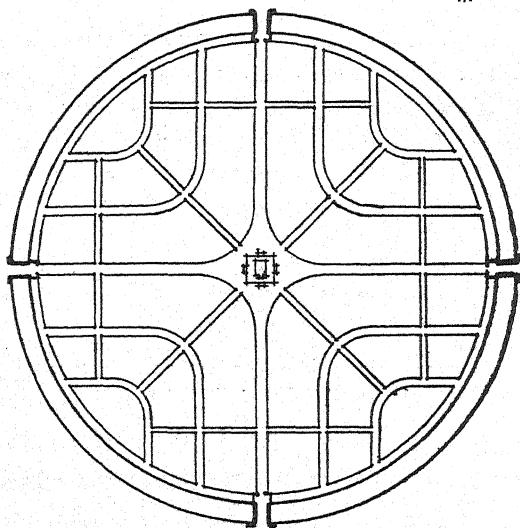
The road system recommended by ancient Indian Town Planners for the Prastara type of towns

For residential areas the road system advocated by the ancient Hindu Town Planners and practised for centuries by the exponents of the Vastu Vidya, seems desirable. Even in countries where the rectangular system proved highly disadvantageous, such a system



is now considered desirable for residential areas. "Internal service roads," observes Clarence Perry of the Russel Sage Foundation, "should, in fact, be aligned deliberately in such a manner as to discourage all but essential domestic traffic from using them."<sup>1</sup> The road system should further divide the surrounding land into areas suitable for residential zones and in a manner permitting their expansion as shown in the diagram on page 226.

### NANDYAVARTA TYPE OF TOWN PLAN.



The road system recommended by ancient Indian Town Planners for the Nandyavarta type of towns

The internal road system would in addition consist of boulevards and parkways not merely along the green belts but also through them reaching the University and Railway Station. Externally arterial roads will connect the city with other important centres of the country, and suitable subsidiary roads would provide access from these to the minor centres.

<sup>1</sup>Clarence Perry, "Housing for the Machine Age" Review in J.T.P.I., Oct., 1939, p. 371.

### **Tanks, Wells and Ponds**

Tanks, ponds, wells and bathing pools suitably located and dispersed all over, form the third requirement. Copious supply of water required to deal with fire and gas attack cannot be had by underground systems liable to destruction by bombs. Even otherwise, they may not cope with the demand. The strain can be met with, only by the former means and water tanks were provided even in London streets. Even medical authorities on A.R.P. have proclaimed this need for European cities and they would be welcome features to tropical towns, in peace and in war.

### **Central Park and City Zones**

The opening up of central areas even in cities not blitzed is now recommended by experts in England. "Cities that had been bombed and those that had escaped alike needed to have their centres opened up," said Prof. Patrick Abercrombie at a meeting organised by the Town and Country Planning Association. "The people who were to live and work in the cities should be our first concern: in the past we had been far too much concerned with industrial prosperity for its own sake, and there had not been nearly enough regard to the health and comfort of human beings. Beauty, health, comfort and convenience had all been sacrificed but they must have their appropriate place now in town planning scheme.

We needed a new conception of urban roads. There should be some for nothing but through traffic, others for main traffic, and a third class solely for access to places of business and private houses.

Business and industries cleared out of the centres of large towns could be best provided for by the redevelopment of existing small towns and the building of entirely new small ones.

Just as in the country, or in a new town, we think of people as living together in communities, so we have got to recover the community feeling in the great city. The smallest unit to plan for is the nursery school, the next the elementary school, which grouped together form the centre of our community. Open spaces and main roads must avoid cutting through these communities. The community idea should be our chief aim in the redevelopment of city centres."

It was bad for a town to be dependent on one industry. The building of new towns being kept comparatively small say from 50,000 to 60,000 population was essential.

A large central park about half a mile in diameter around which the civic buildings, stately edifices, art gallery, museums, temples and the like may find location, is another essential, especially to provide chances of survival to monumental structures. This location would help the enemy who cares to spare them, for they would be away from probable targets. Anti-aircraft guns and balloon barrages could be located here to protect the buildings around, which for obvious reason cannot be made to conform to the principle enunciated for resistance in Chapter IV. All architecture cannot be sacrificed to air defence and only this method can assure chances of survival.

The next requirement is properly located city zones, commerce, administration, trade, banking, insurance, etc. preferably situated around the central area, separated from each other by parks and open spaces and gardens and roads. These activities need proximity and should be kept close to each other but separation is needed to localise the destructive consequences of raids. Drainage and water-mains must be laid deep underground and roads must be wide to check the spread of fire and vibration effect on buildings. The buildings would, of course, be framed structures not more than six-storeys located around garages which would serve as bomb-proof shelters in emergency.

### **Townships and Villages**

Of supreme importance in the planned world of tomorrow is the residential estate planned in the form of townships and villages, self-sufficient and self-reliant in matters of drainage and water-supply and amenities; these to be removed from the city zones by a green belt at least half a mile in width; with community centres convertible into air raid shelters during emergency, forming the foci of each group of residences. Tanks, parks, playgrounds, would intersperse residences. The dwellings must be one or two-storeyed, fire resisting, detached buildings, one for each family with sufficient open space around so as to render the incendiary bomb ineffective, gas concentration impracticable

and the use of the high explosive bomb not worth while. A group of thousand persons should have an air raid shelter and the size of each unit should be about 10,000 population.

A Committee of the National Council of Social Service which has been studying the social factors influencing the size and position of towns, recently recommended that all development of housing policy should be based upon the neighbourhood unit ; and that the size of such a unit should be about two thousand houses and a population of about ten thousand people, a number of such units being grouped to form a town. A neighbourhood unit should contain houses of different types, and should have communal facilities of all sorts. For ordinary social purposes it was much nicer to be able to walk in a few minutes to the individual or group you wished to come in contact with, than to have to take some form of transport ; the neighbourhood unit must therefore be reasonably compact, but it should be large enough to give the variety essential to healthy social life.

According to them the communal facilities required for ten thousand people included a market, covered or in the street, and there should also be restaurants, a cinema, sites for places of worship, a day nursery, a nursery school, elementary school, a branch of a public library, a suitable room for exhibitions, child welfare and other clinics, playing fields and other open spaces. In addition, there might be a swimming bath and public laundry ; finally there must be a community centre, and this should be allowed to grow step by step.

A start ought to be made with a small hall and one or two committee rooms. A town should consist of a number of neighbourhood units, and be large enough to give the residents a variety of occupation, but not so large as to draw people from other areas. The committee recommends fifty thousand as the best number for a town population.

Such a scheme is considered essential to avoid the breakdown of the social and utility services and to check the force " beating down the will to live " produced in large crowded cities like London, Glasgow, Birmingham, Manchester and a dozen other cities of Great Britain. It is feared that unless this is done urban communities will disintegrate.

The peace-time value of such schemes is considered to be immense. In fact sociologists emphasise that such regrouping is needed to prevent the disintegration of urban communities. The model "To-morrow Town" prepared by the School of Planning and National Development exhibited in London in 1940-41 indicated that in the interest of tranquillity and healthful domestic life, "the towns must be planned to contain a series of communities isolated from each by green belts and woodlands which are the natural projection of agriculture into urban life since live-stock should graze these areas. In these belts should be situated the schools, community centres, health clinics, and local administration and public buildings, which serve the community. The foci of each group of residences should be community centres, and the town should be a system of villages co-ordinated into an urban region of approximately 30 square miles, of which the built-up area should occupy a little over three. Each community centre should focus about two thousand families of all classes, and sub-community centres should concentrate the life of an "acquaintance group," of about 2 to 3 hundred persons. A "communal drawing-room" should form the centre of a "friendship group" of about four or five families. This is the number which Sociologists and Psychologists tell us constitutes the intimate circle in which friendship can really grow."

Main shopping and recreation centres would be provided for each group preferably in the middle to facilitate transport and proximity to consumers but their numbers should be restricted to avoid overcompetition. The figures for proportioning of shops to population are sometimes given as 1 to 30 for middle class families of Great Britain, based upon their needs gathered from Family Budget Enquiries and similar investigations will be required before the proportion could be fixed for this country.

In any neighbourhood, the houses people live in, the schools, shops, cinemas, public houses, etc., they use, make up a unit which might contain ten thousand people, or only one or two thousand. The community centre should be located within a well-defined neighbourhood unit, and as near as possible to the focal point of that unit. The planning of the building would depend, first, on the people who were to use it, and secondly on the activities to take

place inside. There was a case for the segregation of the younger people from the adults, because of their noisier activities; but the opinion is gaining ground that adults and juveniles should be together.<sup>1</sup>

Regarding the density and type of dwelling, the Joint Committee of the Medical Colleges of Great Britain recommends (in its evidence to the Royal Commission on the Geographical Distribution of the Industrial Population) "not more than twelve houses should be erected per acre of building site; each family should have a house with a garden; and it is suggested that the scheme of the garden city is a model towards which the location of industry should work."

The City of Coventry Housing Scheme recently planned, supports this view. It consists of some 2,000 houses on various sites and marks a definite development in English planning and constructional standards. Access space is reduced to a minimum, and the spans have been largely standardised and reduced to economical limits to suit the concrete floors and roofs. Walls on the ground and first floors coincide so that there is no eccentric load on the concrete first floor, all loads being taken directly and simply to the ground. The larder walls have been thickened and the size of the larder increased to form an air raid shelter which will take three tier bunks, and additional ventilation is also provided. The plans and photographs illustrate a standard three-bedroom, wide frontage parlour type of house.<sup>2</sup>

A recent survey of the problem of housing has revealed that "the single family dwelling is almost essential for the lower income groups." A single-storeyed residence to accommodate one family is preferable; a large one carefully designed wherein a few families are to be housed might be tolerated. For richer folk two or three storeys is permissible if larger space around is possible. More than this is not advisable for residential purposes.

In the planned world, to which we now look forward, the housing of the people must no longer be left to accident, after all other interests have been served, but be a deliberately determined factor in a methodised system that covers, and provides for, a complete and coherent form of existence. It would imply, for example

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Flotera Spenson; *Vide* "The Builder", May 2, 1941, p. 148.

<sup>2</sup> "The Builder", March 21, 1941, p. 297.

adjustments in roads, railways, goods yards, industrial and commercial locations, etc., the introduction of open spaces where needed; the thinning out of population in congested residential areas which cause psychological or physical detriment or forbid a reasonably close relation between such sources of employment and the homes of those employed. There are great advantages in a man living close to his work as well as his means for recreation.

It should be emphasised that every dwelling house built in an urban area whether by public or private enterprise, should be sited so as to form an integral part of a future complete scheme in which provision for the now recognised educational, health and recreational amenities shall have been made.

Experts have come to the conclusion that a lay-out combining streets with squares, all converging upon a central park area containing the amenities mentioned above, has many advantages over the usual lay-out.

The "square cum-street" lay-out, has the following advantages:-

1. The potential reduction in the incidence of road accidents and casualties (particularly to children). It will be noted that the lay-out automatically eliminates through traffic from purely residential roads. Thus, children may attend school without encountering any vehicles other than those of local tradesmen.
2. Additional interest and social life are promoted by the grouping of houses around squares, as also the provision of amenities where people may meet each other in their leisure hours. (e.g. open-air cafe, swimming bath, sports facilities, etc., are sited in the central park area).
3. The provision of green open squares, makes possible for young children to play within sight of their parents.
4. The pleasanter prospect of houses overlooking such a square compared with those facing one another across a street.
5. The reduction of through traffic delays, due to pedestrian crossings and repairs, by the automatic limitation of such traffic to the inter-district roads. (The only through traffic roads are those around the perimeter of each "town unit", and these would form radial and ring roads.)

6. No house is more than five or ten minutes' walk from either school or bus route, the whole unit being only three-quarters of a mile square.

The data upon which the foregoing scheme has been based are:—

Population of town unit, 12,000 (approximately).

Children of school age, 2,000 (approximately).

Houses and flats, 3,300 (approximately).

These lay-outs are intended only to show the principles of such a scheme. The only reason they are prepared in some detail and to scale is to show that these principles are of practical application, boundaries of properties being held to be adjustable.<sup>1</sup>

Open spaces, playgrounds and parks are absolutely essential if some of the vital human needs must be met within the suburb efficiently and if recreational centres should be provided for small children within a quarter of a mile from their homes. The Barlow Commission emphasises that in the laying out of new towns proper foresight should be exercised to secure adequate open space for the recreational needs of the population. Consideration should also be given to the question of the best possible distribution of the recreational areas; "for instance, five parks or areas of 10 acres each, well distributed may be of much greater utility from the point of view of recreation than a single park or area of 50 acres."

The four elements—work, leisure, housing, and transport—are completely inter-dependent and form the basis of the problem of housing.

Housing proposals should be based on a social structure built up of the following units:—(1) Residential unit of 1,000 people, of which the nursery school and the every-day life of the people form the basis; (2) neighbourhood unit of 6,000 which gave the right number of children in the elementary school age groups (480 from five to ten years and 480 from ten to fifteen) for an efficient school structure; (3) the borough or town unit of 50,000 people—a size which make a full measure of social life an economic possibility; (4) the city district or small city, comprising 2 such borough units grouped together and (5) the city—ten such districts as in (4) forming the city or metropolis of 1,000,000—the figure considered the maximum even for the population of London.

<sup>1</sup> C. W. Boddire, "Plan for Home Lay-Outs," *the Builder*. July 24, 1942, p. 74.



According to Major Maxwell Fry, such a city should have playing fields for schools, 16,000 acres; for factories and offices 30,000; open play space near the home, 15,000; and private gardens allotments and rest areas, 15,000—a total of 76,000 acres. The proposals included the reservation of a ten-mile week-end zone of purely rural country around London and the reorganisation of holiday resorts on sea coasts within fifty miles of London.

All sidings and marshalling yards should be planned at the extremities of the main artery and outside the circular connecting railway, thus freeing large central areas for parkways and redevelopment.<sup>1</sup>

With children up to 14 years of age it is vital that their recreation grounds should be near their homes and the best solution of this difficulty is so far as possible to supply this need in connection with their suburbs. School playgrounds cannot suffice, for proximity is essential. Children use streets as playgrounds and this is a common feature in many urban areas. Playgrounds for smaller children are a park economy and incidentally will help to obtain the correct regional balance of man.

In the residential zone or sectors formed by the green belt and the main roads provision is to be made for the poor, the middle and the rich classes. A composite character is necessary to avoid the dull uniformity that would result from one class of people and from the deadening monotony with which the region would suffer. But a mixed group is possible, only when the entire lay-out is cleverly done and the architecture is properly controlled. Slum areas could be rebuilt in such a manner that people of higher income groups may be perfectly happy in living in such neighbourhoods because the attractive window vistas, the parks and tidy streets will be such as to give the locality a definite tone.

A sound environment is essential for the welfare of the people and such a suburb would make possible this vital requirement. Here it will be possible to view 'man' as part of the region and plan his home, his garden, his leisure and his work accordingly. The importance of this consideration will be realised by the fact that a new council has been formed and conference called on problems of social

<sup>1</sup> *Vide "the Builder"*, April 18, 1941, p. 392.

environment in February 1941 in London.<sup>1</sup> Believing that the welfare of the people depends on sound environment for the individual, "resolved that a Council should be established with the immediate object to promote through research groups and by other means, the planning of social environment on a national scale and to make widely known the need for such planning."

Opinion differs as to the maximum size of the suburb. The estimates made in the United States and by Principal Rowse have been given. To India the criteria selected by Clarence Perry would be suitable. "A residential unit development should provide housing for that population for which one elementary school is ordinarily available within rather less than that distance from any home. One-tenth of this area should be allocated to open space and no through traffic road should traverse the area, although such roads may conveniently bound it."<sup>2</sup>

The plans adopted by the Slough Borough Council recently for a residential estate covering an area of 125 acres of land support this idea; the residences are so laid out that the main road does not pass through them. Only pedestrian traffic is allowed within the built-up area; the open lay-out, siting of the church and school and playground, the provision of trees and shrubs all follow the needs of A.R.P.

With regard to air raid shelters, the principle of providing a strengthened ground floor room, preferably the kitchen, in each house is better than the erection of outside shelters in the back gardens and should prove less costly in the long run if provision is made in the building contracts.<sup>3</sup>

Such residential suburbs are essential to save children from the horrors of air bombardment and would obviate the need for special towns for children, because modern cities are very unsuitable. A project for centralising in Portugal all international efforts to protect children from the consequences of aerial warfare is to be made officially by the Portuguese Government to all belligerent powers. The plan was unofficially put forward recently in the newspaper *Diario Denoticias*, urging the establishment of "safety

<sup>1</sup>Report upon the Conference on Problems of Social Environment and the War, held in the R.I.B.A.; the "Builder", 9-2-1940, p. 162.

<sup>2</sup>Clarence Perry, *Vide ante*.

<sup>3</sup>*Vide* J.T.P.I., Nov.-Dec. 1940, p. 30.

cities " in all countries at war where children would be guaranteed freedom from bombardment. " Let us centralise in Portugal and co-ordinate the magnificent work of the International Red Cross units," wrote the newspaper, " This generation, representing the Europe of to-morrow, cannot be held responsible for the bloody conflict now proceeding in Europe. It is a question of saving from dread and death and inevitable physical debility thousands of children—English, German, French, Italian, Belgian, Dutch, Norwegian and Greek without distinction."

### Pasture and Agriculture

The next requirement is a wide belt of pasturage preferably surrounding the residential areas to feed and house cattle and livestock, catering for the dietary, transport, and other needs of the city. This would eliminate the dangers of mixing cattle shed and residences together and the difficulty of protecting animals in air raids. Aerodromes and anti-aircraft positions would lie in this area and check the raiders in advance and the anti-aircraft shells would do less damage to the city.

The Ministry of Works and Planning in Great Britain have drawn attention by its Circular I to the " importance of agriculture in the life of the Nation ". It is pointed out that many towns are congested and require replanning. The problem is particularly urgent in the case of towns, that have suffered war damage and contain areas which must be reconstructed at the earliest practicable moment. In dealing with the problem of congestion in the centres of towns, the aim should be to secure adequate room for carrying on such activities as have their proper place at the centre. It will inevitably cause some displacement of other activities, for which appropriate provision must accordingly be made elsewhere. As a result neighbouring authorities may be involved and if so, they should be taken into Conference at an early stage.<sup>1</sup>

Six hundred thousand additional acres of wheat were brought under cultivation in Britain in 1942, according to the Minister of Agriculture. Milk production in the first six months of 1942 was ten million gallons above a similar period in the past pre-war year. The women's land army had increased from 15,000 in 1941 to over 40,000 in 1942. Britain today is making the maximum

<sup>1</sup> Ministry of Works and Planning Act, 1942.

use of all agricultural and scientific knowledge and carrying out a great deal of research. The Minister of Agriculture announced that Britain was producing in July 1942, two-thirds of her own food requirements. Lord Woolton's slogan was "Vitamins for Victory."

### Nerve Centres

Carefully located railway stations, aerodromes, nerve centres, etc., are also needed for air defence. Regarding the location of docks, railway termini, factories and other vital points one school of thought, with the idea of reducing vulnerability, would advocate their splitting up into a large number of small groups in different areas in order to reduce the risk of complete disablement. This is desirable to some extent but the loss of economic operations and coherent and well organised defence are disadvantageous. To meet this difficulty it is suggested "to make for halfway provision and provide only dual groupings for vital zones, which has become a common rule of precaution in many spheres tutored by A.R.P." This is not possible for all the items above mentioned. Electric power houses might follow this principle. The railway line is best removed outside the city and connected by an efficient bus system.<sup>1</sup> To the average Indian city it is advantageous to have the station as shown in page 226. For emergency use an alternative line must be provided at a safe distance from the normal one. When the usual line is destroyed the other might be used and temporary platforms and stations could be improvised.<sup>2</sup>

Aerodromes are large and easily recognisable from the air and constitute a very important objective for the raider. They must be equipped with anti-aircraft devices. Lest anti-aircraft shell fragments should injure men and buildings, aerodromes must be located at a safe distance from the residential and business areas. This is also necessary to ensure civic comfort in times of peace. Air-craft noise is especially distracting to those who live in the neighbourhood of aerodromes where people are learning to fly and where a great deal of low flying necessarily takes place. The Gorel Committee which studied this problem therefore consider it advisable that

<sup>1</sup> Provision could be made in the planning of our future cities for the carrying of goods to feed markets and parcel service and refuse disposal by underground system, suitably connected to the main railway system particularly in city zones.

<sup>2</sup> Proximity of railways is dangerous: for instance five hundred houses were destroyed at one stroke when a munitions train was blown up by a British bomber at Le Havre.

Town Planning Schemes should in their very earliest stage make provision for the preservation of aerodrome sites by suitable zoning in order that difficulties that may be met with in the past may not be perpetuated.<sup>1</sup> They also feel that care should be taken to ensure that the future use of lands adjoining intended aerodromes (Service or Civil) should be so restricted as to prevent its development for such building purposes as would render impracticable the enlargement of aerodromes, should need arise and obviate possible complaints of nuisance. A suggestion has been made in America to prevent concentration of air-craft which is very vulnerable. Flight strips properly camouflaged are advised near highways at suitable distances from cities and hangars. Services and repair facilities would not be there and they would be used for landing and for taking off. Locating them in the pasturage surrounding the town would meet these requirements and when sited as shown, will facilitate access to the city and the railway, and also economise the need for anti-aircraft devices by making possible for lesser number of units to safeguard both the railway station, the aerodrome and factory suburbs.

Nerve centres not easily destroyed are essential and their location should facilitate effective camouflaging. The post and telegraph office, the telephone exchange, the wireless station, electric power-houses, etc., as also bomb-proof safe deposit vaults for the use of the public and bomb-proof chambers for preserving government and public records, manuscripts, and rare books which cannot be replaced when once destroyed and bomb-proof ammunition stores must be situated in green belts. Minor industries that cater to the needs of the citizens would also make use of this land if required. Government offices and administrative departments which need not be in the busy zones could also be located here. The trees and vegetation and parks would make identification of targets more difficult and when creepers and plants are grown and allowed to cover these structures, in the fashion of the village homes covered by plants which provide vegetables for the inmates, an effective camouflage would become possible at very little expense.

<sup>1</sup> Report of the Gorel Committee on the Control of Flying, J.T.P.I., p. 212.

### Separation of Industry

The factory and the heavy industry should be located outside the city zone. They are particularly liable to attack and even unsuccessful attempts would amply reward bombing by the casual destruction. Proximity to residences and city zones is conversely disadvantageous to them for this same reason. Separation is dictated by the requirements of air defence as also splitting very large units into smaller ones. Diversification of industries is also essential to infuse strength into civic communities and to prevent the destruction of one city affecting many others. Defence must influence the choice of location and this applies even to consumer goods industries, whose labour supply, raw materials and markets would be very much affected by the large scale evacuation of target areas planned in the event of war. Vulnerability of transport and utility services would also be another serious consideration. The Report of the Regional Development and Location of Industry of the P.E.P. points out:

"In order to make important industrial plants less attractive to the bomb, it is necessary to consider the possibilities not only of local defence but of spacing out buildings on the site, particularly where the risks of fire or explosion are high and of moving production out of the most vulnerable areas." They conclude "that dispersal of works away from target areas is needed, as well as dispersal of sections of works on the site; that new locations should as far as possible be chosen away from obvious landmarks, such as bends of rivers; that the more fragile type of factory construction should be avoided; that duplicate means of transport and raw material supplies should be found and brought into regular use; and that large stocks should be maintained at the points of consumption or procession."<sup>1</sup>

Diversification of production and occupation is necessary both for resistance as well as to obtain a balanced regional development. While it is impracticable to assure that every town should be feasible to secure considerable diversification in every region, a large region composed almost exclusively of cotton towns or coal towns or a city specialising in soaps or steel etc., has been shown to be highly precarious. The objective of policy should be the attainment of maximum earning capacity with minimum risks and liabilities in the long

<sup>1</sup>The Report by the Regional Development and Location of Industry Groups of the P.E.P. J.T.P.I., April 1939, p. 202.

run over a wide area, instead of the pursuit of maximum earning capacity in peak years in towns of narrow areas with high risks and with liabilities left uncovered.

Requirements of peace also dictate that industries must be removed, dispersed and located outside the towns. This is further necessary to facilitate the location of residences for the workers at satisfactory distances from them. Separation will avoid traffic congestion, fatigue to workers as well as the noise and smoke problem to citizens. It is now felt that there is no evidence to show that noise associated with industrial life is diminishing and it is felt that population can be protected in a large measure from its effect by enlightened town planning and decentralisation and that the same is true with regard to smoke. Statistics submitted to the Barlow Commission appear not only to establish a correlation between smoke pollution of the atmosphere and the excess mortality but to show that though the harmful effects of the smoke-producing heavy or textile industries upon health have diminished in England during the last twenty years, those effects are still very potent.

That smoke is dangerous to Air defence has been pointed out by the Executive Committee of the National Smoke Abatement Society.<sup>1</sup>

Under certain atmospheric conditions the palls that form over the towns and drifts across country, would make it more difficult for hostile air-craft to recognise specific objectives, but whatever the loss of visibility might be it would, at least to an equal extent, be a hindrance and source of danger to defending aeroplanes and would create difficulties for the ground defence.

Palls of smoke, forming clouds, or "smudges" of haze on the horizon would frequently make it easier to hostile air-craft to detect the presence of distant towns and industrial works, while the long plumes of smoke frequently seen, even in country districts would quickly betray the presence of isolated factories and works that might otherwise have remained unnoticed.

From time immemorial smoke has been used as a guide, or on the other hand, has betrayed the position of those who wished to be concealed.

<sup>1</sup> Vide J.I.M.Cy.E., Vol. LXVII, No. 4, p. xxi.

Therefore, apart from other cogent reasons for reducing smoke, which do not become less important because of the war, effective measures for the prevention of any smoke that could possibly assist aerial attack should be undertaken.

Smoke abatement is important not only on its own account, but also because it is of direct assistance to measures for coal conservation and fuel economy that are to-day more essential than ever.

Industrial undertakings using solid fuel in boiler plants and for other purposes should, in their own monetary interests as well as in the interests of the nation, secure the minimum of smoke emission as one factor, in the economical running of their plant.

War conditions render more difficult the always complex problem of the abatement of domestic smoke.

Domestic smoke abatement is desirable not only for its own sake, but because it is one factor in the movement towards placing the use of coal on a higher level of economic and scientific utilisation. The demand for smoke abatement stimulates, and at the same time is made practicable by the use of smokeless coals, the smokeless derivatives of coal, and to a partial extent, improved methods for the use of bituminous coal.

Although restrictions upon domestic fuel consumption have for the present been discontinued, it may be necessary for them to be introduced again in the future.

The National Smoke Abatement Society therefore urges the most careful consideration being given to the formulation of a national fuel policy, both on general grounds, and because its own objective of the prevention of atmospheric pollution will best be accomplished by the more rational use of our fuel resources and the elimination of the gross wastages of which smoke is one costly indication.

Smoke is, indeed, a by-product of the technologically primitive phase of our industrial civilisation from which we have not yet emerged.

The social and economic consequences of smoke, serious though they remain, are inevitably subordinated to the infinitely graver social and economic consequences of modern war. It would, therefore, be inappropriate to seek to give them undue prominence



at the present time. The heavy financial cost, the toll upon health and amenity, and the general waste of human labour and effort, nevertheless remain serious and useless burdens upon the community. These burdens are in no way nullified by, but unnecessarily add to, the heavier burdens that now have to be borne.

The abatement of the smoke nuisance should therefore be persisted in, and not lost sight of among the more immediate and for the time being more urgent of our war efforts.

The position is thus summarised: "a policy of decentralisation or dispersal of industry from overcrowded areas is definitely to be recommended on strategical grounds: of this there can be no question, and such a policy coincides with and reinforces the general proposals on similar lines already shown to be desirable in connection with the social and economic disadvantages of concentrations."<sup>1</sup>

The location shown for industry in page 226, simply indicates the need for separation and suitable sites could be selected according to the prevailing wind and site conditions.<sup>2</sup> The question of housing industrial workers should also be considered in choosing the site. It is advisable that their residences should have proximity to the city zones and at the same time separated both from the city and the factory. A green belt of parks and gardens should separate the residences from the factory. From 500 to 1,000 yards might be considered reasonable for its width.

In European countries it is now realised that the industrial worker has to spend a good deal of his time and money on travel to and from work. In England it has been estimated that expenditure on transport by public conveyances within the London Passenger Transport area comes to about 15 pounds per family per annum or about 8 per cent. of the average income of working-class families in London. This great waste will be avoided if industries and houses are suitably grouped in garden suburbs near the large

<sup>1</sup> Report of the Barlow Commission.

<sup>2</sup> The principle of isolation and segregation of industrial residences is now recognised by Government in Great Britain. In dealing with a proposal by Messrs. H. G. Cuff & Sons recently, regarding the development of land zoned for industry for residential purposes, the Ministry in their recommendations suggest that in dealing with plans for the development, they should consider the lay-out from the point of view of A.R.P. "In considering this aspect of the matter the Council came to the conclusion that protection of the civil population from air attack could best be secured by isolating the areas which are most likely to be the object of attack from the air (*viz.*, factories) . . . ("Ministry of Health Appeals." J.T.P.I., November-December, 1939, p. 11).

city. Only one industrial suburb is shown but according to the needs and facilities more might be located at convenient spots. The question of size is difficult to decide. After careful investigation it has been found that industries employing 10,000 workers are justifiable. Expansion of Industry would be possible by total relocation, or by ancillaries located on the main national speedway and the railways.

There is a human side to the problem of the location of population and it would be disastrous if the industrial aspect was the only one considered. In this connection there are two things to be thought of—distance from work, and the actual surroundings of the houses. There are people who advocate the construction of high blocks of flats which would keep people near their work but a happy family life is difficult to maintain under such conditions. If we have to re-model our towns there should be a standard not to be departed from. National planning is necessary if we have to create new towns or expand the small existing ones.

### **Universities, Libraries and Art Galleries**

The University and seats of higher learning must be drawn out of the busy areas of the city, for obvious reasons. From the increasing importance attached to residential universities and colleges it would be evident even for peace time this is necessary. At the same time access to the city should not be cut off. Tranquillity, peace, and healthy atmosphere cannot be obtained if they are situated in the hearts of cities. Other educational and allied institutions might also be similarly located.

Especially Libraries, Museums and Art Galleries should be located away from city zones. This is the lesson Nazi raids over Britain has taught us.

When the Nazis attempted to destroy the city of London by fire in December 1940 by dropping hundreds of incendiary bombs, great damage was done to many historic buildings. The Guildhall was gutted and its library considerably damaged. Many valuable works were lost.

The Royal Empire Society's building in London, which is well-known to visitors all over the world, was severely damaged in an air raid. Practically the entire law library involving between 12,000 and 15,000 books was destroyed. In addition, between 10,000 and 12,000 books were destroyed in the newspaper room including the whole of the British Empire Section.

Other losses involved are a complete section on foreign colonisation as well as the irreplaceable foreign periodicals and official journals of the former German and other colonies. The entire collection of books concerning East Africa and Gibraltar and Malta sections were also lost. Administrative quarters, together with the Indian room, New Zealand room and social rooms were gutted.

In Goldsmith College about 12,000 books were destroyed; the King's College (London) Library; the Inner Temple Library and the Public Libraries of Liverpool, Plymouth and Richmond suffered the same fate.

The Birkbeck College Library has been almost completely destroyed, as have many thousands of books in the National Central Library.

Six million books were destroyed in and around Paternoster Row on December 29, 1940 during the incendiary bomb raid on London. The premises of thirty-seven publishers were damaged or burnt out.

Many burned books will never be reprinted. Of the six million books destroyed in the Paternoster Row, it is said that many thousands of titles will never be reprinted. They are a dead loss to publishers. About half the books destroyed belonged to the famous wholesale house of Simpkin Marshall and the remainder to about a dozen leading publishers.

According to Mr. Stanley Unwin "the scholarly books, for which the demand is limited, it will not pay to reprint. At least a thousand titles in my own list, for example, will go out of print when our limited bound stocks are exhausted. Of the 1,400,000 books destroyed in which I was personally interested, only a small proportion will ever be replaced."

Libraries should therefore be located like Universities in safe places. Their construction and design should be such as to be fire and blast resisting and offering safe places in strong basements for keeping rare manuscripts and micro films of famous books. This would obviate the need for keeping micro-films in mines and tubes deep below, as was done in Great Britain.

Art Galleries and Museums housing the relics of civilization and culture should be similarly located. Recently the value of

dispersal of a country's historic and art treasures was emphasised by the Director-General of Archæology in India. He rightly deplores the accumulation of historic relics, which are irreplaceable, in large museums in cities extremely vulnerable to air attack. He pleads for the retention of the valuable relics in places where they are discovered and suitably arranged which would give a further advantage in that they could be studied in their natural setting.

Such location will make it unnecessary to remove art treasures to other places during emergencies, as has been done in several cities threatened by the risk of air attack. Even if sufficient expense is possible it may prove harmful to shift the relics in many cases. Frequent shifting will be avoided by careful location and design and construction of Art Galleries.

### Size and Shape

The determination of the size of the ideal city, raises difficult issues. Local features and requirements, municipal finance, civic amenities to be provided, etc., would be the governing considerations. Although cities in India cannot compare in size with those in the West, some of them are large enough and have developed the evils gripping European cities. Thirty-eight cities contain over hundred thousand inhabitants and two of them over a million. The Royal Commission on the Geographical Distribution of the Industrial Population of England arrived at the conclusion that it is not practicable to define when a town has reached the maximum stage, either in size or in extent. It is suggested that considerations of space and distance in the case of the larger urban areas, involving problems of transport and traffic congestion, should serve to mark the stage when decentralisation must be contemplated.

Mere size need not in itself be a disadvantage, but it is size without system, chaotic growth without the adoption of proper principles of planning alike for social well-being and for industry, that are to be avoided. But the Commission seem to think that there is something to be said for a city with a million inhabitants. The optimum size for India would be smaller considering the predominance of agriculture in her national economy. Perhaps half a million might be fixed as the limit for population and 50 to 60 square miles as the maximum size. The open pattern for residential suburbs and decentralised supply of essential services would make

possible the management of the city with the normal taxes and income from the city. Expenses now incurred upon curative measures would be avoided and the municipal budget reduced to the smallest dimension.

But cities grow and it is difficult to put a stop at any particular stage even if it were possible to discover what the correct stage is. Three methods have been suggested to control urban expansion.<sup>1</sup> One is an embargo on all building within a fixed distance from existing boundaries, thus providing a green belt from ten to twenty miles in width ; another is a combination of this method with the development of satellite town ; the third is the use of a system of radial development. These are advocated to prevent cities from extending to unwieldy proportions without placing unwholesome restrictions.

The first is drastic and impracticable. The density in urban area would increase by natural expansion and when the district begins to decline in prosperity the trades will be transferred to more free areas, and give rise to other problems. This defect is also present in the second method.

The development of satellite towns would have to be accompanied by some provision for their limitation of size, as otherwise they would become rival centres to the parent city and would create again the same problems of control. Limitation of size, however, would result in the creation of many such areas because of the rapid growth of population, and the multiplication of small satellite towns could hardly be a desirable feature.

A system of spur development defining directions and limits within which urbanisation would be allowed, would provide a solution to the problem which would not suffer from these rather serious defects. The result would be the creation of spurs linked like spokes to the central hub and providing for open country between as a general amenity and for agricultural purposes. Provided that the width of these spurs was limited to approximately two miles the open land need never be more than one mile from any of the newly developed districts, and yet proper development would not be restricted but would only be controlled in direction. Contact between the various areas would be maintained, proper amenities would be preserved, and the products of agriculture would have a

<sup>1</sup>Vide J.T.P.I., February, 1940, p. 41.

market ready to hand. Road communication would be made easier, and could lead directly from centre to centre without restriction. Ring roads could be built more easily, since they would be largely across country without development alongside. Railways could run along the spurs supplying passengers on the route and airports could be sited near to the areas they were designed to serve instead of many miles away, with the consequent loss of much of the time saved by extra speed in travel.

Daughter towns and new settlements should be towns of light and medium industry with some office, business and a fair balance of employment as between these and local services and that its planned maximum population should be 35,000 according to Mr. F. J. Osborne. The composition of the town would vary widely according to local circumstances but very roughly it would have 10,000 houses, something like half its people 17,500 would be occupied and of these 9,000 to 12,000 would be resident industrial workers. The area required for the town itself apart from the agricultural belts would be; about 1,750 to 2,000 acres needed for factories; about 1,250 for houses and the rest for shops, open spaced schools, other public buildings, railways, roads and car parks.

The circular design is therefore helpful to control the size of the cities as well as to facilitate the development of the surrounding country, and even where development alround is not practicable as, for instance, on a coast, the main principles could be followed. The circular plan has been recommended by well-known experts in Town Planning. Sir Raymond Unwin has emphasised the need for maintaining a sound relation<sup>1</sup> between the town and the country, the rural and urban economy and for urban folk having easy access to the extensive open country, and concludes that open green belts should surround urban areas and intersperse residential units of families. Says he: "One type of design which fully meets these conditions, which while facilitating the desirable pattern in detail for each urban unit will provide a plan for expansion, and will allow the units to grow in number, and to be federated into the larger groups demanded for the support of many modern economic and social activities; that form consists essentially in a central unit or town, planned to reach a certain maximum size, within

<sup>1</sup> "Urban Development, the Pattern and the Background."

which the right detail, relations of parts, or the pattern, can be maintained. Further growth of population would be provided for by planning of new units of urban development, each as complete as possible, intended to localise the daily life of the inhabitants, while securing such relation to the parent town as will open its greater central opportunities to all who need them, and secure that the new units are at once linked to the parent unit by easy communications, and separated by a sufficient background of open land to maintain definition and satisfy all the needs already referred to both of the centre and the satellite units as we often call them."

The circular plan is further considered helpful for political progress, and as indispensable for the preservation of democracy and democratic ideals. Perfect equality of situation is secured by settlement in a circle and among the nomadic peoples who, though their numbers might increase, only met periodically for a religious festival or marketing, the circle in which they pitch their tents is easily enlarged. The circular plan appears to be actually the basis of some of the earliest built cities. Other advantages are also claimed for the circular plan. It obviates the popular objection to the perfectly straight facade, and helps to give individual tones to groups. The proper arrangement of a group that is not too large to allow scope for the individual, is the square or crescent of houses representing the original ring settlement.

"Living in such cities we should be, as it were, seated around a table and we should know what that means. People who enjoy life within sight and hearing of one another cannot avoid developing feelings of generosity and kinship."<sup>1</sup>

A city formed by several small and compact communities located around the chief commercial and administrative areas will satisfy the criteria postulated by Aristotle for preserving democracy. According to him democracy could not survive in a city too large for the town crier's voice to be heard throughout it. Anything which guarantees the equal dissemination among all the citizens of the knowledge of events as they happen, and an equal opportunity of the response of each citizen being heard, is a guarantee of democracy, and the ground plan of a city has much to do with this. The formation of that powerful force, public opinion, fails to-day because

<sup>1</sup> J.T.P.I., November-December, 1939, p. 23.

of the geographical isolation of sections of the population in inaccessible parts of the cities or in the country where so many people are refugees from the unbearable towns.

The Greeks planned their cities for democracy and although representation renders restriction of size not essential the principle expounded by Aristotle is valuable. "Equality of situation for all its citizens in regard to the enjoyment of the public amenities and common services which the city exists to supply." This requirement of democracy is also good for defence. A circular city has less perimeter to protect than one of equal area rectangular or square in shape. Active defence would be easier as also protection by land forces of the city's boundary. Economy in anti-aircraft guns and balloon barrages will also be secured. This need cannot be overlooked for reasons already explained but the plans and details are best entrusted to the defence department.

### **Bomb-resisting Cities**

These are the essentials of air defence for modern urban communities. Cities planned and laid upon these principles can be considered safe for all practical purposes. How can a change in the pattern of our existence prevent the enemy from sending bombers to raid. But a careful examination will show that destruction will be reduced to the minimum to city structures and dislocation will be nearly impossible and citizens would be safe. This may not make air raids impossible, but will defeat the purpose of the attempt and render it wasteful and ineffective. These would make raids not worthwhile and ultimately inadvisable. Herein lies the chance for cities and civilization to survive the air menace.

Modern aerial offensives are extremely costly and even the United Nations who have undertaken some remarkably well planned and well executed offensives, believe that in the present state of Allied preparedness, it is not possible to keep them up every night as the Russians want. It has been calculated that the gasoline needed to keep one thousand bombers every night over Germany is about 900 tons. Also between 2,000 to 5,000 tons of bombs have to be used and it requires roughly a hundred men to keep each operating plane in the air. These accessories are being supplied primarily by ships and in so far as there is shipping shortage it



also affects the frequency and weight of an air offensive. The second and more important aspect is the problem of replacement. Not only are planes lost when they are actually over enemy territory but they are damaged during landing, in take-offs and in accidents. If forty bombers out of thousand sent are lost over enemy territory this figure should be doubled to arrive at the total loss. So it means that sustained thousand-bomber raids will result, in a very heavy strain upon the nation's resources.

Even if more powerful weapons are discovered and brought into use cities built as suggested would render possible, effective precautionary measures and precautions would pay. Added resistance could thus be secured and more deadly raids could be defied.

The expense and effort of preserving civilization and culture in its modern abode—uncontrolled agglomeration of men and buildings—is prohibitive. Three hundred and sixty thousand pounds a day are needed for partial evacuation and A.R.P. Organisation for England; not to speak of the nine million pounds expended every day to resist aggression mainly from the air. Is it too much to ask then to spend much less to obtain much more—permanent abodes of peace and security for man and his material culture?

War on the grand scale cost £1,000,000 an hour. The total cost of the Great War, was the astronomical figure of £37,000,000,000. The cost per hour increased as the war progressed. The present war has started on a larger scale of expenditure than the Great War and its ultimate cost per hour will exceed £1,000,000.

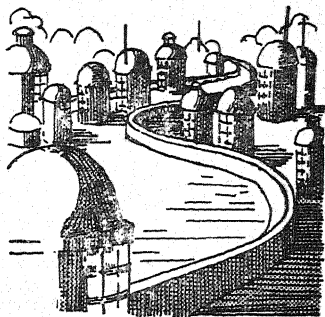
The peace-time advantages alone are sufficient to recommend a change in the pattern of our existence towards the ideal described above. Re-shaping existing cities is worthwhile and a long time view of municipal finance and civic economy would justify and warrant the attempt. The expense needed in times of war for protection makes this change imperative.

This pattern has the advantage of preserving the normal life of the people in healthy surroundings and avoids the difficult solutions suggested by Le-Corbusier and Air-Commodore Charlton to produce bomb-proof cities. According to the former, the city

will be deep underground ; the railways, roads and factories, and power-houses would be out of reach of air bombs ; nay the entire city ! Suggestions have also been put forth to solve the various problems that would arise as a result of locating cities deep underground ; such as lighting, power production, etc.

Air-Commodore Charlton, however, believes that bomb-proof cities overground are possible. His plan consists of fifteen-storeyed dwelling towers, cruciform in shape as to ground plan. Each arm will end in a T-head and similarly crossed twice between head and centre joining. From above they will resemble two equal lengths of codfish backbone laid crosswise. Circular-shaped reservoirs, one to each group of four towers, would provide a never-failing supply of water for fire-fighting purposes whatever damage the mains or pumping stations might suffer. They will look like noughts.

According to Charlton,<sup>1</sup> the dwelling towers would be widely spaced and stand separate, nothing in the shape of built-up streets or walled enclosures which might retard the dispersion of gas, being permitted. The life of the place will go on in these tall erections, each of which will be connected with its neighbours by deeply situated underground passages. The wall would be of concrete, as also the foundations, and an apron of concrete 12 feet thick, would be laid as a wide footing, so that a bomb explosion nearby may not jeopardize the main structure. The flat roof will be of reinforced concrete, 10 feet thick, and the attic storey lumbered up with material, such as cement and compressed wool bags, best calculated to resist the passage of a bomb.



A bomb-proof city with overground dwelling towers

Each edifice would be housing 1,500 persons in the eight storeys beneath the attic, the remaining six, from the ground floor upwards, being dedicated to a different use. The idea is to obtain the maximum possible security at one and the same time against the three forms of aerial bombardment, high explosive, gas, and

<sup>1</sup>L. E. O. Charlton : War over England.

incendiary bombs. The plan of the buildings should be designed to afford a minimum surface on which a bomb might strike, and the constructional material of roof, walls, foundations and footings, to be capable of resisting penetration and impact. The water-reservoirs secure the means of fighting flames if an incendiary should take effect.

As regards gas protection, more necessary than the other two, the inhabitants only dwell in the high-up part of the building, the altitude of which places them out of reach of the low-lying gas clouds. They could breathe pure air at all times, and if necessity compelled them to go down, the masks and special clothing which would be universally provided would protect them during a short absence.

The ground floor, and the five storeys above it are to be adopted for non-living purposes, shops, markets, theatres, cinemas, restaurants, and all other amenities of town life for the use of the public at large in a sense of non-privacy. These lie within the gas zone, it is true, but they could be immediately evacuated in case of alarm and the people could ascend to their upper floors. "In this way herding in subterranean shelters in conditions of fright, artificially ventilated, with the knowledge that gas lay all around outside, the danger of imprisonment from overhead collapse, and all the other serious objections to that form of security is avoided. Private life undergoes a minimum of disturbance and the gas peril ceases to exist."

Such a town of "Noughts and Crosses" is also bomb-proof as regards its ordinary water service, its electricity supply and its telephone system. These are canalised in concrete, underground conduits running side by side simplifying inspection and repair, and permanently laid. Drainage is to be conducted in the same way. Lighting would be diffused from the curb and one main switch could plunge the town in outside darkness. Overhead life will proceed normally in normal times and the life would be happy.

Balloon barrages and machine-guns would guard against low-flying attack; searchlights, obstacles and aerial mines would meet high bombers. In certain special localities these means might be supplemented by smokes and camouflage.

A deep underground city or a "Noughts and Crosses" might become indispensable for a highly industrialised country where scope for lateral expansion is slight, but they are neither necessary nor practicable for a poor and vast agricultural country like India. The open pattern for reasons already explained would obtain as much security from air raids as these cities and would be very much cheaper. And while those patterns may secure air safety they cannot help to achieve the balanced dispersal of population and industry and the correct proportion between urban and rural interests in the nation's social economy. The open pattern described is essential to give the nation the proper physical basis for developing a stable and healthy civilisation. The Memorandum of Thomas Adams on "Town and Country Planning during the War" circulated for the information of planning authorities in England and Wales lays special emphasis on the balanced development of the nation as a whole. "What is most vital is that the nation should be planned in its units of urban and rural areas in order to promote most efficiently the wealth-making activities of its population and to provide them with higher standards of living and working conditions."

### **Town Planning and Air Defence**

Planning in its most comprehensive sense alone can thus obtain air security for India by re-grouping and locating her population and industry in towns and villages in suitable proportion. That planning is necessary to meet the air danger, and re-planning existing cities on proper lines alone can help the survival of cities and civilisation is now recognized by leading authorities and governments of Europe.<sup>1</sup> Legislation with this object in view is gradually developing. In France the height of buildings is subject to regulation with reference to the width of the road. According to an order issued in 1938 in Poland "all new urban developments must be planned in sections of irregular form. Roads and streets must be straight and should run in the direction of prevailing wind, leaving at least 60 yards between the fronts of buildings on main thoroughfares."

Forty-five per cent. of the area developed must be left as open space used either as recreation grounds, aerodromes or for agriculture. Industrial districts must be laid out in small widely separated

<sup>1</sup> Sir Alexander Rouse: "Town Planning in Relation to Defence." J.T.P.I., December, 1938, pp. 39-46.

areas and the ratio of industrial districts to the whole town should not exceed 1:7.

Modern dwelling house of over 2,500 cubic metres must have an air raid shelter for the residents. The shelter must have two entrances, one of it must be beyond the area which would be covered if the building were to collapse.

Closely built-up areas in existing large towns must be broken up by the introduction of open spaces.

In Turkey also precautions for resisting air attacks have been incorporated into the country's town planning laws. The Turkish Town Planning Law and Civil Defence Act states that methods of passive defence must be applied in town planning and the determination of the sites of important buildings. It lays down among other things<sup>1</sup> :—

1. In defence areas the proportion of a site occupied by dwellings must not exceed 30 per cent. of the total.

2. There shall be at least 20 metres (65 feet 6 inches) between each masonry-built building and 30 metres (98 feet 4 inches) between wood buildings.

3. New buildings must have as few storeys as possible.

4. Height of buildings on either side must not exceed 75 per cent. of the distance between the buildings facing each other.

5. Detached buildings are to be preferred to attached and continuous.

6. In districts where there are many important buildings the roads should be open as far as possible in the direction of the prevailing winds.

7. When new constructions are made in towns, villages and industrial centres the local authority must see that the buildings are placed so as to be as inconspicuous as possible and so that the fullest possible advantage is taken of the lie of land and the trees.

In the planning of large and important public and private buildings it must be assured

1. that buildings of this kind are not grouped.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide J.T.P.I., September–October, 1940, p. 200.*

2. that except where they cannot be spaced so widely there must be at least 100 metres (328 feet) between each.
3. that they are as far removed as possible from places such as military posts, railway stations and aerodromes which may be the subject of bombardment.

Telephone, electricity and gas works and exchanges should, if time allows and if it is possible otherwise, be built underground. If it is not possible they must be concealed as far as possible and secondary supplies provided to assure the services in time of need.

In plans for the restoration or enlargement or improvement of towns and villages future population density must not exceed an average of 154 persons per hectare (62 per acre) distributed in each district according to the needs of passive defence.

The Town Planning laws of Germany go further and regulate the distribution of industrial production, choice of sites, size of plants and their lay-out, as well as works operations and supplies. "Under the town planning regulations of the Reich and Federal States, the construction of new plant or extension or alterations must be so carried out as to achieve a marked decrease in the vulnerability of German industry to air attack, with a view to re-distribution of industry so that finally industrial production will be spread more or less evenly over the whole country." The choice of site should, in the interest of air protection, be not conspicuous from the air and workers' houses should also be kept well away from the works. To minimise the destruction to productive plant, measures are in force to deal with the size, position, and nature and method of operation of industrial plants. From this point of view many small buildings irregularly scattered over the site are preferable to a few large ones in ordered rows, and it will be the works engineer's task to satisfy in his lay-out both the economic necessities of the plant and air protection requirements.

To restrict the effect of an air raid to a part instead of the whole of the plant, the various buildings comprising the plant should be separated from one another so as to segregate the works' processes to some extent, and in large works technical and administrative departments are recommended to be outside danger zone of the

plant. The provision for an alternative supply of electricity, gas, and water is specially stressed. A sufficient large strip of unbuilt land must be left between the works and the workers' houses and they must be laid out some distance away from the works. Shelters for small houses should be constructed so as to serve as storage cellars during peace times and must be built with solid ceiling, the entrance being rendered splinter and gas-proof by such makeshifts as sandbags, sand-boxes, stone packing and the like. If the houses are flats likely to be bombed the shelter must be in conformity to official regulations.

Reliance is placed on dispersal. It is aimed at extending Berlin over twice its present area without increasing its population. No house would be allowed with more than six floors.

Researches made in Germany regarding the relation of Town Planning "to the total economical life of the nation in its future form under State control" are considerable. And the investigation of Stadtrat Niemeyer, President of the German Academy for Town Planning, Reich and Regional Planning, pays attention to the question "How does protection against air attack affect the position and a territorial distribution of Industry and Commerce, expected?"

Even in Great Britain considerations of Air Defence are influencing Town Planning. The Civil Defence Act has made the following important additions to the Town and Country Planning Act, 1932.

There shall be included among the general objects for which a scheme may be made under the Town and Country Planning Act, 1932, the object of rendering the whole or any part of the area to which the scheme applies less vulnerable to air raids, and that Act shall have effect accordingly as if the said object were included among the objects enumerated in Section 1 thereof.

In future, therefore, the machinery of planning schemes will be available as a means of rendering an area less vulnerable to air raid. The Town Planning Institute after careful consideration finds in general that it could be readily adopted to deal with this new objective and the amendments they propose have the effect of making it certain that the object of safety from attack from the air shall be taken into consideration in all appropriate cases. They also suggest appropriate dimensions and proportions with regard to

space around buildings, maximum proportion of site to be covered, the height of buildings and the width of protective buffers of open space, etc.<sup>1</sup>

The requirements of air defence and principles of Town Planning agree on many fundamentals. As pointed out by the Council, "there is a considerable measure of agreement between the generally accepted principles of planning and those of A.R.P. inasmuch as large concentration of population or industries and crowded developments are bad from both points of view." Although the whole life of a civilised community cannot be planned on a war basis the eventuality must be taken into consideration and planning our requirements should be adopted to minimise to the maximum extent, the dangers of air attacks.

The fundamental principle governing A.R.P. in relation to Town and Country Planning is dispersion, and this is possible if the groups are kept relatively small and have an open pattern.

Secondly, the road system should consist of through routes clear of building development, and commodious in centres of population.

The lay-out of administrative buildings, national and local, should be spaced apart, decentralisation should be encouraged and provision made for suitably placed alternative accommodation to be available in case of need. While their grouping necessarily increases vulnerability from attack from the air, the practical and social advantages of grouping and zoning are predominant.

The single family house at a density not exceeding twelve houses per acre is considered the best form of development. Large multi-family dwellings are therefore undesirable and where indispensable, should be widely spaced and provided with air raid shelters. Their safety is enhanced by interspersing small parks, playing fields, and allotments.

A.R.P. demands that industries must be widely dispersed, but experience shows that a certain amount of grouping is essential regarding communications, homes, power services, raw materials, markets and ancillary industries.

<sup>1</sup>Memorandum of the Town Planning Institute on "A.R.P. and Town Planning in Great Britain."



"Large concentrations of industries should be avoided and in all cases they should be well separated from residential areas by a belt of open space. Industrial areas and warehouse areas should be laid out on spacious lines so that the buildings can be spaced wide apart. A spacious form of lay-out will minimise the risk of direct hits, will provide fire breaks, and will afford facilities for the digging of shelter trenches for the employees."

"The relation between home and place of work is of considerable importance as ease and comfort of communication is desirable both in peace and war. A relatively close relationship separated only by a buffer of parks affords an ideal solution as it should meet the needs of convenience, safety, recreation and amenity."

Ribbon development is undesirable in peace times but as it makes easily distinguishable mark from the air, it is harmful for air defence. Developments in small groups related to but not lining main roads, railways, rivers and canals should be preferred.

Whenever opportunities occur towns must be re-planned on these lines to encourage decongestion and dispersal; the development of holiday camps is also emphasised as useful for children as well as for adults.

How these general principles should be applied? For instance an adequate area of open land within industrial and residential areas is always desirable but is of particular importance in relation to safety from air raids. Warehouses storing essential commodities are liable to attack and need separation from residential areas. On the question of the width of the buffer it is felt that "the appropriate width of the buffer will vary according to such circumstances as the configuration of the ground, and whether industries or warehouses are likely to form a particular object of attack (*e.g.*, electric power stations, gas-works, docks and warehouses, waterworks, aerodromes, armament works, food stores), and whether the industries themselves are likely to spread havoc if hit (*e.g.*, explosive factories, oil refineries or stores, varnish works, timber yards). It is suggested that the width of the belt might vary from 100 to 400 yards according to circumstances including adequacy in relation to appropriate peace-time use.

Possible peace-time uses for such buffers would be parks, playing fields, allotments, private open spaces, and possibly cemeteries.

The Town Planning Committee lays emphasis on space about buildings and suggest modifications to existing Clause 42 of the Town Planning Regulations of Great Britain in view of the importance of open pattern of development and of a spacious form of lay-out, for industrial and warehouse areas. The following maximum is suggested for the proportion of site which may be occupied by buildings.

Dwelling houses, residential buildings, other than blocks of flats, places of instruction and institutions	..	..	..	1/4
Blocks of flats	..	..	..	1/6
Other buildings	..	..	..	1/3

The breaks between buildings are also emphasised. They suggest alterations in accordance with the requirements given in A.R.P. Handbook No. 9. The safe fire break (distance between buildings) in respect of buildings of low fire risk is given as 30 feet. They suggest a minimum standard of 30 feet should be applied (15 feet as between the building and the boundary). Regarding Industrial buildings they consider 40 feet suggested by A.R.P. Handbook No. 9, necessary.

The possibility of collapse and debris falling off to other buildings or blocking roads or foot-paths is a fresh consideration, with regard to the height of the buildings. Its limitation is necessary to keep the roads free from being blocked. Having regard to A.R.P. they recommend that one angle only, namely, 45 degrees should be specified as a general guide.

The siting of buildings is also emphasised to enable the development of adjoining estates to be properly related and access to be safeguarded. Finally they remind us that authorities should bear in mind the value of trees as a screen from observation from the air. The preservation of trees becomes a question of outstanding importance.

The principles of air defence lead to garden city types—a federation of residential suburbs with a suitable proportion of non-residential zones. Lateral expansion is essential to re-shape existing cities to conform to this ideal. This is not difficult in our country where most large cities are surrounded by level open country. A series of satellite towns would serve as district head-

quarters, marketing and industrial centres, and other important towns. Factory centres would do well to retain more the complexion of garden cities. A "hundred small towns" ideal could be achieved which would restore the lost balance between town and country as well as the homogeneous distribution of towns and villages. In making India proof to the air danger, her industries and factories would be suitably dispersed and located, not merely with a view to ports and capitals but also their efficient distribution over the country.

Thus a network of air raid proof provincial and state capitals surrounded by suburbs and connected with garden cities, satellite towns and industrial centres, holiday resorts, places of pilgrimage, etc., serving as the fountain-heads of rural betterment, and with the seven hundred thousand villages suitably grouped forming the back-ground, would obtain air security for India. The importance of passive defence cannot be exaggerated in this vast country of poor finances, both central and provincial. To defend a territory less than a tenth of ours in extent it costs Great Britain ten crores every day.<sup>1</sup> When sixty crores a year upon defence is considered an intolerable burden upon the poor peasants of India, can our country bear to spend hundred crores a day?

### Reconstruction and National Planning

Attention is now being drawn in England by experts to 'the geographical or aerial aspect of the structure of community life' in the interest of security and safety in peace and war. Planning should provide scope for satisfying the needs of the community and every individual who is a member. This is possible only if the problem is approached on lines disclosed by the Science of Human Ecology viewing man as part of his environment.<sup>2</sup> Robert E. Dickinson, emphasising this need for the ecological approach to

<sup>1</sup>The amount of further expense modern cities will entail will become apparent when we take into consideration compensation for citizens for death and injury. The whole adult population of the United Kingdom is covered by a scheme of compensation for injury or death due to enemy action. The scheme announced by Sir Kingsley Wood, Chancellor of the Exchequer, provides for weekly payments, varying between 35 shillings and seven shillings according to the category of the person injured. Pensions will be payable in cases of long-term disablement, while the widow of a civilian worker whose death was due to enemy action may receive 50 shillings weekly for the first ten weeks following her husband's death.

<sup>2</sup>Robert E. Dickinson: "National Planning and the Social Sciences," J.T.P.L. May-June, 1941, pp. 114-119.

'physical reconstruction' and town and country planning, observes that it is a task for the social sciences to establish the nature of the functions of village and town in selected regions and to determine the extent of the areas served by them.

This is the geographical aspect of the background of the social and economic structure of society upon which nation-wide plans for the future must be based. Rural settlement is grouped in two forms or variants of them, namely, the compact village or isolated farmstead. The need for regrouping the rural population, and the bases upon which it should be attempted have been given singularly little serious attention. The unit rural community area should be large enough to support a church, a school, village clubs, and the ordinary retail services. A minimum population figure may be arrived at by considering the requirements of these services, and it is suggested in common with proposals by others. In fact this kind of proposed rational arrangement exists in the grouping of the urban village and the several parishes which it serves. These urban villages, together with the towns, which clearly carry on the same local services, are spaced at intervals of some four to six miles, with service radii of some two to three miles. The town is a compact settlement, which is engaged primarily in non-agricultural occupations.

Dispersal of population from the great cities thus calls in a large measure for the creation of new towns.

Professor Adshead makes it abundantly clear in his recent book "A New England" that important legislative changes must take place before we can undertake the rebuilding of Britain in a grand manner or indeed with due regard to health and convenience.

An especially interesting part of his scheme is that in which he advocates the building of fifty new towns just for a start and indicates the actual sites in which they might be placed. Half the proposed towns would be located within a distance of 80 miles of London.<sup>1</sup>

In planning, the aim should be a balanced community life and the close integration of the life of the town with that of the surrounding countryside. If attacked on a grand scale, scores of such settlements will have to be created. Entirely new towns, on

<sup>1</sup>"The Builder," May 22, 1942, p. 453.

virgin land, will not only eat up agricultural land but they must be imposed upon the existing warp and woof of service relations, which have their nuclei in the existing towns and would lack the historical and social tradition of the latter. All these defects, for example, must be set against the advantages of life in Welwyn Garden City.

The optimum limit of the smaller town cannot be clearly stated. The population should not exceed the limit beyond which the consciousness of social unity breaks down, but should be large enough to maintain efficient communal services, *i.e.*, about 25,000 inhabitants. Such regions with their capital cities actually exist as the basis of the present geographical structure of our society, as real units of economic life and orientation.

With the built-up area of the urban complex proper, the specialisation of function is reflected in the geographical segregation of distinct socio-economic areas, in which common social conditions form the framework of the social behaviour of the individual. This is not a question of broad zoning in the sense of the town planner, industrial, commercial and residential, but of detailed analysis of land use, population density, age composition, family budgets, mobility, etc., all of which data can and should be mapped so as to determine both the character and extent of the socio-economic areas.

The lay-out of new dwellings, be they houses or flats, must be conditioned by the provision of community services. Services in the heart of the cities, like hospitals and churches, built at a time when their clientele was near them, are now wrongly placed from the standpoint of efficiency and service and should be shifted to the city outskirts. Community services must be provided for existing suburban estates, and new planned areas in the city centres should be so designed as to cater fully for needs.

The unit area of urban life must permit the growth of the community sense which exists in the slums. The size of this planned "city village" should be no larger than the rural unit, *i.e.*, about 1,500 to 2,000 inhabitants, or about 400 to 500 separate dwellings. "We want no more unplanned (with no apologies to the town-planner) Dagentham estates or Kensington flats."

It would appear then that the analysis of the geographical structure of society, in town and country, with respect to the character and extent of the existing service and community areas, and to the minimum needs of the different types of services, be they social, commercial, cultural or administrative, affords a sound and essential basis for the planning of communities in the city, the town and the country-side. This, however, is not a problem for the geographer alone, nor for the economist, nor for the sociologist. It is a problem which demands a discipline of its own, to which all the social sciences will make their contribution and is likely to be one of the most fruitful fields of research in the social sciences in the ensuing years.

The problem has been grasped in the United States, and more recently in Germany. In the former, where it is known as Human Ecology, there is already a large body of research to its credit. The present conflict has turned the attention of scientists as in the last war to the problems of internal reconstruction, and they are, in large measure, now facing the same unsolved problems. Today one hears on all hands of planning and the launching of research on economic and social surveys, which shall serve as a basis of such planning. 'In true British tradition, the problem is not looked at as a whole and attacked systematically; but is approached empirically, from special points of view in connection with some particular problem.' It is absolutely essential in the interests of efficiency, speed and scholarship, that the various points of view build up a common basis of attack and objective.

Herein lies the opportunity and the duty of the social sciences, to elaborate principles and standards for the future planning of settlement on the land and in the towns, and for the re-organisation of the local government areas.

Already there is great popular interest in England, in spite of war difficulties in post-war reconstruction and Lord Reith, former Minister for Works and Buildings, lost no time in getting down to his formidable task. Twenty-one distinguished persons were selected to form his Consultative Panel on Physical Planning. They represent a wide variety of interests, and it is gratifying to note that the importance of architecture and town and country planning in the work of national reconstruction is recognised by the inclusion of no fewer than eleven direct or indirect representatives.

The task put before Lord Reith is (1) to study comprehensively the whole tangled web of the country's planning activities, with their different administrative controls; and (2) to draw up for the Cabinet a scheme for the constitution of some central authority to be entrusted with the production of a broad national plan for post-war Britain.

Test surveys of the Coventry, Birmingham and Bristol areas have been undertaken and the local authorities have been told to plan for reconstruction "boldly and comprehensively."

A Committee (presided over by Mr. Justice Uthwatt) on Compensation and Betterment reported upon these two complicated problems.

An interdepartmental committee was appointed in the hope of adjusting the claims of the various separate authorities concerned with the replanning of the country.

A consultative Panel has been set up and staff experts appointed.

However busy they are with building for the war there is time to spare for that which constitute that happy moral responsibility to consider and report on methods and machinery for reconstruction.

The proposal for planned rebuilding of towns which have suffered heavily from air raids has been announced by the Chairman of the War Damage Commission, Col. Trustram Eve. In some sixteen cities, including London, Birmingham, Coventry, Liverpool, Plymouth and Sheffield, the power given by Parliament to prohibit rebuilding except with the permission of the authorities has been exercised with the result that no rebuilding could take place until those concerned with good planning had completed their scheme. Comprehensive legislation dealing with the whole subject of planning is contemplated.

The fundamental requisite of Planning for living is to decide the question of land. The civic heads of blitzed cities of Birmingham, Glasgow, Bristol, Plymouth, Portsmouth, York, Coventry and Exeter in interviews published in a Sunday's "Observer" were clear and emphatic that only through the municipal ownership of urban land would it be possible for them to do an efficient, gracious and creditable replanning and reconstruction job.

To facilitate rebuilding a less vulnerable capital, the City Corporation of London considered the question of purchasing the land within its area. The *Daily Herald* has given out a figure of two hundred million pounds to secure municipal ownership, and London will be the first city in Britain to acquire such public ownership. The ratable value is to be added at £8,300,000 per square mile which brings the capital site value to something like 220 million pounds.

It is interesting to note that expert opinion in Great Britain is tending towards the 'open pattern' even for a city like London.

"The London Problem," according to Major Maxwell Fry, "is concentrated in the provision of good housing, opportunities for adequate leisure and healthy work places, these three elements being linked by efficient transport services. These four elements, work, leisure, housing and transport—are completely inter-dependent and form the basis of the problem."<sup>1</sup>

According to him housing proposals should be based on a social structure built up of the following units:—(1) Residential units of 1,000 people, of which the nursery school and the every-day life of the people form the basis; (2) neighbourhood unit of 6,000, which give the right number of children in the elementary school age groups (480 from 5–10 years and 480 from 10–15) for an efficient school structure; (3) the borough or town unit of 50,000 people—a size which make a full measure of social life an economic possibility; (4) the city district or small city, comprising twelve such borough units grouped together and (5) the city—ten such districts as in (4) forming the city or metropolis of 10,000,000—a figure to which every effort should be made to restrict the present population of London.

Playing fields for schools, 16,000 acres; for factories and offices, 30,000; open play space near the home, 15,000; and private gardens, allotments and rest areas, 15,000—a total of 76,000 acres. The proposals included the reservation of a ten-mile week-end zone of purely rural country around London and the reorganisation of holiday resorts on sea coasts within 50 miles of London.

All sidings and marshalling yards would be planned at the extremities of this main artery and outside the circular connecting railway, thus freeing large central areas for parkways and redevelopment.

<sup>1</sup>Vide the "Builder", April 18, 1941, p. 392.



The city districts are to have each a goods station at the extremity of the transport lines, and these would be linked by a circular rail and road service to the industrial zones so that goods distribution is segregated from passenger transport. Local traffic is served by roads running between city districts crossing the pendulum traffic lines by flyovers.

In a series of three articles written by him to the "Star" on replanning London, Mr. Thomas Sharp, after advocating the demolition of much that German airman leave standing, feels that the London of the future should have a central city of three million inhabitants, surrounded by satellite towns with population of a lakh each, the whole interspersed and repeated by wedges and rings of open land and held together by a series of planned communications free from stopping traffic. "The new London must be based on life, not on scientific theories." "The City Beautiful is an expression wider than bricks and mortar, buildings or elevations; relates far more to the lives of the people than to external appearances, symmetry or design."

It should be good for Town Planners to remember that in the generation that followed the beginning of modern town planning in 1909, and especially in the interval between the two German wars, England suffered a greater destruction of the beauty of town and country at a quicker rate than had ever been experienced anywhere in time of peace; and that, with notable exceptions, the destruction was nowhere greater than in the areas that were town planned.

In no country in the world is wise planning considered more important than in England. What have been the main faults in their town and country planning hitherto? The most important fault is, perhaps this: that such planning has too often been thought of merely in the form of maps showing the lines of roads and indicating zones and land uses. As long as it is so conceived, town planning will certainly fail. Its success will not be judged by the pattern of the ground plan as seen by someone in a captive balloon some miles up. It will be judged by what it looks like to the inhabitant of the completed town or village. We are concerned, not with maps in the flat, but with homes and cities, towns and villages, construction in

three dimensions, civic design. Without architecture, town planning is useless or even mischievous. Town planners must always remember this : while it is possible for a ground plan to be so bad as to render good buildings impossible, it cannot, however good it is, render good building certain. That will depend on the architect.

Unfortunately there is the most widespread and disastrous ignorance of what architecture means.

No mistake in aesthetics has produced a more terrible result in our towns and villages than the false idea that uniformity produces monotony.

Two things are necessary for a civilised life : a good town and good country. Nothing is easier than to destroy both town and country as has been done for a generation, and to create in their place a universal suburbia without the charm of either town or country or any charm at all.

There is a real danger of destroying both town and country by slavish adherence to, and misunderstanding of formulae for density of building. " So many houses to the acre " may be right as an indication of the amount of open space required in a district as a whole. It is disastrously wrong, if it is interpreted as a direction how to build, with a suggestion that each house or each group of houses should be physically separated from its neighbours and that we should never have continuous streets or crescents or squares, though built-up squares are, perhaps, the greatest contribution.

Transport is a good servant but a bad master. For some years we seemed to accept the barbarous doctrine that it was more important to travel from A to B quickly than that either A or B or the places between them should be fit to live in.

The evil of ribbon building was universally recognised by the intelligent, and it was dealt with in every way except the right way. The right way, of course, was to stop it. It was never stopped.

How are the public to be interested in architecture? Only by introducing the subject into the schools by getting children to take some interest in planning.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> J.T.P.I., July-Aug. 1942, p. 199.

The need for investigation and study and research to formulate a national plan on the lines of which reconstruction should proceed has now been emphasized by technical institutions dealing with planning and architecture in the west. The R.I.B.A. Reconstruction Committee, in their interim report, lays special stress upon "the immense tasks of study, analysis and research which must be undertaken preparatory to the definition of a national plan. The first task of all concerned in the rehabilitation of a country is to come to clear ideas of how research can be organised. Anything less than the most thorough, exact and expert research will not suffice if national planning is to have a secure foundation and if it is to be alive."

Proposal for building actually an experimental town has also been made. It is suggested that the Government should build an experimental town now on a freehold site purchased outright by the State, and designed on modern town planning principles, the size of the town to be statutory, and not to exceed, say, 100,000 inhabitants. They are spending over ten million pounds per day on the war, so for less than one week's expenditure could build this ideal town and show what can be done. From this experiment many useful lessons could be learnt for future guidance, and the work accomplished would be one of the finest investments in the world. An air survey would be useful, for many a building project has been ruined by badly selected bricks, timber, paint, etc. A large scale model would show all the contours, natural features, and buildings of archæological interest to be preserved. Such a scheme might take four or five years\* to build, and perhaps longer finally to complete, but would remain for ever under architectural control, and all new buildings would conform to the general plan.

There must be no standardisation in design, but there can be no objection to standardising bricks, tiles, drain-pipes, and so forth. Only thus can a comprehensive plan which will satisfy all, could be built.

The task of distributing the population and industry of a country on a balanced spatial basis, wherein the proper relationship would be maintained between the different units, social, economic and geographical, composing the nation, cannot be achieved without a national organisation or a National Planning Commission, solely entrusted with the task of formulating plans and programmes for

the permanent redistribution of population and industry and the reshaping of cities, towns and villages with a view to make India invulnerable to air raids. Our conception of town and country planning should change fundamentally to a new sense of values.<sup>1</sup>

Without a plan for the whole nation, no lasting betterment is possible and no plan will succeed which does not have the welfare of the people as the highest goal and which forgets that man is essentially a "*human and social being*."

The Royal Commission says in its Report on the Distribution of the Industrial Population of Great Britain, rightly: "A National Plan, conceived as a whole, would be likely to differ substantially from a National Plan constructed by merely piecing together the local and regional plans. The local and national interests may easily clash." This idea is finding increasing agreement, so that, but for a few exceptions, the urgent need for a nationally-conceived plan is meeting with general approval to-day.

In the course of the last few years, certain broad principles have emerged from general discussion and from an objective survey of the situation with regard to town and country planning. The most firmly established of these principles is the decentralisation of the big urban conglomerations. Various remedies have been suggested. Most of these are, however, restricted to new settlements of a merely urban or semi-urban character.

These will obviously combine industrial and agricultural work so that the countryman of tomorrow will be a part-time worker in both agriculture and industry.

The chief task before us is the abolition of the old antagonism between town and country through a new equilibrium between them; true planning is positive and comprehensive. Rightly understood it should lead to the further development of the individual and of his enterprise. Again, conscious "planning" is possible only on a national scale, for only then can each area of the country be brought up to its highest capacity and the systematic

<sup>1</sup> "We could talk across continents and oceans, install television sets, travel through the air and beneath the sea; with X-rays we could photograph our insides; yet we could not build our enormous cities so that we could afford a little space where children could play in safety." (Prof. C. E. M. Joad: "Civilization after the War," the "Builder", Dec. 5, 1941, p. 510.)

<sup>2</sup> Vide J.T.P.I., March-April, 1941, p. 76.

redistribution of population and settlement be assured. Likewise, flexibility can only be achieved through the co-ordination of the parts on the basis of the larger unit, *i.e.*, national. Flexibility of the social economic structure helps to avoid political difficulties and preserves the essential adaptability of the population as well as of industry and agriculture. This flexibility can only be successful if the plan, in the wide framework of which the future evolution will develop, takes for its goal :

1. A new unity of the structure of the whole population and not just a segregation of its various categories.
2. Freedom from economic crises as far as possible.
3. As a necessary pre-requisite of the realisation of both these aims, a redistribution of the population throughout the country and not only the possible loosening up of a few regions within their own boundaries.

The starting point of reconstruction should be the needs of the population.

"The extraordinary evolution of technique has failed hitherto to take adequately into account the social problem. We have marvelled at the wonders of technique, but have not recognised that these wonders were enslaving men. Let us not deceive ourselves. The change would be enormous if we really tried to get to the root. It would mean the end of "economic man" and the emergence of a new social relationship. The motto of the National Plan should be 'Social Problems first'."

A thorough investigation of the population problem is therefore an essential part of the National Plan, not only in regard to the numbers and age composition, but also in regard to the changes in the distribution of the population itself.

Though some regions may be specialised, in general this is not at all identical with a specialisation of their structure of settlement. The settlement will be, in any case, an industrial agricultural synthesis, for rationally developed agriculture in concentrating the population and setting free parts of it for non-agricultural work. And, on the other hand, modern industry is dispersing population and setting free parts of it for non-industrial work.

All this is no more than a general outline of what is involved in the National Plan.

We shall find a better solution for the problems facing us if we recognise that man is first and foremost a social being, and that his social needs should exert a dominating influence in the working out and carrying through of the National Plan.

### The Planning Commission

Even in England where town planning has made considerable headway, considerable defects and difficulties are found to exist in the present planning legislation and practice. "Planning is essentially on local basis; it does not, and was not intended to, influence the geographical distribution of the population as between one locality and another. As the law stands no authority is charged with the duty of considering the local or regional planning schemes in the light of national resources, requirements and interests as a whole."<sup>1</sup>

It is also pointed out that schemes for central areas of cities often provide for an increasing height, coverage and bulk of business and industrial buildings for such areas, while the permitted density of dwellings in such areas in practice follows, rather than obstructs, the centralising tendency. With regard to suburban areas, the view is expressed that while schemes for such areas, set a better standard of density and are effective by zoning methods in preventing an ill-considered jumble of houses and businesses and in securing convenient road lines and often a reasonable provision of local open spaces, etc., they follow in the main the principle of accepting the established tendency.

Present statutory town planning does not concern itself with the larger question of the general and national grouping of population and the task had to be left to a Royal Commission. While local and regional planning schemes may in due course cover all the land of a nation, a national plan conceived as a whole would be likely to differ substantially from a national plan constructed by merely piecing together the local and regional plan. The local and national interests may easily clash. Another difficulty referred to in the case of Great Britain by the Barlow Commission is the absence of reference to agriculture in the Planning Act although conservation of fertile land is a matter of national significance. But

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* J.T.P.I., March-April, 1940, pp. 80-85.

the national aspect of the subject is one with which local planning authorities are clearly not competent to deal.

The fundamental problems of planning are : (a) the planning of the social order ; (b) the planning of the actual physical development naturally resulting from that order, what is often referred to as " spatial planning ". The primary defect of official planning schemes, and the main cause of their comparative ineffectiveness has been that planners have been concerned almost wholly with spatial planning and have paid insufficient attention to the more fundamental question of the Planning of the Society of which their schemes must be the expression.

National Planning should embrace a plan of the region, the town, the village and the countryside. " No one but Architects can do the great replanning work which lies before the country. It is work requiring study." The map could be divided into sections of more convenient areas upon which groups of planners could work. These groups would consist of people who lived and worked in the area, and they would be able to study the villages and suggest in a broad way the development or curtailment of any one of them. They would know the untidy spots in the main roads and could mark them on the map. Where large towns came into the areas, special study would be required. For each town, a general plan would be required showing circulation, the positions of industries, housing, amenities, positions of railway stations, etc. and when the general plan of a town had been made, then its physical boundaries could be planned in detail. The desire for speed in erection for stamping out sections of buildings into moulds and fixing these together will not necessarily contribute to good building and charm in design. We must beware of the ready made.

The creation of a special body is suggested to plan for the nation as a whole whose activity would extend beyond those within the powers of any existing government department. The immediate work of post-war reconstruction and National Planning as defined by Lord Reith falls into three groups.

1. First, the measures necessary to prevent things being done now which would prejudice reconstruction..... " wholesale nationalisation " as " not being for the good of agriculture or the country-side." The survey made in three heavily damaged

test areas—Birmingham, Coventry and Bristol—showed up the legislative and administrative difficulties of planning.

2. The second group is research and information. More can be said about the work of this vastly important section of the Ministry later. The present programme is to include a national resources survey, survey of regionalism, the economics of urban redevelopment and research into building methods and materials. Also of great importance and coming into all groups of work is the question of industrial location which, it will be remembered, was the subject of the pre-war survey undertaken by Sir Montague Barlow's Commission which has provided the nearest thing we have to a "Charter of Planning" for Britain.

3. The last group concerns the system of planning; the examination of defects in the existing system and of administrative machinery.

Only a properly constituted National Planning Commission can hope to deal with these questions. The objectives of this body should be, the re-development of congested urban areas, decentralisation or dispersal of population and industry and the encouragement of a reasonable balance between the different regions and different aspects of production. Even those who differed from the majority laid special emphasis upon,

1. "Enquiry and research, devised to lead up to a systematised plan for distribution of industry on a national scale, bringing with it the attainment of a better balance in the distribution of population than now exists.
2. "Pending the evolution of such a national plan, control of changes in the present distribution of industry as, and if, they occur in the ordinary course of business development."

A permanent Board of Research composed of technicians and others as found advisable should carry out research and advise the body. This central Advisory Board must be helped by Boards constituted on a suitable regional basis.



The advisory and non-executive functions of the body must include :—

1. Collection and co-ordination of information relating to the location of cities, industries, etc.
2. Research and collection of information as to the various natural resources—land, agriculture, amenities, etc.
3. Advice to Government, local authorities, industrialists and others on problems connected with the location of industries, holiday resorts, transport, agriculture and afforestation, grouping of population and housing and provision of centres of economic life.
4. Publicity and annual reports.

An All-India organisation assisted by Provincial Boards should therefore be set up on these lines for controlling the progress of national development with a view to obtain the maximum air security. But this body could also be entrusted with surveys and planning for immediate action to be adopted by the organisation set up for immediate relief. For instance the survey of the neighbourhood of cities to prepare schemes of evacuation, survey of city structures with a view to adopt structural precautions. And this body could also help to obtain uniformity of procedure in different parts of the country.

Different kinds of surveys will form one of their most important functions. Their utility is immense and comprehensive surveys are being carried out even by borough councils in Great Britain. A careful survey has been made by the Islington Borough Council. Both the Government of Great Britain and technical bodies repeatedly recommend it for almost every aspect of A.R.P. The Home Office points out the need for a survey for 'the location of casualty clearing station, first-aid posts, location of shelters, or precautions for structures.'

As regards casualty clearing stations, a survey of hospital accommodation generally, was conducted by the Ministry of Health and the Department of Health for Scotland in co-operation with the Medical Officers of Health. The Home Office insists that it is essential "that consideration of the problem of public shelters should proceed from a careful survey of the accommodation distributed throughout the area and particularly in relation to shopping thoroughfares, which could be made available for members of the public by arrangement with the owners or occupiers of the premises

..... Until such surveys, which might be included in the scheme, are completed, it will be impossible to judge the extent to which special construction should be considered or the parts of the area for which this may prove to be necessary. Authorities are, therefore, recommended to arrange for such a survey to be undertaken."

A survey of city structures in which people have to carry on vital work in war time, combined with maps of danger zones are necessary to furnish information for an economical plan of protection. There are buildings of inferior construction for which protection might prove uneconomic. A survey is necessary to select the worthy ones and determine the type of protection required.

The need for organising and controlling A.R.P. services also require careful survey and mapping of the area. The scheme should be accompanied by a map indicating the situation of first-aid posts, depots and other centres specified in the scheme. It is suggested that for large towns and cities the map should be on a scale of 6 inches to the mile. For rural areas a map on a smaller scale will suffice. The most suitable size should be determined with reference to local conditions and no definite scales could be prescribed, for circumstances vary widely.

A comprehensive survey of the neighbourhood of the cities, the communication and transport systems, water-supply, accommodation and amenities available must be made to prepare plans for evacuation. In fact a million homes in the reception areas were visited and the accommodation studied prior to the great evacuation schemes launched in England at the outbreak of hostilities. To build temporary camps, to house the evacuees, to provide facilities for food supply, medical aid and education careful investigation is required.

Such a commission will also be of great help to provide valuable schemes and data for effective A.R.P. organisations designed to deal with immediate risks. Adequate material will be provided by the Research and Investigation Department of the National Planning Commission. If this is done, it will smoothen the way to harness even the A.R.P. activities to the long term programme, and in course of time achieve the ideal. The expenditure on A.R.P. will thus contribute towards more permanent resistance and will be of permanent value to the country.

As pointed out by Dr. Robson, there is little doubt that by far the greater part of an architectural training is of small use in the field of territorial planning, and that it omits much, which is essential even where the requirements of the Town Planning Institute examinations are fulfilled. That an architectural training is not specially suited to planning is borne out by the fact that in both the United States and the Soviet Union territorial planning is by no means the monopoly of architects or surveyors. We shall need a National School of Planning, at which the Science and Art of Planning in all its wide ramifications can be studied as a separate discipline on broader and more comprehensive lines than is now possible anywhere. A new profession is about to be urgently needed and we must here and now consider methods by which recruits coming to it from many different spheres can be adequately trained in an overriding discipline and technique and permeated by a body of general principles.<sup>1</sup>

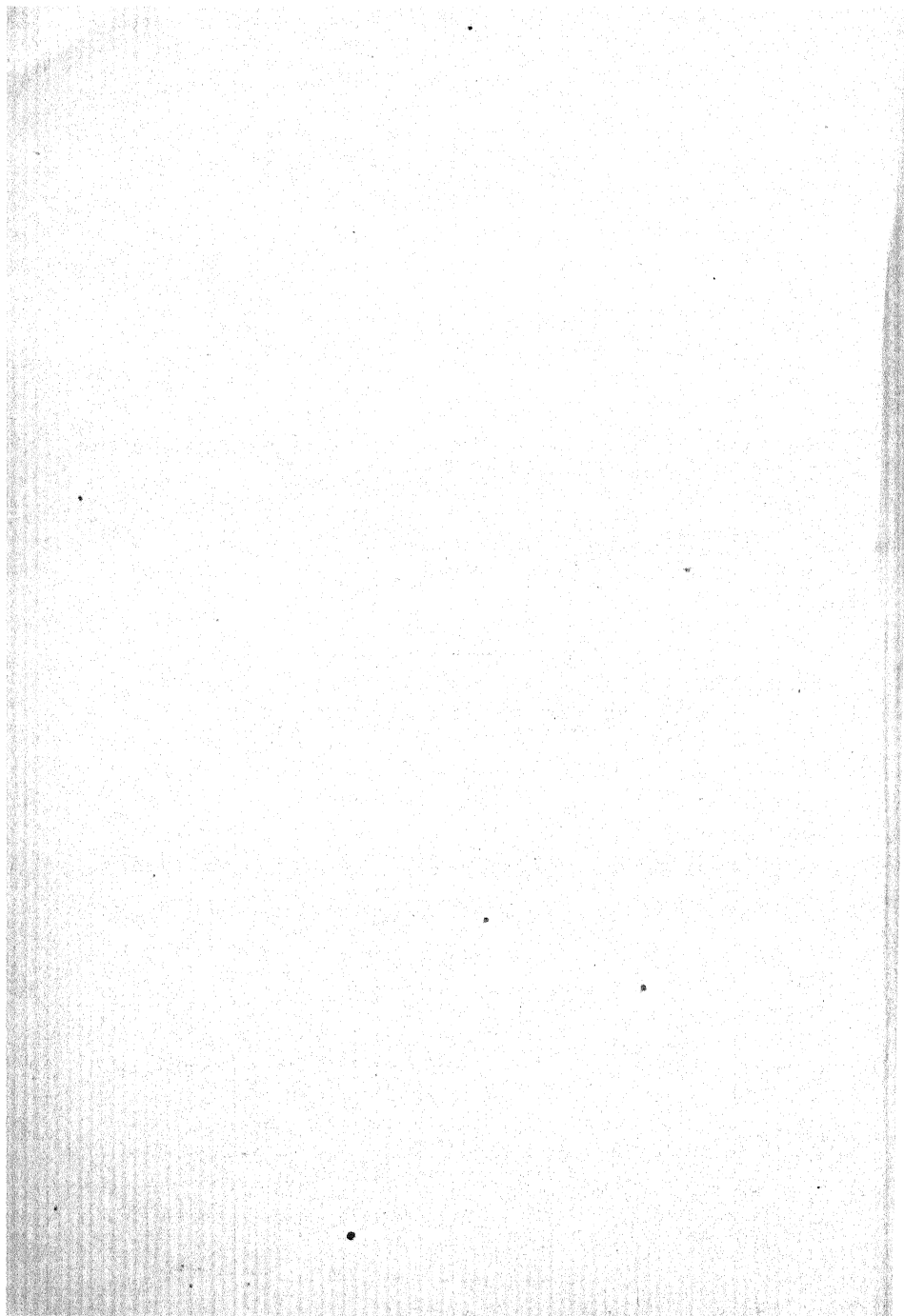
The problem of a well-balanced manufacturing and agricultural policy as well as the expediency of ensuring the safety of the food supply in all areas in times of emergency, may well require a much closer juxtaposition of field and factory throughout the land, the transfer of an ever-increasing proportion of the population to the soil, closer settlement on the land, more intensive cultivation, better farm houses and buildings, better homes for farm workers, and rural amenities of all sorts.

<sup>1</sup>The "Builder," June 19, 1942, p. 539.

## **CHAPTER VII**

---

### **EVACUATION AND DISPERSAL**



## CHAPTER VII

---

### EVACUATION AND DISPERSAL

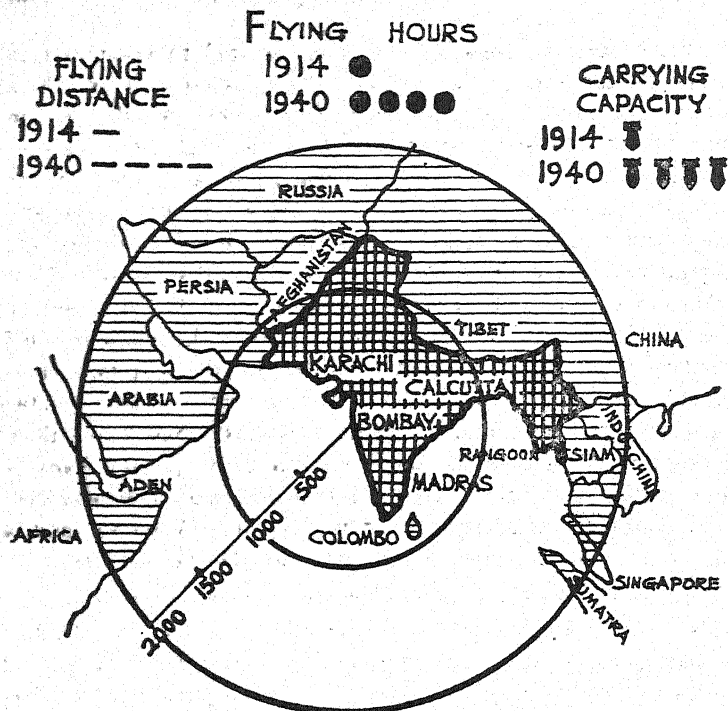
The reforms suggested in the previous Chapters which would render a nation invulnerable to the air arm would necessarily take a good deal of time. Reshaping existing cities, re-planning the geographical basis of the social economy of a nation and balanced decentralisation of industry would need several years. It has been found that a maximum of only one-sixtieth of the total area of a large town changes every year, to replace existing buildings by entirely new ones, and thirty years if only the older half of them were brought up to date. If this is the case in England where legislation for Civil Defence touches almost every aspect of the nation's life, a longer time must be allowed, for widening the roads, zoning cities and establishing residential estates of the correct type in this country.

#### Importance

Air raids over India have made it abundantly clear that immediate steps are necessary in this country to resist this danger. The possibility of aircraft-carriers infesting the sea surrounding the peninsula leaves no room for complacency and measures must be concerted immediately.

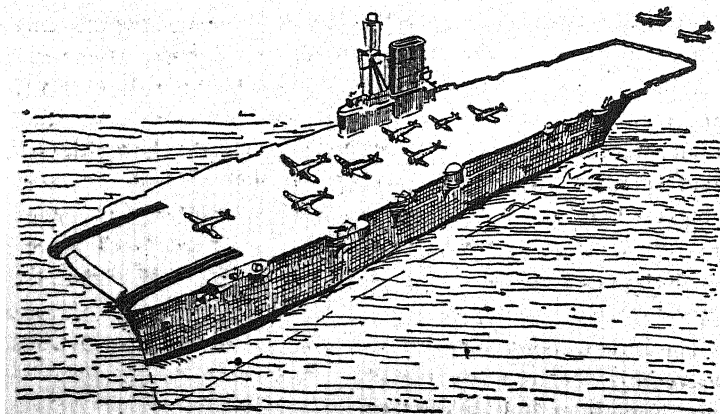
Among the several measures necessary for meeting this emergency, evacuation of the civilian population from the vulnerable zones stands foremost. It not merely assures immunity from the risk of air raids to a large section of the population but also reduces considerably the magnitude of the task which the authorities have to meet during a raid. In the words of Herbert Morrison "absence from the scene of danger is the best protection of all."<sup>1</sup> Moreover certain classes of people whose presence is not absolutely essential for resisting air aggression, such as women and children and the sick and the old would complicate and magnify the task of protection if they are to remain in zones liable to raids. No wonder

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* The "Hindu", 4-11-1940.



## DEVELOPMENT OF BOMBER 1914-1940

Since 1940, the flying distance, flying hours and carrying capacity  
have all increased considerably



that most cities threatened by air arm resorted to evacuation in Europe on the eve of Nazi attack. Even as far back as 1931 a plan for evacuation was prepared in France when Marshal Petain was appointed Inspector-General of Aerial Defence. Warsaw, Helsinki, Oslo and other cities evacuated as many civilian population as possible on the eve of attack. From London and other centres over a million and a half, children, mothers and hospital patients were removed to less vulnerable zones in Great Britain, within a week in September 1939. Nearly half a million school children or about 56 per cent. of the whole school child population in London evacuation area left the Capital. It is stated that nearly one million children have been evacuated from the bombed areas of Germany. Approximately two million inhabitants fled before the entry of German troops into Paris or were evacuated by the French Government. All those who had any vehicle at their disposal left the capital. When Alexandria was bombed about 40,000 people left the city the next day.

In India large numbers evacuated coastal cities when Jap raids over Rangoon commenced. Even Citizens of Bombay moved to the interior when the Jap Fleet moved in the Bay of Bengal in the middle of April, 1942. The population of Madras City fell to two and a half lakhs. It was estimated that the number of people in the City was between four and a half and five lakhs in the beginning of July, indicating that another over two lakhs at least were still away.

When the Allied planes started raiding Italy, Mussolini ordered urgent evacuation of the whole civilian population and all its institutions from southern Italy, western coastal regions and Sardinia. Mussolini broadcasting from the Rome Radio on December 2, 1942 announced that children would be cleared from cities, arrangements would be made for a mighty exodus from cities, and only fighting men would be permitted to remain there although he had spent hundreds of million liras on shelters that can resist the biggest bombs. R.A.F. raids and sea bombardments of Italian cities killed 1,876, injured over 3,300. In Genoa 5,772 houses were destroyed; in Turin 161 houses were destroyed and 3,200 were damaged.

The Italian Newspaper *Corriere Della Sera* appealed for civilians to leave Milan before it was too late. Evacuation of civilians from towns throughout Italy took place.



However necessary, mass exodus leads to inconvenience and trouble both to the people and the authorities and unless carefully planned in time, these will be aggravated and lead to hardships and waste of resources. A careful study of the great British experiment would open our eyes to the method that should be adopted and the difficulties which should be met to render our schemes successful. Considered a marvel of organisation the British scheme has disclosed several drawbacks which we in India will do well to guard against.

### The British Experiment

The aim of evacuation is to remove from the more dangerous and congested areas to less dangerous areas of certain groups of people whose removal is desirable on both national and humanitarian grounds. Although this may not save city structures it would reduce risk to life and is indispensable to cities liable to air attack.<sup>1</sup>

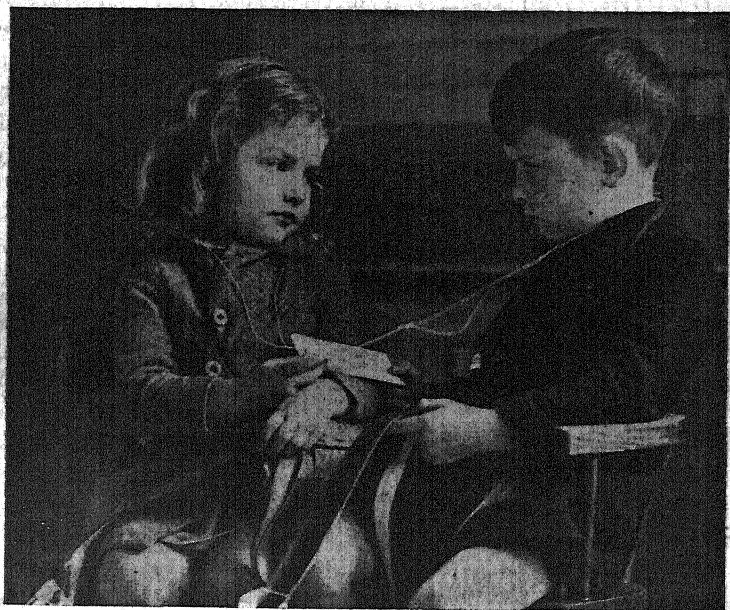
The classes of persons included in the British Evacuation Scheme are :—

1. School children and the teachers and helpers who would be required to continue the education of the children and to assist in caring for them ;
2. Children of pre-school age accompanied by their mothers or other persons responsible for looking after them.
3. Expectant mothers.
4. Adult blind persons.

The country is divided into areas of three types, sending, receiving, and neutral areas, the last being areas which though not themselves to be evacuated are not regarded as suitable for reception purposes. Evacuation is voluntary. The main source of accommodation in the receiving area is the occupied house. Hutted camps, come next. "Since any plan capable of immediate operation has to be based predominantly on the use of occupied houses,

<sup>1</sup>The following account is based upon the Home Office circulars, information published in the "Times" London, the "Manchester Guardian," the "Hindu" and the Reports of the Association of Architects, Surveyors and Technical Assistants, the Fabian Society and the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee. Also on Robson (*Vide ante*) and A. D. K. Owen, the "Great Evacuation" in the Political Quarterly, January-March, 1940, pp. 30-44.

it is to the best methods of utilising this provision, the attention of local authorities have been directed."



London children with destination label ready for evacuation

The scheme has been planned in great detail. It includes estimates of total population in the different kinds of areas, arrangements in sending areas which cover appointment of evacuation officers, publicity, estimates of the number of persons desiring evacuation, registration of evacuable persons, provision to include teachers, efforts to secure helpers to supervise the children and the necessary arrangements for physically or mentally defective children, children in hospitals, expectant mothers and blind persons ; they also include the necessary arrangements for assembling, transporting and feeding during the process. Arrangements in receiving areas cover the appointment of assistant reception officers, billeting officers, transport beyond detrained stations, billeting arrangements for children accompanied or unaccompanied by other members, registration of evacuated persons, increased supply of food to the areas, arrangements in Post Office for payment etc. ; for education, recreation and equipment of children, for medical nursing provision, for hospital facilities, and welfare work.

However necessary, mass exodus leads to inconvenience and trouble both to the people and the authorities and unless carefully planned in time, these will be aggravated and lead to hardships and waste of resources. A careful study of the great British experiment would open our eyes to the method that should be adopted and the difficulties which should be met to render our schemes successful. Considered a marvel of organisation the British scheme has disclosed several drawbacks which we in India will do well to guard against.

### The British Experiment

The aim of evacuation is to remove from the more dangerous and congested areas to less dangerous areas of certain groups of people whose removal is desirable on both national and humanitarian grounds. Although this may not save city structures it would reduce risk to life and is indispensable to cities liable to air attack.<sup>1</sup>

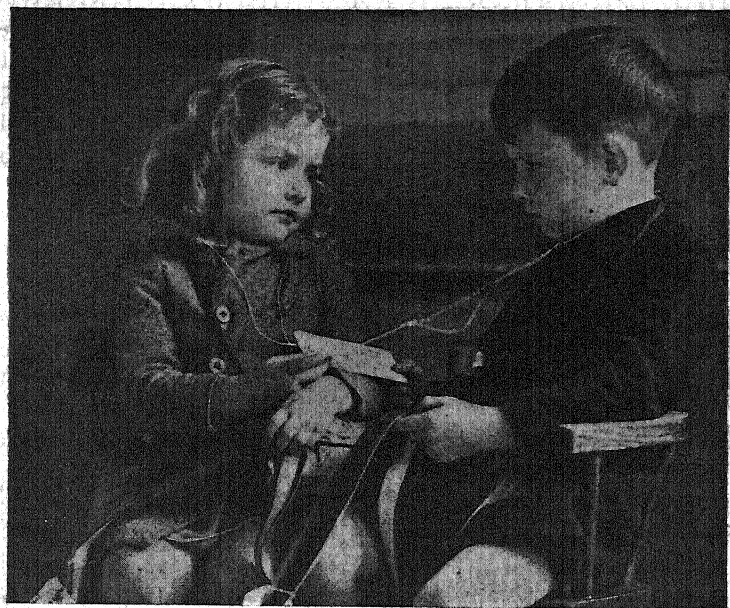
The classes of persons included in the British Evacuation Scheme are :—

1. School children and the teachers and helpers who would be required to continue the education of the children and to assist in caring for them ;
2. Children of pre-school age accompanied by their mothers or other persons responsible for looking after them.
3. Expectant mothers.
4. Adult blind persons.

The country is divided into areas of three types, sending, receiving, and neutral areas, the last being areas which though not themselves to be evacuated are not regarded as suitable for reception purposes. Evacuation is voluntary. The main source of accommodation in the receiving area is the occupied house. Hutted camps, come next. "Since any plan capable of immediate operation has to be based predominantly on the use of occupied houses,

<sup>1</sup>The following account is based upon the Home Office circulars, information published in the "Times" London, the "Manchester Guardian," the "Hindu" and the Reports of the Association of Architects, Surveyors and Technical Assistants, the Fabian Society and the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee. Also on Robson (*Vide ante*) and A. D. K. Owen, the "Great Evacuation" in the Political Quarterly, January-March, 1940, pp. 30-44.

it is to the best methods of utilising this provision, the attention of local authorities have been directed."



London children with destination label ready for evacuation

The scheme has been planned in great detail. It includes estimates of total population in the different kinds of areas, arrangements in sending areas which cover appointment of evacuation officers, publicity, estimates of the number of persons desiring evacuation, registration of evacuable persons, provision to include teachers, efforts to secure helpers to supervise the children and the necessary arrangements for physically or mentally defective children, children in hospitals, expectant mothers and blind persons ; they also include the necessary arrangements for assembling, transporting and feeding during the process. Arrangements in receiving areas cover the appointment of assistant reception officers, billeting officers, transport beyond detained stations, billeting arrangements for children accompanied or unaccompanied by other members, registration of evacuated persons, increased supply of food to the areas, arrangements in Post Office for payment etc. ; for education, recreation and equipment of children, for medical nursing provision, for hospital facilities, and welfare work.

Persons who are evacuated should take with them "a gas mask, a change of underclothing, night clothes, house-shoes or rubber shoes, spare stockings or socks, a tooth brush, comb, towel and handkerchiefs, a warm coat or mackintosh, and packet of food for the day." When a mother is evacuated along with her children or sends another woman to look after them, lodging only will be provided for the adult and for the children. In such cases, therefore, adults should make arrangements where possible to obtain money for their own and the children's maintenance from their husbands or from the parents or guardians of the children concerned.<sup>1</sup>

The Government recognise that a considerable number of evacuated persons will not be able to provide all the articles on the list. No obligation is imposed on the householder to remedy the deficiencies of this kind. The billeting officer will look after this and will provide them by getting money from their parents or from other sources. Adult evacuated persons without means and whose husbands cannot send them money will be financed by the Ministry of Labour. The majority of blind persons evacuated would be in receipt of domiciliary financial assistance, and local authorities of the sending areas would pay them. Medical attendance cost for evacuated children, etc., would be borne by Government and not by the householder.

The Government pays to householders at the rate of 10s. 6d. a week where one child is taken and 8s. 6d. a week for each child where more than one child is taken. Payment is made weekly in advance. These payments are intended to cover full board, lodging and all care necessary to give the child a home. The payments are not intended to cover the cost of clothes or medical expenses, which the receiver is under no obligation to meet.

The children bring hand luggage and their gas masks, a change of underclothing, night clothes, house shoes or rubber shoes, spare stockings or socks, a tooth-brush, comb, towel and handkerchiefs, and a warm coat or mackintosh. If a child is without sufficient clothes or some essential piece of equipment, the billeting officer or other local official should be notified.

If the child becomes ill, the doctor or the district nurse would be called in the ordinary way and the cost of medical attention will be borne by Government.

<sup>1</sup>Home Office Circular, D. P. Memorandum E.V.S. 3.

Mothers of children under school age may accompany their children. A mother may sometimes send another woman to take her place. The mothers or the women taking the place of mothers will be entirely responsible for looking after the children.

Payments are made at the rate of 5s. a week for each adult or child over 14 and 3s. a week for each child under 14. Payment is made weekly in advance.

These payments cover shelter and access to water and sanitary accommodation and no other services. Cooking facilities may be made available by the householders. The mothers and other adults who come with the younger children would be given an identification form which will enable them if they have no means of their own, to apply for financial assistance at the Ministry of Labour's office. They will, therefore, be in a position to provide themselves with food and other necessities.

In July, 1938, a Committee of the House of Commons recommended that schemes of evacuation covering the main industrial centres of the country should be worked out and the necessary organisation set up. The September crisis in 1940, however, necessitated an emergency scheme for the evacuation of London school children.

After the emergency had passed, preparations for working out a detailed scheme were resumed at a more leisurely pace. "Evacuation," "neutral" and "reception" areas were defined according to the estimated degree of risk in different parts of the country and plans were made for the transference of certain priority classes—rather more than three million school children, mothers and young children, expectant mothers, and blind and crippled people—from the "evacuation" areas to the "reception" areas. Early in 1939 a detailed survey of accommodation in the reception areas was undertaken with the help of the local authorities and a large army of voluntary workers. As a result of this survey billets for over four million official evacuees were discovered in addition to which it was noted that about a million billets had been earmarked for private evacuation. In response to a widely expressed demand, a modest scheme was introduced for the construction of fifty camps, suitable for holiday and evacuation purposes, by two State-aided non-profit making concerns (The National Camps Corporation in England and Wales and the Scottish Housing Asso-

ciation in Scotland). Detailed arrangements were made for the registration of those who wished to take advantage of the scheme ; the distribution of evacuees among the various reception areas etc. " The organisation of the evacuation scheme will probably be recognised as one of the most remarkable achievements of the British Civil Service."

During the opening months of 1940 the daily rate of expenditure on evacuation averaged nearly £36,000 on the British Exchequer. Later the Government bore the full cost of the provision by the local authorities of war-time day nurseries for children under five years, in addition. The cost to the Exchequer of the evacuation of children to safe areas within Britain between the outbreak of war and beginning of June 1940 was as follows. The cost of billeting amounted to nearly ten million pounds, while charges in respect of arrangements for whole schools and special classes for children accounted for just over another million. This was in addition to what the parents incurred. About 53 per cent. of parents were paying full upkeep charges.

Later when defects became apparent additional expense was incurred for welfare work among the evacuated persons. The Ministry of Health started operating 518 social centres, 265 communal feeding centres, 443 occupational clubs, 189 residential nurseries and 130 maternity homes in areas to which the evacuees have been transferred.

In spite of all these, very soon defects became apparent. One writer after four months' experience summarised the situation thus. "Husbands have been parted from wives, children from parents. Domestic privacy has been invaded. Urban and rural ways of life have been brought into sharp conflict. Class barriers have been not so much broken down, as ignored, often with heartening, but sometimes with unfortunate results. The education system has been reduced temporarily to a shamble and a great strain has been placed upon local government authorities in areas which have received a great influx of population."

During the first week-end of September 1940, in the shadow of the breaking storm, the great movement took place. The first surprise came early. The numbers coming forward to be evacuated under the official scheme were unexpectedly low. Less than half of those for whom billets had been promised went away.



"Newcastle-on-Tyne sent away 80 per cent. of its school children and Gateshead, across the river, sent away 60 per cent. But two equally vulnerable towns on the East Coast, Sunderland and Middlesborough, sent away only 33 per cent. and 29 per cent. respectively of their evacuable school children. Leeds sent away only 26 per cent. of its school children, Bradford only 31 per cent., and Sheffield (one of the most obvious target areas in the country) a derisory 17 per cent. In the Midlands, Derby sent away 46 per cent. of its "evacuable" school children, but Birmingham evacuated only a quarter of those who were eligible. Of course there was a certain amount of private evacuation outside the official scheme."

This kind of response has been attributed to,

1. Uncertainty concerning the financial aspects of evacuation—financial difficulties and fear that a divided household would upset their precariously balanced domestic budgets.

2. Unwillingness of mothers of young children to be separated from their husbands.

3. Inability to pay for clothing to children.

4. The difficulty of separation. 38 per cent. of the parents interviewed by the Liverpool University Investigators in the course of their illuminating survey, gave as a reason for refusing to allow their children to go away, that one or other of the parents could not bear the separation.

At the reception end, barring the minor difficulties of grumbling and occasional refusal owing to wrong delivery, stubbornness of mothers to part from their children, "much more serious problems arose when rural Britain woke up to the fact that the personal hygiene of a considerable section of the urban population of these islands is anything but exemplary." In some places cleansing stations were improvised at central points, after the experience of the first day, but the chief burden fell upon the householders.

Before the end of the first fortnight of evacuation it was evident that a considerable drift home from the reception areas was in progress. The expected air raids had not taken place. The drift back was most noticeable in the case of mothers with young children. Why?



"Even when they were not unhappy in their billets the strain of separation from their husbands, loneliness, nostalgia for familiar sights and sounds, financial anxieties, and a sense of "not belonging" as it was sometimes put, led numbers to return. Unsatisfactory accommodation in outhouses, empty buildings, attics and cellars, resulted in the return of some more, and there were many other cases, where the accommodation itself was excellent, but where incompatibility of temperament and social habits led to friction with the hostess and an eventual break."

A much smaller proportion returned among the unaccompanied children, though in the aggregate their numbers appear considerable. Principally due to the unsettling effects of parents' visits; failure to understand the terms of the Government proposals for billeting expenses; unhappiness due to billeting misfits created by difference in social class, religion, etc., and general characteristics of the evacuees and the householders; absence of institutional provision for the inevitable "problem cases" of all kinds.

"In spite of all the work which has been devoted to it and the sacrifices which have been made, the fact remains that very few mothers, and probably less than a third of the school population of the evacuation areas, are now away from home," wrote an experienced observer before 1940 Christmas and predicted that levels would get lower by the time his article was published.

Day by day the defects of sudden evacuation are becoming apparent. It is expensive to Government; inconvenient to householders who receive evacuees, and difficult for the family forced to send away the mother or child. The head of the family in vulnerable areas is forced to fend for himself in the absence of the housewife. The break up of the home ideal, has drawn such attention that a deputation of the parents of evacuated mothers protested to Government. The evacuees are not happy in their new homes, as is evidenced from many stories, some amusing and others pathetic, told of them. The early reactions in many cases were favourable to children but soon many have got bored with their new surroundings as expressed by one youngster who after a week on a farm said he "would rather see it on the pictures."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Illustrated Weekly of India," Jan. 21, 1940, p. 11.

The set-back to education is perhaps the greatest disadvantage to the children of the present generation. "The children who have been evacuated and who are now receiving less than their normal dose of instruction are the most considerable of war victims of England. An investigation lately carried out in Rochdale shows the exact degree of deterioration among children whose school hours have been reduced and the result is sufficiently alarming to make all education committees want to reopen all their schools on a normal full-time basis in the hope that lost ground may be recovered. That wish cannot, however, be fulfilled so long as the Government holds that evacuation is necessary and that children must not be sent back to their homes. In evacuation areas owing to the requisitioning of many schools and the absence of adequate air raid protection for most of the others, more than half the children of school age in these areas have been without normal education since before the summer holidays," and it is matter of deep concern that a whole generation of school children should be suffering such irreparable loss. The dangers of ignorance and indiscipline, it is pointed out are more serious than the risk of being killed or maimed by enemy bomb.

A more serious evil has been revealed. Heavily bombed industrial areas are said to produce many offenders. Attempts to "divert into useful channels this misplaced energy" are being made.<sup>1</sup> A juvenile crime wave, blamed by psychologists to the war-time lust for adventure is engaging the attention of the British Home Security Ministry. The approved schools are full, there are long waiting lists and court calendars are crowded with juvenile cases. Social workers believe that much of the trouble is caused by the separation of families due to evacuation and bombing fatalities, as well as to lack of parental control in cases where the fathers are in the army and the mothers employed in factories or in civil defence. If war continues for number of years the problem of juvenile crimes would become serious and lack of parental control will do great harm especially in countries like India where it is the home that moulds the young.

Evacuees also bring problems with them to the householders who receive them. Their lot is hard with unacquainted guests, with different tastes and tempers. Some of them are confronted with "verminous slum children who do not know how to eat with knife

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Hindu", 17-8-1941.

and fork and who had the most dreadful parents, who visit them now and then in expensive motor cars." Unsuspected differences between town and country have brought trouble to the householders. Some of them are difficult to feed. Others show no inclination to lend a helping hand in the house even if they happen to be in their twenties and in Government employment. "Worse still they are not punctual at meals, and remember it is an offence against some law or other not to provide these people with a hot evening meal. If the weekly £1 a head which is paid for billetees of this kind covered expenses, much might be forgiven. But it does not. Luckily some of the maiden ladies who have most felt the strain are being permitted to shunt their lodgers to other quarters."

An additional difficulty has arisen from the faulty distribution of food and articles of consumption. Though admirable the scheme of Government for evacuation, "it is difficult, for instance, to buy China tea in some of the country, though there seems to be no real shortage of it in London. Prices again vary enormously. Country folk buying bacon at 1s. 4d. a pound exclaim with horror at the idea of Londoners paying a shilling a pound more at some of the West End Stores."

With the rising price level Government payment has become insufficient. "It is proved that the housewife is out of pocket by every child she houses. 8s. 6d. a head is not enough; 12s. 6d. would be nearer the mark." This is due to the rising price level in the reception area, and the menus to which the family is accustomed, for different menus cannot be prepared. The patriotic housewife has not a bed to spare to any relation or friend for a day. The whole woman power of the country-side in reception areas continues to be dissipated and its goodwill discouraged by house to house billeting.

As a result, even before winter problems have arisen the London teachers in many areas failed in their objective; thousands of children have been called back by their parents, country children have been frozen out, and the children of the middle and the upper classes have been left as war victims, without educational facilities, and robbed the attention they might expect, from their overworked mothers.... "Many housewives have reached a point of exasperation which is near apathy." Meanwhile they are tied perpetually to their houses, slaving for evacuees, the parents of these evacuees come down on them like bees every week-end in organised "luxury

cruises " of massed relations and friends and are quite prepared to spend £3 on such week-end jaunts, which unsettle their children and lead to entreaties to be allowed to return to London.

Day after day the British press publishes accounts of the many difficulties that crop up in the working of the scheme.

Enquiries and studies carried out by Technical Associations support the prevailing popular feeling.<sup>1</sup> The Special Committee of the Association of Architects, Surveyors and Technical Assistants, the Fabian Society and the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee have discovered in dumping strangers from cities into rural household, the biggest cause for the failure of the evacuation scheme.

" The greatest single cause of failure is the well-nigh intolerable discomfort and inconvenience caused by the virtually complete reliance on household billeting (camp schools accommodate only 1 per cent. of evacuable school children)" observes the Memorandum submitted by the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee to the Minister of Health, to remedy the failure of the Government scheme. For "some 84 per cent. of those whom it was originally proposed to evacuate, are now in the danger areas, and even under the fresh scheme this figure will be in excess of 78 per cent."

Evacuation is thus an evil necessity ; " on its personal side evacuation results in the destruction of family life on an unprecedented scale ; the separation of parents from children and of husbands from wives. On its commercial side, it leads to an exodus of banks, insurance offices and other undertakings to unsuitable country mansions which must inevitably have detrimental economic consequences. In regard to the dispersal of Government offices it has led to a great outcry from hotel proprietors whose premises have been requisitioned."

A carefully thought out plan should therefore be made to make the scheme effective and minimise the drawbacks. That the scheme should be prepared well in advance needs no saying. During and immediately after a raid it would be practically impossible to move

<sup>1</sup> A. A. S. T. A. Report on Evacuation. The report of the Fabian Society.

out population. Panic will play havoc especially among the Indian population as it did in Alexandria. About 40,000 people left the city soon after the first raid in June 1941. Numerous special trains had to be run free. The Government had to approve a big credit. Poorer classes were taken free.

The city presented a remarkable sight with miles of long caravans of evacuating Egyptian families who commandeered every available vehicle piling them high with their bedding, scanty furniture and the ancient, horned gramophones while the less fortunate slowly plodded along the roads leading from the city with bedding and other bundles perched on their heads, carrying children and driving a few miserable goats ahead of them. Whole families of from eight to ten people were crowded into taxis which were almost unobtainable in the town that day for any other purpose. The railway station throughout the day had been an indescribable spectacle of being crowded with literally thousands of Arabs boarding special and ordinary trains on which it was impossible to make any normal reservations. Owing to the structure of native houses which are mostly mud and bricks, bombs caused great havoc, especially as the poorer quarters were extremely congested.

A sudden raid over an unprepared town is bound to cause many difficulties, especially the trouble of panicky people evacuating the area. In Alexandria, the crowds got over the tops of railway carriages in their anxiety to escape bombs and unless the authorities make previous arrangement for extra trains to convey the frightened populace, the task of controlling them would be impracticable.

### **The Indian Problem**

Even with the provision of vast Civil Defence Services there was a tendency for mass evacuation of large towns after heavy blitzes, in Europe. In places where there is little by way of A.R.P. services, where there are few or poor shelters, this mass evacuation might take place as pointed out by the A.R.P.C.C. in their Memorandum, in a panic-stricken way, with disastrous consequences as in France and elsewhere. The blocking of roads at such times by huge numbers of people is particularly not desirable from the military point of view. Extensive and well planned A.R.P. services of every kind help to prevent this situation arising. Particularly important are organised arrangements for evacuating all who insist on leaving.

Evacuation arrangements fall into two parts; for those evacuated beforehand and for those leaving after raids.

Dislocation is reduced to a minimum when the maximum number of people are evacuated beforehand. As Sir Jwala Prasad Srivastava, Civil Defence Member of the Government of India pointed out, "When there is an attack, the military will consider their own needs paramount and may not set apart even one road for the evacuation of the civilians. They are concerned only with dealing with the enemy. It is my job as Civil Defence Member to fight with the military authorities and get at least one road by which the civilian may evacuate".

If children are sent away a great deal of distress to parents is avoided. In India many non-essential workers have evacuated from the vulnerable coast towns and it is possible to take advantage of the lesson of the Soviet Union by evacuating at least light industries.

In India some of the problems will be more easily solved by virtue of the fact that very many town-dwellers have not long left villages in the provinces to which they can return. One of the biggest weakness in Britain was the lack of preparation in many respects, and also difficulty of parents in keeping touch with the welfare of their children.

The Far Eastern crisis and the possibility of Calcutta being declared an emergency area caused a certain section of the Indian population to leave the city. Extra coaches were attached, special trains were run, and the stations were full of passengers proceeding to Orissa and the interior.

The abnormal rise in rent in reception areas around Madras and Calcutta have also become noticeable. Local authorities have been moved by this enormous rise and a conference already was convened in Chingleput. Efforts to control rent similarly have been made by the Hon'ble the Minister for Health in Bengal where centres have been selected to send citizens of Calcutta and others who arrive in the city from Burma. Arrangements for housing them in temporary structures have also been proposed.

In Burma temporary structures were erected in suburban areas for housing the citizens of Rangoon especially those who were

employed in the city so that they could remain outside and work in the city during working hours. Hospital accommodation was also similarly arranged.

Inadequacy of water, drainage and sanitation, the rising price of foodstuffs and other articles of consumption are now coming to prominence in the mofussil centres where people have gone and crowded. The limited housing accommodation and water and sanitary facilities in the smaller towns of India are well known. Even in times of peace they leave much to be desired. Their capacity to absorb extra population is very limited. Suitable measures should be taken in advance and people must be removed from vulnerable zones in time to prevent congestion of traffic after a raid when panicky population will rush out of cities.

Indian cities are as vulnerable to air raids as any other. The destructive consequences would in no way be less than what they were in the cities of the West. Although statistics show the average density to be thirty-nine homes per square mile and five persons per house, certain urban areas are extremely congested. Japanese raids over the cities of Burma and Malaya have shown that destruction to people and structures is possible.

The lay-out and the physical features of towns and even large villages are very helpful to air attacks. Dwellings are clustered together, packed closely with little space around each dwelling. A number of such narrow strips surrounded by pastures form the village while many more such streets form a town. Detached houses surrounded by garden as found in parts of the West Coast in Malabar and Travancore, and in rural Bengal and Assam form a very small proportion of India's houses. Both Indian towns and villages are extremely vulnerable to incendiary bombs, gas and the high explosive. If Spanish experience should guide us (towns of 10,000 inhabitants were not spared) over 10 per cent. of India's population need protection against air raids. The table on page 305 showing the distribution of India's population according to the size of villages and towns would indicate the number of centres and population liable to danger.

For the present we could leave out of account those residing in villages of less than 5,000 inhabitants; those who dwell in those between 5,000 and 10,000 might be harassed by machine-gunning,

*Towns and Villages classified by Population*

Size		No.	Population
1.	Under 500	509,786	97,516,496
2.	500 to 1,000	113,541	79,189,377
3.	1,000 to 2,000	53,908	73,707,758
4.	2,000 to 5,000	18,836	53,556,566
5.	5,000 to 10,000	2,330	15,412,217
6.	10,000 to 20,000	632	8,537,719
7.	20,000 to 50,000	269	7,940,572
8.	50,000 to 100,000	66	4,566,885
9.	100,000 and over	38	9,640,132
		699,406	350,558,841

(Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part II)

India (including States)

Area in Sq. miles = 1,808,679

			No.	Occupied houses	Population
Towns	..	..	2,575	7,935,898	38,985,427
Villages	..	..	696,831	63,126,239	313,852,351
Total	..	..	699,406	71,062,228	352,837,778

anti-personnel and incendiary bombs by low-flying air-craft ; those who live in centres where more than 10,000 dwell, definitely need A.R.P. measures, while the inhabitants of 38 cities with 100,000 and over should come in for special consideration. In other words 30 million people need protection from air attack in our country. Although arbitrary this grouping would help to show the intensity of the problem in India.

Average densities are not of great practical value for this vast country with varying conditions and features. As a Census Commissioner remarked " the indeterminate nature of the village unit, which may be a definite residential site, walled or palisaded or, may be an administrative unit containing several residential villages or a number of scattered houses, impairs the significance of the figures of the population as distributed in villages of various sizes." Averages for India reveal the following figures :—



Census	Persons per House	Homes per Sq. Mile
1901 ..	5.2	31.6
1911 ..	4.9	35.8
1921 ..	4.9	36.1
1931 ..	5.0	39.3

(Census of India, 1931, Vol. I., Part II, p. 55)

The house for census purposes is "any part of an inhabited building with a separate entrance." And averages per house and houses per acre cannot reflect the situation, for one building may contain many homes and families. Overcrowding is extremely vulnerable to air raids and parts of Indian cities are very congested as the following table would show:—

City	Ward or Division	Extent. acres	Density per acre
Bombay ..	Kumbharwada	44	727
	2nd Nagpada	33	636
	Kathipura	62	602
	Khara Talao	41	565
Calcutta ..	Kumartuli	27	226
	Kalutola	45	219
	Puthapukur	32	213
Madras ..	Municipal		
	Division No. 9	67	250
	" 25	88	228
	" 34	89	193
	" 13	149	183

### *Housing Congestion in Bombay*

Number of Rooms per Tenement	Number of Tenements	Average per room
1	197,516	4.01
2	26,231	2.51
3	7,416	2.01
4	6,169	1.70
5	2,953	1.50
6 and over	3,836	—

The position in India is not less grave than it is in Western Europe. In fact important areas in our large cities are more

vulnerable to air raids than some of the most dangerous spots of urban Britain. Town Planning laws have done something to secure a minimum proportion of open space to built-up areas, etc., whose counterpart we do not find in India.

The task ahead is, therefore, vast and planning of evacuation schemes should be done in advance and the superfluous population removed to suitable areas as early as possible. In this matter we have to make provision to meet the defects disclosed by the working of the English experiment.

Suitable centres should be selected not very far from the evacuation areas for conversion into reception areas. Transport facilities, water-supply and sanitary conveniences should be taken into consideration. Existing housing accommodation should be investigated with a view to discover how much extra population could be housed.

Medical aid, police staff for preserving law and order, agencies for distributing essential foodstuffs and other articles should be provided. Educational facilities and recreation are also necessary to break the monotony of the new environment.

The need for all these would be clear from the recent activities regarding evacuation schemes in Great Britain. Several social welfare centres have been opened in the reception areas and nursery centres, no fewer than 86, were erected in May 1941. With the evacuation of many thousands of small children from large cities an urgent need arose in the reception areas for nursery centres. The Board of Education and the Ministry of Health jointly advocated the idea of nursery centres in January 1940, the nursery centre being described as "something between a day nursery and a nursery school" and as "the type of provision which seems best calculated to meet the children's needs in the present exceptional circumstances." Such buildings were eligible for a 100 per cent Government grant for upkeep and maintenance. Eighty-six such were in the course of erection in May 1941 and provision was made for more. Nursery groups providing for from 10 to 20 children may be accommodated in single empty rooms in houses or other premises. The need for decoration of interior wall has been emphasised.<sup>1</sup> Furniture, educational apparatus and toys are all needed and could be easily made by voluntary method.

<sup>1</sup> H. V. Lanchester, "Nursery Centre Equipment: An Economic Programme."

A war-time Nursery for 60 children, built in an Urban District in England, cost £2,000/-. The building is arranged to provide two rooms for toddlers 800 sq. ft. and two rooms for babies with a similar floor area. They are accommodated in two huts together with laundry and lavatories, etc., and a third hut comprises a kitchen (230 sq. ft.) and provision for cloak-room, heating chamber, staff room, etc. The huts are of a prefabricated type provided by the Ministry of Supply and the plan has been arranged to allow a brick shelter to be built in a central position. The floor of the building is of two 3" layers of concrete with bitumen felt between and a linoleum finish. The outer walls are lined with wall-board and similar ceilings are provided throughout.

A low-pressure heating and domestic hot water service is installed. The estimated expenditure approved by the Ministry of Health was £2,000 for the building (excluding the cost of prefabricated huts) and £39 for furniture and equipment.

The first Nursery Centre to be opened was at Guildford on April 26, 1941, by Mr. Herbert Morrison.<sup>1</sup>

The building is an adaptation in plan of the Army hut standard. The plan includes two playrooms 20 feet by 20 feet, a small bed-store and staff room, together with lavatories and cloak-room, giving accommodation for 50 children, superintended by four teachers.

The form of construction chosen was that of the prefabrication standard unit developed by Messrs. Gyproc Products Ltd., on a concrete raft, a framework of 5 inches by 5 inches reinforced concrete stanchions with light steel roof trusses were set up, to which were fitted factory-made panels of two outer thicknesses of three-fourth inch Gyproc on a light frame of timber. The external face of the panel is covered with one-ply roofing felt and the joints are caulked with mastic. Wall panels and roof panels are identical, and the actual erection of the hut can be carried out in less than three days once the site work and the raft has been laid. The internal plumbing, erection of partitions and decoration can be completed in under a fortnight. If no difficulties in respect of weather, labour and organisation arise, the emergency nursery centre could be completed in under five weeks.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* The "Builder", May 23, 1941, p. 499.

When the need for staying permanently in the reception areas due to continued Blitz arose, it became "increasingly apparent that the conditions under which people are evacuated or received are not adequate if they give no more than sleeping accommodation." Mothers are anxious to place their children in schools and to prevent adding more numbers to the swarm of shop gazers in reception areas.

The other vital question is the provision of adequate housing accommodation for the evacuees. In England where preliminary investigation revealed the existence of facilities to accommodate some millions, it was discovered that they were found inadequate and this inadequacy contributed largely to the failure of voluntary dispersal.

A leading Indian daily has already drawn attention to the benefits of such a scheme. It has suggested rural holidays for urban children, so that those likely to be evacuated could familiarise themselves with new conditions under which they will have to live during emergencies. The health of urban children will also much improve by such periodic changes, and the difficulty such rural holidays would entail would be far less here than in Great Britain owing to our economic and social organisation, joint family system, kinship, etc.

Even in England Rural Housing is far from satisfactory. The question of rural housing is focussing attention even in main industrial countries in Great Britain. In the meetings of the "Housing Centre" held at London it has been pointed out that proper facilities for storing food did not exist, and this difficulty was increased by the fact that the rural cottager had to buy in larger quantities than the inhabitant of a town. Of the houses in rural parishes one-third were still without a piped water supply but this fact gave no indication of the condition of the farm worker; it would be more true to say that eighty per cent. of purely rural houses occupied by farm workers had no such supply. There was usually no electricity gas or sewage. In one rural area the medical officer of health had reported that one-fifth of all the houses occupied were unfit for human habitation and houses occupied by farmers and artisans were taken into account. This condition was general. Nevertheless, rural workers had difficulty in hanging on to such cottages as they had got. In some districts rural industries, such as the production of sugar from beet, or the canning of fruit, brought an influx of town workers looking for cottages while the

better type of house was sought for by week-enders, who were often able to buy a house and alter and to leave their cottages for these reasons. There are in Oxfordshire, cottages beautiful to look at but where the occupants had to take every drop of soiled water across the main road to dispose of it.

### Evacuation and Rural Betterment

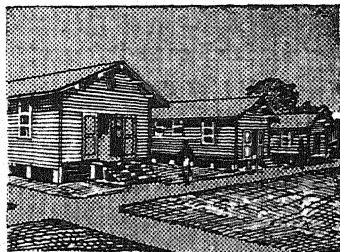
Housing in Indian villages is deplorably inadequate even to meet the demand of the villagers in normal times and it can never accommodate extra population accustomed to life in cities. Even in Great Britain where accommodation in private homes was available for five million people according to surveys carried out before the great evacuation, technical authorities and the press have made out a strong case for billeting camps and permanent structures if evacuation should be successful. The Committee of the Association of Architects, Surveyors and Technical Assistants who studied this problem drew attention to the fact that permanent camps could be erected for the same expense that the Government might incur on paying billeting charges to householders.

The report shows that on the assumption that the war will last for three years, the Exchequer will spend more than £60 in that time on the weekly payments for lodging (excluding food) for a mother with her child. The report states that for a little more than this sum they could be provided with a place in a new building designed for them.<sup>1</sup> The prediction has come true since even after full three years, London is not considered less dangerous and children in the reception areas should stop there, says the Ministry of Health, although the response to the Government's call for evacuation of school children was very small. Their comprehensive survey of Wantage and eleven surrounding villages in Berkshire made twelve weeks after evacuation took place, presented an overwhelming case for the creation of special buildings for evacuation including camp schools, new buildings for education and feeding, nursery schools and day nurseries. They are considered absolutely essential on health, education and moral grounds and their absence is considered the

<sup>1</sup>A.A.S.T.A. Report on Evacuation. The "Builder", Oct. 20, 1939, p. 596.

cause for the collapse of the scheme, particularly regarding mothers and children.<sup>1</sup>

These structures would not become valueless after the war, like other defence constructional measures, but could serve a great social and educational need in that town children could in summer spend part of their term time in these fully equipped camps. A part of the capital cost could be recouped through individual local authorities taking over one or more camps for the use of the children of their areas. The example of a London Borough which commissioned the design of a holiday centre on the Kent coast is mentioned. Far greater is the other advantage. In their own words:



Evacuation camps erected near London

"There are no short-cuts to successful evacuation. A programme such as we have outlined gives us a chance to end that lack of sympathy between town and country which the present scheme has exposed. We can enrich rural life and at the same time broaden that of the town. We can keep our children in safety by measures of defence that will not only protect from attack, but will give lasting benefits when the war is over."

The Fabian Society which examined the problems raised by this great migration in an impartial manner feels "the early stage of improvisation must merge into the stage where evacuation can be made a complete success; in other words, the social pattern of the country-side has to be re-fashioned in a relatively stable direction." Their emphasis upon the value of permanent buildings to rural betterment is interesting.

"A well-designed experiment in social reform would leave the country a heritage of camp schools, village halls and clubs, nursery, hostels and the like, such as it had never before enjoyed. Permanent

<sup>1</sup>The question of Evacuation camps is receiving the attention of designers, social workers and architects. For plans and details refer: R. C. Butler, "Billeting Accommodation", "Builder," Nov. 3, 1939, pp. 641-646 and Nov. 10 and 17, 1939; Goldfinger, Mary Crowley and Anne Parker, "Builder," Oct. 27, 1939, pp. 615-616; W. H. Hamlyn, "Prestatyn Holiday Camp", "Builder," June 30, 1939, p. 1234; Frank Bennett, Children's Large Scale Camps, "Builder," April 7, 1939, pp. 654-656; The Planning and Design of National Camps, The "Builder," Aug. 11, 1939, pp. 233-238.

links could be established between urban and rural communities ; a sense of the values of right feeding, of air and sunshine, of child nurture and of social enterprise could be carried to half the homes of Britain."

The need for permanent structures and holiday camps is so much felt that even an exhibition of plans and models of evacuation camps for families and a village settlement for mothers and infants, a rural centre for young children with class rooms and dormitory was recently held in London. These plans are of interest to India for they suggest how the problem might be solved especially when husbands remain in cities, by small communities of the scale of family groups, with privacy as well as such social amenities as necessary. These could be planned near existing villages or market towns. The structures, it is considered, should be of such a character and quality as to be of service and permanent value in times of peace as well as war.

The adaptation of existing buildings in rural areas was examined by a well-known Committee who finds that "while much can be done by adapting existing buildings, a considerable constructional programme is required." Although considerable sums would be required it is considered it would be economic.

"The complete programme would employ some 150,000 of them for eighteen months or two years, and would cost about £104,000,000. That the expenditure is quite in proportion to the importance of the matter is apparent if one realises that the capital cost, if repayment were spread over two years, would add less than 6d. to each £1 at present being spent on the war. Further, the measures undertaken would bequeath a valuable legacy to peacetime England."

The Government of Great Britain is also convinced of the value of permanent structures as proved by their scheme of National Camps. Thirty-one Camps were being built by the National Camps Corporation at the beginning of 1941. Camp managers were appointed for 25. Two were occupied by the end of January 1941.

Considerable economies and a healthy national growth would become possible if these structures in villages were used for securing permanent decentralisation of population and industrial production.

This would end to a large extent the need for evacuation whenever national security is endangered. Evacuation cannot be a permanent part of our life as Principal Rowse pointed out in one of his recent addresses.

"Is it to be the background against which our younger generations will grow up? If so, is it not time that human beings, thus wrenched from their habitat, are given shelter, in a psychological as well as physical sense, from the overwhelming dread of the bombing planes of Eastern Europe? That sense of shelter can only be had when the technique of dispersal followed does not involve the breaking up of families, but ensures in an orderly manner the transfer of homes, nay whole communities, with social services, industries and the means of leisure, to the safer zones throughout the country."

The need for permanent decentralisation is being forcibly urged by Town Planners. The uncontrolled growth of cities was being viewed with disfavour during the last many years which culminated in the appointment of the Royal Commission, four and a half years ago whose terms of reference emphasise the "social, economic or strategical disadvantages" arising from the concentration of industry and population in large towns or in particular areas. All the members agree "the objects of national action should be the continued redevelopment of congested urban areas and decentralisation or dispersal of industries and industrial populations therefrom and the encouragement of a reasonable balance in development." After surveying exhaustively the social, economic and strategical effects of population movements in the post-war period and also their causes the members emphasise the need for decentralisation.

A strong case has been made out for permanent decentralisation even if it were possible to organise programmes of evacuation with success. A peace-time use has been pointed out as the strongest case for permanent structures but the arguments adduced by the Council for the Preservation of Rural England possess special value for India where ordered movement for the dispersal of towns could be harnessed to the task of village betterment so much desired in this country.

The need for dispersing the town population in India over the neighbourhood to create living links between rural and urban



parts and encourage flow of men and ideas would become apparent when we analyse carefully, the causes of India's poverty and low standard of living.

It is now realised that the first factor responsible for India's poverty is the continuous drain of money and resources from the rural to the urban area. Year after year crores of rupees are brought to the treasury in the shape of land revenue, remitted to students for university education, sent to creditors as interest and principal, and more crores are taken away by the absentee landlords for spending in towns. Every one knows that over 75 per cent. of our university students are drawn from the rural area, and that cities and towns form the financing centres to the surrounding area. Several factors have tended to make absentee landlordism a universal phenomenon, and if the ryot does not migrate to towns, the townsman is ready to purchase lands from neighbouring villages. Finally, we may mention lawyers and law courts that draw out the villager's wealth. That the sum total of all these is considerable nobody can deny, though it is impossible to estimate the total accurately.

The second factor is the constant drain of men—the powerful and intelligent—from the rural to the urban parts. The enterprising poor are forced to leave the village for a livelihood, and the idle rich are lured away by urban pleasures and city comforts. The huge gulf between our urban and rural standards of living, the enormous disparity between agricultural earnings and income from employment and service (till recently) has tended to drive many a potential leader of the village away from home. Thus, men whose stay in the village would have checked the pace of deterioration, whose initiative and enterprise would have improved the conditions of living are almost lost to the village.

These two factors constitute a "net drain" upon our rural economy. Very little is put back into the village; all that goes back being the salaries of the village officers and servants, and the touring officers of the district, and a part of the public works expenditure that goes towards the wages of labour, etc., and the price paid for food grains by 10 per cent. of the population which is urban. Highly paid officials, and even retired officials, rarely stay in villages, and a very large part of the total State expenditure is incurred in the urban areas.

The break-down in the self-sufficiency of the village has only facilitated the "drain" from the country to the town, and has overburdened our agriculture and created unemployment for the artisan classes and industrial communities and upset the balance between agriculture and manufacturing industry. The other factor is the colossal indifference and apathy of the public towards rural problems in general. It required a disastrous fall in agricultural prices and a catastrophic depression to focus public attention on the need for rural reconstruction in a country where 90 per cent. of the population live in villages. The indifference of the so-called enlightened urban public which is largely responsible for the stagnation of the rural uplift movement in India can be got over successfully only by bringing them in touch with rural folks and problems. And a balanced dispersal not merely from cities to townships but from tiny villages to larger ones is required to restore the correct balance between agriculture and industry and the town and country. This will provide the basis over which a prosperous India could be built.

How can schemes for evacuation and decentralisation help rural reconstruction? The inter-connection between rural poverty and urban apathy to problems connected with ameliorating such conditions would become apparent when we realise that this is largely due to the constant drain of men, money and enterprise from rural to urban areas. If village India is not able to succeed in resisting gradual impoverishment overpowering her, there are not sufficient men and resources left to evolve schemes to check it. Improvement is possible if enterprise and resources are directed from urban to rural centres, if enlightened interest in rural welfare is made possible to those responsible for governing the country who generally reside in towns and if frequent contact is maintained between the two.

For the success of country planning it is essential that the omniscient townsman should acquire a first-hand knowledge of the land, preferably on foot in the winter months, firmly dismissing all those poetical impostures, garnished with "Heym nonny nonny" and the shaggy sketches of picturesquely tottering cottages. There are many hints we might gain from the man on the land.

Holiday camps and week-end resorts would serve this purpose admirably. They may serve as evacuation camps for those who must remain in towns, until air raid-proof cities come into existence;

they would also serve to enrich the country-side with urban resources and earnings. Many attractive places abound all over the country which would serve as welcome resorts to the overstrained citizens. This is vitally necessary to improve the health of urban folk. If English evacuation teaches us a lesson it is this. Children in reception areas are now found to be healthier than when they came. The improvement is considerable. They are able to withstand hardships better.

According to the Ministry of Health, the Nation's health after one thousand days of war is in many respects better than in peace time. The birth rate at 15.5 in the first quarter of 1943 was the highest for any similar quarter in the last twelve years. The infant mortality rate at 61 was the lowest on record, while throughout the war period, the infectious diseases rate had been below the average. Aerial bombardment had not increased mental disorders.

Even in Great Britain it is now felt that a ladder back to the land which shall surmount the artificial barrier that at present divides town and country, is necessary. A recent author (G. Goddard Watts: *An Agricultural Policy for Britain*) condemns "the inverted snobbery of an educational system that thinks only in urban terms and regards an urban calling as the natural goal of the bright boys in the school." The land wants the bright boys, and the problem is, in Mr. Watt's opinion, a simple one of education and apprenticeship, requiring as a solid background improvements in wage rates, increased opportunity, better rural housing and modern amenities. Here the architect and planner comes into the picture, for the success of the scheme largely depends on formulation of a policy and the laying of a plan now, before peace overwhelms us. Conjoint with the steps outlined would be educational and propaganda drives to unite the farmers and win over the townsman (and especially the "hard core" of industrialists) to what is, in effect, a reversal of British economic policy.<sup>1</sup>

A proper road system and communication and transport facilities would make this practicable. The development of electric power will make the decentralisation of industry feasible. These two would pave the way for more extensive decentralisation and "hundred new towns" ideal preached for England would materialise in India. These would form the nucleus wherefrom the movement

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* the "Builder", August 1941, p. 107.

for village betterment would draw sustenance and rural improvement would become practical and successful. A permanent basis to build India's prosperity could be secured by this balanced dispersal which would avoid the dangers to which the excessively urbanised industrial civilisation of Europe is exposed.

Indeed a balanced dispersal not merely from cities but from very small villages to larger ones is essential to restore the correct balance between industry and agriculture, town and country, urban and rural interest.

This will be difficult if not impossible if India gets industrialised on the lines of England. Attempts are made in Europe to decentralise production over the nation and expense needed could be avoided by adopting this step in advance. Widely distributed centres of industrial production are necessary to this vast agricultural country to minimise the cost of transport as well as to help the development of local tastes and requirements.

Various forms have been suggested for camps in the West. Prefabricated materials are recommended. Temporary makeshifts in furniture and equipment are considered. School camps with dormitories, common dining rooms, facilities for study, etc., are suggested as a very desirable ideal, for, this would help urban children to live in rural areas during holidays and recoup their health. The improvement in physique of children in the reception areas of Great Britain proves their value.

The planning and design of National Camps is being given great attention by experts in England and designs suitable for camouflaging the entire area are recommended. They are nothing less than small towns of peculiar design specifically laid out for the collective entertainment and fair-weather accommodation of thousands.

To India permanent decentralisation is to be preferred and immediate steps must be taken to survey the country and select suitable sites for locating her industries and townships. Seaside resorts, pilgrim centres, marketing places and healthy areas fit for sanatoria should form a network wherein permanent structures built of local materials would provide for evacuation if need be. In peace time they would form community centres and house the local rural uplift branch. After some years this centre will develop into a township.

Spacious halls with verandahs, with rooms in the form of a quadrangle and vegetable gardens, poultry farms, tanks and playgrounds as also accommodation for cooking for holiday makers would be essential. A school for the children of the surrounding area would also be helpful. But provision must be made for facilitating periodic demonstration and shows to bring home to the residents of the region, improvements and ideas in different aspects of life. These holiday camps properly designed and located would be economic and paying. These centres might send supplies to the neighbouring city. Handicrafts and small scale industries could be developed. The development of electric power in our country will help the progress of small industry and properly guided would prevent the tragic growth of industry and slums now facing Great Britain.

This is perhaps the best method of arresting the drain from country to town already noted and these centres might even now be selected and the accommodation surveyed to prepare camps for temporary schemes of evacuation for emergency. The war clouds have sufficiently gathered to make this task imperative and immediate plans must be made to minimise destruction. The level country surrounding Indian cities is helpful and places must be found to evacuate citizens and their belongings in emergency.

Such a plan to develop the countryside to secure permanent decentralisation has been recommended by an Expert Committee set up by the Ministry of Works in England. The report of the Lord Justice Scotts Committee recommends a five-year plan to make Britain's country-side both useful and beautiful. It emphasises the importance of reviving village life by improving housing and general living conditions, and adds that a rural housing programme should be carried out after the war. Village houses should be equipped with electricity, gas and running water and adequate social and cultural amenities should be provided for the countryside population. The recommendations have an important bearing upon conditions in India and might be followed with advantage to help also, the immediate problem of evacuation of vulnerable areas.

They emphasise that the movement from the country into the town should be checked by improving the provisions for rural

living and bring out clearly that while the development of the towns has been by no means satisfactory—in many respects these are ugly, congested, inconvenient and only moderately healthy, this having been characterised by a mixture of deliberation and fortuity. Industry and other considerations have brought about a continuous drift from the rural population, and the above-mentioned measures must be developed to the maximum extent. Electric power enables light industries to be more distributed; a studied grouping in village design should, however, be based in the main on agricultural requirements, and the village plan to be of the “enclosed” rather than the “roadside” type, with buildings round a green or series of greens in a pattern which is capable of natural expansion and with the church, the school, the institute and the inn occupying important positions. Village planning is full of subtleties concerning scale and character.

They recommend the setting up of a permanent advisory committee on village life and institutions; it should include representatives of the Board of Education, the Ministry of Agriculture; “steps should be taken to provide social centres of the village college type throughout the country; a village hall should be provided in all smaller villages; the performance of certain duties should be incumbent upon a properly elected Parish Council”.

Every village should be provided with adequate playing fields.

There should be an extension of afforestation on poor land, together with the establishment of foresters' part-time holdings and national forest parks; a forestry commission should be empowered to enforce the proper management of all woodland in the country; more attention should be paid to the planting of trees and shrubs in the design and lay-out of housing development.

There must be facility of access for all to the countryside but this must not interfere with the proper use of land in the national interest; the Education and Agriculture Departments should organise a publicity campaign with the bodies concerned to educate the urban public, the landowners and farmers in the better provision and enjoyment of access to the countryside; there should be an extension of organised visits officially recognised and supported by the Education Department, of parties of school-children into the countryside; if educational publicity fails adequately to control the use of the countryside by the urban public, there should be severe penalties and a stricter enforcement of the law.

National Parks should be delimited and a National Parks Authority set up, and in consultation with the Department of Agriculture should take steps to record details of common lands, safeguard public rights of access, and commoners' rights ; also the upkeep of commons should be investigated.

Further, holiday camps should be provided, subject to planning, control of siting and design.

Legislation should be passed imposing an obligation on all those who derive benefit from the working of land for minerals to restore that land for agriculture or afforestation or to other purposes within a short specified period of time after the land has been worked out. In future, where land is leased or bought for the purpose of extracting minerals the primary responsibility for restoring the surface should be placed on those working the minerals, leaving it to them to make suitable financial arrangements with the landowners or other persons concerned ; production and storage units of public utility undertakings must sometimes be located in villages or in the open countryside. They should be subject to strict planning control as regards siting and appearance.

Rural trades and crafts should continue to be sited in small towns or villages and should be encouraged. The creation of guilds of craftsmen and the whole question of apprenticeship to such crafts should be reviewed.

Trades providing for the conveniences of life must find a place in country areas in small towns or villages, which are most convenient for the rural communities.

No modern industry has been suggested which would provide seasonal or part-time employment for agricultural workers and their families ; appropriate bodies should be asked to make a special study of this problem.

As far as possible tracts of good soil in the neighbourhood of towns and villages should be kept for the dual purpose of open spaces and market gardens and allotments, and accordingly allotment holders should have security of tenure instead of the liability of being displaced by housing developments. Provision should be made for town-dwellers to keep pigs and poultry and to continue other rural occupations ; the area and delimitation of " green belts " should be agreed with the Department of Agriculture.

Agricultural, soil, and land classification surveys should be made round each expanding urban area with the object of directing housing and other construction towards less productive land and preventing the disruption of farm units; new satellite towns, housing estates, garden cities and suburbs should be sited wherever practicable away from the better farm land, and due attention should be paid to agricultural consideration in their siting, as in the case of the planning of existing towns.

New villages and extensions of villages should be planned and should as far as possible be of a compact and closely knit character; all new villages and country towns should be situated away from main traffic roads though within easy access to them.

Universities, colleges and professional institutions should draw up comprehensive schemes for the training of young men and women to act as planners and architects who could visualise the need for long-term policies for example, in agriculture to secure the necessary conditions of stability for satisfactory development.

Till now, national planning has scarcely been undertaken in Britain, and there has never been in Britain a proper co-ordination of the research underlying national planning. They consider this as an essential function of the Central Planning Authority. In the meantime, the research work required has been begun by the Planning Division of the Ministry of Works and Planning. It is of the utmost importance that this work should be extended, and they recommend especially the presentation of the information in map form on a uniform scale and the preparation of a national atlas of standardised maps for use in national planning. They recommend that "a plan be drawn up, consistent with the general policy for continuous national planning of work to be completed within five years, and that the execution of the work be undertaken accordingly."

### Housing the Bombed-out

All citizens cannot evacuate. Many of the residents of a town must remain there because their work is in the town or because they have nowhere else to go.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Vide U. P. Govt. A.R.P. Hand Book No. 5. The Education and Control of the Public.



Apart from the initial difficulties the disinclination of a man to leave his home which contains in many cases all his worldly wealth, and the strength of the purdah system, the numbers to be evacuated in any but the smallest towns would be too large to permit of evacuation within a reasonable period and there would be every likelihood of the arrival of hostile air-craft with the population crowded together in the streets in the process of evacuation forming a magnificent target for bombing, machine-gunning or spraying of gas with maximum effect. When raids start many will be scared and others bombed out and lose all their possessions. Measures to look after them should therefore be concerted in advance.

The air raids on Calcutta alarmed the ignorant and timid, large numbers of whom have, for days, streamed out of the city by every means of locomotion, including their own legs. This is natural and was long forecast. There is no need to be alarmed about it. "Part of Calcutta's population has gone", wrote the "Statesman", after the opening raids. The "Amrita Bazaar Patrika" said there was nothing like widespread panic in Calcutta but that does not mean that there has been no shaking of the average citizen's mind. Over 100 natives of Malabar working in firms in Calcutta walked miles from Calcutta along the railway line and boarded the train at a wayside station and arrived at Madras on their way to Malabar on 29-12-42. Although the exodus from Calcutta after the five air raids during Christmas week was by no means sufficient to kill the life of the city, the city's life was upset to some extent. It was only a few days after the raids ended that sufficient casual labour was in the market to supply the market's demands as was officially stated.<sup>1</sup>

The Government of Orissa had to issue a Press Note addressing all Oriyas, who had left their employment in Calcutta following the air raids on the city, to return there as soon as possible in their own interest.

Air raids have rendered thousands homeless in Bristol, Southampton, Plymouth, London, etc.<sup>2</sup> Empty houses in the West End of London were utilised to house many London families bombed

<sup>1</sup> *The Hindu*, 9-1-43.

<sup>2</sup> Some 160,000 people had to live in tents as a result of R.A.F. raids on Genoa, reported travellers from Italy. The Italian authorities were unable to evacuate the homeless owing to enormous communication difficulties.

out of their homes and who were not willing to leave the capital. In the earlier days of the Blitz Government did not provide for this factor which invited bitter criticism in the Press.

As Mr. Kingsley Martin put it in the *New Statesman and Nation* the Government miscalculated the nature of the war.

"Everything was done," he said, "to prepare for death and injury. Tens of thousands of papier-mâché coffins were ready; excellent hospital arrangements were made; first-class ambulance and nursing arrangements were ready. But no thought had been taken for the living and uninjured homeless." The homeless were allowed to drift and such thronging of the civilians might have created panic and confusion, so fatal for morale, but for the tireless work of volunteer workers, particularly the clergy and doctors of the East End.

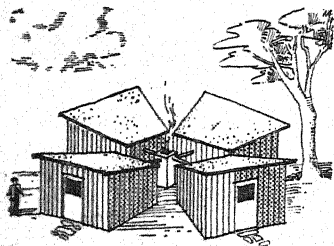
The most unforeseen result of raids on Great Britain was the number of people who could be rendered homeless, or at least lose many of their personal possessions. "Administration centres" had to be set up, to which they could go to get temporary or permanent new houses, cash allowances to purchase immediate necessities, obtain information as to missing relatives, and so on. Side by side with these centres special communal feeding centres had to be set up for those whose ordinary facilities broke down, through the destruction of their houses or fuel stocks or failure of water, gas or electricity supplies. In addition "rest centres" had to be set up to provide temporary homes for the homeless. Information officers at rest centres were found to be most helpful. It was found necessary to lay down stocks of food for emergency feeding, to provide mobile canteens and keep special stocks of food for infant feeding.

The dislocation of domestic life and the changes in social habits due to the raids are also tremendous. Sleep is most important for the human system, and its interruption due to raids necessitates people snatching a nap whenever possible.

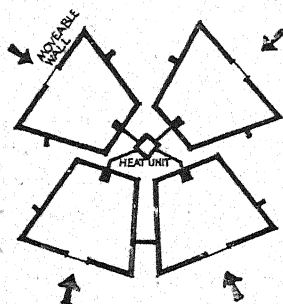
The Ministry of Works have, therefore, built hutment camps outside London for bombed-out civilians. Homeless people live in them until their houses have received "first aid" repair, or until they can get to friends or relatives or be billeted. They are

built on the fringes of certain towns liable to enemy attack as temporary rest centres for bombed-out civilians, and some in cities also.

Made in sections, the huts are long low structures of standard pattern designed for rapid erection.



PERSPECTIVE



PLAN

Camps suitable for erection around Indian cities for housing the bombed-out

are needed around Indian cities for dispersing the essential city population as well as for those bombed out. A suitable design is shown and might be adopted for it is quickly erected from local material. Hospital accommodation is also necessary away from cities, as experience has shown in Rangoon.

Each hut will provide accommodation for 32 single persons or be divided into compartments for married or family quarters.

Essential furniture equipment and sleeping bunks will be provided. There will be a communal dining room on each site, and cooking will be done in a central cook-house.

There will be medical and other attendants on each site.

Camps are not for permanent residence, but supplement the rest centre system.

Homeless people should live in them until their houses have received "first aid" repair, or until they can get to friends or relatives or be billeted. Such

Recent raids on Calcutta has brought the problem of providing food and shelter to the people who might be rendered homeless as a result of an air raid on the city, to the forefront. The Government of Bengal arranged the running of 15 rescue homes established in different parts of the city, where persons rendered destitute due to

an air raid could be taken and given food and shelter for a week. The initial expenditure for establishing these homes was Rs. 2,72,000, while the running expense amounted to Rs. 76,000 a month. Food-stuffs held in reserve for consumption in these homes involved an expenditure of Rs. 4,50,000. Government had also to prevent the closing of food grain stores and shops.

The U. P. Government long before the raid on Calcutta, had visualised this problem. They had pointed out, that evacuation in a different form may become necessary as a result of an actual raid. A particular area might be badly damaged, roads torn up, water mains and drains extensively damaged, houses destroyed by bombs or gutted by fire, and numbers of dead bodies trapped under the debris of fallen buildings. Such an area would require clearing up as soon as possible and the presence of survivors would only hamper the process. Another area might be rendered unsafe by the presence of an unexploded bomb. In any circumstance, the area should be cordoned off and the survivors or residents evacuated to a place of safety until the dangers to life and health are removed. It is not likely that there would be sufficient space accommodation inside the city for anything other than evacuation on a very small scale and for a very short period and suitable sites on the outskirts would have to be utilized. These should be surveyed beforehand with due regard to drainage, water supply and ease of access. In the event of such evacuation taking place arrangements would be required for sanitation, food supplies and medical attention for those evacuated and for guarding the evacuated area to prevent looting and petty pilfering.<sup>1</sup>

### Decongestion

Equally urgent is the third aspect of this question, namely, the decongestion of overcrowded centres in vulnerable cities, and the removal of people residing around obvious targets at least to the outskirts of cities. Slum clearance assumes a new significance for they will contribute most to the destruction and panic when there is a raid. Indeed air raids are a challenge to slums, to inadequacy of our street systems and our neglect of the requirements of planning and healthful living. A policy immediately launched would provide the basis for reshaping our cities on the model suggest-

<sup>1</sup>U. P. Govt. A.R.P.H. 5, p. 2.

ed in Chapter VI. The provision of facilities for transport, water-supply and policing would make this decongestion possible and practicable. Even slum clearance in the accepted sense of the term will not cost more than what will have to be incurred on A.R.P. for the slum areas, together with the recurring expenditure on civic services maintained to prevent its dangerous consequences to the civic organism.

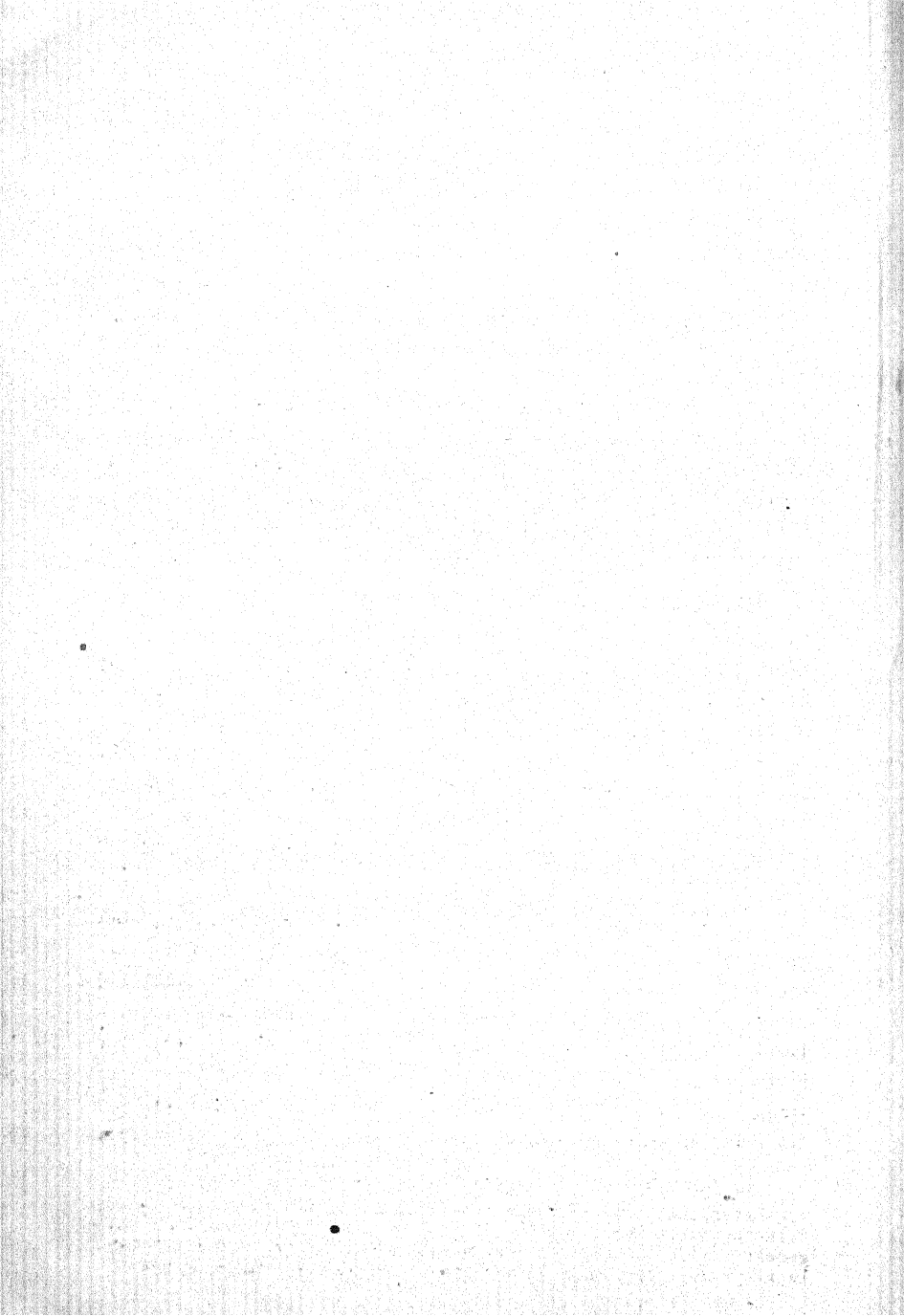
A scheme for permanent decentralisation and regrouping of population and industry, plans for holiday camps and week-end resorts and evacuation and a programme for decongestion should be made if the destruction from air raids should be minimised and ultimately prevented. The problem in India is less expensive than in European countries but not less urgent. This is further necessary to make possible the provision of shelters and protective accommodation in cities. Without these measures not merely shelter provision would prove inadequate but impossible.

---

## **CHAPTER VIII**

---

### **AIR RAID SHELTERS**



## CHAPTER VIII

### AIR RAID SHELTERS

To those who must stay in vulnerable areas, measures to protect their person from injury and death caused by air-craft bombs and their consequences are necessary. In an emergency it is difficult, almost impossible to provide all the population with accommodation ensuring absolute safety, such as those described in Chapter III. Since direct hits are very few, measures to safeguard the citizens from blast and splinters, demolition of structures and anti-aircraft shell shrapnel alone, are considered practicable and sufficient. Air raid shelters, as such protective accommodations are styled, have been provided in almost every city where air attack is anticipated. They are found in China, Malaya, India, Turkey, Germany, France, Switzerland, etc. and in Great Britain:

Millions of pounds have been spent on the Continent of Europe and in Great Britain on air raid shelters. Seventy million sterling was allotted for civil defence during the financial year 1939-40, in Great Britain and during the first half of the year 1939 " nine hundred thousand steel air raid shelters capable of efficiently sheltering nearly five and a half million people " were supplied, free to householders in vulnerable areas whose income did not exceed £250 per annum. Employers have also been compelled to provide shelter protection to their employees. Thus the majority of urban inhabitants of Great Britain have air raid shelters.

Many kinds of shelters have been erected and existing accommodation wherever suitable is also strengthened and converted into shelters.<sup>1</sup> Some of them are within a building, some outside and independent. Some are overground, some deep underground. Brick, cement and steel are used and even timber has its place in their construction or conversion. They are large, medium or small in size ; small shelters are for families ; medium size ones are for commercial and business premises ; large shelters are designed

<sup>1</sup>Air Raid Shelters are classified as follows by Prof. Haldane.

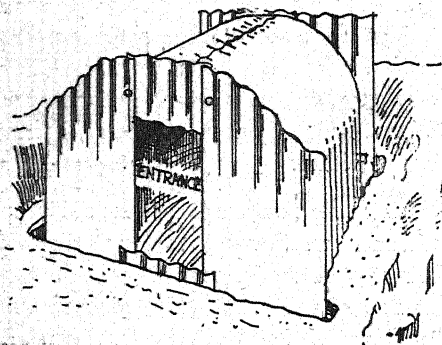
Refuge-rooms in ordinary houses; Steel frame and other strong rooms ; Trenches and shallow dug-outs; Deeper dug-outs and special shelters; Underground railways and other tunnels; Tunnels made for shelter purposes; Bomb-proof underground shelters other than tunnels; conical towers.



for factories, floating population and large communities ; shelters for key men are perhaps the smallest. The small shelter is recommended for families for access and proximity. The Home Office of Great Britain, relies largely upon this feature. Large shelters are preferred for efficiency and economy. Medium shelters are ideally suited for offices and commercial concerns.

### Domestic Shelters

Great Britain relies upon the small steel shelter to 'break the back of the shelter problem.' Popularly known as the Anderson



Anderson Steel Shelter set in position ready to be covered by earth

Steel Shelter this was distributed free to householders with incomes not exceeding 250 pounds a year. This is to be installed in the garden, sunk three feet in the ground and covered with earth and sand-bags. Blast and splinter-proof to 500 pounds high explosive bombs exploding not nearer than 50 feet it is regarded as

the most practical solution for safeguarding the people.<sup>1</sup>

The shelters are constructed of very strong galvanised corrugated steel sheets and have been subjected to rigorous tests to ensure that their strength when erected would take the weight of any debris that might fall upon them from a house of the type for which they are designed.<sup>2</sup>

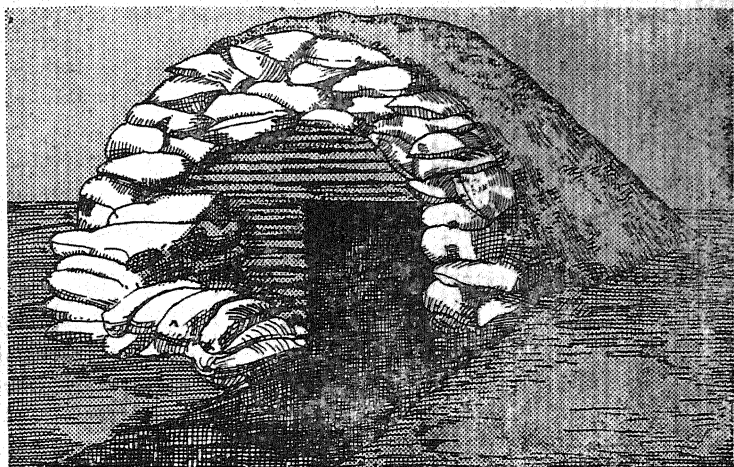
<sup>1</sup> These shelters are distributed free to the following :

1. Persons whose occupations are compulsorily insurable under the National Health Insurance Act.
2. Persons not compulsorily insured under the National Health Insurance Act, who are mainly dependent on earnings (or pension) not exceeding £250.

This amount would be increased by £50 for each child of school age in excess of two.

<sup>2</sup> Vide A.R.P. Dept. Circ., January 9, 1939, "Provision of Air Raid Shelter", pp. 13-18.

They are made in sections and can be put together by two persons without any special skill or experience. They will be supplied as units of dimensions of approximately 6 ft. 6 in. by 4 ft. 6 in. by 6 ft. high, the completed unit weighing about 8 cwts. A unit shelter of these dimensions will provide shelter for from four to six persons, and sections can be added to take more persons if there are more members in the household.



The Anderson Steel Shelter

While the unit is provided with channels which enable it to rest on the ground, it is designed for being partly sunk and for the earth excavated to be used as additional cover to make the shelter more secure against blast and splinters.

The shelter, as supplied, would accommodate from four to six persons, and when sections are added to this unit may take two or four more persons.

The maximum number of persons that can be accommodated in the standard shelter with extensions, is ten. If it is desired to accommodate more than ten persons, two shelters of appropriate size should be erected.

The standard shelter with the extensions may be used for houses of three or even four storeys, if it is possible to site the shelter at a distance from the house or any neighbouring building of at least half the height of the nearest wall of the house or other building.

Where that distance exceeds 15 feet an earthen or other wall should be erected to provide splinter-proof protection for the shelter entrance.



An Anderson Steel Shelter

Generally they are suitable for houses of not more than two storeys with a space large enough to enable the shelter to be sunk, of the type normally occupied by insured persons.

It has saved the lives of thousands of people. There are many cases where bombs have fallen almost a few feet away from such shelters, the inhabitants of which have escaped unhurt although in many cases dazed by concussion.<sup>1</sup>

Bunks should be provided in Anderson Shelters for sleeping purposes. Some Londoners have installed four bunks for adults, each 6 ft. 6 in. in length and across the two, smaller bunks for children. They are 20 inches wide and leave room for a 14-inch gangway and solve the problem

of staying within during nights.

<sup>1</sup>The violent and very extensive raids by the *Luftwaffe* in the week ending August 17 provided a most reassuring demonstration of the efficacy of the Anderson Shelter, when it has been properly covered with earth and the entrance adequately screened. Both at Croydon and in the Midlands its value was proved. When a bomb dropped in the middle of a triangle formed of three Anderson shelters in a Midlands town, the occupants of all escaped unhurt. Seven people taking cover in a home-made shelter, however, were killed. Seven persons sheltering in an Anderson shelter in another Midlands area were unharmed by a bomb which exploded immediately outside it. When sixteen Nazi bombers were caught at Tilbury (Essex) between the A.A. Barrage and "Spitfires" they scattered and fled to sea with a vicious pursuit encouraging them. Six of their bombs fell on a housing estate. Four exploded harmlessly on grass verges, and two blew out the sides of a council house, but the occupants were in their Anderson Shelter, less than ten yards away, and were unhurt. One man in South London, with his wife and two children who had been evacuated from Folkestone, said that they were in an Anderson Shelter during the raid on August 18 when five bombs fell within a distance of 100 yards. "Our little shelter trembled," he said, "but we suffered no shock and no damage, though our windows were broken." On the other hand, people in an Anderson Shelter in the South-Western suburbs were injured by bomb splinters penetrating the back of the shelter, which was not completely covered with earth. *The Illustrated London News*, August 24, 1940, p. 232.

It has been found that it is not possible to erect this for every home. Flooding is a risk to which this is liable. The Lord Privy Seal recognised "a spell of wet weather" may produce troubles and special instructions have been given by Government. Measures are suggested for shelters already erected and where they have not been erected it is considered expedient to construct a 4-inch concrete, or one-course brick floor in the shelter; or lining of the actual sump excavation with timber boarding or brick, or concrete, whether precast or *in situ*; and the lining of the inner walls of the shelter, up to ground level. This may entail an extra cost ranging from £1 5s. to £3 13s. The cost of a steel shelter is about £8 according to manufacturers.

Many Anderson Shelters have been abandoned by the public and local authorities since they found it impossible to make them waterproof. The result of a survey carried out by the Ministry, however, showed that methods previously advocated for dealing with these problems can be effective if carried out honestly and with care. In a later Circular No. 96—1941 the Ministry of Home Security made further recommendations for drainage, concrete, tanking, construction of sumps, floors and a method of clay puddling to seal joints.

Experiments have been made in Birmingham by the City Engineer and Surveyor with the building of Anderson Shelters inside the living rooms of small houses.<sup>1</sup>

If an Anderson Shelter is erected in a living room, it has to be bolted down to the floor and strutted with timber so as to be rigid enough to withstand, without collapse, the fall of the house in case this should occur. Although inconvenient in the average living-room, it is still possible in many cases to use the remaining portion of the room for meals and other domestic purposes.

In a household where not more than four people would require to sleep in the shelter it is quite reasonable to establish a normal living-room in one of the present bedrooms and to turn the downstairs living-room into a dormitory. This is not entirely convenient because the existing living-room usually contains the cooking stove, cupboards and other amenities, but an upstairs room can be used just as well as a sitting-room as one on the ground-floor.

<sup>1</sup>J.I.M.Cy.E., Vol. LXVII, No. 9, pp. XX-XXIV.

When an Anderson Shelter is placed in the living-room it is usually necessary to build a blast wall outside the living-room window because the protection of an earth covering over the shelter cannot, of course, be supplied. When this is done, the people sleeping in the shelter should be reasonably secure from splinters, from injury due to collapse of the house, and from falling shrapnel or debris which usually will not penetrate through the floor of the upstairs room.

The help which is being given by the Birmingham Public Works Department to those wishing to take advantage of this experiment by having their Anderson Shelter erected in their house consists of advice, the timber and other materials necessary for strutting and, if available, the concrete blocks for building a blast wall. The Public Works Department are only in a position to carry out the work for a very limited number of persons who cannot do it themselves. Wherever possible, householders are urged to try to carry out the conversion themselves. Assistance by the Department must be limited to those cases where the Anderson Shelter at present is quite unusable owing to its being continuously waterlogged and where, in addition, there is no man in the house.

To facilitate erection, the Department has prepared explanatory notes and sketches. It is pointed out that the shelter should be erected with one side close to a 9-inch wall and the side which is not supported by a wall must then be well strutted, to prevent it collapsing under the debris load if the house is damaged. The two ends are tied together with steel rods which will be supplied.

As the steel shelter gives no protection against bomb splinters, it is essential that any door and window openings not masked by another wall within 15 feet distance, should be screened by a wall of brick or concrete blocks filled with sand, boxes of earth or other suitable material. The top of the wall should be at least above the level of the head of a person sitting in the shelter. The entrance to the shelter can be altered to floor level by raising the small corrugated sheet and fixing it in the position of the present opening.

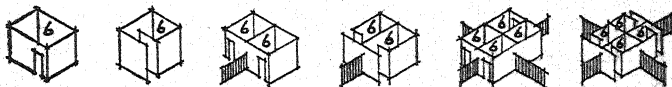
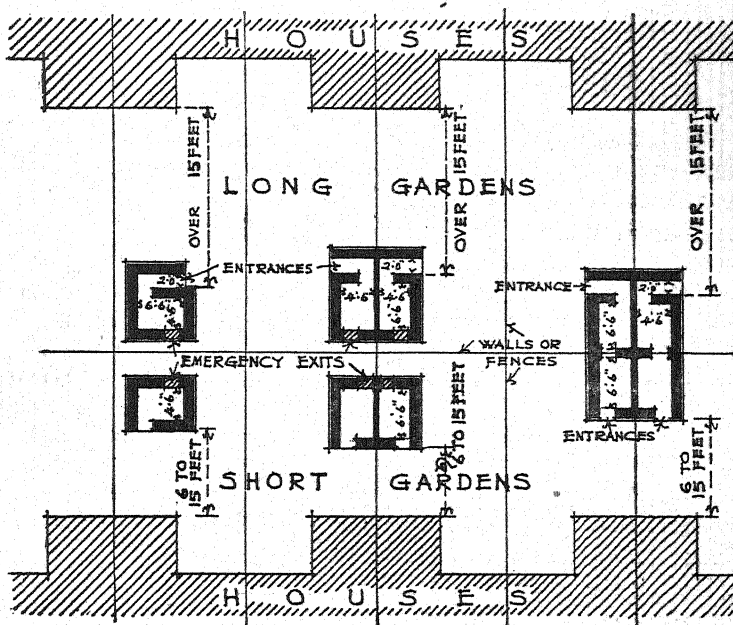
The materials which the Corporation supply in the first instance are timber and the necessary bolts, and when the shelter has been fixed and inspected, old bricks or other material for blast walls will be supplied. The timber has to be cut to the required lengths, and

the bricks in many cases have to be cleaned. Persons with reasonable ability to carry out rough household carpentry and odd jobs are able to do the work for themselves.

The schedule of materials required is as follows:—

Timber—4 in. by 2 in: 5 lengths 6 ft. 6 in. long; 2 lengths 6 ft. 3 in. long; 2 lengths 4 ft. 6 in. long; 2 lengths 3 ft. long; 2 lengths 1 ft. long; 2 lengths 9 in. long; 2 lengths 4 in. long.

Timber—4 in. by 3 in: 2 lengths 4 ft. 3 in. long; 2 lengths 2 ft. long; 2 lengths 9 in. long.



### DOMESTIC SURFACE SHELTERS

Six hardwood wedges.

$4\frac{1}{2}$  in. diameter steel tie-rods, cranked and threaded. Four nuts and washers. Six nuts, bolts and washers; a quantity of 6-in. nails. 4 wood screws and washers.

Where the problem appears to be almost insoluble by reason of high subsoil water level, domestic surface shelters are provided free to eligible householders where a site is available which is not suitable for the steel shelter.

The plans given above show the type drawings prepared by the Home Office<sup>1</sup> indicating the single unit shelter and the various multiple lay-outs. The cost of the single unit shelter (without floor or traverse) to accommodate 6 persons has been estimated by the Home Office to come up to £19-10-0 erected complete.

It has a reinforced concrete roof, and a concrete floor (if required). The walls could be either of brick, mass concrete or concrete blocks.

Experience, however, showed that people preferred to stay at home in spite of raids during nights, for various reasons. Government evolved an indoor shelter for free distribution among the people in the place of the Anderson Steel Shelter.

The Department of Home Security now issue this new indoor shelter resembling a big table. It can be easily converted into a splinter-proof shelter at night and used as table during day as announced by the Ministry of Home Security in Parliament.

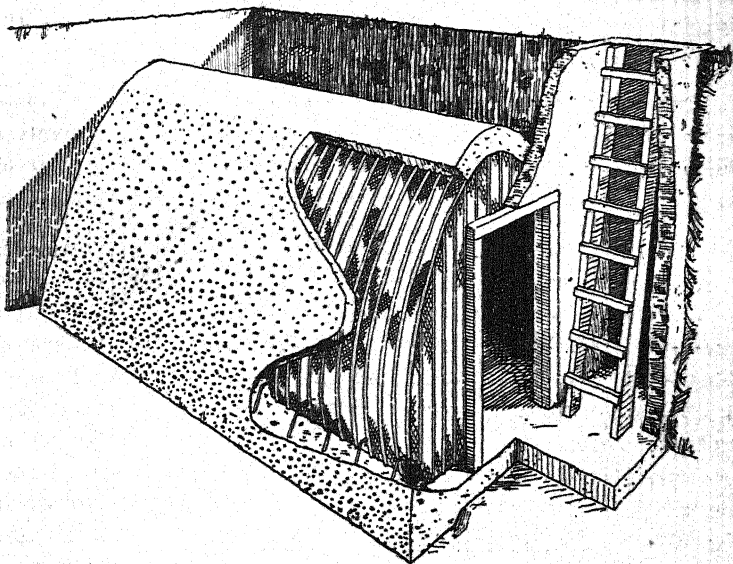
The new shelter as announced by Mr. Herbert Morrison is for installation on the lowest floor of two or three-storey houses and will hold two adults and one older child or two younger children. Experience emphasises the advantages of the indoor shelter achieving the object of dispersal, of warmth and dryness and avoiding leaving the house at nights and the dislocation of family life. Experience has also shown that houses afforded more protection than was once thought. Experts have produced this steel structure for use inside the house. It can be used as a table for meals or work so that the whole room is not put out of action. At night screens are hooked on to the sides. There is the added protection of the house walls, a steel top to support debris and a way of escape through detachable ends and sides. The table-shelter has been so designed that householders can put it together themselves with spanner and hammer—important because there is no labour to spare for erection.

<sup>1</sup>Directions for the erection of Domestic Surface Shelters.



Indoor table shelters can also be made of wood and would provide peace-time use. The material used could also be, if required, utilised for other purposes. The wooden is now also recommended in Great Britain. Bulletin C. 21 describes and illustrates in detail an indoor "table shelter, designed by the Forest Products Research Laboratory and the Ministry of Home Security, which has passed the prescribed tests, and which can be made up by any carpenter in 24 man-hours or by a handy man. Including nails and fire-retarding paint, the cost of materials required is estimated to vary from £3 to £4-10s according as the timber is salvaged or new.

Various kinds of domestic shelters have been suggested. They consist of steel shells like the Anderson Shelter to be embedded and covered with earth or concrete or erected on the site like the domestic surface shelters in brick or concrete.



Concrete shelter with steel reinforcement, for six persons

The Wilmot's "Fortress" is let in the ground to a minimum depth of 2 ft. 6 in. and may be covered over with concrete, earth or sandbags. The inside can be made comparatively comfortable by forming the floor and seats with boards. It is made of galvanised corrugated sheets, built in the form of a rigid arch, mounted on



angle-iron frame. The ends are formed of stout timber, covered with flat galvanized steel. One end is provided with aperture and doors can be fitted if desired, also 21-in. square hinged shutter at the rear end for use as escape shaft. The two standard sizes will seat six or twelve adults. The actual height of the shelter is 4 ft. As the base is fixed on the seating level, the necessary extra height is obtained by excavating for leg room. Prices in Great Britain are :

Six seater 5 ft. long 4 ft. wide .. £4-10-0

Twelve seater 10 ft. long 4 ft. wide .. £6-10-0

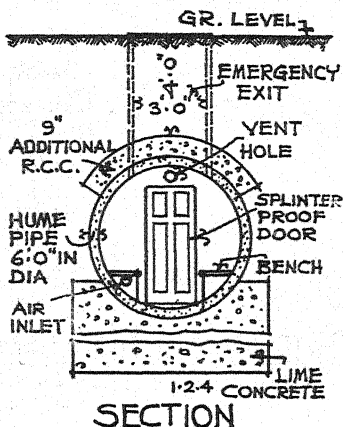
Similar to these are Booth's garden shelters. They could be covered with sandbags or sunk in ground and covered with earth or concrete. They could also be erected partly sunk. Concrete shelters reinforced with steel as shown in page 337 are recommended by another manufacturer. This "C" type shelter (concrete cut away) to show curved "Self-centering" steel framework) accommodates 6 persons. Top of arch is 3 feet below ground level and the access is through a ladder. The framework is curved ready for fixing, and can be quickly and easily placed in position.

Under certain conditions they may be placed below the ground floors of buildings. Both partial framework and reinforcement are offered by this kind of prefabricated steel shell.

There is another type semi-circular in shape for over ground erection, away from buildings to accommodate 6 persons. Different varieties of domestic concrete shelters have been suggested by associations established for furthering the cause of cement. The circular pit shelter is erected in the garden at least 20 feet away from a building. The cost of materials comes to about £7 and it is considered that it can be erected by any amateur who has experience of concrete work, in the garden.

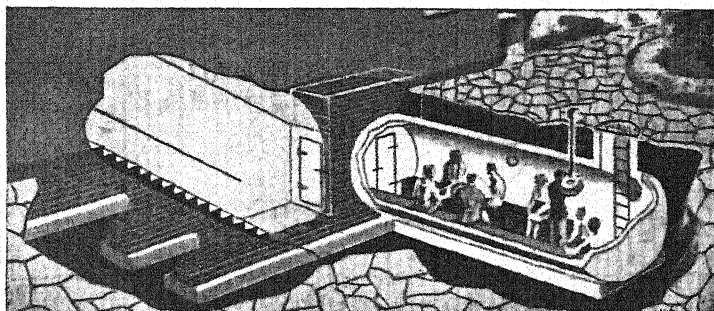
Concrete blocks could be used for the erection of surface type of shelters and may be covered with sandbags and earth; sandbag on the roof above the entrance and a layer of earth 1 ft. 9 in. deep over the remainder of the roof, and earth piled all round the wall. A gas curtain could be fixed to complete the shelter.

Large diameter concrete pipes make excellent splinter-proof shelters, if buried, or if covered with a layer of concrete or a mound of earth. The pipes are laid like a section of a sewer. Suitable pipes or tubes may be obtained from concrete pipe manufacturers and installed by any builder or contractor who has the necessary lifting equipment. In Spain large diameter concrete tubes were driven into hill sides to provide protective accommodation.



Tube shelter in position  
showing one end

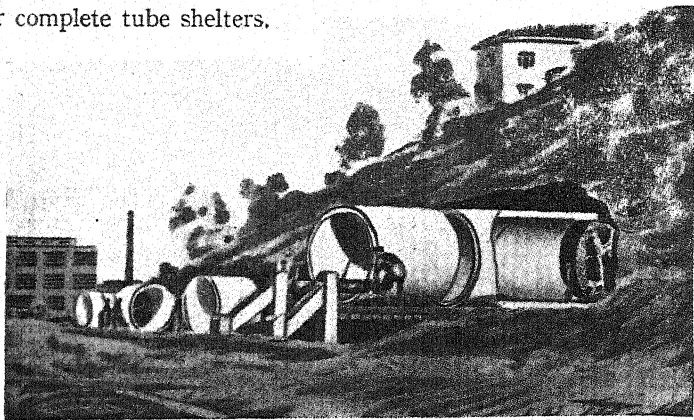
If possible the tube should be installed either well clear of buildings, or at right angles to the house, so that the emergency exit is always free and available.



A concrete pipe Domestic Shelter

If the shelter is ventilated by having the entrance left open, it may be occupied for an unlimited period, gas masks being carried by the occupants for use in the event of a gas attack. If the shelter is provided with a gas-tight door or screen it can be occupied for only a limited time, unless the door is opened periodically to admit fresh air; alternatively, a ventilation and gas filtration plant, capable of delivering 150 c. ft. of filtered fresh air per person per hour, may be installed.

Such concrete tubes could be manufactured locally as also concrete blank ends, door frame sections, and other parts necessary for complete tube shelters.

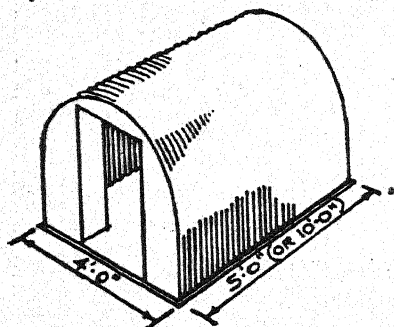


Large precast concrete tubes inserted into hill sides or slag heaps make Air Raid Shelters

Tube shelters may be placed entirely below ground level or partly above ground; in the latter case the protruding portion of the tube should either be encased with concrete 10 in. thick, or covered with a mound of earth (30 in.). In either case the tubes should be placed on an even bed of mass concrete laid at the bottom of the excavation.

Suitable diameters, range from 4 ft. to 7 ft. 6 in. In the smaller sizes a single bench seat may be provided, allowing a 2 ft. length for each person. In diameters of 6 ft. and over two benches may be installed so that the occupants sit in two rows facing each

other; in this case one person can be accommodated for each foot length of tube. This assumes that either a ventilating plant is installed, or fresh air is admitted.



A typical steel shell for erecting family shelters

With corrugated iron shell as a frame and reinforcement, small family shelters could be erected with concrete. Curved, corrugated iron sheets may be purchased.

Alternatively corrugated iron air raid shelter "Shells"

complete with framework, bolts, door, etc., may be purchased from various firms. A small "Shell" as shown is obtainable from many builder's merchants and is made in sizes 4 ft. wide and 5 ft. long to seat 6 persons, or 10 ft. long to seat 12 persons.

The entrance steps and sides are also concreted and opposite the entrance a masking wall is erected to give protection from splinters.

The pill-box dual purpose A.R.P. shelter discussed in detail later is erected above ground and is blast and splinter-proof. Either stone, brick or cement concrete could be used and it is perhaps the most useful overground shelter for the family.

In principle there are two types of concrete shelters. Both involve a covering of earth to protect the occupants from splinters unless the concrete itself is of splinter-proof thickness; 15 in. of unreinforced concrete or 12 in. of reinforced concrete. One type comprises precast units, which may be purchased from precast concrete firms, and erected at the site: the other type which is especially recommended for wet situations, is constructed of reinforced concrete, which involves mixing the concrete at the site, and placing it in a plastic condition between temporary wooden shuttering, erected in advance to give the shelter the shape required.

Although the above-ground or surface splinter-proof shelter possesses undoubted advantages, such as immunity from flooding risks and greater suitability for use as a garden shed or cycle stores etc., the below ground or partly buried shelter is, in some cases, considered preferable and in normal times may serve as store for fruits, vegetables, etc. For example, considerations of available space, the slope of the ground, interference with the garden lay-out, or the fact that the standing water level in the ground is permanently below that of the floor of the proposed shelter, thus facilitating excavation, may influence the choice of type and favour below-ground construction.

In all sunk or half sunk shelters care must be taken that the floor is strengthened to resist upward water pressure if the ground water level is more than about 1 foot above the underside of the floor slab.

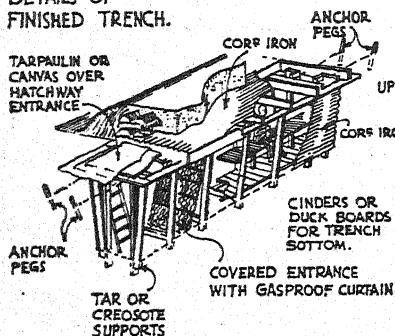
Another variety is the Garden Trench.<sup>1</sup> Where space is available in a garden a trench provides protection except against direct

<sup>1</sup>Home Office Pamphlet on Garden Trenches.

hits. In order that the trench shall be clear of any chance of being buried under wreckage it has to be at least 20 feet from a building. A trench for 6 persons is shown below.

Fig. 1

### DETAILS OF FINISHED TRENCH.



### FINISHED TRENCH

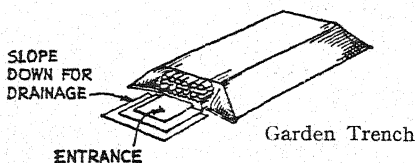
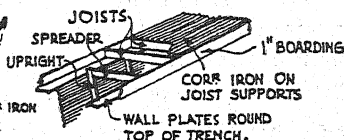


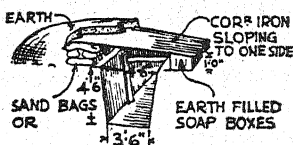
Fig. 3

Fig. 2

### SECTION OF TRENCH SHOWING, JOISTS



### 'QUICKLY BUILT' EMERGENCY TRENCH



IF SIDES REQUIRE SUPPORTS  
USE 4x2 WOODEN UPRIGHTS  
HELD BY WEDGED CROSS BEAMS

Fig. 4.

The bottom of the trench is 6 ft. below ground level and the width is 3 ft. 6 in. at the bottom of the trench and 4 ft. 6 in. at the top. It is divided into three sections:

1. A Shelter, 10 ft. long, in which the occupants sit on a seat along one side.
2. A covered entrance, 3 ft. long, with a sloping gas curtain resting against a wooden frame.
3. An entrance, 3 ft. long, giving access to the shelter from the outside by means of a ladder. Over the entrance is a wooden cover or trap.

The bottom of this entrance should be lower than the floor of the trench to collect any water leaking into the trench.

The trench is lined to prevent the sides falling in. The drawings show how this can be done using corrugated iron sheets held in place by wooden frame. The frame consist of 4" x 2" uprights on each

side of the trench, placed at 3 ft. intervals, with 4"  $\times$  2" spreaders fixed between them at the top and bottom to hold them apart (see Fig. 2) ; instead of corrugated iron, wooden planking or sheets of any available and suitable material can be used for the lining.

The top of the trench, except the entrance, is covered with the earth which is obtained from the excavation. The earth is carried on a roof consisting of corrugated iron sheets laid on 5"  $\times$  2" wooden joists 2 ft. apart resting on 6"  $\times$  2" wall plates. Instead of corrugated iron, planking or other suitable material can be used. If joints smaller than 5"  $\times$  2" are available they can be used, but would have to be closer than 2 ft.

The gas curtain can be made of blanket. Light wood slats are fastened to the blanket about 2 ft. apart to keep it hanging flat and closely against the inclined frame. Twelve inches of blanket should be left trailing on the ground to prevent air passing underneath it. In actual use the blanket should be kept wet. When not in use the blanket should be rolled up the inclined frame and held at the top by cords.

The fitting of the lining of the sides will require at least two workers. When it has been completed, the wall plates, joists and corrugated iron for the roof should be fixed in position and finally the earth placed on the corrugated iron sheets, as shown in the figure. The earth face over the entrance should rest against a wall of earth in sandbags, sacks or boxes as shown.

At the two ends of the trench, the tops of the four uprights should be anchored back by means of wire lashings to the anchor posts driven into the ground.

If the number of persons to be accommodated exceeds 6, an extra length of 1 ft. 6 in. per person should be added to the 10 feet length of the shelter ; similarly if the number is less than 6, the length of the shelter can be reduced by 1' 6" for every person less than 6.

The length of the shelter shown in this design is the minimum required to accommodate 6 persons when sitting close together. With the gas curtain and trap closed, the air in the trench may become oppressive after some time and it may be necessary to open the entrance and admit air, after the occupants have put on their respirators. If the trench is extended to provide a length of

2 ft. 6 in. per person in the shelter, the six occupants should be able to remain therein, with the gas curtain and trap closed, for a period of 3 hours.

It is important to provide drains to prevent surface water from running into the trench.

If, when digging the trench, water is found before the depth of 6 ft. is reached, work should be stopped above the water level and the extra height required should be obtained by banking up earth above ground level.

In some loose soils it may be found that the sides begin to fall in before the full depth is reached, and in this case it will be necessary to use some of the riveting material as temporary supports to the sides whilst the full depth is being dug.

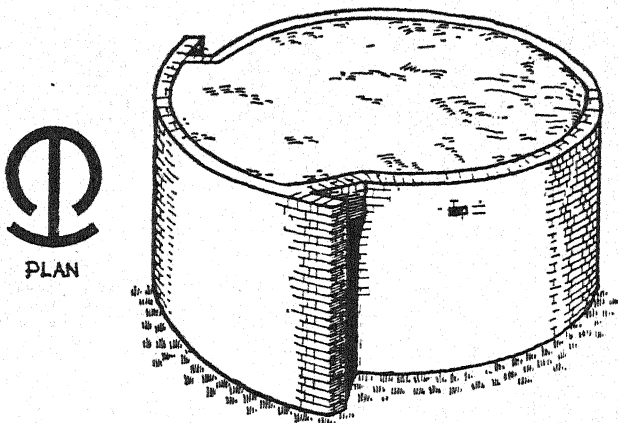
The design of the shelter is so simple that the Home Office of Great Britain considers that it should be possible for most persons to construct it themselves and it may be practicable to use other materials which the householder may happen to possess.

If new materials have to be bought, the average cost of the materials alone (excluding labour) is estimated to come up to about £8 in Britain. If circumstances do not allow of the trench being completed as shown in Fig. 1, it can be brought into use as a means of refuge from blast, splinters and weather, if dug to a depth of say 4 ft. 6 in. Walls could be built on the ground at the sides of the trench about fifteen inches high and corrugated iron sheets laid on the walls as shown in Fig. 4. A few inches of earth could be spread over the corrugated iron to keep the sheets in place.

The shelter thus made is, of course, not gas-proof and if, after a period, the sides show signs of falling in, some sort of lining will have to be provided.

Brick shelters are also largely advertised and several have been built in the streets of London. Among those recommended for families are many types. The Pill-box pattern brick surface shelter could be erected at a cost of under £2 per head by eliminating concrete for the roof and utilising a construction of railway sleepers, light rails and earth cover. Shelters are designed to accommodate either 12 or 24 persons with a space allowance of  $3\frac{1}{2}$  sq. ft. per person in accordance with official requirements. An alternative roof construction is 6 in. of unreinforced concrete with 18 in. of earth cover.

All these are independent types of shelters. But protected accommodation is also possible within buildings, *i.e.* in basements if they are fit for strengthening. If basements of houses are suitably strengthened to provide the required lateral and overhead protection and equipped with emergency exits, they would serve as air raid shelters, proof to blast and splinters. In fact, many European countries rely upon the strengthened basement a great deal, and it holds the second place in the shelter policy of Great Britain, the first being sectional steel shelter. For commercial and business premises this is even more strongly advised.



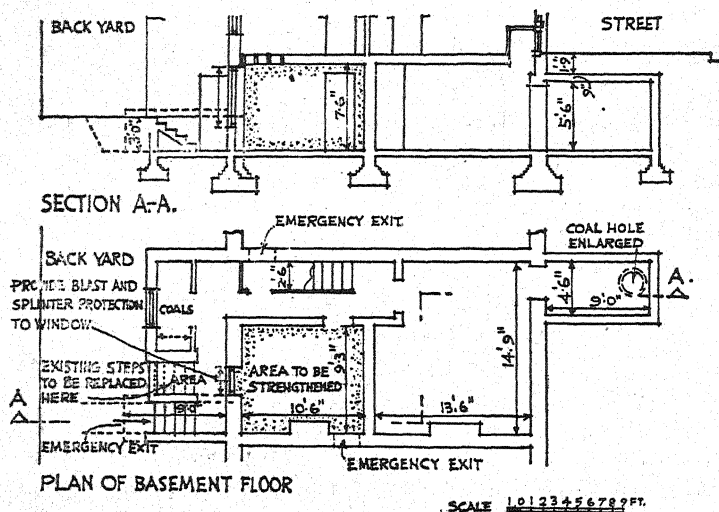
Brick Surface Shelter

Basement shelters resemble cellars provided with easy access. Being below ground level they offer good protection from blast and splinters but care should be taken that the ceiling is sufficiently reinforced to bear the load of the building, should it collapse and the access is not covered up by debris. A single chamber is sufficient and gas locks could easily be equipped. A small toilet room and a chemical closet as well as emergency exit are also recommended. Existing basements could, by suitable strutting, be strengthened to form a safe shelter. But even otherwise a dual purpose basement could easily be constructed in houses built without them. Twelve inches of reinforced concrete is suggested for the walls and it is desirable that the roof and floors are equally thick. By suitable design daylight could be admitted into such shelters. We need not



enter into the detailed specifications of roof, walls, floors, water-tightness, etc., but we should emphasise the need for a gas filtration plant if it is to be large and the shelter to be gas-proof.

The advantages claimed for such shelters are: they are not exposed to blast and splinters; they will not require extra space; they will be easily accessible; twinning and double twinning of individual shelters beneath one roof and with common party walls will enable marked economies to be realised whilst preserving the exclusive use of each shelter to its owner; they will have a peacetime use.



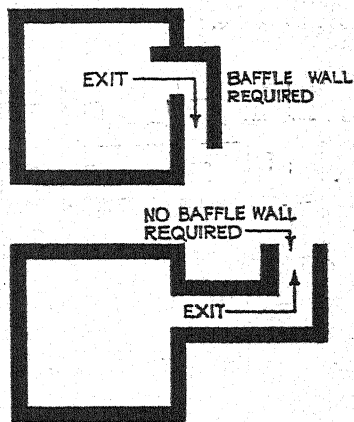
concrete; the doors and windows should be gasproof. Timber about 2 in. thickness, may also be used for the door.

To many houses in India it would be useful to build in the ground-floor a strong room convertible into blast and splinter-proof shelter when required. This is especially suited to the residences of the well-to-do who live in houses without space around, situated in congested areas. They obtain fire-proof strong room which is ever useful. In rural areas this type will be particularly valuable.

For urban houses where space is available a lean-to-shelter can be made. Only subsidiary bearer wall will be needed to support the roof. The roof may also be flat and covered with a floor bed giving extra protection. During normal times it could be used as a store for combustibles or valuables or as servants' quarters. The entrance may be direct from the house or independent but both are desirable.

An important detail of construction is the entrance, and the adequate protection of this by means of an earth bank, traverse, or baffle wall does not need elaborating. Ramps leading to sunk shelters are unsatisfactory; they are wasteful of material and space, and dangerous if the floor is wet or frozen.

Doors are not always necessary at the entrances to shelters, but they may be considered desirable to prevent unauthorised entry. A position for a door and fixings to render it gas-tight when necessary should always be provided. Shelters for twelve or more persons must have entrances 2 ft. 6 in. wide, and entrance doors should preferably open inwards.



Types of traversed entry

Emergency exits must be sufficiently light to be easily lifted.



Overhead protection should be provided by means of not less than :—

1.  $\frac{1}{4}$ -in. thickness of mild steel plate.
2. 4-in. thickness of structural concrete reinforced if and as necessary or otherwise suitably strengthened or effectively supported.
3. 6-in. thickness of ordinary concrete, reinforced if and as necessary or otherwise suitably strengthened or effectively supported.
4. Concrete in hollow type construction conforming with the requirements of the Home Office.<sup>1</sup>
5.  $8\frac{1}{2}$ -in. thickness of arching in sound brickwork or sound stonework.
6. 1-ft. 6-in. thickness of ballast, broken stone or earth.
7. A corresponding aggregate thickness of a proportionate combination of such materials, or
8. A substantial building overhead consisting of a roof and not less than two floors (including that covering the shelter) where such structure is enclosed with walls of brick, stone or concrete.

Adequate provision must be made to afford protection from falling loads due to the collapse of any structure over an air raid shelter if within a distance from such air raid shelter equal to one-half the height of such structure, by the provision of a floor or by the strengthening of the existing floor where necessary or by a suitable roof or other construction based on an estimated static load as representing the effect of impact.

To provide protection from falling loads due to the collapse of the structure above, it is prescribed " provided that where such falling loads would include heavy machinery, materials and goods of abnormal weight for such constructions as chimney-shafts, towers,

<sup>1</sup>See Appendix to Part I of the Revised Code, p. 11.

heavy colonnades, pediments or cornices, but would comprise only the loads of a normal structure and superimposed loading of ordinary goods or light plant and equipment, it shall suffice if, for purposes of calculation, the falling loads be deemed to be static loads in accordance with the following requirements."

1. For buildings wherein the loads are carried on load-bearing brickwork or stonework :—

Number of storeys at a higher level than the top of the shelter	Minimum static load (in addition to the floor load) to be assumed to represent the effect of the debris: lb. per square foot of floor area.
1 or 2	200
3 or 4	300
Over 4	400

2. For buildings wherein the whole of the loads are carried on steel or reinforced concrete framing, the effect of the debris load may be assumed to be a static load of 200 lb. per sq. ft. of floor area (in addition to the floor load) irrespective of the number of storeys at a higher level than the top of the shelters.<sup>1</sup>

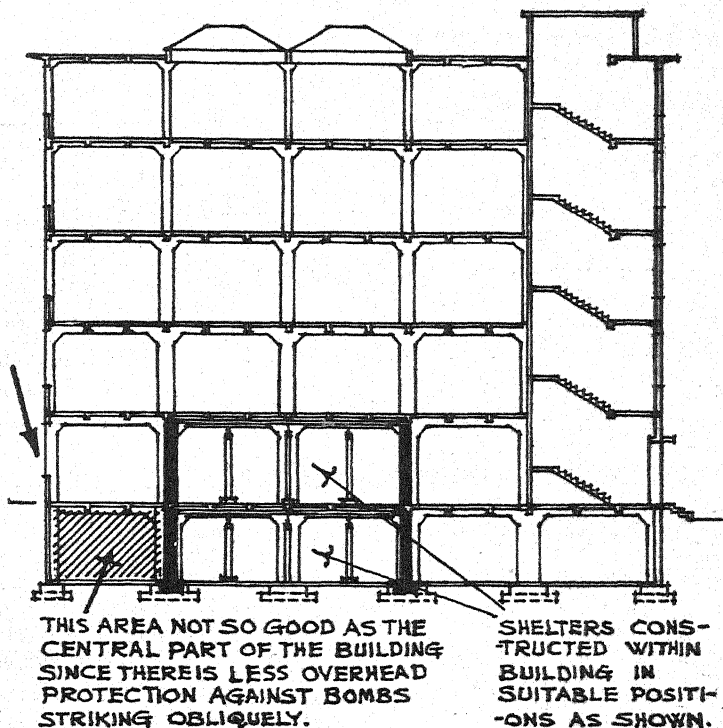
There are three other methods by which the required shelter may be obtained within a building. Trenches or tunnels may be constructed beneath the lowest floor of the building ; existing rooms on the ground or other floor may be adapted to provide shelters. The walls must be made to afford the standard of lateral protection indicated already and the floors or roofs over them where necessary must be strengthened to support the debris of the structure above in the event of collapse. Shelters may be specially built within the buildings, or "lean-tos" may be erected against a wall of the building or against a boundary wall.

The system of constructing trenches beneath the floors provides good protection, and is suitable for adoption in some buildings where there is no unoccupied ground available. It offers the advantage that alterations to the structure of the buildings are reduced to a minimum. The tunnels normally should be kept well clear of stanchion bases, etc. The external openings should be protected in an

<sup>1</sup>For space required, limits to number of persons and separation of shelters, access to shelters, emergency exits, sanitary accommodation and lighting, see Air Raid Shelters for Persons working in Factories, Mines and Commercial buildings, Revised Code, August, 1939, Home Office Publication.

emergency by earth or other form of screen wall. In peace time, such tunnels could be used as store rooms or cycle-sheds.

The trench shelters should be distributed throughout the building, and should be placed between the lines of stanchion so that they do not interfere with the footings and foundations. They should, wherever possible, be spaced at least 25 feet apart. In places where depth of excavation is not of importance the shelters may be constructed so as to have a cover of earth not exceeding 2 feet in thickness in addition to the normal thickness of floor. They can be lined permanently with brickwork, concrete, or other suitable material. Access to them should be from the workshop



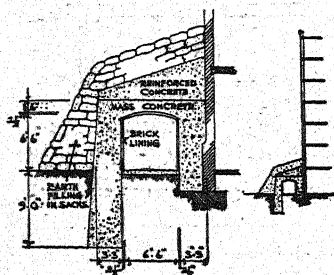
Correct and incorrect location of shelters within a building

floor, and an emergency exit should be provided clear of the building. As this exit is only for emergency use, it need not be of large dimensions, and a pipe 2 ft. 9 in. in diameter, as a "crawl away" and leading to a manhole, would serve the purpose. The emergency exit would also assist in ventilating the trench.

Where there is no basement but where there is a substantially built section of the building as, for instance, a section of an office block adjacent to a single-storey block with roof lighting, it may be possible to select a room or rooms in this section for conversion into shelter. These rooms should be on the ground-floor wherever possible, but in certain cases it may be preferable to provide shelter accommodation on upper storeys, though this should only be done under expert advice. If the ground-floor has large window openings, such as show rooms or shop fronts the shelters should be made in inner rooms or corridors protected by adequate walls. As the enclosing walls of the shelters should be not less than 12 in. of reinforced concrete, some thickening of the existing walls and protection of door and window openings may be necessary, so that the installation can be completed immediately an emergency arises. The floor or roof over the shelter must be strengthened as for basement shelters and all loading occasioned thereby safely transmitted to the ground.

American examples might give us some idea of the location and selection of refuge rooms in multi-storeyed buildings. Illustrating the thoroughness of preparations by office buildings the 45-storey Field Building in Chicago, which has 6,500 tenants, has its own defence organisation with 300 air raid wardens. Refuge zones have been established on every floor of the building, excepting the top six and the lower three floors which British experience has proved to be the danger floors in structural steel buildings.<sup>1</sup>

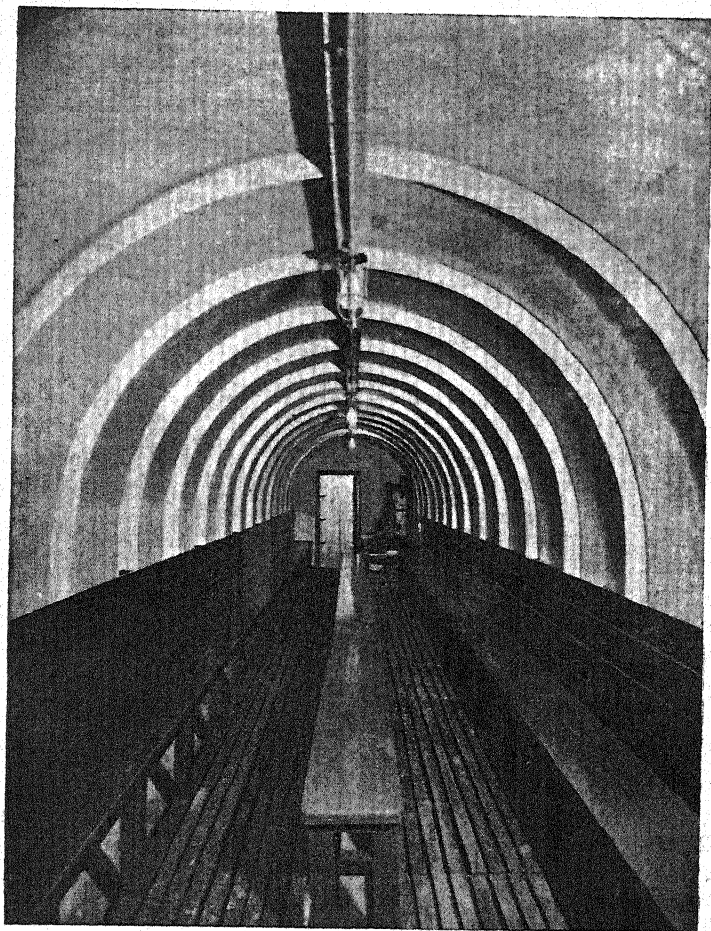
A lean-to against a single-storey building would not require a roof of heavier construction than that required to give the standard overhead protection, but against multi-storey buildings it is obvious that the structure would need to be sufficiently strong to withstand the debris load consequent on collapse of the wall of the main building. Lean-to shelters can serve in peace time as cycle sheds or store. An entrance can be made to give access directly from the main building in an emergency.



A lean-to air raid shelter easily accessible from the street

<sup>1</sup>Civilian Defence, June 42, p. 28.

Entrances and passages giving access to them should be boldly marked and be straight and unobstructed. A safe horizontal space to allow for the passage of a person is 22 in. Taking this



Interior of an air raid shelter at Wimbledon made of precast concrete segments

dimension as a unit, openings should be designed on the basis that a crowd of persons will pass through an opening at the rate of 40 per minute per 22 in. unit width of opening. The minimum width of 2 ft. 6 in. is required for the convenient passage of a stretcher.



The principle which should be observed is that the entrances and exits of shelters should be so constructed as to diminish the likelihood of all being blocked by debris in the event of the collapse of building structures above the shelter. Where it is not practicable to provide emergency exits clear of the area which might be covered by debris it may in some cases be expedient to provide alternative exits in excess of the minimum required and as widely separated as possible. In basement shelters in closely built-up neighbourhoods it will often be desirable to form emergency exits into adjacent basements.

Among the many types of shelter outside the premises over-ground shelters in brick, and rectangular in shape, may be considered suitable to our country. Such ones in concrete partly or wholly beneath ground level has been recommended even in Great Britain.

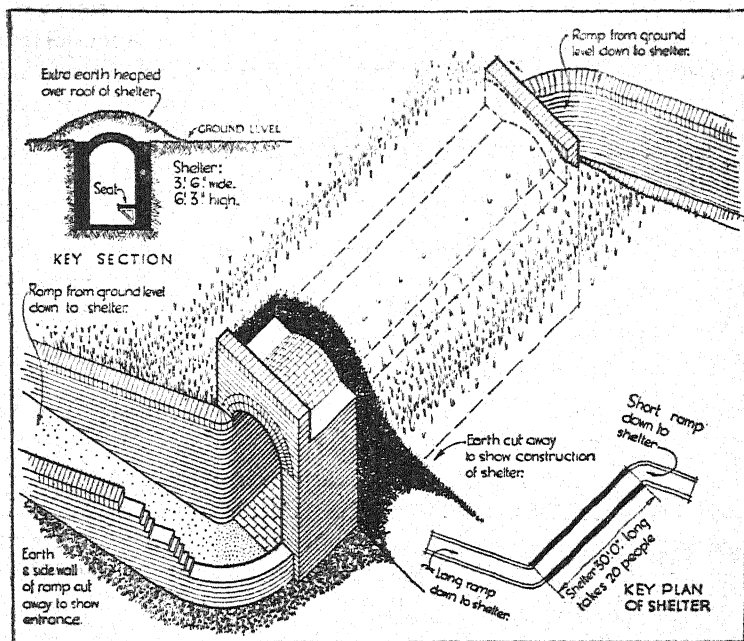
In the interest of safety and efficiency.

1. Parties should be limited to 50 persons.
2. Distance between underground shelters must not be less than 25 ft. Distance between isolated shelters completely above ground must not be less than 50 ft.
3. Entrances should be 2 ft. 6 in. wide.
4. Sanitary accommodation should be provided; one seat for 25 persons with subsidiary facilities.
5. The emergency exit must be such as to provide an opening to the air adequate to natural ventilation.
6. Shelters need not be gas-proof, but it should be possible to make them gas-proof in an emergency.

A convenient type of independent shelter erected with brick and concrete is the trench as shown in the opposite page. It could be constructed for 20 to 50 persons at a cost ranging from £2-0-0 to £2-14-6 per person.

The trench air raid shelter is a simple unit capable of taking 20 people (allowing  $1\frac{1}{2}$  ft. run per person). The accommodation of such a system can, of course, be increased by building short traverses to link such a trench up with one or more parallel trenches, additional entrances being provided where necessary. The minimum

width of such a trench system should be 3 ft. 6 in. and may be increased to 6 or 7 ft. where the trench system has to be placed in a limited area of ground and the accommodation required is maximum. The brick arch roof is capable of carrying a considerable load and earth banking should be superimposed thereon as an additional protection. The Code attached to the Civil Defence Bill lays down that Trench Shelters shall provide  $3\frac{3}{4}$  sq. ft. of floor area for every person. The trench shown above gives  $5\frac{1}{4}$  sq. ft. per person.

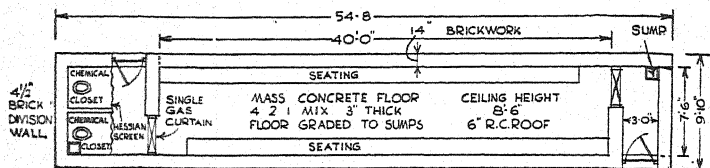


Brick trench for twenty people

The actual cost of one example of a brick lined and roofed trench system was £54-10-0 per 30 ft. of trench holding 20 people *i.e.*, £2-14-6 per person.

Precast concrete units as well as pre-fabricated steel shells are also used for medium size shelters. Sectional construction enables accommodation to be provided quickly to suit requirements.

Shelters erected with precast concrete slabs are clean, easy to instal and need no upkeep expense. Expanded metal is also used, cut into units of standard dimensions. These independent shelters are more or less similar in design and are equipped with an emergency exit. An air lock is also provided.



Plan of an overground shelter for fifty persons

Valuable information has been obtained as to the behaviour of trench shelters constructed with pre-cast concrete units by a near-miss sustained by the above type of shelters by a bomb which dropped on to an open piece of adjacent land, the edge of the crater being within five feet of the nearest shelter.

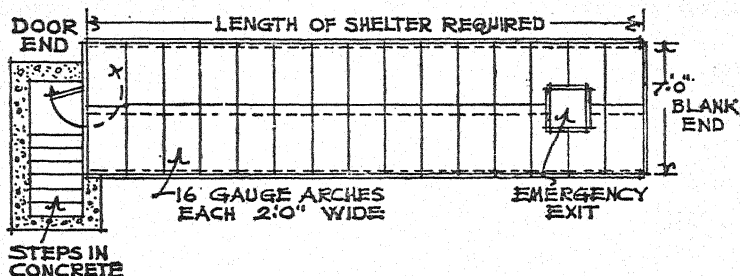
Some time previously, strengthening of the shelters had been carried out in accordance with Home Office Circular No. 290, 1940, the method of using 4" by 3" stanchions and 6" by 3½" beams under the roof being adopted. A 14" reinforced brick traverse was built in the centre of the shelters. The total cost of strengthening amounted to £60 per 50 person shelter. The shelters withstood the effects of the bomb extremely well. The brick traverse walls were fractured one course below the roof. The steel-work remained undamaged, except for one angle at the top of a stanchion being bent. Circular No. 290, 1940, legislated for timber struts across the shelter and these stood up to the explosion.

A H. E. bomb exploded on the outbuildings of poorly constructed property within 15 feet of the end of a public surface shelter. The shelter was constructed of 14 in. brickwork in lime cement mortar, and was roofed with 7 in. in lime in reinforced concrete. The shelter had not been strengthened. External evidence of damage was the pitting of the brickwork and edges of the reinforced concrete roof by shrapnel. Internally a crack extended approximately half the longitudinal length of the shelter which was due to the very slight lifting of the roof. There was no evidence of any lateral movement. The shelter afforded excellent evidence that

the lime cement mortar does give reasonable protection provided care is taken in the mixing of the mortar during the erection of the shelter. The work was carried out by direct labour and the careful mixing and use of the mortar was strictly enforced.<sup>1</sup>

Steel units all bent, bundled and referenced ready for immediate assembly by the contractor in accordance with detailed drawings, are manufactured by engineering firms and shelters can be easily erected. Ranging from 2 pounds per head, if it is overground and £2-5-0 if partly sunk, these provide safety, from blast and splinters. An air lock in the entrance would protect against gas.

### MEDIUM SIZE SHELTER FOR 50 PERSONS



Dovetail steel sheets 16 gauge, bowed to form an arch, and connected by an interlocking joint at the centre, dipped after corrugating in black bitumastic paint could be used for shelter construction. They should be covered with concrete, and sunk full or half into the ground. Ends, footings and doors framed in 10 or 14 gauge cold rolled sections, assembled by arc and spot welding are obtainable. A standard type recommended by a leading manufacturer of Great Britain is shown above.

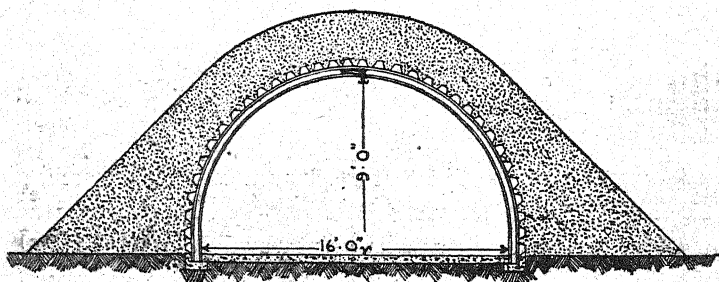
The steps are in concrete. There is an emergency exit. It is 7 ft. wide and 6 ft. 6 in. high. An alternative arrangement of the 7 ft. wide shelter is with the door at the end, instead of at the side. The entrance is then protected by a concrete retaining wall. The steps down to the entrance are at right angles to the length of the

<sup>1</sup>J.I.M. & Cy. E., May 26, 1942, p. 371.

shelter. The price of a shelter, 30 ft. long needed to accommodate 50 persons, as given in England is as follows:

30 ft. run of 16 G. arches .. ..	£39 0 0
1 Door End .. ..	£ 7 16 10
1 Blank End .. ..	£ 5 16 9
1 Emergency Exit .. ..	£ 1 18 11
Nett ex-works .. ..	<u>£54 12 6</u>

Another variety consists of ready-made arches, struts and arcuate sheets. The arches are spaced 3 feet apart. The width inside the sheeting is 7 ft. 6 in. and seating can, therefore, be arranged as in an omnibus (a normal omnibus is 6 ft. 9 in. wide inside) with two persons on either side of a central gangway. In this way people can enter their seats without disturbing those already there. An average of six persons can be seated per yard.

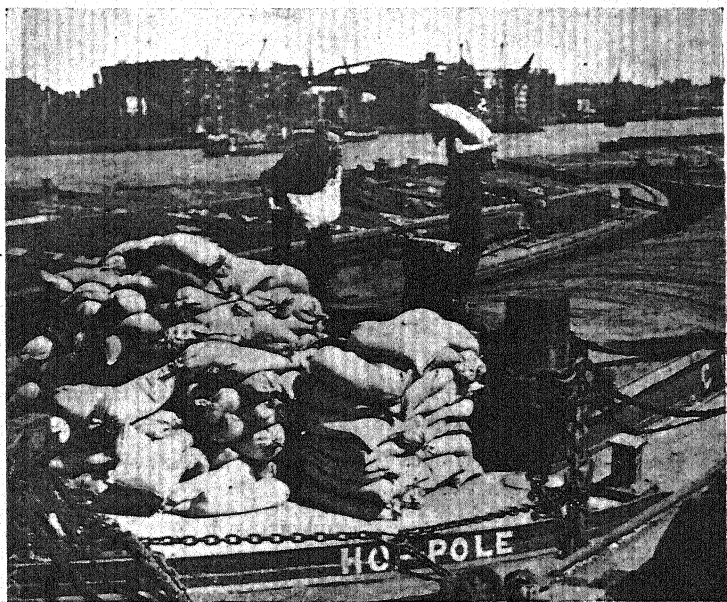


Section showing dovetail steel sheets fixed in position in an overground air raid shelter

This shelter can be installed on the surface partially above ground, or completely submerged. A blast and splinter-proof shelter to accommodate 50 persons with emergency exit is priced £50-13-4 in Great Britain.

Gas tight steel air raid shelters for accommodating upto 50 persons are also made in U. S. A. Armco Air Raid Shelters made by the Armco Drainage Products Association, are claimed to be shatter-proof, flexible structures and are available in any size to meet the need, from small shelters for family use to larger ones for

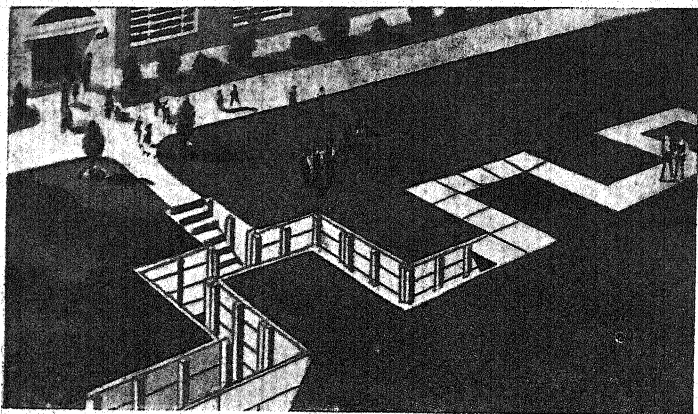
accommodating the maximum of 50 persons recommended by the O.C.D. Any size structure is obtainable in multiple lengths of  $2\frac{1}{2}$  feet. The shelters are made of strong, heavy corrugated curved plates that form a gas-and-water-tight chamber. Each shelter is designed to give protection against gas and demolition bombs falling not closer than 25 feet. This includes the effects of blast, splinters, earth shock, and debris, from falling buildings. These air raid shelters are provided with interchangeable, gas-tight end walls that can be placed at any position inside the cylinder. A gas lock may be included during installation or added later without alteration or loss of material. The front wall and gas lock wall are provided with gas-tight metal doors having built-in-louvres that can be closed when necessary. Openings also can be provided for mechanical air-conditioning. An emergency escape tunnel and ventilator opening are in the rear. The fitness of Armco Air Raid Shelters has been proved under tests made by the War Department.



An air raid shelter for 25 persons on a 120-ton barge on the Thames

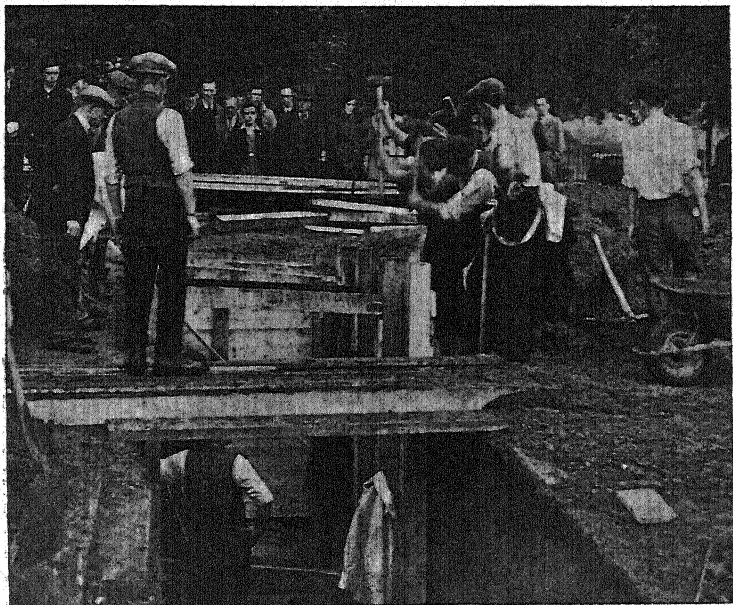
## Large Shelters

Shelters for larger numbers especially for the floating population and for employees in large establishments call for larger accommodation and two varieties are suggested. The simplest is the trench which will provide some protection to those caught in the streets and the other is the large bomb-resisting structure. The former is advocated on the principle that something is better than nothing and the latter is suggested for fear that if they are only blast and splinter-proof a direct hit may entail large number of deaths.



Trenches lined and covered with precast concrete slabs

For immediate policy bomb-proof shelters are not advised and trenches are suggested as the solution for protecting the public. Those permanently lined with concrete slabs give a fair measure of protection against blast and splinters. If precast concrete slabs are used to cover the trenches they may be further covered with earth or sandbags for extra protection in emergency. Careful instructions for the design and construction of trenches are therefore given by government, and specifications etc., regarding permanent lining of trenches and trench construction are specially dealt with in their A.R.P. Handbooks and pamphlet by the Home Office of Great Britain.



Covered trenches in the course of construction in London

### Shelters for Key-men

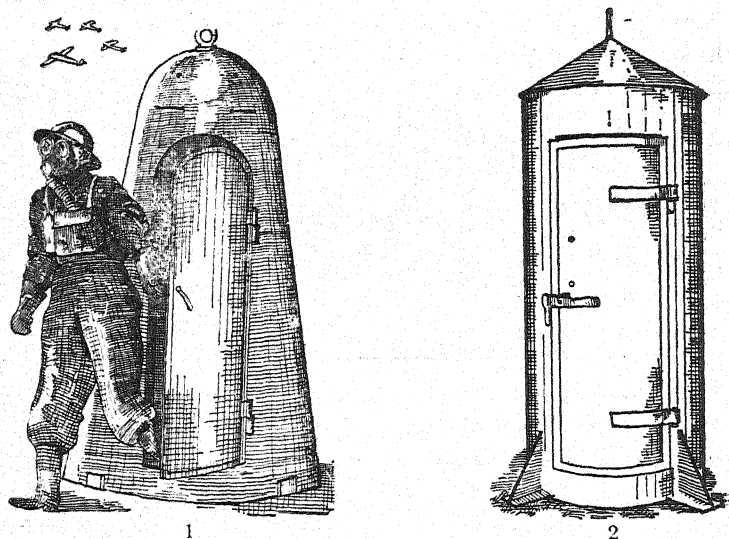
Protective accommodation required for key-men engaged in A.R.P. services and other duties during an air raid form another class since they need not be as big as even family shelters. But shelters recommended for them must be efficient and strong. There are portable all welded steel shelters affording good measure of protection for one or two or four men. They are equipped with efficient doors, sometimes gas-proof, with natural ventilation and fitted with a seat. Eye slots are provided to give the inmates a clear vision and also permit sufficiently high vision in the sky. Diagram No. 1 on page 362 illustrates the chief features of a type manufactured in Great Britain which is claimed to be proof to shrapnel, falling masonry, blast, etc. It is made in two sizes for two or four men.

Essentially similar but slightly differing in external appearance is No. 2 variety which looks like the pillar post boxes in India. These have one-piece cone-shaped dome, glazed look-out panel with



splinter-proof guard and gas-tight rubber gasket; they are portable and are manufactured quickly in large numbers.

Brick shelters, are also built for air raid wardens affording good measure of protection. Brick warden posts have been erected in Great Britain and brick and stone ones are advisable for India where welded steel shelters may be comparatively expensive.



All welded steel shelters for key-men

The problem of providing protection for people against air attack is a new experience and measures are improvised according to exigencies. Overground shelters affording partial protection were erected in Spain and were soon discarded since they proved vulnerable. Deep underground tunnels were converted into shelter accommodation when raids became more deadly. The shelter policy of Great Britain too has come in for sharp criticism and experts point out several defects. But the policies are based upon local conditions, requirements, materials and exigency.

It has become apparent in England that the shelter problem is not solved if the accommodation erected is only able to withstand bombs and blast. Comfort and convenience within, are now shown to be as vital as strength.

In recent months there has been much discussion about air raid shelters alike in Parliament and in the Press and by the public, mainly as to the sanitary conditions and as to whether the construction originally specified by the Government is an adequate defence against bombs and weather.

Civil Defence Act, 1939 came into force and many attempts were made on a large scale to afford air raid protection by means of shelters. This Act dealt with the provision of air raid shelters of all kinds—public and private—in and over premises, underground or on the surface, those for commercial and residential buildings, factories and workshops.

### Shelter Sanitation and Comfort

Deep air raid shelters were banned when the Lord Privy Seal in 1939 refused his consent to their construction,<sup>1</sup> but immediately the "blitz" began in earnest it was found that the types of shelter already supplied or erected gave totally inadequate provision for shelterers who needed to spend the whole or part of the night in them, and, where their homes had been wrecked, part of the day also. In fact, they were not constructed for any purpose but crowded sitting. Consequently the public turned to the more adequate shelter of the underground stations of the Tube system, leaving the official shelters vacant, and the platforms and staircases of the underground soon became overcrowded by shelterers. The authorities feared epidemics and other dangers and were faced with the urgent necessity of providing sleeping accommodation in the municipal shelters, and of rendering them healthy and sanitary.

The position became so acute that in November, 1940, there were presented to Parliament by the Minister of Health and the Minister of Home Security the recommendations of Lord Horder's Committee, which had been given the task of exploring and reporting on the whole problem, and a brief statement of the action already taken by the Government thereon.

One of the principal recommendations of the Committee was "to effect the utmost degree of dispersal so as to deal with the crux of the problem, which is *overcrowding*." Only recently it was announced that dispersal had at least been effected and that health conditions in shelters were now astonishingly good. The provision of "bunking", communal feeding, canteens and the organising

<sup>1</sup> See *A. G. v. Finsbury*, B.C. (1939) 3, All E.R. 995.

of recreation and entertainment so essential in the communal life of large numbers of persons have been the basis of this improvement.

It is magnificent that it is impossible to read into the Government definition that an air raid shelter must give absolute protection in an air raid. The authorities have always been careful to state when issuing typical designs that these structures could not be expected to withstand a direct hit, and sad experience has illustrated this.

For example, Anderson shelters when properly covered with earth to Government instructions and provided with splinter-proof screens at the entrance, have lived up to expectations.

The effectiveness of a shelter therefore depends (1) on its degree of protection against bomb-blast and splinters, and (2) on its resistance to damp, its sanitary condition, adequate ventilation and sleeping space for the number of shelterers likely to be admitted.

The Government has gone so far as to admit that ungauged lime mortar was made permissible by their issue of a "certain circular" but indicate that contractors "have gone far beyond anything that was contemplated by the circular," when allowing some departure from the original contract specification.<sup>1</sup>

The Premier assured in January 1941 that the organisation and improvement of shelter condition would be the first task of the Government. Much has since been done to improve condition of shelters.

During October, November and December 1940 accommodation was found for 105,000 people. Sleeping bunks for 206,000 people had been installed and bunks for over 200,000 people more had been delivered to local authorities. The threat to health in large shelters was met and the tube sanitation problem was tackled.

Bunks supplied to dormitory shelters in the London region by Government brought extra comfort to over 150,000 people spending the night underground. Delivery rapidly increased; over 80,000 timber bunks, giving sleeping room for over 240,000 people, having now been delivered to the local authorities. Delivery also began for bunks specially designed for the communal surface shelters.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide "Builder", May 9, 1941, p. 447.*

A ticket system has now begun at 14 tube stations used as shelters and the issue of tickets to everyone sheltering regularly in the tube stations has been started.

Cultural and recreative amenities are also arranged in shelters, as also musical and other entertainments. A library of 5,000 books has been brought for the use of shelterers.

By July 1941 great strides were made in shelter equipment. There were sleeping accommodation in shelters in the London region for 1,277,000 and for 3,495,000 in domestic shelters.

In tubes, where there were 23,000 bunks, a gradual decline in the number of persons using them as shelters had been noticed, and the last census showed that there were 26,000 people using them—the lowest since the heavy raiding began.

With a few exceptions, the local authorities have now completed their plans for providing canteens in shelters holding 200 persons or more, and for the installation of power plants in all shelters regularly used by 50 or more persons.

There were 188 medical aid posts in large shelters and 69 posts serving groups of smaller shelters.

Twenty-four welfare councils or committees had been set up, and more were being formed. Sanction had been given for the appointment of a number of shelter welfare officers.<sup>1</sup>

Five hundred "snore-balls," an American invention to stop snoring were distributed in air raid shelters.

In spite of all these it has been found that the percentage of people using shelters is not very great.

A census taken in December 1941 showed that 5 per cent. of the population of the London region occupied public shelters, 19 per cent. domestic and communal shelters and the rest were living in their own homes, according to Sir Wilson Jameson, Chief Medical Officer of the Ministry of Health. In the Metropolitan area, people using public shelters were 8 per cent. and domestic and communal shelters 21 per cent.<sup>2</sup> It is therefore clear that comfort of the occupants is as vital a consideration as the strength of air raid shelters.

<sup>1</sup> The "Hindu", 31-7-1941.

<sup>2</sup> The "Hindu", 9-1-1941.

It was anticipated in England before bombing took place that casualties would occur mainly from direct hits by high explosive bombs. It turned out that most were the results of blast, splinters and ground shock causing the collapse of buildings. The most important thing, therefore, is to provide shelters which will not collapse from these effects. Of course it is to be expected that where the buildings are light and non-resistant, casualties will be the result of direct effects of blast and splinters rather than of the collapse of buildings. The A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee recommends the following types as worthy of consideration for providing such shelter in a short space of time in India.

### **Designs for India**

*Trenches* : Even open trenches with tarpaulin cover to keep out rain and monsoon are useful. They should be in zig-zag or other lay-out with short length of straight trench. They are especially useful where laterite is found. Bamboo with its strength and resistance can be used liberally for trench linings. On no account should trenches be dug in areas where there is danger of flooding in the heavy rains.

*Tunnels* : These should be excavated in areas where there are rocky hill formations (especially the softer rocks) near centres of population and there is plenty of man-power available for excavation. In many areas there may exist tunnels and caves which could be utilised and which might well be extended.

*Surface Shelters* : Reinforced concrete has been found to be the best material. The most satisfactory shelters are so constructed above ground by strongly connecting walls, floor and roof that they can be moved bodily without damage by the blast of a bomb bursting near.

*Shelters in Buildings* : Well built buildings particularly those with reinforced concrete or steel frames have been made to give every good protection by bricking in window openings and strutting up the ceilings. (Struts should be braced so that they cannot slip out sideways). Rooms should be sub-divided into small compartments by substantial walls, which reduce the area of damage by bombs, minimise the risk of spread of infection and provide additional support for the roof. It was found in Britain that shelters had to be

occupied for considerable periods both by day and by night and that lighting, drinking water, seats, and ventilation had to be provided.

Where shelters were used at night special bunks were devised which could fold into seats in the daytime and so increase the accommodation. Facilities for feeding were found to be most necessary and the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee are strongly of the opinion that food should be provided for the shelterers either by the Responsible Authority or by voluntary organisations. These amenities in shelters are even more important in India than in England for the resistance of the average individual to the spread of disease, is far lower.

*Prophylaxis*: One of the greatest dangers anticipated with large shelter propulations was the out-break of epidemics. Fortunately these did not occur in England despite the fact that it was some time before there was introduced the regular medical inspection of shelters.

To detect cases of infectious disease, all those found were immediately isolated. In addition considerable propaganda has been carried out for parents to have children protected against diphtheria. Other diseases such as cholera, dysentery, typhoid, plague, etc., are, of course, the dangers in India.

It seems desirable that in India there should be made available large supplies of sera, vaccines and anti-toxins together with lively propaganda for their use. Stocks might be kept in suitable amounts to be rushed to areas where they are needed.

So far gas has not been used in the present war apart from possible instances in China, but it could be extremely demoralising if used against densely crowded unprepared population. This would best be met according to the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee, by immediate, widespread distribution of simple respirators including special types for infants. After the distribution of respirators the most important step would be very extensive explanation of the dangers of and the methods of protection against the various kinds of gas. It should be publicised that a small fireless room with windows closed provides a certain amount of protection against gas.

Japanese raids in Malaya, Burma and Bengal have shown that people must take cover to avoid injury and death by the

splinters of the anti-personnel bombs invariably used by the Japs in their raids. The heavy toll taken by the splinters has already been indicated in Chapter I. They fly at a low level almost grazing the ground, that lying down does not help the individual to avoid them. Taking cover inside homes or in air raid shelters which would prevent the penetration of splinters becomes essential.

Slit trenches had already been dug in open spaces in Calcutta so that the members of the public who could not seek shelter in buildings against the effect of bombing in a possible air attack on Calcutta, would be able to find protection there. The policy of the Government for the protection of the general public is well under consideration.

A.R.P. authorities in Quetta decided to dig a large number of slit trenches in various parts of the city, the total running length of these being about 25,000 feet and will cost the authorities a sum of about Rs. 7,000. The authorities hope to provide adequate covers for these trenches later on, in view of the extreme cold weather experienced there during winter months.

Suitable accommodation has been selected in various Government and public offices in the city of Madras wherein the inmates could take shelter during "Alerts".

The Government of Madras have provided slit trenches in various parts of the city of Madras for giving shelter to people caught in the open during air raids. The aim is to provide in them accommodation for as large a part of the population as possible up to 25 per cent. in all open spaces in the city belonging to the Government and the Corporation, especially near railway stations. To avoid an undue rush on the available shelter accommodation, the public are advised to remain in their houses during a raid and not to leave them till the raid is over. If, however, they are caught in the open during a raid, they should make for the nearest shelter, irrespective of whether it is a building or a slit trench. They are also advised to construct shelter accommodation in their own houses or dig slit trenches. Occupants of Government bungalows and of bungalows rented by Government should have trenches dug at their own expense. Several overground shelters have also been built.

In India shelter provision is needed for key-men, the floating population, the very poor and the slums, the employees in fairly large establishments, for middle class families, and for the well-to-do.

For key-men, all welded steel shelters might suggest themselves, but in this country warden's post could be erected with brick, stone and concrete at less expense and they would have peace-time use as well.

For the floating population, the slums and very poor, State provision of protective accommodation is inevitable. The cheapest and the quickest type is the covered trench. When recommending this type for such large numbers who constitute the majority of Indian urban population we should keep in mind that it is a very defective measure however necessary. In fact the covered trench was given up in Spain.<sup>1</sup> The reasons given are :—

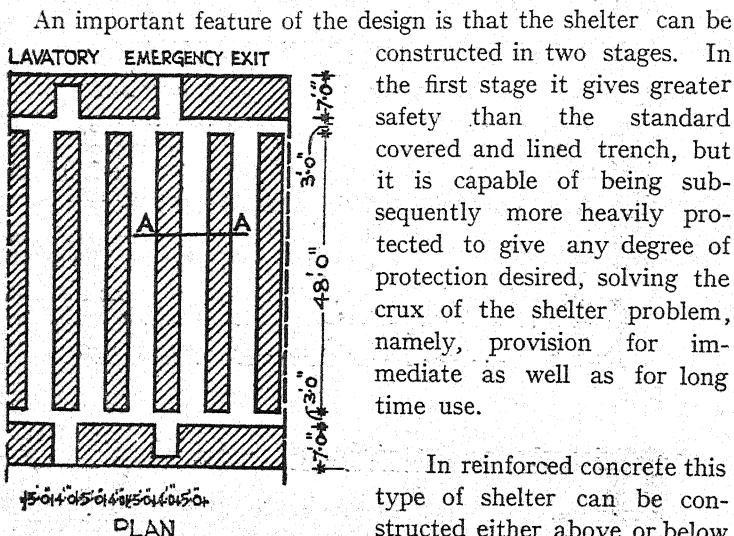
1. The protection given in proportion to the work entailed was much less than with the other types.
2. The difficulties of finding suitable sites in which to place them, especially owing to the fact that with this type of shelter the area of the site needed to accommodate them was many times larger than the effective floor surface of the shelter.
3. The volume of earth to be excavated was practically the same as that for the more satisfactory types.
4. The open spaces, parks, gardens, suitable for such a type were usually too far from the places for which there was need to provide shelters for it was considered that the entrance to a shelter should not be further away than 110 yards from the place of those for whom it was meant to be a protection.
5. The provision of this type of shelter, without overhead protection, except against splinters, could not be accepted as the responsibility of the Government in the general programme of protection, for, as it was building at the same time bomb-proof shelters, it was decided that it should not provide shelters with such varying degrees of protection. Excepting the last, other reasons hold good equally well for our country.

<sup>1</sup>R. Perara, A.R.P. in Catalonia. "Builder", December 15, 1939, p. 28.



To these considerations might be added in India, the danger from gas attack. In a poor country where people cannot afford the mask, trenches will turn into death traps when gas is used, unless they are gas-proof; but this will render them very uncomfortable owing to tropical heat. Further the cost of better class trenches lined and covered with concrete slabs is itself a deterrent factor. Can civic authorities who cannot provide adequate water-supply and public conveniences to the poor and the slums, provide all of them with shelter accommodation however cheap it may be? If a beginning has to be made, it should, in the interest of economy, be such that while offering partial protection at once for emergency it should not prove waste later on.

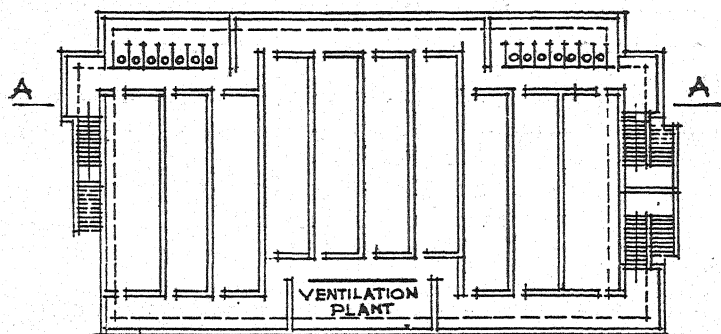
The problem of "how a programme of partial protection can be rapidly prosecuted in such a manner as to lay the basis for a programme of heavily protected shelters, thus avoiding the enormous waste in time, material and labour which would result if the two programmes were not linked together," has been solved by a reputed A.R.P. body<sup>1</sup> whose designs seem particularly useful to India.



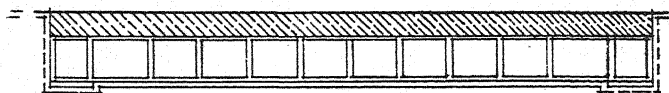
The 'Haldane' Shelter suitable for both dry and water-logged soils. The shelter is

<sup>1</sup>A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee's Scheme.

## A COMMUNAL AIR-RAID SHELTER

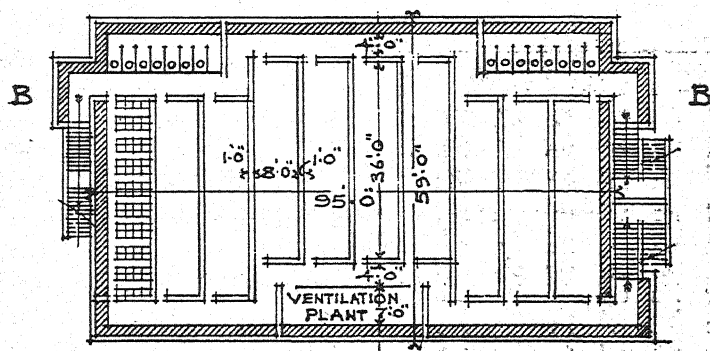


PLAN

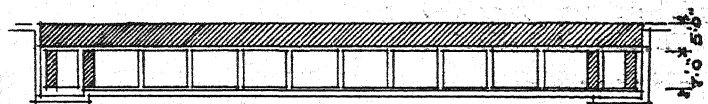


SECTION AA

STAGE 1. BLAST &amp; SPLINTER PROOF PROTECTION



PLAN



SECTION BB

STAGE 2. HEAVY PROTECTION



made up of compartments each containing 50 to 80 persons according to the nature of ventilation provided, to localise the effects of bombs. The number of compartments could be varied and the shelter capacity adjusted to local requirements. Seating, lighting, and sanitary conveniences are provided.

In this design attention has been mainly directed to the problem of planning rather than to considerations of details. Shelters of very similar designs already constructed cost about £6 per head for the first stage and without forced ventilation. The cost would, however, come down if mechanical ventilation is provided or if the shelter is over the ground.

This design needs careful investigation for "the final solution of the problem of protection for the civil population in large towns and cities lies principally in the provision of heavily protected shelters." At the same time we cannot ignore the provision of partial protection.

The design has been evolved from the trench. In essence it consists of series of parallel units, either above or below ground, separated by walls of reinforced concrete. Two communicating corridors link up the units and also serve to protect the occupants from the effect of shock waves transmitted through the shelter walls.

The diagram given shows the design for a shelter below ground level. The corridors and the stairways serve to isolate the unit from the shock waves transmitted through the surrounding earth. In the second stage the thickness of the walls outside may be insufficient when compared to the roof to resist the effect of bomb exploding immediately alongside.

'This could be altered if required but with a given amount of material and up to a certain point better protection is afforded by thickening the roof slab at the expense of the wall thickness . . . . because the probability that a bomb may fall immediately alongside the outer wall is very much less than that it may strike the roof.'

When the shelter is naturally ventilated it will accommodate 576 persons.

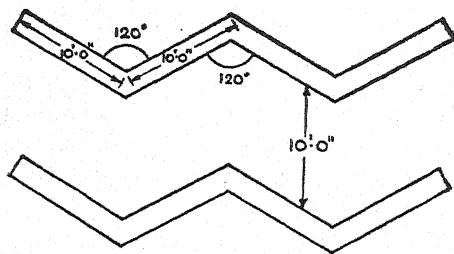
By introducing mechanical ventilation, at a rate of 450 cubic feet per person per hour, it is possible materially to increase the

capacity of the shelter, and at the same time to reduce the cost per head. The shelter would then accommodate 770 persons. Seating capacity could be provided for 720 persons, leaving 50 standing occupants.

If covered trenches are not possible at least open slit trenches should be dug and provided for the poorer population. Even a depression will help to provide some protection against bomb blast and splinters particularly of smaller anti-personnel bombs likely to

be used over Indian cities. The idea to utilise holidays for "digging for civil and self-defence against bombing air raids" was spread in Burma by the Commissioner of Civil Defence. Many thousands of lives have been saved by remaining in a hole dug into the ground, however shallow it may be. There could, therefore, be no better or indeed more patriotic way of spending a public holiday than by every citizen digging a hole for the purpose either in his own home or wherever the need is greatest. "Civil Defence is Self-Defence." By protecting their own lives, the civil population make a good

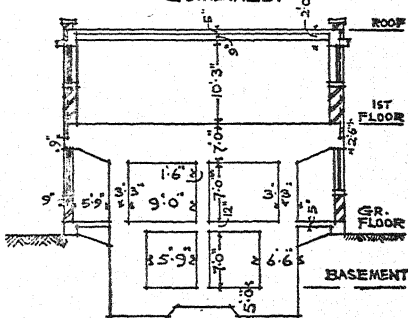
contribution to victory. Trenches could easily be dug and even the sides could be lined by locally available material at no great expense by local artisans.



A type of lay-out of trenches for the floating population

not as great as is imagined. When it is realised that air-craft

#### OFFICE AND BOMBPROOF SHELTER COMBINED.



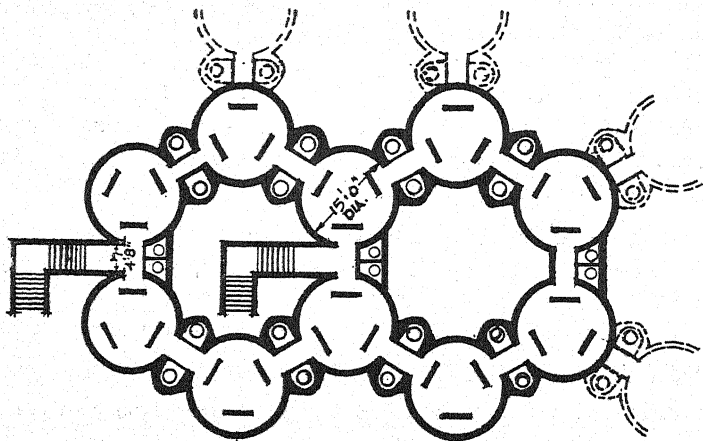
SECTION

The risk of injury to people sheltering in open trenches from machine-gun bullets is

fly at great height and that slit trenches are constructed in a zigzag fashion, it can be seen that the possibility of accurate shooting at slit trenches by a plane travelling at 200 miles per hour is extremely remote. As a matter of fact, there was very little machine-gunning of persons in shelters in Rangoon.

The U. P. Government recommends open trenches for protection against machine-gunning. In towns which are not likely to be attacked with high explosive bombs, slit, *i.e.* open trenches should be provided in such places to give protection against machine-gunning.

Uncovered trench shelters give adequate lateral protection and some protection against falling splinters, but where protection has to be provided against regular raids by planes dropping high



An economical method of arranging trench shelters for the floating population in open squares

explosive bombs trenches should be covered. Uncovered trenches give good protection against machine-gun fire and may be used where that is the main danger to be guarded against.

While sitting in a trench we should remember Haldane's advice not to lean and be in contact with the sides. The shock wave from a bomb is much more violent than that from a shell of the same weight, and might give people sitting with their backs to the trench wall, an extremely violent blow in the back. "I should personally prefer to sit in a chair in the middle of the trench."

Safe distance between trenches is, however, not considered necessary by some. "In determining the minimum distance between two trenches, it is assumed that they must be placed so that one bomb will not destroy more than one trench. This is a fallacy," observes O. N. Arup, author of 'Design, Cost and Construction of Air Raid Shelters.'

His reasoning, however cogent, as he himself admits, will not satisfy the average man. "No doubt some people will not be convinced by this argument, because the mental picture of one bomb destroying several trenches and killing, say, a hundred people at a time will outweigh any appeal to mere reason."

His conclusion is "that trenches can be put very close together, probably within 4 ft. to 5 ft., without increasing the danger of the people inside them." He admits that there will be a difference in the average distribution of casualties. Instead of 1,000 people being killed by 100 bombs killing 10 people each, we may get the same number of people killed by, say, 25 bombs killing on an average of 40 each. He, however, admits that where indiscriminate bombing is not resorted to, the collection of trenches would form a special target and be extremely vulnerable.

In cities, where A. A. defence is very poor, deliberate and daylight bombing would be resorted to and dispersal is absolutely essential. They should further be in short lengths, well-dispersed, zoned to suit actual requirements, adequately provided, easily and quickly accessible and preferably covered.

Arup's conclusions regarding shelters, their design, strength, and distribution are valuable :—

"It is impossible to decide on purely technical grounds what degree of protection against high explosive bombs should be provided for the civilian population, but if it is decided to provide some degree of protection, it is clearly important to spend the money to the best advantage, bearing in mind that it is protection and not merely accommodation that is being purchased."<sup>1</sup>

The problem of the workers and employees is less difficult for, by legislative compulsion, as is done in Great Britain, employers might be compelled to provide shelter for them. According to the Civil Defence Act, 1939 owners of factories or employers of more

<sup>1</sup> Vide 'Design and Construction of Air Raid Shelters'.

than 50 persons must provide air raid shelters for their employees in vulnerable areas. A Government grant of  $27\frac{1}{2}$  per cent. is made to them. Similar legislation could be helpful to our country.

Under the Defence of India Rules the Municipal City Engineer has been authorised by the Government of Bombay to require owners of private premises in the city of Bombay to provide air raid shelters (within such period and in accordance with such requirements as he may specify).

A.R.P. being a provincial subject, local legislatures should tackle the problem. The Civil Defence Code provides a valuable guide but the designs should be evolved to suit Indian requirements. A convertible garage with possibilities for extension and reinforcement seems the ideal solution both from the point of view of safety and economy.

This will provide for a good section of urban workers. If space is not available around, it could be provided in the basement or ground-floor. The narrow streets of Indian cities would be relieved of congestion if the ground-floors of large commercial buildings are turned into garages convertible into air raid shelters. This will not interfere with underground systems like drainage, etc., and would be suitable to most premises, for a ground-floor shelter would be easier than a basement shelter in buildings.

If the Government in England depends upon the strengthened basement as the companion of the sectional steel shelter to protect their people, Indian cities will do well to strengthen ground-floors as the solution to this problem. Since most buildings in India are without basements, and since the walls of good buildings are thick enough to afford the standard protection ( $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. brick in cement mortar) and as they are load-bearing walls, by shoring and strengthening the ceiling of the ground-floor to withstand the debris load, convertible garages could be speedily improvised.

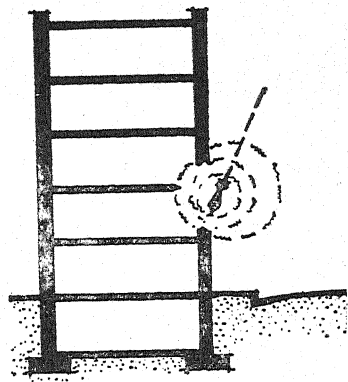
In fact even in countries where basements are a common feature of buildings, the strengthened basement is becoming less and less popular.

After examination, many basements were found unsuitable in Catalonia. Nothing could be done when the basement needed reinforced protection at the sides or overhead, because, the work and material expended in this way could be utilised to better

purpose in the building of proper shelters. Secondly, owing to difficulties of internal wall, conduits, entrances frequently narrow, low ceilings, etc., only a mediocre result could be obtained even after a long period of work. Thirdly, the need to provide uniform degree of protection, could not make this officially accepted, as shelters.

Even when the basements were suitable independent shelters were constructed in buildings as a more advisable proceeding. When the basement had not sufficient head room but otherwise suitable, it was increased by sinking the floor level.

"The strengthening of those basements and the idea of providing support against the debris weight of the collapsed building is considered useless and experience shows that the cause of such collapse is obviously overlooked. If the collapse of the building is a result of a direct hit over the same building, the hits would reach the basement passing through the wall openings and special care is necessary to provide the shelter in a central area in the basement and affording a substantial lateral protection by means of additional walls. On all suitable occasions the large cellular type and the tunnel type were built in Catalonia."



The vulnerability of basements to the high explosive bomb

These arguments have great force particularly to countries like India where storeyed houses are of poor strength.

The share the Government should bear in their erection, the form legislation should take, are matters of detail but we should remember that shelters must be such as to be capable of extension and conversion into bomb-proof shelters if required. Their location should be decided with a view to make them the centres of business houses in the city of to-morrow.



For the middle and rich class folk protective accommodation should be provided close to their residence, preferably in the compound and where no space around is available, within the house. The task is best entrusted to owners of residences though advice and guidance might be given free by the State.

For houses without compounds the strengthened basement, the ground-floor refuge room, a specially built scullery or larder are suggested in European countries. Considering the requirements of the middle class and the well-to-do households and the general type of construction adopted in our country a convertible strong room in the ground-floor suitably placed might be preferred. Erected with brick, stone and concrete and equipped with good quality doors and overhead protection these could replace costly iron safes generally owned. It would be useful throughout the year and would save the transport charges incurred for heavy safes. Particularly in the mofussil such strong rooms are of real value and they could also be used as granaries.

A safety room in a building to be used as a shelter during air raids has been suggested in Bombay. A small room is to be preferred to a large one and should be chosen in a protected part of the building away from the outside panelled walls which are vulnerable to splinters and blast. At the same time, the room should not be too enclosed for there is the risk of falling debris and of being trapped by fire. Further details about the resisting capacity of the ceiling is also mentioned. It is emphasised that every house ought to be provided with a safety room wherever practicable. The A.R.P. authorities have also specified the equipment necessary for the safety room such as buckets, sand, a set of tools, first-aid outfit, etc.

Professor Haldane however has a very poor opinion about refuge rooms inside houses. In his characteristic style he writes :—

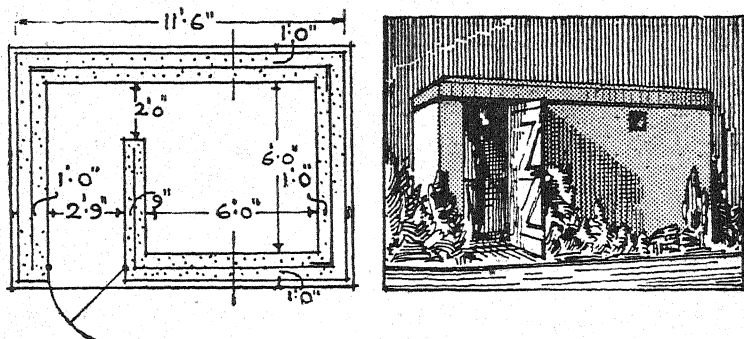
In practice people out-of-doors are killed by splinters and flying stones, whilst those indoors are generally crushed by the houses ; though of course if a bomb actually falls in a house they may be torn to pieces by the blast or mangled by splinters. But if the house is actually hit, a splinter-proof room is smashed into rubble like any other room.<sup>1</sup>

For houses with compounds, the pill-box shelter is advisable. A unit shelter will suffice for an average family and a double unit for

<sup>1</sup> A.R.P., p. 144.

a large one. A twin double unit if constructed at the intersection of 4 compounds would meet the requirements of 4 households at proportionately lower cost.

The unit shelter provides a room 6 ft. square with an entrance lobby.<sup>1</sup> Being protected by 12 in. of reinforced concrete, or  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. of brick in cement mortar, the pill-box shelter is blast and splinter-proof to medium size high explosive bombs exploding not nearer than 50 ft., and does not require a protective earth or sandbag covering.



The Pill-box Shelter

If concrete is used in the construction of the shelter it should not be weaker than  $1 : 2\frac{1}{2} : 4$  mix. The walls should be 12 in. thick reinforced with  $\frac{3}{8}$  in. diameter bars at 12 in. centres in both directions and the roof slab 9 in. thick reinforced with  $\frac{3}{8}$  in. diameter bars at 12 in. centres in both directions. If the distance between the shelter and any building which might fall on it is more than half the height of the latter, the thickness of the roof slab may be reduced to 5 in.<sup>2</sup>

Ventilators  $4" \times 4"$  splayed horizontally on the inside are formed in the walls and should be fitted with plugs.

The foundations should rest on well consolidated ground, and should normally consist of a 6 in. thickness of plain concrete, but the part beneath the walls may be thickened and the thickness of the floor reduced, should this seem advisable.

<sup>1</sup> Vide "Indian Concrete Journal", A.R.P. Number, 1941.

<sup>2</sup> If brick construction is preferred, walls should be  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. brick in cement mortar.

At the junction of the wall with the roof or floor and at any other horizontal joints, a longitudinal groove should be formed in the concrete to provide a key.

Timber plugs  $2" \times 1\frac{1}{2}"$  dovetailed for fixing hooks, shelving, etc., should be set flush in walls 12 in. apart 9 in. down from ceiling. Two tapered vent holes should be formed in the walls and in the positions shown on the drawing. The holes should be 4 in. square on inner face, 7 in. square on outer face and each fitted with a concrete plug having contact faces covered with plyboard.

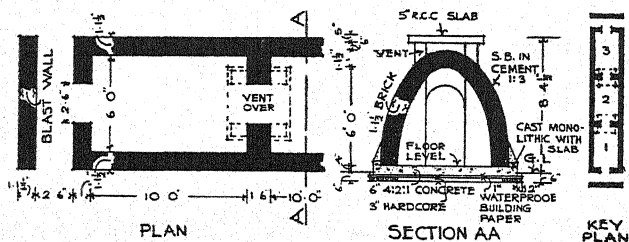
The door should be 1 in. thick, ledged, and hung to a  $4" \times 3"$  timber frame set flush in the walls and secured by iron holdfasts or bolts.

A blanket or carpet weighed down with wooden slats should be provided of which 1 ft. should be left trailing on the floor, over the side frames.

A timber combined bench and locker should be fixed along one side of the shelter, to contain emergency equipment such as first-aid box, candles, matches, disinfectant, water jar, toilet requisites, spare blankets, hammer, shovel, etc.

### Brick Shelters

All the types recommended for Indian dwellings could be erected of brick and cement mortar or stone masonry. The domestic surface shelter in the compound whether overground or sunk, the strong room within the house convertible into shelter for houses without compound, the convertible granary for village homes could be conveniently erected with brick and cement mortar provided they are of the proper thickness.

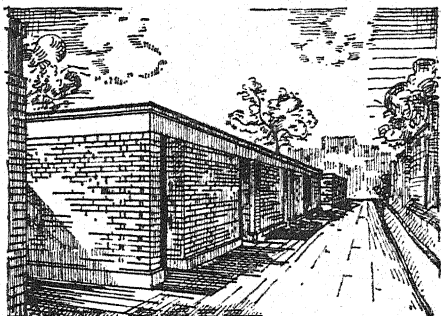


Brick overground shelters in Madras

Brick trenches could also be constructed for the floating population. For medium size shelters for commercial and industrial

concerns too, bricks could be used. In India where local artisans are used to brick work for ages and where bricks are available all over, there is a strong case for brick shelters. Even in Great Britain interests representing clay products are bringing home to the people the utility of brick for A.R.P.

It is interesting to find that the Home Office of Great Britain in their announcement recommend brick and concrete shelters, and brick shelters have been built in the streets of London. Tests have shown that brick work affords a degree of resistance to blast and splinters comparable with anything so far either generally used or proposed.

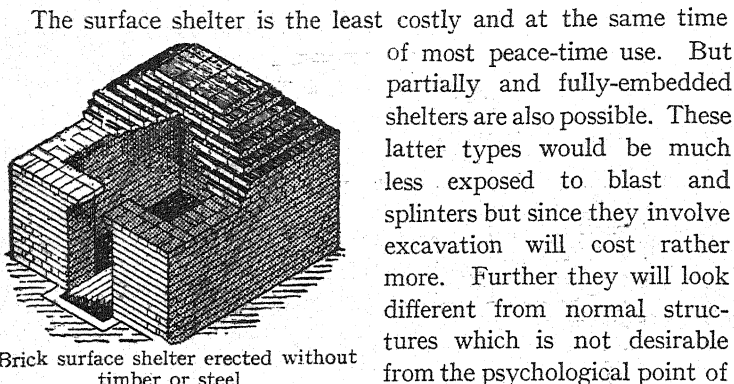


Brick shelters erected in the streets  
of London

The problem of shelters must be met by utilising and adopting normal building materials, methods, and workmen's experience. The simplest form of single (one family) brick shelter envisaged by the Clay Products Technical Bureau of Great Britain costs less than 20 pounds; a figure which can be very much reduced in India, especially if the occupants of neighbouring houses co-operate to enable their individual shelters to be semi-detached, with a common party wall replacing two or more separate walls. A further saving will be attained if would-be shelter-owners in a locality combine to place a single contract for all their requirements.

Lateral protection to blast and splinters recommended in Great Britain for shelters proof to a 500 lbs. high explosive bomb exploding not nearer than 50 ft. could be obtained by bricks and cement mortar  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. thick. With brick work construction every builder is familiar and bricks are available everywhere. A higher degree of protection will be obtained if reinforcement into the joints of walls are introduced. For overhead protection from bomb splinters, falling shell fragments and debris consequent on the demolition of neighbouring superstructures, and also against the penetration of the roof by the kilo incendiary bomb concrete roof at least 5 in. thickness of such strength and so reinforced as to be capable of supporting more than the 400 lb. sq. ft. maximum load

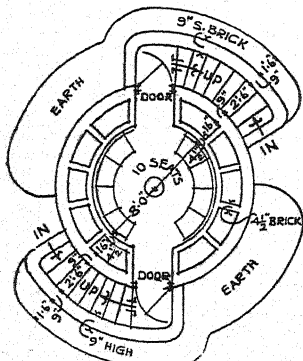
is recommended. Now that reinforced concrete work could be done in most cities and towns, a 5 in. R. C. Roof is preferable to the Madras and the Bombay terrace. For, to obtain a corresponding strength to resist debris and penetration the latter types of construction would be costlier.



Brick surface shelter erected without timber or steel

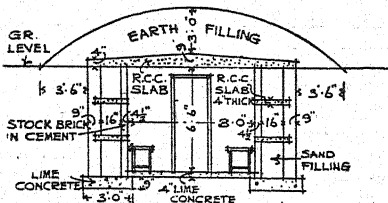
view of fright and risk upon young minds.

It is somewhat difficult to strike a balance as between surface and embedded types of shelters but where strict economy is not imperative and little peace-time service is expected of the shelter, embedded types are preferable.



PLAN

Domestic shelter for 10 persons below ground level

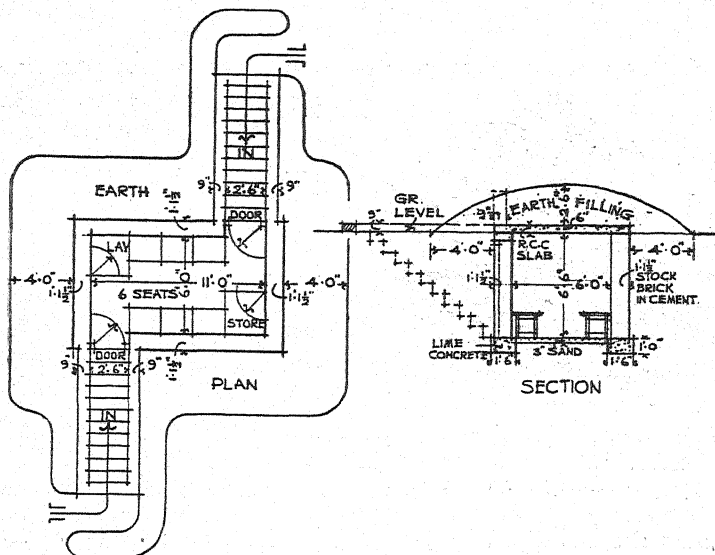


SECTION

Such partial or complete embedment will, of course, entail extra expenditure on account of both the necessary excavation and the waterproofing of the walls below ground level.<sup>1</sup> In addition, the

<sup>1</sup>One of the problems of air raid shelters, partly or wholly below the ground level, in Great Britain, is to prevent leakage of water, which manages to find the minutest hole or crevice in the most extraordinary fashion.

provision of properly protected entries and practicable emergency exits is not quite so simple and the peace-time uses of the shelters will be rather restricted as compared with surface shelters.



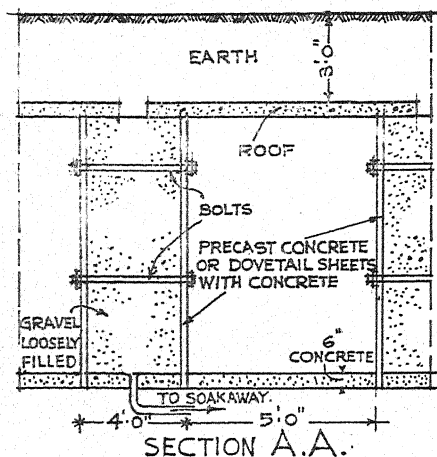
Domestic shelter for 6 persons below ground level

In many parts of England, depending on the nature of the ground, the matter is extremely serious, as covered trenches and air raid shelters are soon flooded to a depth of two or three feet, and pumping has to be employed. In a large number of cases this leakage is due to inferior workmanship, because of gross carelessness and stupidity. For a satisfactory concrete the aggregate used must be of graded uniform size and must be also a hard and satisfactory material, entirely from free clay, loam and organic impurities. No concrete should be made, and especially for air raid shelters and trenches, with less than one part of Portland cement along with two and a half parts of sand and four parts of coarse aggregate.

Use the minimum amount of water in mixing. If any reasonable care at all is exercised on the lines indicated, then concrete, say 6 in. thick will be almost completely water-tight. A good plan also is to daub the outside of the concrete with bitumen, whilst there are available a large number of cement or similar compositions for coating the inside concrete surface. ("Hindu", 28-4-1940).

The astounding pronouncement was recently made by the Ministry of Home Security that all public shelters built with lime-mortar must be closed, as it is now realised that a mixture of lime and sand is seriously affected by the weather. Further, these public shelters ('hundreds of them' is the expression used) have been inspected by constructional engineers, and a pronouncement made that surface shelters constructed with a mixture of lime and sand are not proof against blast from even the smallest bomb dropped yards away. The Ministry of Home Security has ordered that such shelters be pulled down and rebuilt. *Vide* the "Builder", April 18, 1941, p. 392.

Moreover, on wet sites, where the water level is just below



Section of a concrete shelter below ground level showing the method of earth covering for the roof

the surface, the danger of partial flooding of the shelter at the crucial moment must be kept in mind, although on many sites such flooding is not likely.

If the entrance to the shelter is situated between 6 and 15 ft. from and facing a substantial wall of the house or work place, that wall will act as a baffle to cut down the blast effect travelling towards the entrance. If it is situated more than 15 ft. away the

entrance should be guarded against blast by means of a baffle wall forming a part of the shelter. Or alternatively be similarly protected by an earth wall whose least thickness is 30 inches. The passage running from one end of the baffle wall to the real shelter entrance can be guarded by a door and equipped, if desired, with a gas curtain.

Baffled entry shelters are preferable and twinned and foursome units are advisable wherever possible. For small houses small shelters would suffice but for large houses, shops, small hotels, etc., sizes accommodating 24 would be useful. No specific provision for cross ventilation, other than that likely to arise between the entrance and the joints of the plates and loose bricks of the emergency exit are mentioned in the directions for Domestic Shelters for six persons issued by the Home Office. If desired, however, an air brick aperture can be inserted for peace-time service in one of the walls, always provided adequate measures are provided at the same time to provide a blast-resistant closing device over the air brick apertures, for use during air raids. A plate device similar to that used for the emergency exit would be adequate. In the case of certain of the larger types cross ventilation will be set up naturally by the flow of air between the two or more entrances.

A peace-time use is necessary if the expenditure incurred on shelters, should not become a waste after the war. Designing shelters which could be later converted into homes has received considerable attention in Great Britain. Some have been actually erected on a site in the London area.

They have been conceived as part of a framework. They incorporate a new planning technique based on the repetition of a simple square compartment unit. Efficient shelters at a low cost, but, over and above this, the planning and construction have been carefully studied with a view to possible post-war conversion into houses. The principal unit of design and construction is a room 14 ft. 6 in. by 14 ft. 6 in. square, having an internal height of 8 ft. 6 in. The standard 14 ft. 6 in. square units are joined together by means of a 6 ft. connecting passage, which accommodates access space and male and female lavatories, the floor to ceiling dimension of the passage being such that clerestory ventilation can be obtained. In the scheme built, water-borne sanitation is provided.

The standard four-compartment shelter can be converted into various housing types flats and semi-detached and terraced houses, by the addition of one or two storeys. It should be noted that, if the standard four-compartment shelter has to be converted into terraced housing, the original shelters would be spaced 14 ft. 6 in. apart, the space so left being subsequently built over. The cost of the shelters was £8 per head, bunked (including water-borne sanitation) or £4 per head, seated (including water-borne sanitation).<sup>1</sup>

The need for having a peace-time use for air raid shelters, is also drawing attention in America, where 'after war' is emphasised even for other constructional measures, necessitated by air attacks. The Chairman of the Committee on Civilian Protection set up by the American Institute of Architects suggests that large shelters built above ground can be converted into parking garages after the war. Other shelters can be built like the "Coventry Convertibles" which are so designed that they will form the ground floors of future houses. According to him "Refuge retreats in our mountains in time of war could be made very desirable camps in time of peace for a population which may find the post-war economy not conducive to pre-war vocations.

He also suggests planning between stages and communities for large scale evacuation, for, although it may be perfectly possible

<sup>1</sup> "The Builder," July, 1942, pp. 29-30.



to evacuate expeditiously, it is impossible for an area to receive and absorb large number of people without a comprehensive plan formulated by qualified planners.

Mr. Peaslee also warns against blindly accepting British formulas for evacuation or the construction of air raid shelters, the British having done certain things because they had no other alternative. Communities in this country, on the other hand, might through careful consideration find more desirable alternatives.

Careful consideration should be given to the siting of shelters. They should not form obstacles to movement during day or blackout nights and must be close to the centres of activity where people may be. In their lightning attack during the close of October 1942, one of the *Luftwaffe's* biggest efforts for two years, Nazi raiders came over Canterbury in four waves of some 15 planes each. They flew over the town and it is believed many bombs were dropped. Many persons had no time to take shelter. Shelters must therefore be accessible easily.

In conclusion we should emphasise that all these shelters offer limited protection to blast and splinters. They cannot stand the direct hit of high explosive bombs of medium weight. Emergency measures cannot be better; bomb-proof shelters for all the citizens is impossible within a short time due to the heavy cost. To lessen the magnitude of the danger, until existing cities are readjusted with protective accommodation for all the inhabitants, every future residential building should have its air raid shelter, which would give reasonable protection and which will have no adverse psychological effect upon the minds of children and adults and "entering of which would in war time be no novelty."

Recent bombing experience discloses numerous cases of direct hits upon air raid shelters. "A number of people were killed in cellar shelters" in Malta in May 1941, when there was a severe raid one night. When Clydeside was bombed in May 1941 "a number of people were killed when a street shelter was directly hit." "There were a number of casualties, mainly women and children—when a surface shelter was wrecked" in London in an April night in 1941. When the Nazis attacked Hull shelters were wrecked in the raid and many children were killed.

The worst incident involved a communal shelter in a working class area. There were a number of people in it when the shelter was

wrecked. The bomb demolished some surrounding property and debris fell on the shelter completely burying it. Several people were rescued alive but others, including children, were killed. A woman lost her three children.

According to a Netherland Indies Army Communique dated 21-2-1942 referring to Jap raid on Sumatra "In Bombardment of Benjoewangi where some 15 bombs were dropped, 39 civilians were killed and 15 wounded chiefly owing to a direct hit on an air raid shelter."

It is natural that people are tempted to stay out rather than enter shelters.

A census taken in July 1941 showed that 104,920 people are using public shelters and 556,000 were using domestic shelters, as compared with 470,200 and 2,140,000 respectively, in November 1940, while approximately 12 per cent. of the users of public shelters were children.<sup>1</sup> Large shelters, unless bomb-proof, should be small.

As Alderman Charles Key, M.P., declared in a broadcast that in a neighbouring borough to his own more lives were lost "from a single bombing of an underground shelter than we suffered by two months of intensive bombing." "We lost," he added, "less than one life for every two bombs dropped."

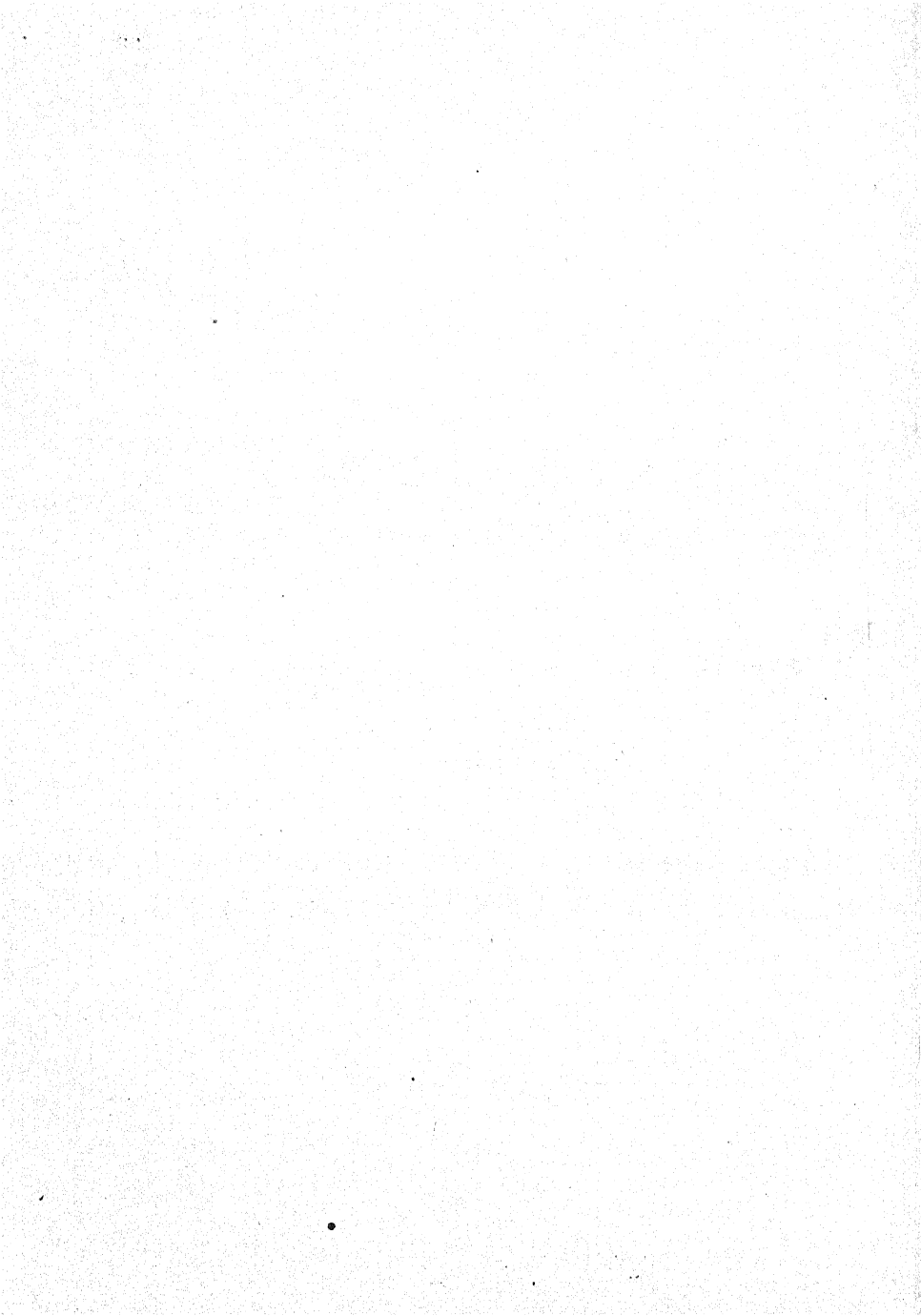
As Prof. Haldane has made it very clear: 'The truth is that any large shelter, unless it is completely bomb-proof, is more dangerous than a small one.' The moral is that shelters, unless they are really bomb-proof, should either be small or, divided up into small compartments by really blast-proof walls, not thin brick-walls with very poor mortar between the bricks.

"I am certainly horrified at the large size of some of the non-bomb-proof shelters."

"I would much sooner be in a small brick surface shelter than in an underground "shelter" of this kind during a raid. Indeed if I had a steel helmet I would as soon as be in the open air."

<sup>1</sup> The "Hindu", 31-7-1941.

<sup>2</sup> The "Indian Express", 14-5-1941.



## **CHAPTER IX**

---

### **PRECAUTIONS FOR STRUCTURES AND SERVICES**

# CHAPTER IN

THE HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES

## CHAPTER IX

---

### PRECAUTIONS FOR STRUCTURES AND SERVICES

Wherever possible precautionary measures must be adopted to minimise the consequences of air attack to city structures and services. Care should also be taken to protect valuables, records and documents, art treasures and manuscripts that cannot be replaced when once destroyed. Historic monuments should be preserved. Key positions must be guarded.

Art treasures were removed from the Helsinki Museum on the eve of attack. Valuable radium of a London hospital has been deposited in a tube sunk deep into the ground. The City of London was transformed by sandbags. Underground tubes have been protected against the risk of flooding from burst mains. In every city in Europe anticipating air raid, diverse measures have been adopted. For unless everything is done to increase resistance, collapse would be quick and the consequences terrible.

Regarding city structures, absolute protection is out of question. But even precautions are not worth the while for small structures built in the traditional style in highly congested areas especially when they are situated close to important objectives that would invite the high explosive. Every existing building must be examined on its own merit and measures to be adopted should depend upon the type of construction and the quality of the building as well as its location and neighbourhood. For most of the buildings built in local style and which are old and situated in congested quarters with solid masonry load bearing wall no major structural precaution can be taken without practically reconstructing the building. For tall structures like temples, cathedrals, mosques, etc., precautions might prove uneconomic. To multi-storeyed structures of modern design and construction, something could be attempted.

A survey of city structures will make it clear that measures for resistance would be expensive. For instance gas-proofing is almost impossible for structures with tiled roofs and even to terraced

houses which are old. Even painting the walls up to eight feet as suggested for cleansing stations will not be possible for many residences. All that can be done to resist a gas attack is to provide ample water-supply and to make provision for draining away water used for decontamination.

To large commercial premises, government and municipal offices gas-proofing by sealing up the crevices and equipping doors and windows with gas-proof curtains and devices and painting the walls upto 7 or 8 feet with washable paints must be attempted. To restaurants and boarding-houses, to oilman stores and to depots where food grains are stored special precautions must be taken and State compulsion might become necessary. They must be gas-proof and provision for decontamination must be made. As most building materials in use absorb liquid poison gas, preventive measures would prove uneconomic, and provision for decontamination must be made.

### **Precautions against Fire**

The danger from incendiary bomb attack may perhaps be most severe to congested Indian cities. Even in the West this has proved serious and measures to equip cities with fire-fighting organisations have been made. In London over 2,000 fire-fighting parties are organised. Fire-fighting squads form the necessary complement to precautions that would minimise the risk of fire and its spread. For, adequate water-supply may not be available and immediate attention might not be possible.

There are three methods of fighting incendiary bombs :

1. To prevent the bombs from reaching inflammable objects.
2. To prevent fires from spreading.
3. To fight fires which have already gained a considerable foothold.

The last method is almost useless while there is water scarcity when fire breaks out wholesale. The second method advocated by the Government of Great Britain in A.R.P.H. 9 assumes that persons are in the house or in the building when the bomb strikes it, that anybody is skilled in the difficult art of fighting the incendiary

bomb and that people do not go into shelter when there is an air raid. These assumptions are hardly true.

1. Houses may be empty, women and children having been evacuated and the men away at work or in military service.
2. The enemy will not announce beforehand whether he will use incendiary or high explosive bomb or gas.
3. Enormous skill and courage is needed and protective clothing is essential to reach the bomb. Many incendiary bombs spray their contents causing many fires at once. Some are also of the explosive type.

The most effective method therefore lies in preventing bombs from reaching inflammable objects.

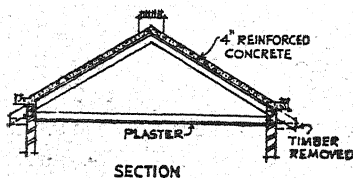
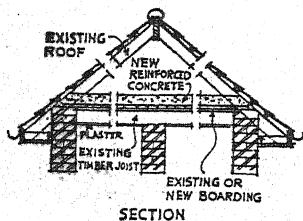
Unlike the high explosive bomb the incendiary when dropped from a great height will fall almost vertically owing to air resistance. Naturally they will penetrate the roofs of houses and not openings in the walls.

Structural precaution against fire should take into account the two different effects wrought by the incendiary: 1. The direct destruction to vital structural members. 2. The damage caused by the exceedingly large stresses directly or indirectly due to difference or change in temperature. Although brick walls could never be destroyed directly by fire it would often collapse by the thrust due to the expansion of the beams owing to the increasing temperature. The latter action is more important and dangerous to buildings with timber floors and roofs.

There are two ways of protecting houses and other properties against incendiary bombs. The first is more expensive and assures full protection while the second is cheaper and will protect 60 per cent. of cases when 2-lb. bombs are dropped. To give full protection to houses with timber roof, the vulnerable parts of the house should be covered with 4 in. concrete or  $\frac{1}{2}$  in. steel or 3 in. concrete and 16 gauge steel sheeting or other material which will prevent penetration. Four-inch timber boarding will prevent this but to prevent catching fire it should be covered with asbestos or sheet steel. But even if it



burns it would have stopped the bomb. Any bomb-resisting material could be applied to the outside of the roof. Reinforced concrete or protected timber could be used for sloping roofs as shown in the diagram. The tiles may be removed or replaced on the top of the concrete to preserve the original appearance.



Methods of strengthening roofs  
to resist the Kilo Incendiary  
Bomb

A flat concrete floor at the level of the eaves is usually cheaper than the above. Incendiary bombs will burn into the roofs but will not affect the residents nor burn down the building. Another method less expensive is to use tight-fitting timber boarding with a double steel plate on top. Two 10-gauge sheets are better than one 20-gauge sheet although the total thickness is approximately the same. Such double sheets supported by 4-in. timber properly

anchored to the existing walls will localise the fire on the roof. Asbestos sheeting between these two will prevent damage to timber by red hot steel. Such a protective measure could be utilised to convert the building into a flat roof one, after a fire.

This has been suggested even for houses whose tiled roofs have been destroyed. Instead of replacing the gabled roof, a flat roof of reinforced concrete wherever possible is now advocated in Britain. Houses so repaired will be proof against incendiary bomb and it is further claimed that they will be cheaper than the former type, since timber etc. would be more expensive during war.

Even two inches of concrete on the outside of a roof steeper than 40 degrees will make most of the 2-lb. bombs glance away or if 2 in. of concrete is used for the attic floor will prevent incendiary

bombs already checked by the existing roof, from reaching the floor. Similar will be the result if 2 in. boarding is used instead of the 4 in.

Partial protection can be achieved and the fire localised by attic floors as mentioned in the previous paragraph. But we should remember two additional precautions :

1. The walls must be properly tied together.
2. A layer of fire-resisting material must be arranged on top of the attic or the attic beams in such a way that the presence of an incendiary bomb on top does not result in damage underneath.



A Fire-fighting party in action

Care must be bestowed in choosing the proper fire-resisting material. Steel, kaolin or foamed slag, asbestos, ashes, etc., are mentioned by the Home Office ; but the consistency of these materials must also be taken into consideration before using them. Powdered kaolin will be scattered when a missile falls over it and there will be no protection. Steel sheets might be bent upwards by the terrific heat and through the gaps formed, burning material

might fall down and set fire to the attic beams. Steel sheeting placed over powdered kaolin will prevent their flying about and also the gaps through which burning matter will come down. Where attics are connected with staircases special care must be taken to prevent fire coming down. The opening should be closed and made part of the floor. A manhole cover should be provided if communication must be maintained.

Flat roofs of 4 inches of reinforced concrete, are incendiary bomb-proof ; if hollow tiles are used 2 in. of concrete on top of the existing insulation or asphalt would strengthen it sufficiently. Flat roofs with timber construction with only a thin covering of a kind of bitumen paper or corrugated sheet particularly when old, cannot resist incendiaries. A new reinforced concrete roof is essential. If the existing construction is strong enough which is not generally the case, two layers of sandbag would be cheaper than concrete slabs.<sup>1</sup>

To most tiled houses in our cities these reforms may prove uneconomic and beyond the means of many owners. To many other dwellings these will be definitely impossible, in the slum areas and in poor quarters where thatch is a prominent feature.

In no small sense this is a war of fire. The London Fire Brigade in two months had to fight 20,000 fires. In one single day, as many as 400 fires were started, some of which required 500 men to fight. Measures to prevent incendiary bombs from igniting our city structures and to fight the fires which they might develop, are therefore essential. This needs organisations to detect 'the presence of the incendiary bomb and smother it ; to fight the fires that would develop, by fire brigades etc ; to check the spread of fire when once it gets a foot-hold in a premises.

Fire watching and Fire fighting needs numerous trained personnel spread all over the city and stationed in strategic places.

Local fire party leaders have been appointed in each area, each of whom has a corps of senior fire fighters, each of whom in turn has as many volunteer fire fighters as may be needed for that area.

British fire guards have now found that it is futile to man posts night after night, especially where men are doing work during

<sup>1</sup> Vide F. Samuely, the "Builder", November 17, 1939, p. 712.

the day which is not improved by lost sleep at night. There are now three watchers assigned to the post patrol who sleep alternatively from sunset to sunrise, and are free from post duty for three weeks. On the same night—perhaps a Monday—on the two intervening weeks, they are liable for patrol duty and are expected to remain in their area and to be ready to fight any threatened outbreak should an attack develop, in co-operation with the post watchers and led by the senior fire guard and the head fire guard for their area.

Experience in Britain has shown that the only way to deal with an incendiary bomb attack is for each householder to tackle his own bomb as soon as it falls. This would be impossible if every one were taking cover in a shelter.

The Joint Civil Defence Committee of Bombay has undertaken a fire-watching scheme, which will involve an expenditure of Rs. 1,25,000 per month. The city will be divided into seven wards and each of these into approximately 100 circles. Each ward and each circle will have a paid full-time officer to organise and train and a committee of local residents. There will also be a committee for each street and these will have to find places for 10,000 fire watching posts and 160,000 volunteers to man these posts.

According to the A.R.P. Controller, Madras, about 6,000 parties would be needed to deal with fires in the Madras city, each party consisting of three members, who would be supplied with stirrup pumps, sand bags and water buckets, by the A.R.P. There should also be a hundred per cent. reserve. Thus the services of about 36,000 volunteers would be needed. Such parties should be organised and given proper training to use efficiently the stirrup pump, which is the best method of dealing with the incendiary bomb.

An excellent alternative to the stirrup pump called the "Back-Pack Fire Pump" has been developed in the U. S. A., for fighting the incendiary bomb. It is a 5-gallon fire extinguisher which uses water only and may be carried on the back and only one person is needed to operate the pump when it is back-pack fashion, thus reducing the number of persons needed for the Fire Watching and Fighting Organisation.

A-5 gallon fire extinguisher using water only—no chemicals are needed, which may be carried on the back, made by D.B. Smith.

and Company for use in fighting incendiary bombs, styled the "Indian Back-Pack" is shaped to fit the back, thus leaving the hands free to operate the pump and the nozzle. By slowly working the pump back and forth a continuous long-distance spray is produced such as is necessary for extinguishing incendiary bombs. While the pump may be carried either by the back or by hand, only one person is needed to operate the pump when it is carried back-pack fashion. The carrying rack for the back has an unbreakable base into which the pump fits. A flat coiled steel spring on the back strap prevents shock to the tank when travelling over rough or hilly roads. A large opening makes the tank easy to fill and as only clear water is used it can be refilled constantly right on the fire line. The tank will stand alone while being filled thus making it easy to handle.

It is now definitely established that water is the best material to deal with the incendiary bomb.

Manufacturers of liquids and powders intended for use against incendiary bombs frequently organise demonstrations of these products. Accompanying advertising matter—besides making exaggerated claims—sometimes includes statements to the effect that tests of the product have been carried out "in the presence of Home Office Officials", and other statements are made implying that the product has received official approval.

The Ministry of Home Security's recommendation is to use plain water projected by a stirrup pump, and this advice is based on long experimental work which shows that an incendiary bomb can, in average circumstances, be dealt with by this method in about fifty seconds. Water has the advantage of costing nothing, an important consideration when it is remembered that the control of the bomb is of minor importance compared with the extinguishing of the fire likely to result from it. These two operations may demand attention simultaneously and the nozzle of the pump is designed for that purpose. The Ministry has tested a large number of specially prepared liquids and powders and has found that in no case did the liquid have any significant advantage over water used with a stirrup pump, or any powder show any such advantage over sand. There is, in fact, no known liquid commercially practical which can be recommended in preference to water. Moreover, some of these preparations emit fumes or dense smokes, which are in some cases poisonous and in others make the preparation quite unsuitable for use indoors.

The Government of India in their "A summary of Air Raid Precautions applied to Factories" (see page 6) warns that "Patent Chemical Fire Extinguishers must not be used on incendiary bombs."

The generally accepted—and widely recommended practice in dealing with incendiary bombs with the stirrup pump has been to turn the *spray* on to the bomb. Whatever may be the scientific truth of the matter behind this practice, it has now been superseded by the complete reversal of the method in Air Raid Precautions Handbook No. 14 issued by H. M. Stationery Office.

Accordingly an important change in procedure is now recommended, where speed, which applies in practically every case—is the governing factor. The earlier instruction to fire fighters that when using the stirrup pump method the spray only should be used on the bomb is now countermanded. Experience has shown, say the authorities, the advisability of turning the Jet and not the Spray directly on to the bomb from as short a range as possible.

A kilo magnesium fire bomb can be disposed of in less than a minute by this means, it is stated. Although the jet of water, unlike the spray may cause some scattering of the burning metal, it will involve less risk of personnel injury than might be expected. "The particles bounce off the skin without causing burning; but care should of course be taken that no particles are able to lodge between the clothing and the skin." Further there is another advantage namely that a solid stream permits attack from a greater distance reducing the danger of injury in case the bomb contains explosive charge. The other widely prevalent notion about the Kilo-Incendiary bomb namely that it cannot be put out is challenged now in U. S. A., where it is claimed that tests have shown that "the magnesium incendiary bomb can be extinguished."

To the familiar small magnesium incendiary a powerful explosive charge set off by a time fuse is now added. Large incendiaries also have been developed which explode on impact. These present a problem of multiple fire which must be attacked with a jet of water. The new instructions relate primarily to fighting the small explosive fire bomb but they are also applicable at many points to fighting the fires caused by the larger incendiaries.

In addition there is the new Japanese incendiary scatter bomb weighing 110 pounds and containing, besides thermit a number of

rubber-impregnated pellets. The bomb explodes immediately on contact, scattering the pellets widely and starting a large number of small fires which may safely be attacked immediately with a jet of water.

Full protection from the small fire bomb with delayed action explosive charge requires the equivalent of a brick wall  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inches thick. Lath and plaster walls, wooden doors, tables or chairs do not offer complete protection. Personal risk may be greatly reduced by assuming a crouching or prone position behind the best available cover. Where fires are likely to spread rapidly even bombs which may explode should be attacked promptly from behind the best available cover. Water may be thrown from a small or one pint container, dipping from a larger container, if a pump is not available. Although less efficient than a jet of water, this method may permit the wetting of inflammable material within range of the bomb. Water should be thrown from a crouching position under the cover of solid wall, as in other methods. In this case the water need not be thrown on the bomb itself.

Use of a jet of water enables the operation to work at a much greater distance than the short-range methods which employ sand or a spray of water. Sand in the form of bags or mats cannot be depended upon because these bombs upon explosion have a greater fragmentation effect than the explosive incendiary bombs formerly used. The public should be warned against the use of all smothering agents and scoops, grabs and snuffers. They are entirely without merit and may endanger lives. The use of spray and sand is no longer recommended. The new types of bombs increase the importance of storing water in the home, as heavier explosive charges and larger bombs make it even more hazardous to depend upon normal water service. Containers previously used for sand should, if possible, be used for water. A thorough search of the premises should be made after every raid. Any unexploded bombs should be reported promptly to the bomb reconnaissance agent for inspection. Where phosphorous-oil-bombs have been used, all areas touched by the oil should be kept wet until proper authorities have examined them to see whether phosphorus is present. Physical contact with fragments of such a bomb or any ground or equipment splashed with the liquid should be avoided.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>*Vide*, Revised instruction issued by O. C. D. Washington.

Many ideas and suggestions have been put forward for extinguishing fires and incendiary bombs. The latest is that of Dr. Roy Cross who reports that in his experience with a great variety of fires in oil, metals and other materials, there is nothing so satisfactory and so fool-proof as portland cement as it is placed. It has been highly successful in extinguishing fires where water, carbon tetrachloride, foam and similar substances have been unsuccessful. This very common material so easily available and so safe to use should be placed at points where there is danger from fires either from incendiary bombs or from normal causes.

"In our own laboratory", adds Dr. Cross, "we provide such material easily available in kegs and find it far more successful than the usual fire extinguishers and is in itself not combustible, as in the case of pitch."<sup>1</sup>

Fire watchers have to be men posted on the roofs of high buildings from which they can see where incendiary bombs fall. A large part of the city area is composed of warehouses, business premises etc. not normally occupied at night and consequently there is no one at hand either to deal with an incendiary bomb or to report its fall. Owners of factories and business premises should be asked to co-operate by appointing one or more of their own staff to function as fire-watchers for the premises.

Then comes the question of efficient fire-engines and an adequate water supply which are scarce in many cities. The supply of fire-fighting apparatus is severely restricted on account of the war and improvements in water supply are both costly and handicapped by lack of plant. Moreover, in parts of most towns communications are so bad that large fire-engines could not operate in them. Many of the points involved are of a highly technical nature and a survey of the best way of overcoming the difficulties should be made beforehand. The case of each town has to be taken up individually. For these reasons attention must be concentrated for the present on incendiary bomb squads, supplemented by such fire-fighting arrangements as are already in existence. As the survey of each town is completed the elaboration of the scheme should be taken up.

It is now officially disclosed that the Central Telegraph Office in London was totally destroyed by a fire on the night of the great air raid on December 29, 1940. When several incendiary bombs hit it they were put out by the Post Office fire fighters,

<sup>1</sup>*The Hindu*, 2-8-1942.



but owing to the failure of water-supply, the blazing debris from adjoining premises defeated all efforts, and only some of the apparatus and instruments were saved. For fire fighting in London, emergency water-supply has been improvised in tanks. Huge tanks (for picture see *The Hindu*, 15-2-1942) holding thousands of gallons of water are now being placed in various parts of London ensuring a supply of water for fire fighting even under the most difficult emergency. Basements of bombed buildings have been turned into reservoirs while in some districts the tanks have been sunk into the ground thereby affording added protection against bomb damage. Emergency water tanks have been built into the ground in London districts, after the bomb-damaged buildings had been cleared from the site. Emergency water tanks, resembling swimming pools have also been erected in bombed buildings in London.

Static water tanks should be provided in all vulnerable spots and kept ready filled with water. They could be so erected as to have peace-time use. Many instances are on record to show that lack of water rendered fire-fighting impossible. The problem of making adequate arrangements for a supply of water (alternative or additional to the town supply) for fire-fighting purposes, is one which is common to many of our own towns and cities. Water supplies for fire fighting fall naturally into two categories *viz.* supply and distribution. The normal non-tidal sources are, reservoirs, natural and artificial lakes, ponds, swimming baths, water towers, etc. and tidal or other sources with variable levels are, harbour, creeks, seashore, rivers and streams. There are also other sources such as springs, wells and sewers which may also contribute to a certain extent to the aggregate of supply. Pumps used in connection with fire fighting are high-speed centrifugal types possessing the great asset of being self-priming. This greatly simplifies the drawing of water from lower levels. However such pumps will become much more liable to choking and for this reason it is very necessary to exclude solid materials from the suction side by fitting adequate strainers at the inlets to the suction pipes. Water from the seashore may be obtained by running mobile pumps as close to the water's edge as possible and pumping direct from the sea. Pumping from the sea is more suitable from a pebbly foreshore than from a sandy one. The use of permanently submerged rotary borehole pumps driven by internal combustion engines is now being extensively adopted in the case of rivers and tidal waters and

coupled with a good distribution system they should make a valuable contribution to the perfection of supplementary water-supply schemes. Springs, wells and the like, is a chancy matter and their principal value is auxiliary supplies for replenishing water holders after heavy demands have been made on them during a raid. The pumping of water from sewers is quite an impracticable one when coldly viewed from an engineering standpoint.

There is also, as a last resort when a fire has got completely beyond control, and threatens to engulf the whole city, the drastic remedy of making a "Fire Lane" to arrest its progress. This involves the creation of an open space, cleared of inflammable materials, of sufficient width to prevent flames crossing it and would mean demolition of houses and buildings on a fairly large scale. Speed would be essential and probably, therefore, explosives would have to be used. The actual siting of the "lane" to be cleared would depend on many considerations—the fire itself, the direction and strength of the wind, the existence of open spaces and broad roads which might form part of the "lane". The "lane" and its surrounding area would then have to be cleared of its population and the buildings knocked down and inflammable materials removed.

As a precautionary measure, targets and areas very vulnerable to the incendiary bomb hazard can be isolated by cutting anti-fire lanes by clearing sufficient space between rows of buildings etc. as is done in Chungking and recommended by the Ceylon Government.

Serious attention is being given to the fire menace in every country anticipating air attacks. The *Pravda* has warned the people of Moscow to expect the enemy to use not only incendiary bombs but also an incendiary fluid which is much more dangerous. Again, as in the winter, of 1941-42, snow is to be widely used as fire extinguisher. All roofs will have special cabins for roof-watchers who, where needed, will be attached to their posts by safety ropes. Careful revision of the A.R.P. system was made in the middle of 1942. All attics were cleared and special attention was given to protection of water pipes in view of the anticipated early frosts.

In England by far the most extensive damage has been caused by fire. As the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee in their report point out, with its closely packed highly inflammable buildings, India is likely to suffer terribly unless energetic measures are taken

to defeat the fire menace. The peace-time fire fighting services in India are very considerably behind those of Britain. There, outbreaks of fire have been much reduced by the large-scale provision of stirrup pumps, although there is still room for training people in their use. In India the number of appliances could well be increased many fold. It is possible that there are available many, originally destined for Malaya, Singapore or Hongkong. The entire population should be vigilant in the matter of seeking out and extinguishing incendiary bombs immediately. This has been responsible for the failure in Moscow of fire-bombs to cause large fires. They suggest that in the congested areas serious consideration should be given to the formation of fire breaks by the demolition of rows of buildings. This might also provide sites for the construction of shelters, such as trenches.

Photo-electric devices have been invented in England to detect incendiary bombs. Automatic device for the detection of incendiary bombs has been issued by the British Standards Institution (BS/A.R.P. 60) which deals with the performance of special electric devices for the detection of burning incendiary bombs.

Fire Extinguishers of the Foam type are recommended for liquid fires, such as oil which is ignited. The necessity of a special type of extinguisher for dealing with burning liquids arises out of two points, the tendency of an ordinary jet to disperse the fluid and so spread the fire instead of extinguishing it and the necessity of sealing the surface particularly of fluids with a low flash point, until risk of re-ignition is eliminated. This is best accomplished by means of foam.

The filling of a foam appliance consists of a strong solution of aluminium sulphate in an inner container and a solution in the body of the appliance consisting of soda bicarbonate with various added organic ingredients with a high saponin content.

In single sealed types, the inner container is sealed either by some sort of loose stopper or a simple mechanical device incorporated in the union and in double sealed tubes the outlet to the nozzle which is incorporated in the union is also sealed. This acts as a check on evaporation and also makes it possible to carry the appliance on a vehicle where a single sealed appliance if shaken about much, would splash liquid out and foam at the mouth.

The chemical reaction when the sealing device is released and the appliance inverted to allow the fluids to mix, produces carbon dioxide which forms a mass of soapy bubbles with the saponin and aluminium hydroxide which is also produced in a gelatinous form, and gives the bubble a tough resistant skin and so acts as a stabiliser.

They are at their best for dealing with fluids in an open container where the jet can be directed at the side above fluid level and the foam allowed to flow down and spread. They should normally be regarded as special purpose appliances for liquid fires only.<sup>1</sup>

Fire Prevention Education for everyone in vulnerable areas is essential. This has been systematised in U. S. A. and Manuals have been published. The course of education covers:—

Educational practices and standards for the reduction of injury, loss of life, and property damage by fire; the essential facts of fire safety; and means by which these facts may be utilized in the reduction of the nation's high fire waste.

The Manual is composed of two parts; one, a school programme for fire prevention and fire protection and two, methods and materials in fire prevention and protection for use by municipal officials and civic leaders and agencies. "Fire Prevention Education Manual for Home Front Fighters" prepared by the Centre for Safety Education, New York University and the Committee for Fire Prevention Education representing eleven National Educational and Fire Safety agents and Organisations, has been published by the National Board of Fire Underwriters, 85, John Street, New York.

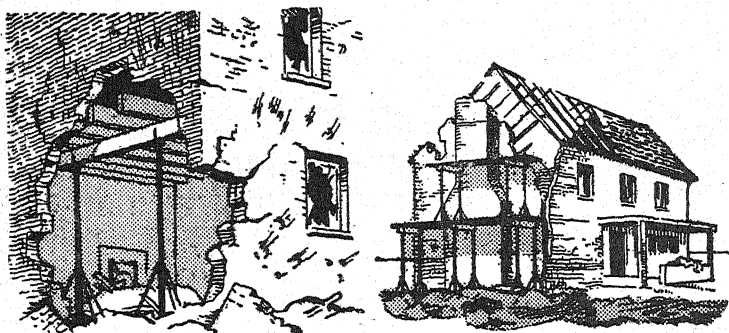
### **Precautions against Blast and Splinters**

Regarding high explosive bombs precautionary measures taken should cover, framing, walls, windows, roofs—both flat and pitched—projecting features like parapets, cornices, etc., and gable ends. The main principles to be followed are briefly indicated below.

Load-bearing walls are extremely vulnerable to air attack for the blast, by destroying a part of a wall can bring down the whole structure not directly affected in the original explosion. To meet this danger two methods are possible. A frame could be incorporated or constructed within the building. For large masonry buildings

<sup>1</sup> Vide "Safety News" March 1943, p. 1107.

an internal framework would prove economical and feasible. But for a small one it would be expensive, the cost will be almost prohibitive. A frame could be constructed within the building independent of the enclosing walls. This would carry the floors and relieve the walls of their load-bearing function. It is, however, extremely difficult to design a means of carrying the external walls on this frame without practically reconstructing them. Buildings in partial frames are not common in this country. Where they



Blast effect upon buildings strengthened with internal and external supports

exist it is easier to complete the frame. The framing required will consist only of columns and beams on external walls which can be linked to the ends of the existing beams relatively easily. In many cases the existence of a wall beam in the external wall will solve to some extent the problem of carrying the wall at each floor level.<sup>1</sup>

There is little that can be done towards making a wall-bearing structure safe from bombing. Sandbag barricades may protect the contents from fragments of bombs detonating outside the structure but they cannot prevent demolition of the entire structure by blast.

<sup>1</sup> Vide Oscar Bayne, "Structural Precautions against Air Attack", the "Builder", January 13, 1939, pp. iii-xxxix; E. L. Bird: Conference on Structural Air Raid Precautions, R.I.B.A., June, 1938; J.R.I.B.A., June 27, 1938. T. E. Scott: Conference on Structural A.R.P., J.R.I.B.A., June 27, 1938. "The Indian Concrete Journal", A.R.P. Number, September, 1939. Vide also "Structural Damage Caused by Recent Air Raids to some Single-storey Buildings", Bulletin No. CS, Research and Experiments Department, Ministry of Home Security. The examples of the damage given show the need for (1) full framing, (2) rigid steel frame work and (3) "Safety Valve" type of construction, if maximum resistance to collapse is to be obtained.

The Home Office recommends  $13\frac{1}{2}$  inches of brickwork in cement mortar to resist blast and splinters from 500-lb. bombs of the high explosive type exploding not nearer than 50 feet. Where the walls are thinner they must be strengthened by bonding extra material throughout the length and height. The addition of piers or buttresses at intervals may increase the stability but will not add resistance to penetration.

### Sandbagging and Baffle Walls

Sandbag protection has been extensively used for protecting entrances of buildings, pavement lights, wall openings, the walls of ground-floor shelters, and parts of the walls of basements which are above ground. Sandbags have also been used to a considerable extent in the form of hut-shelters for wardens' posts. Experience has shown that complete deterioration of sandbags exposed to the weather may occur within a few months, and even in favourable circumstances, in less than a year.

The Home Office requires a thickness of  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. of solid brickwork bedded in mortar, or 12 in. of reinforced concrete, or 15 in. of plain concrete, or 30 in. of sand or rubble in a revetment. When a combination of these materials is used they must be used in the same proportions; that is, for every inch of plain concrete it is permissible to omit 2 in. of sand. In the thickness mentioned 8 in. of concrete permit the omission of 16 in. of sand. While the actual costs will vary with time and circumstances, it is evident that sandbags do not, in general, provide economical protection and, if hollow concrete blocks are available, sandbag protection will only be the most suitable where the work is definitely temporary.

The Government of India<sup>1</sup> recognise the defectiveness of sandbag walling. The supply of sandbags is also limited. In any case "their liability to deterioration makes it desirable to consider in all cases where protection is required, whether a more permanent structure can be provided; the latter may also often be more economical course." Sandbags are advised only for a temporary need. Where a brick in cement wall  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. thick is not possible, by reason of ventilation etc. the following hints are suggested.

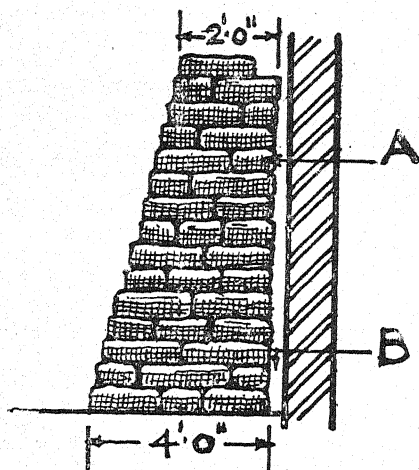
<sup>1</sup> Vide "Air Raid Precautions Training Manual", No. 1, p. 28.

Earth may be used instead of sand, in filling the sandbags. Gravel, ballast, broken bricks and other materials may be used as alternatives to earth or sand. They should be broken into small pieces so that when the sandbag is filled, it can be shaken into a compact and pliant mass.

A preservative should be used to prevent rot in a comparatively short time.

Sandbags should be only three-fourth filled and, when beaten

with a shovel to a rectangular shape, should measure 20"  $\times$  10"  $\times$  5". If the mouth is carefully folded under it when placed in position, it need not be tied.



Correct method of sandbag walling

A sandbag is said to be a "stretcher" when it is laid with its longest side parallel to the face of the wall and "header" when this side is at right angles to the face. The bags should be laid in alternate courses of headers and stretchers, the first course

being headers; this is similar to the method of laying bricks which is known as "English bond". Headers should be laid with the tied ends (chokes) inside. If the bag has only one seam, this should also be turned towards the inside in the laying of stretchers. Vertical joints should be broken, that is, the joints in one layer should not be opposite the joints in the next layer above or below.

A brick foundation making provision for drainage should form the base of the sandbag wall to protect it from damp. A sheet of water-proof material such as bituminous felt should be spread under the top layer of the bags, and a similar sheet should be placed between the sandbags and the wall against which they are piled.

The following table shows the number of standard sandbags required per foot run.

For a sandbag wall 6 feet in height 30 sandbags per foot run.

„	7	„	35	„
„	8	„	40	„
„	9	„	50	„
„	10	„	60	„

Thus it will be seen that, for a sandbag wall 9 feet in height and 10 feet in length, 500 sandbags will be required. The sandbag wall should be 30 inches thick at the top and proportionately thicker at the base to allow a slope (batter) of four in one on the outside face.

Where sandbagging is inevitable treatment for rot-proofing is essential. Two types of preservatives are suitable for application to sandbag revetments. They are respectively a creosote or tar distillate, used as a water emulsion, or a solution of an organic copper salt in creosote made up into an emulsion. The former treatment is for revetments in position which have already deteriorated by being exposed to the weather for some time. The latter is more potent but is also more expensive and its use will not generally be justified unless the bags are in good condition and unless it is desirable to take down the whole revetment, treat all the bags and then re-pile them. Creosote must be applied when the sand is dry and treatment should be repeated at intervals not exceeding three months.

These germicides will only protect the outside surface of the revetment, but the rot and decay start in the inside, between the bags. Even if the bags are treated with rot-proofing chemicals before filling with sand, there is still the certainty that the lower bags will burst as weight settles: the seams being so very weak, and seams cannot all be inside.

Drying the sand before filling the bags and then covering the work in timber or felt would probably lengthen the life of the protection, but would be uneconomic and extremely difficult without the proper plant. It is well to remember in this connection, another serious disadvantage, the spread of infection. They are polluted by dogs and cats and become "up-to-date semi-detached residences for the rats of the metropolis," as well as the breeding place for beetles, cockroaches, ants and other kinds of parasites. This may prove a source of infection and spread disease. There is no satisfactory method of preventing decay and the consequent collapse of sandbag protection.



A method of protecting sandbags against the effects of damp has been recommended to local authorities by the Ministry of Home Security. It consists of placing a water-proof cover, for example, bituminous felt, under the top layer of bags, draining the ground at the base so that the pile does not stand in water, and applying either a creosote or tar distillate or a solution of organic copper salt in creosote to the exposed face of the pile.



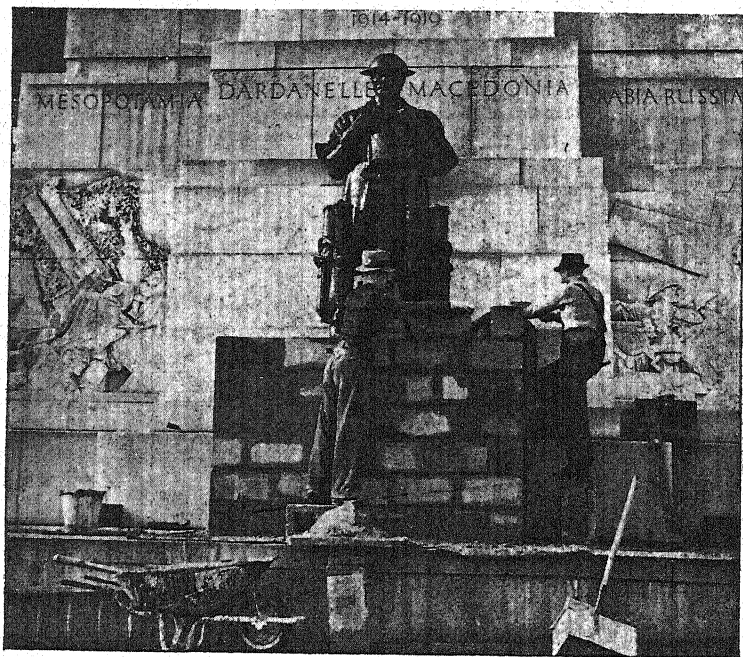
A sandbagged hospital in London

Local authorities have been advised also to put a kerb at the base of sandbag piles to prevent their being damaged by passing pedestrians. Any holes made in the sandbags through which filling would escape, with a risk of the collapse of the pile, can be repaired with strips of hessian.

The Ministry of Home Security has drawn attention also to the danger from erecting revetments too high. As a general rule they should not be higher than six to eight feet and never more than ten feet.

London is rapidly losing all its sandbags, and the standard practice is now to use brickwork or hollow concrete blocks filled with sand for the protection of windows, doors and similar apertures.

This looks much neater although in some cases the sandbags have been completely enclosed in wooden shuttering. This, however, is not a good method, since apart from not being fire-proof it uses up valuable wood whereas there is abundance of bricks and concrete, especially because of the enormous slump in the building industries. The standard protection can be obtained from  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. of brickwork, 15 in. of concrete, or 12 in. of 2-way reinforced concrete and there is very much to be said for the use of bricks, which requires no steel work, occupies a very small amount of floor space, is lighter than concrete and can easily be bonded into existing buildings as a support. Further, brickwork has a definite salvage value.



Hollow concrete blocks are used instead of sandbags to protect this statue in London

Thus at Wandsworth the standard method has been for the basement shelters to build baffle walls of 9 in. brickwork in front of the entrance and exits when these are below the ground level, but when above ground the standard adopted has been of a  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. wall generally, at Wandsworth, as in other places, brick protection of this type is considerably cheaper to erect than sandbags, which to give

similar protection have to be 2 ft. 6 in. thick, the labour costs being considerable. Altogether the sandbag is in very bad repute and certainly the damp and difficult climate of Great Britain has played havoc with the jute fabric.

His Majesty's Government are substituting hollow concrete blocks for sandbags.<sup>1</sup> In a number of areas a brick wall 13½ in. thick bedded in cement mortar has been adopted. Brick wall in cement mortar is now revealed to be cheaper than sandbagging, by experiments conducted in one of the cities in Great Britain where after investigation the use of sandbags was given up for strengthening public basement shelters.

"The use of sandbags for baffle walls and for the purpose of closing the windows was in principle abandoned right from the start, as a careful investigation into the relative cost of splinter-proof sandbag and brick walls showed that a 13½ in. brick wall built in Feltton bricks in cement mortar, resting on existing concrete with no footings and finished on each side with fair face, would cost between 20s. and 25s. per yard super, as against a cost of 35s. to 45s. for an equivalent sandbag wall 2 ft. 6 in. thick, including the cost of the sandbags, sand, labour in filling, tying and placing in position and treating the exposed surfaces after erection with some preservative. This comparison of the cost of brickwork and sandbag wall does not take into account the fact that the sandbag wall will in all probability have to be repaired if not replaced, even when treated, after a period of one or two years approximately. On the other hand, the cost does in neither case provide for removing the walls when the emergency is over. It was anticipated that in such an event there would be very little difference in the cost of removing the two types of wall."

In the narrow streets of our cities the danger of sandbags blocking them in the event of an explosion should be recognised. Some streets are so narrow that sandbag walling on two sides would hinder traffic even in peace time. Further, deterioration would be more rapid owing to the monsoon and the heat. Even in England

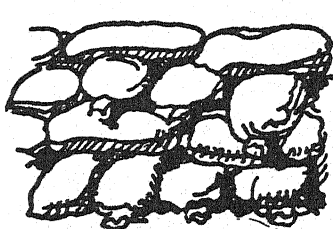
<sup>1</sup> Sandbagging is receiving wide attention and its deterioration has aroused good deal of comment. The Ministry of Home Security have issued a technical circular recommending the use of preservatives. (*Vide* "Hindu", January 7, 1940). Treatment for rot-proofing sandbag revetment. J.R.I.B.A., November 20, 1939, p. 15. See also Frank Bennett, 'Sandbagging; its defects.' "Builder", October 17, 1939, p. 613. A. O. Vincent, "Builder", November 17, 1939, p. 711, suggests a mixture of Hydraulic lime and sand instead. The quest for alternatives like brick walling, hollow precast concrete blocks, etc. "Builder", November 24, 1939, p. 741. A. R. F. Anderson—Protecting London Statues. "Builder", No. 3, 1939, p. 639. Sandbag walling, October 13, 1939, p. 566. Prof. R. V. Southwell, the Protection of Windows against Bomb Splinters, the Pebble Screen. *Ibid.*

vegetation, sagging, bulging out of alignment, earth tumbling out, the formation of gaps, have become apparent and the government departments and local authorities have been forced to devise measures to check deterioration and to discover a more permanent substitute for this type of revetment. Sand filling between timber boardings is not considered feasible owing to scarcity of timber. Hydraulic lime free from expansion, mixed with sand in the proportion of 1 to 7 or 8 or even leaner has been suggested. This mixture when placed in position and wetted would set and the whole would then be reasonably stable and permanent and would not collapse even when the bags burst, as the hard contents of each bag would support its share of the weight. It will not be so hard as to increase the risk of ricochets and there would be a minimum of splinters, as the hard contents of the bag would tend to pulverize rather than splinter.

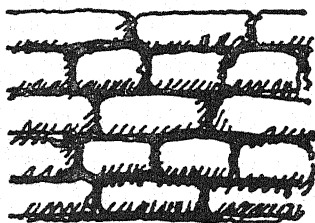
This would cost about  $\frac{3}{4}d.$  extra per bag at the most while the cost of germicidal treatment comes to about  $\frac{1}{2}d.$  per bag.

The considerations mentioned against sandbag equally apply to this kind of protection so far as space is concerned and brick walls wherever possible is desirable.

To city statues a revetment of hollow pre-cast concrete blocks may be preferred since they have a neat appearance and the cost will not be very much more than building a brick wall around. The cost of a concrete block revetment however is approxi-



Sandbagging (Emergency)



Sandbagging (Military)

mately half that of one of sandbag type of equal protective value and once erected the concrete blocks require no further protection or maintenance over a long period of years. It is already felt that time has

approached for replacing the majority of sandbags in the vulnerable areas of Great Britain, by this method.

A common requirement for sand-filled hollow concrete block revetment is that the total thickness shall be 22 in. comprising 8 in. of concrete and  $14\frac{1}{2}$  in. of sand ; when 18 in. by 9 in. blocks are used, this is met by erecting a double wall with a 4-in. space between the two leaves, which is also filled with sand. The two leaves of the wall are tied together with a wall tie.

The cost of sandbagging compared with that of more permanent construction is indicated by the following figures :

<i>Sandbag Walling</i>				<i>Pre-cast Concrete Hollow Block Walling</i>			
Per 100 bags				Per yd. sup.			
<i>sh. d.</i>				<i>sh. d.</i>			
Sandbags	..	..	36 0	9 in. by $8\frac{3}{4}$ in. by $17\frac{3}{4}$ in. hollow blocks	..	6 6	
Sand at 9s. per cubic yard and filling	..	..	31 6	Sand at 9s. per cubic yard	..	0 10	
				Laying and filling, say	..	4 0	
Placing	..	..	11 0	Total per square yard	..	11 4	
<hr/>				<hr/>			
78 6							

Net volume of filled bags, say, 0.66 c. ft. each. Gross volume, say, 0.85 c. ft.

Cost per square yard of wall = 8s. 4d. approximately.

Add for weathering to top and timber platform, say, 2s. per lineal foot of wall ; or, say, for 6 feet height a total cost of 9s. 8d. per yard super 1 bag thick.

Although the above costs show a saving in first cost of about 15 per cent., the cost of hollow concrete block revetment is reduced when an existing sandbag revetment is to be replaced and the sand on the site can be used to fill the blocks, or for sites where the cost of filled sandbags delivered is 100s. per 100, a rate which has been common in some districts. Moreover, it has to be remembered that concrete blocks are permanent, and will cost nothing for maintenance or for waterproofing.

### Window Protection

The problem of protecting windows is far more difficult to solve since the measures to be adopted should be devised to suit both the nature of the building as well as the neighbourhood. They could be let alone to function as safety valves in the event of an explosion

or they might be protected to resist equally with the walls. Heavy shutters, removable slabs or sandbags are suggested but,

1. In buildings surrounded by wide streets or open spaces and without internal courts the value of protection against external explosion given by protected windows would be sufficiently great to justify the risk of increased damage in the event of a direct hit.
2. In buildings surrounded by narrow streets and with enclosed areas such as light courts and courtyards, the danger of increasing the damage caused by either interior or exterior explosion would be so great as to outweigh any advantages.

In practice protection is obtained by heavy steel or composite sheet steel shutters and units of like construction and it is recommended that if brick or concrete is to be built into position at the time of emergency it is essential that all necessary material should be stored ready for use. It is best to make shutters and removable frames larger than the opening so that they over-lap the brickwork all round. When fitted on the outside of the wall the force of an external blast will be transmitted to the wall directly by the bearing edges and not through lugs or other anchorages. In case of an internal blast the strength of the shutters would depend upon the fixing lugs which would probably fail as we desire if the pressure was great. In either case it adds resistance and safety to structures to protect windows with steel shutters and units larger than the opening and fixed outside.

To poorer class of buildings where closing the window with brickwork would entail difficulty and darkness, a pebble screen made up of a frame containing two flat layers of wire-netting enclosing a layer of pebbles not less than 4 in. thick might prove useful against splinters. The thickness could be increased to add its resistance. The two faces should be reasonably flat when the frame is filled, but able to bulge largely if the pebbles are struck by a flying fragment. Before the pebbles are inserted the two faces should be tied together by stays of thin wire or string, strong enough to prevent bulging under the mere weight of the pebbles (say 80 lb. per cubic foot) but, on the other hand, weak enough to break when the frame is struck, thus leaving the wire-netting free to bulge. The aim of the whole scheme is to obstruct a flying fragment, not by

anything strong, and rigid, but by a "cloud" of heavy particles (the pebbles). This cheap device is easy to fit any window, and when filling the frame if a few inches are left at the top and a reserve of pebbles is provided to fill in in times of need, daylight will not be shut out. The whole point of the pebble protection is its ability to yield freely, and there must be nothing to resist the bulging of wire-netting if a bomb splinter should hit. All that is needed is a little rough timber, some wire-netting and a few pailsful of beach or gravel pebbles.

Windows with glass panes require careful measures to reduce the danger of glass splinters. The explosion of a bomb can shatter the glass panes of structures over a considerable area as indicated in Chapter I. Every bit of glass has been blown to pieces in long rows of houses by one or two explosions. Considerable attention is therefore paid in England, where large glass panes are used both for residences and for office buildings.

According to a report from London quoted in "Civilian Defence" in September 1940, civilian air raid casualties amounted in England to 6,155 killed and 10,624 injured. As high as 90 per cent. of these casualties were caused by flying debris especially glass. In view of this it would seem to be important that we should take steps to treat windows of shelters, plants and other places where civilians will be found during air-raids with something which will make them shatterproof.

Wherever possible the glass panes should be removed preferably with the frame and stored in a safe place until the threat of air attack passes away. Where such removal is not possible nor desirable measures are necessary to prevent the scattering of glass splinters. Good deal of research in this direction has been carried out by the Research and Experiments Department by the Ministry of Home Security.

Anti-scatter treatment for glass windows is still engaging the attention of the Building Research Station. "Anti-scatter treatment for windows," that is the protection of the glass in such a manner as to prevent injury caused by fragments when shattering takes place because of bombs, is no easy matter. Materials such as transparent film, paper and fabrics stuck on to glass windows reduces the danger enormously. The products include synthetic

resin lacquers, rubber latex, multitudinous varieties of adhesive nets and other fabrics and of strip material.

According to an American Manufacturer, coating the outside as well as the inside of the glass with a glue will give some additional resistance to splintering. Adequate strength will be gained with internal treatment because of deterioration on the outside by wind, rain, smoke and gases. Carton Schultz's recommendation for this purpose is: a hot application of a tough jelly which has been liquefied by heating and applied with a brush. Two or three coats will give good resistance to splintering. This can easily be removed with hot water. Liquid coatings do not last long as they tend to become brittle and lose their anti-splintering effect. It is safest to renew the coating every two or three months. He also recommends wire netting inside windows to prevent glass from flying. This mesh should not be any bigger than  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch and should be firmly fixed to a detachable wooden frame made to fit the window casings.

A light-weight screen fixed over the window opening inside is also helpful in stopping flying glass and acts as a blackout. This screen may be made of light sheet metal affixed to a light wooden frame. Plywood, building board, thick cardboard, thin tinned sheets, roofing felts, linoleum and plasterboard are also recommended. A coat of paint will make these materials rainproof.<sup>1</sup>

The Building Research Station have tested up to the present time about 210 different liquid treatments and 220 types of adhesive nets. A general investigation of the behaviour of glass windows under blast has also been carried out on behalf of the Ministry of Home Security. It appears that a large proportion of the rubber latex and synthetic resin lacquer materials are not efficient because the film resulting from a 2-coat application on a vertical window is often too thin. Also in a large number of cases the good results are not retained after a few months because of the action of the weather, the film tending to become brittle, partly due also to the slow evaporation of the residual solvent. Transparent films of the cellulose and cellulose acetate variety give very good anti-scatter protection provided the film is thick enough and that it is applied properly to the glass. Further, almost any reasonably strong textile fabric, such as cheese cloth,

<sup>1</sup> Civilian Defence, May 1942, p. 39.



muslin or lace netting, will give the requisite minimum degree of protection if stuck properly on to the glass and to the surrounding frames. There has been a great development in the use of ready-gummed adhesive nets. These are mostly of good value, although they have the disadvantages of tending to peel off, and become mildewed when exposed to condensed moisture. The Building Research Station and the British Cotton Industries Research Association are trying to prepare a suitable specification as regards efficiency of adhesion and resistance to mildew.

In mills and factories where condensation is likely to be caused because of a steamy atmosphere all this net fabric on windows should be varnished over, which has the additional advantage that the varnish itself helps to hold the glass in place after fracture. This method is being adopted to a considerable extent on the London Tube Railways and for other vehicles.

The popular method of sticking paper strips on windows does not seem to be of much real use unless the paper used is very strong say of the cellulose and adhesive cloth tape type, and is also closely spaced.

If indiscriminate bombing should continue glass windows will either have to be enormously reduced in size and application, or will need to be replaced by unsplinterable glass, consisting of a sandwich of two sheets of glass and a sheet of cellulose acetate or similar material between. Such safety glass, however, is very costly.

As indicated in the A.R.P. Memorandum No. 12 assuming that glass is likely to be broken, window protection should be devised

1. to prevent damage from flying pieces of glass.
2. to exclude weather (wind and rain).
3. to act as obscuration in certain cases.

Wired glass will provide 1 and 2. When used in conjunction with shutters it will also provide 3, inasmuch as the glass remains in the frame even though cracked, thus permitting the shutters still to be used during black-out hours with natural light still available in the daytime. Wire reinforced glass, is a fire retardative and will prevent the spread of fire. It has been approved by the British Fire Prevention Committee and the London County Council.

The British Government's Experimental Building Research Station at Watford has successfully tested three new alternatives to unprotected glass windows. The first is used in place of window glass. It consists of netting, embedded in thick cellulose acetate film which lets in light and keeps out rain. There is a heavier variety to take the place of north lights, roof lights or other glass on which there is a heavy strain. It equals quarter inch plate glass in strength.

Another device is a lighter form of cellulose netting fixed to window panes by adhesive. A square of plate glass covered with this netting was put under a spring-loaded hammer which was brought down upon it, travelling one-eighth of an inch beyond the point of impact.

If glass is essential the substitution of plain glass by wired glass should be considered. Glass reinforced internally with wire-netting offers considerable resistance to glass. War-time Building Bulletin No. 1, "Treatment of Windows" considers it "desirable to use wired glass whenever possible, since this has been found, by experiment to offer high resistance to blast from a nearby high explosive bomb." Glass reinforced internally with wire-netting offers considerable resistance to blast. Although the glass gets fractured by blast from large high explosive bomb exploding in the immediate neighbourhood wired glass screen is damaged, but does not splinter and cause injury to personnel. The pieces are held together. In one factory large areas were exposed to flying fragments in addition to blast. Although splinters penetrated them the panes remained in the window openings.

Although the problem is less serious in our country especially in residential areas it deserves attention since many modern buildings erected on western model have many large window panes.

Raids on Calcutta have already brought this problem to the forefront. "Experience during recent enemy air raids showed that glass left in windows is a serious menace to general safety" said the Commissioner of Police, Calcutta in a press note. Even when a baffle wall in front of a window has been undamaged, he adds, the glass in the window behind the wall has collapsed. People caught in the street very often take shelter behind these baffle

walls and if there is glass in a window behind them the glass is almost as serious a danger as the direct effects of an explosion. The Commissioner has issued certain instructions for protecting glass and adds if during subsequent raids persons are injured by glass the responsibility for the injuries will be closely investigated and legal proceedings may be taken.

Regarding blast danger to other features, projecting members should as far as possible be removed since they would be dislodged by blast or flying fragments. Otherwise they should be either anchored down or stayed at short intervals. Cornices are particularly dangerous and it is almost impossible to strengthen them in any way. Small ones may be allowed to remain but those with large over-hanging projection should be either removed or cut back to a new profile. Hoods, porch-roofs and other non-structural projecting members should be adequately anchored down if they cannot be removed.

Gable ends are extremely dangerous, and liable to be blown away by blast or drawn out by the suction wave, after an explosion. If they are of brick, or concrete, gable ends should be both buttressed and tied to the structure. "If an internal partition abuts the wall below the gable, it may be carried up into the roof space and toothed into the brickwork of the gable to provide good buttressing and a reasonably good tie."

Regarding roofs nothing more is advisable than what was suggested in the previous section to resist the kilo incendiary bomb. Attempting to stop the high explosive is not worth the while; both terraced and pitched roofs should be dealt with as indicated.

To modern storeyed buildings precautionary measures to minimise the dangers of collapse of upper floors are necessary. Support by planking 2 or 3 inch thick at about three inch interval also supported at suitable centres by beams and pillars is necessary. The planking should easily be fixed close to the ceiling but should not be wedged up tight so as to take the initial impact of the falling debris.

A careful examination of each structure is essential to determine the kind of precautions to be adopted but a survey of city structures is needed to choose those that would repay the trouble taken and those that deserve to be preserved. This has been stressed by

experts and technical advisers as well as by the Home Office of Great Britain, in the interest of economy. In a poor country like ours this is vitally necessary to prevent waste of resources particularly in times of war when the demand for them is greater.

Buildings and structures in Indian cities might be classified as follows :

1. Middle and poor class residences, small buildings and structures, most of them built in local style.
2. Large buildings, residences of the well-to-do, shops and business premises built in local style.
3. Multi-storeyed structures and large residences of modern construction and design.
4. Factories, and Producing Centres.
5. Temples, Cathedrals, Mosques, Art Galleries, Museums, Libraries, Civic Buildings in the old style and city embellishments.

As already pointed out the first group do not warrant expensive precautions, particularly if they are situated in congested localities. Even fire-proofing the rafters by suitable paints would be beyond the means of most owners and the best alternative is perhaps the organisation of fire-fighting services. Most buildings in the next class possess splinter-proof walls but blast-proofing is impossible since incorporating a frame may not be feasible, especially to one and two-storeyed buildings. The next class deserve possible measures which could be undertaken. Most of the measures suggested in the opening pages could be tried but congested surroundings would reduce their efficacy. Narrow streets and packed surroundings might render most measures useless by inviting the high explosive bomb.

In this connection the Building Protection Activity found in Toledo, would be instructive. A careful survey of city structures by competent persons is followed by excellent direction and instructions to owners and occupiers. The various aspects of Toledo's building protective activity are:—

1. Removal of inflammable and accumulated useless materials to minimize fire hazards, in which the chief of the fire department and his staff of assistants co-operate.

2. Determining best place of refuge in each building and then publicizing it by sizable signs, conspicuously posted, and by type-written bulletins. The local Chapters of the American Institute of Architects and the American Society of Civil Engineers are a great help in this work.
3. Training of building staff and personnel, classes being provided for the purpose.
4. Planning for orderly evacuation if and when necessary.
5. Preparing plans for remaining on the job during an emergency.
6. Protecting tenants and employees through checking citizenship, with the aid of Police Department and F. B. I.
7. Checking first-aid equipment and supplies, and planning for emergency requirements according to standards established by the Emergency Medical Committee and the Red Cross.
8. Posting and circulating regulations or rules of conduct for tenants and employees in the event of air raids.

Since certain amount of destruction is inevitable, organisations should be set up to repair damage caused by bombing. Quick repairs of residences is essential. Several thousand houses have been repaired and rendered habitable in London after the *blitz*. According to the City Engineer of Salford, regarding the repair of war-damaged property in Salford, following the raid in December, 1940, every available person was utilised ; the city was divided into five zones and contractors allocated to each zone operating under a main contractor—not as sub-contractors, but as a matter of convenience. A liaison officer gave his time and five contractors met every morning at the City Engineer's office, reported on progress and received further instructions. In no other way could so much have been accomplished.

### Precautions for Factories

For large establishments of the factory type with few exceptions it is not feasible to provide protection in factories against a direct hit from a high explosive bomb. A direct hit, however, is not so dangerous as is imagined. In well-built premises there is

very little danger of serious structural damage from a near miss. The standard of protection should, therefore, aim at the provision of air raid shelters for persons working in the factories and their vicinity ; and local protection of plant against damage by blast and splinters and adequate fire-fighting arrangements.

With the increase in the weight and explosive capacity of bombs carried by air-craft in recent raids, the 13½ in. brick in cement wall recommended to protect personnel and machinery in factories is considered insufficient owing to the disruptive disintegration caused by deeper penetration of the heavy explosives. Considerable earth waves have been created and in order to increase protection, strong walls are suggested with sufficient footing, the reinforcements running down into them. Where stronger walls are desired, it is advised that the 13½ in. brick wall should be demolished and a new one built instead of attempting to strengthen the existing baffle walls.

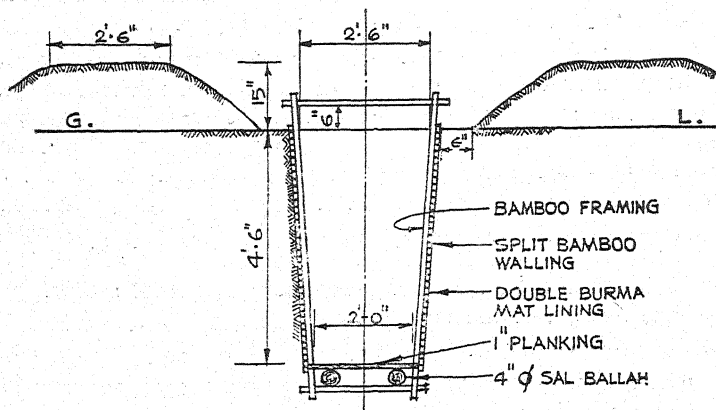
Air raid precautions in factories should embrace measures for the protection of employees since their stay within the premises and uninterrupted work is essential in the interests of production in times of war. How protection can be given to employees and especially those who continue to work after an air raid warning has sounded and are always liable therefore to be surprised by the sudden falling of a bomb is given in Air Raid Precaution Memorandum No. 16 "Emergency Protection for Factories". The general custom throughout England has now very rapidly reached the stage of continuing to work until the aeroplanes are actually overhead, or guns are in action.

A valuable method is to build small dividing walls only, 2 ft. 6 in. high behind which the whole of the staff can lie down in an emergency, thus giving a considerable degree of protection. Further, a series of pits and sub-floor ducts is advisable, in which workers can take refuge immediately though only a short walk of a few yards from the machines.

The Government of India, in their "Summary of Air Raid Precautions Applied to Factories,"<sup>1</sup> recommend trenches lined

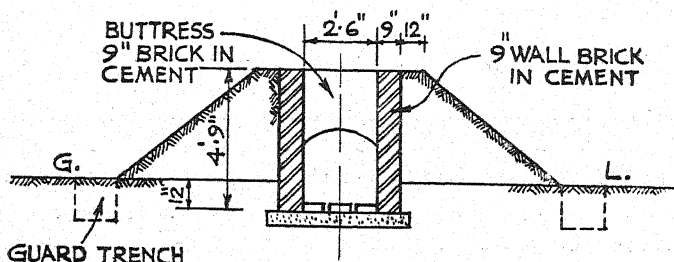
<sup>1</sup>The Third Edition of "The summary of A.R.P. applied to Factories" issued by the Department of Labour (Office of the Chief Adviser, Factory A.R.P.) Government of India, gives in comprehensive form as much relevant information as possible, thus making it unnecessary for busy industrialists to search through the great mass of literature on this subject. The chapters on "Structural Protection" and "Shelter for Factories" have been developed and new chapters have been added upon the supremely important question of "Fire Precautions" and on the closely inter-related problems of "obscuration, lighting and ventilation", which in warm climates are so difficult of solution.

with split bamboo-walling, and mat-lining are advised where the ground is waterlogged or low-lying. Another type of trench is that erected most of the part above ground level in  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. wall of brick



Section of trench shelters lined with split bamboo-walling

in cement and suitably buttressed and earth piled on the sides as advised. A wall shelter protected by  $13\frac{1}{2}$  in. brick in cement wall like the lean-to is also suggested, where other methods are not feasible. An open cellar trench is considered suitable where the



The above-ground brick wall shelter

available space is restricted. In all these, the following considerations are emphasised :

1. accessibility both from the point of view of location of the shelters in relation to people using them, and ease of entrance to the shelter itself ;
2. provision of ample space for the number of people to be accommodated ;

3. ample air space per head of the occupants in the case of covered trenches.

Plants should also be protected. Sometimes, a comparatively trivial damage may suspend production for days or weeks. The most vulnerable points are the water, electricity and gas supplies and essential machinery, in their order. All vital plant, including in particular, electrical equipment, such as switch gear and transformers, generating plant and its associated equipment, steam boilers, and any machine or other item of plant which cannot be either readily repaired or quickly replaced should be protected against blast and splinters by the provision of traverse walls.<sup>1</sup>

It is not as a rule necessary for these traverse walls to be any higher than the machinery they are designed to protect. Traverse walls should be so located that they will not impede production or unduly interfere with the flow of materials in the factory. Normal operations should not be interfered. In many factories, machines, fixtures and materials being manufactured can be arranged to give a considerable degree of protection and replace traverse walls.

Windows and door openings should wherever possible be bricked up to the height of the machines or traverse walls erected outside the openings to the same height.

Measures to minimise loss and dislocation to the various components of the factory and the materials handled are also essential. The dispersal of all spare gear and duplicates of machinery is needed. Spare parts should be stored more than 100 feet away of the machines for which they are provided. Telephone switch-boards and other places essential to communication and control should also be treated as vital plant. Arrangements to deal promptly and quickly with damage to machinery and property should also be made.

All unprotected glass is a great source of danger because of splinters which they may give rise to. Glass splinters can get into bearings and moving parts of machinery and shut down vital plant for weeks at a time. All glass should be removed from windows, doors and lights wherever possible. Where this is not possible, it

<sup>1</sup> For detailed specifications, refer to "A Summary of Air Raid Precautions Applied to Factories" published by the Government of India, Department of Labour.



should be protected by  $\frac{1}{2}$  in. wire mesh securely fitted on the inside of the glass.

Precautions to deal with fire existing under normal conditions should be greatly augmented in times of war. New methods of incendiary bomb attack result in a considerable number of bombs falling in a few square yards instead of being scattered over a considerable area as was the case with older methods. Water-supply may get disturbed, because iron water-mains are particularly vulnerable and can be fractured by the earth wave from a bomb falling a considerable distance away. Each factory should be made self-sufficient in the provision of emergency water-supply.

Inflammable materials in the premises should be cut down to a minimum. Timber and other materials should be stacked in a number of heaps with wide spaces between. Water tanks capable of holding 10,000 to 15,000 gallons should be dug or erected near danger spots. Sprinkler systems and connections should enable a trailer pump to pump water into the sprinkler system in times of war, since a high explosive bomb may destroy the water-mains supplying the sprinklers. When any quantity of oil is present on factory premises, suitable earth bunds should be erected to ensure that the oil, if set on fire, cannot escape and run about the factory. In addition, the organising and training of fire parties with regular fire drills is absolutely essential.

Most, fully steel-framed single-storeyed factory buildings are highly resistant to structural damage by air attack. It was originally felt that, where buildings of this type received direct hits, damage was usually confined to the roofing material, the structural framework escaping undamaged. Cases have later occurred, however, in which a chance hit close to a stanchion has uprooted it, bringing down a portion of the roof steel-work. Interference with production has then been much more serious than where the damage was confined to the roof sheeting. Where structural collapse has been limited to that portion of the roof carried by the damaged stanchion, the amount of steel work destroyed has been comparatively small. Sometimes the collapse has spread and involved a whole line of trusses, and several hundred tons of structural steel have been irreparably damaged. Such collapses are very serious, involving not only considerable loss of production, but also heavy calls for new steel work.

In new factories the danger of this spreading collapse, could be avoided if suitable designs are used, such as those recommended in War-time Building Bulletins Nos. 1 and 4 issued by the Research and Experiments Department of the Ministry of Home Security, Great Britain. Certain existing factories are, however, singularly liable to spreading collapse, and it is essential that this danger should be eliminated. Fortunately, the necessary measures are comparatively simple and the steel work required to make existing factories resistant to collapse represents only a minute fraction of that which is otherwise liable to be destroyed.

In India substantial progress has been made with protective measures generally and that in particular the programme for providing shelters and other protection for workers is approaching completion. All possible steps are being taken to ensure proper feeding and welfare arrangements in the event of a breakdown of normal supplies and communications. In addition, vital buildings, plant machinery and tools are being protected against damage from bomb splinters, blast debris, fire or earth shock. Special attention is given to sources of vital power, such as electrical sub-stations, transformers and mains. In particular all factories are being instructed to provide large quantities of water in tanks for fire fighting purposes. The Chief Adviser keeps himself in close touch with the latest developments in protective methods devised in the United Kingdom and in furtherance of this policy The Staff of the Chief Adviser, Factory A.R.P. has been strengthened by the appointment of five expert technical officers and inspectors from the Ministry of Supply in England, all of whom have had actual experience of such work under blitz conditions.

Office records of all kinds are necessary for the successful carrying on of business and everything cannot be removed. The following precautions would be helpful. Records should preferably be kept in a special room, situated in the centre of the building on the first or second floor if in a multi-storeyed building. The room should have as little timber in it as possible. Safes and vaults should be used for filing permanent records. A senior officer should be detailed to go through all old correspondence and to mark for immediate destruction all useless records and the further life of other papers. Records should be kept of all papers destroyed.

Where there is danger from incendiary and explosive bombs, it would be advisable to keep only duplicate copies in the Head Office

and house originals in a vault or building away from the danger zone.

In the interest of the safety of company records, a recent amendment to the Defence of India Rules provides for the compulsory removal of companies' records to places of safety in an emergency. If the Central or Provincial Government declares that the provisions of the new rule apply to any local area, the Registrar may remove the records from the registration office to any safe place notwithstanding the provisions of the Indian Companies' Act.

It will also be lawful for the directors of companies to transfer their records and account books to a place of safety. Notice of such removal, however, must be given to the shareholders and the Registrar.

### **Precautions for Temples, Palaces, etc.**

It is very difficult to preserve this miscellaneous group from destruction but they cannot be abandoned for obvious reasons. Against direct hit no protection is practicable to tall structures and monuments, as the expert committees which studied the problem of protecting Cathedrals in Great Britain feel. The Guardians of the Westminster Abbey and St. Paul's Cathedral therefore focussed their attention on fire-fighting measures. The Building Committee of the Liverpool Anglican Cathedral after careful consideration as to how the Cathedral could be protected from air raids "decided to leave the building as it is and hope for the best." For, protection "would involve an outlay which the Committee did not feel themselves justified in facing." Their view was that if the worst happened, it would cost less, to replace shattered glass and its stone framework, than to enter on an extensive protective scheme.

Over 2,000 churches have been destroyed or damaged in Great Britain by air raids. St. Paul's did not escape Nazi attention. Over £3,50,000 worth of damage was inflicted on Westminster Abbey. The loss to the nation is immense.

The measures adopted by the Dean and Chapter of the Westminster Abbey however indicate what might be done to preserve as much as possible of the invaluable contents of Cathedrals. Some have been removed, others have been preserved in place and protected, while some others have been left to take care of

themselves. For instance the unique thirteenth century retable, the coronation chair, the contemporary portrait of King Richard II, and the splendid series of early bronze effigies together with a number of smaller objects including manuscripts, have been moved to a safe refuge. The shrine and the royal tombs which surround it have been enveloped with sandbags. The mosaic pavement of the presbytery has been covered with a layer of felt on which heavy timber (3 in. by 9 in.) has been laid and these monuments are considered reasonably safe from anything less than a direct hit.

Tall canopies present considerable difficulty. The body of a tomb can be sandbagged; but the elaborate tabernacle work supported by slender piers may not be able to bear a heavy load. Adequate protection can only be given in such cases by the erection of a special protective structure.

In a great church, there will be many beautiful works that will have to take their chance. For instance the censuring angels in the corners of the transept, which adorn the more or less inaccessible parts of the fabric, could hardly be given effective protection.

The crypt of the Chapter house has walls nearly 18 feet thick; and it was planned to convert the stone vault into a shelter for the staff. Many temples in our country possess strong rooms and stone vaults which could shelter both people and valuables. If there is risk of air raids the most advisable thing is to remove all valuables that could be removed, to places of safety. Wall paintings and carvings can be protected to some extent but it is very difficult to assure safety. Old records, ancient plates, etc., should be removed. Weaker parts of the building should be strengthened.

All valuable glass should be removed preferably with their frames to a safe place for the duration of war. Experience shows that they are most vulnerable to bombs and blast. When the famous church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields was bombed, a bomb tore a hole in the church pavement and all the windows on one side of the church were blown in or damaged. The wall was pitted with splinters, and the office next to the crypt was damaged. The figure of Christ in the great stained glass window over the altar was decapitated, and holes were made in the figures of the adoring Apostles.

When a bomb exploded in St. Paul's, masonry was flung about, damaging statuary and hitting walls. Practically all the windows of the Cathedral were destroyed.

The problem of how a church or temple that has been damaged should be treated is equally important. The very most that should be attempted is to render the fabric safe and weather-proof in order to preserve what remains intact. A broken roof or shaky wall would call for immediate repair, and if there has been a fall of masonry, special attention should be paid to any carved features (bosses, capitals, corbels and the like) which may have come down with it. All debris should be cleared away. All measures necessary to enable services to continue where these are possible, should be of a temporary character, pending the time when proper attention can be given to the matter.

It is necessary to have good photographs of the views and details of all monuments and historic buildings for they might be destroyed in a severe raid.

In the Indian temple the Garbagrahas usually consist of strong walls and ceiling. They could be rendered bomb-proof. The Vimanas could be converted into hemispherical domes resistant to the direct hit of the high explosive and the walls of the Sanctum could be thickened to ward off glancing blow and explosion. This is not beyond the finances of temples in India. But to the tall Vimanas in Northern India and the magnificent Gopurams of the South, protection against direct hit is impossible. Only balloon barrages and anti-aircraft guns could secure chances of escape from destruction.

These measures are also necessary for the numerous historic monuments in vulnerable areas. The Palaces of Indian Princes need special attention, not merely because they form part of India's architectural treasure but also because they form the abode of the rulers of a third of this vast country. To these large structures no one measure will suffice and a scheme of precautions should be planned after careful survey.

The protection of many a historic building is impossible, but it is within our power to make a record which will mitigate the loss by preserving the design for posterity. A set of measured drawings, a collection of careful sketches, or a series of well-taken photographs can do this and keep even the atmosphere of the building in being for future generations to study and admire. Such records are also invaluable if repair, restoration or reconstruction is ever thought of as advisable.

The first need is a list, in each district, of the buildings which are worthy of record. The second is the collection of information concerning existing records, whether in public or in private hands. The third, which though last in order is the most pressing, is the immediate preparation of records of such buildings as have not been adequately photographed or recorded by drawings.

The Government of Great Britain have taken keen interest in historic buildings and architects have been appointed whose primary duty is to attend on any building of architectural or historical interest which may suffer from enemy action, and direct the work of the demolition squads with a view to preserving everything of value.

The Central Council for the Care of Churches has started a campaign to secure photographs of all parish churches. The National Buildings Record has been formed to collect and prepare records since enemy attacks are mutilating and destroying English architecture.

The Press in Great Britain has given welcome publicity to the need for records. Through the Royal Photographic Society an appeal was made to local societies and clubs. Local record committees have been set up, and already, those for Berkshire and Hampshire are functioning efficiently. The whole photographic strength of the country was proposed to be mobilised for this urgent work.

The following agencies could be mobilised in India for assisting the work of record:

1. The Archæological Department.
2. Museums and Libraries.
3. Architects and Engineers.
4. Government P. W. D.
5. Temple Authorities.

Many architectural treasures in India are irreplaceable and this effort of collecting and making record is essential.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>A survey of the bombed buildings of Britain has also been made. Edited by J. M. Richards "The Bombed Buildings of Britain" is a selective record of buildings of architectural interest damaged by bombing during the raids on that country in 1940-41. The book shows very graphically the wide-spread nature of the attacks made upon Britain and the lamentable losses which have occurred to its architectural inheritance. Many of these fine buildings are by no means beyond repair and that in some cases work which has been destroyed was not original whose disappearance is no great loss. The book indicates the damage which could be inflicted to our historic buildings.

### **Precautions for Museums, Libraries, etc.**

Every possible measure should be adopted to ensure safety to the irreplaceable records of the Government and the public, their gold, silver and valuables, as well as to the Museums, Libraries and Art Galleries. All these are generally located in the heart of large cities extremely vulnerable to air attacks.

The British Museum in London was damaged in an air raid and thousands of books have been destroyed in and around London when many libraries were destroyed by bombs.

Irreparable losses were suffered by the Royal College of Surgeons in Lincoln's Inn Fields in London from damage in recent air raid. Thousands of museum pieces are gone including skeletons of kangaroos brought by Captain Cook from Australia and a comparative osteology collection of 4,000 specimens acknowledged to be the finest in existence then. The invaluable army medical war collection, containing plaster casts of every type of wound, was also destroyed. Many libraries have suffered badly on the continent.

Three methods are available for protecting art collections in museums and art galleries.<sup>1</sup> Material might be protected in place or transferred to safer storage on the premises, or removed to repositories elsewhere. The policy to be adopted depends upon the nature and value of the collections, the design and structure of the building, the risks to which the locality is exposed and the alternative accommodation and means of transport which are available. In most cases it will be found expedient to divide the risks by adopting protective measures of all three kinds.

Only the most valuable should be evacuated, for packing, transport, etc., may be difficult at the outbreak of hostilities. Secondly, this is possible only if the repository chosen is definitely less exposed to air attack than the original premises. Even slight vibration will harm certain pictures and are better left in their place.

The repository should be at a safe distance (not less than two miles) from any aerodrome, factory, railway junction or other place likely to constitute a target for air attack. Caves or disused railway tunnels, ought not to be used for books, pictures or works of art in any way alterable by damp, though they may serve to

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Air Raid Precautions in Museums, Picture Galleries and Libraries. Printed by Order of the Trustees of the British Museum.

shelter certain classes of ceramics, sculpture and the like. Country-houses or public buildings, situated in the localities remote from danger of air attack are most desirable. But attention should be paid to :—

1. the control of access, security of doors and windows and invigilation.
2. proper ventilation and freedom from damp.
3. fire-fighting arrangements.

Great attention is necessary during transport and in packing.

Care should be devoted when packing museum material. They are so various in kind that no particular rules for packing them can be given. They should also be rendered damp-proof during transit and water-proof lining is essential for cases containing books, manuscripts, prints or drawings. As far as possible evacuation of pictures should be avoided if transport would harm them.

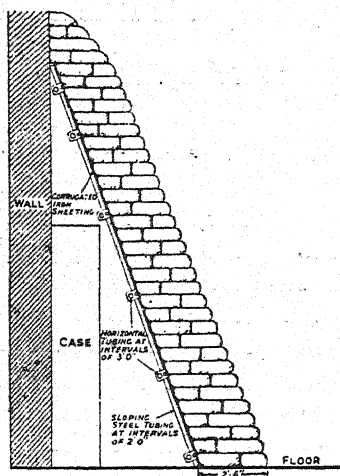
The most important movable material which cannot be evacuated should be assigned to places of greater security on the premises. There will generally be rooms which have a sheltered situation and strongly built or capable of effective reinforcement. The rooms selected should resist blast and splinter and incendiary bombs. They must have better protection against fire and danger of flooding or other damage from broken service pipes. Good ventilation and freedom from damp are necessary for perishable materials, like paper, vellum, and leather, paintings, textiles, wood and unfired clay ; ethnographical specimens other than those in stone, metal, or fired clay ; natural history specimens with the exception of most fossils, and some minerals ; bone and ivory ; corroded metals, and terracotta or stones impregnated with hygroscopic salts.

Humidity, temperature and ventilation should be taken into account when selecting the storage room, particularly if it happens to be a basement. Floors and fittings should be fit for storing them. Library material must not be left in closed boxes. The method of storage is of vital importance for pictures. Atmospheric condition in the storage room should be capable of being controlled if furniture should be stocked. On account of the inflammability of spirit and the fragility of the glass containers which are normally used, the protection of natural history specimens, preserved in spirit, presents a special problem. Elimination of bottles is desirable and one container might be used for the contents of each cupboard or room.



It is necessary to plan in detail all these, including the method of removal and the means of handling material in bulk.

The third method is protection in place. Entire evacuation



Sandbag protection for pictures, bookcases, etc.

or removal is impossible and in most museums this would be necessary. Rooms containing objects which are too numerous, too large or too fragile to be removed must be given such protection as is practicable and the material should be moved as far as possible to the safest parts of the room. Bookcases, pictures and other objects may best be protected by sandbagging as shown. But it should be solid enough to bear the shock of falling roofs or girders. Care also should be taken not to introduce a heavier weight of

protective material than the floors can bear without strutting or other reinforcements in the rooms below. The bags should be filled with foamed slag to reduce the weight. Sandbagging should be made so as not to affect ventilation. Chemical units may also have to be used to regulate humidity.

Large objects such as statues or architectural features may be dismantled, laid in the angles of floors and walls covered with asbestos wool and shielded with sandbags laid on a supporting framework. But it is undesirable to use wood in the supporting frames since they are combustible.

Large paintings may be similarly screened with sandbag walling. A limited amount of protection can be given by hanging mattresses in front of them. If it is covered with sheets of corrugated iron or of steel and asbestos composition it would offer increased protection. Vapour gas does not affect pictures but liquid gas splashes cannot be decontaminated. Glass-fronted show-cases can resist liquid gas but will not withstand shock of an explosion or the heat of an incendiary bomb. But it is better to shield all such

objects which are not protected by sandbags, with fire-proof and water-proof covers.

If bookcases are kept as free as possible from air-spaces damage by fire may be lessened. Books which cannot be removed to safe storage should therefore be packed closely on their shelves, and the empty spaces should be filled with asbestos, pumice blocks, bricks bags of foamed slag, or other dry and fire-proof substances. Projecting galleries should be emptied and books must be carried to cases on the floor. Books and manuscripts will quickly absorb splashes of liquid gas, and their decontamination, if at all practicable, could only be effected by expert laboratory treatment. They must be wrapped in transparent foil (cellophane) or waxed paper wherever possible for single books. There is no reason to suppose that gas in vapour form will damage books or other library material.

Evacuation offers the best security from bomb destruction and wherever possible it must be adopted. The trustees of the Indian Museum, Calcutta, decided to remove some of the valuable irreplaceable articles to some other safe place, as a precautionary measure against possible air raids.

The art treasures in the Victoria Memorial, Calcutta, numbering about four thousand, which have so long decorated the public and special galleries in the different chambers of the Memorial to the delight of visitors, were removed to a place of safety. The work of removing pictures, albums and other exhibits from their original position and placing them in safety was carried out according to plan.

With the declaration as an emergent area, all Government offices and other institutions in the city of Calcutta were directed to take necessary steps for the preservation of important records and for making other incidental arrangements. A waggon-load of the important records of the University of Calcutta was sent out of the City to a place of safety, with the advent of the Japanese entry into the war. These records included a large number of documents which belonged to the days of the inception of the Calcutta University.

Several private and public offices, too, in London sent their very important documents and records to less vulnerable places, and many business concerns in Indian cities have done likewise shifting their head offices to interior towns.

The baffling problem in evacuation is the availability of suitable places for housing records and valuables. Fortunately many

interior towns in India are fairly large and suitable buildings should be requisitioned by the Government both for housing their valuable records and gold and silver, as well as those belonging to private concerns and individuals. Existing structures in interior towns should be selected with care and suitably improved to make them fit to house such valuable records and material. Adequate police protection may also become necessary to ensure safety.

Schemes for evacuation should be planned and carried out in advance since in an emergency transport facilities may become inadequate.

Protection of our art treasures, valuables and irreplaceable records becomes a great problem largely because of the design and construction and location of museums, libraries, record offices and banks. The task of evacuation and safe keeping would be facilitated if important structures in the mofussil towns were built with strengthened strong rooms or basements.

Even if important structures in interior towns had been designed and built with care, evacuation should be considered a temporary expedient only for the various reasons already explained. In the interest of security and economy, in the years to come, immediate steps should be taken to equip museums, art galleries, libraries and record rooms with bomb-proof accommodation, preferably over-ground where space is available or in basements sufficient to accommodate their contents in times of need. Considerations of economy cannot apply to these irreplaceable objects but a dual purpose design could be evolved which will meet even this exacting condition.

Bombing might damage and destroy the cages containing wild animals in city zoos and will let them loose. This might cause danger and panic. Zoo animals, especially wild and venomous ones, should be sent away to places where they could be kept secure for the duration of war. Even other animals might be injured and it may also become difficult to feed them during days bombing becomes serious. Proposal for evacuation of animals has already been made by zoo authorities in one city in India and their example should be extended wherever zoos exist in vulnerable zones. Where this is not possible wild animals will have to be shot and killed.

Statues in cities are also liable to damage and destruction. Those which must be protected should be removed to places of

safety. To others, sandbagging suggests itself. This was adopted for four statues in London by the Office of Works (Charles I at Charing Cross, Charles II at Chelsea Royal Hospital, James II, outside the Admiralty and George II at Greenwich). Apart from the difficulty of sandbagging tall ones such as equestrian statues, the disadvantages already mentioned renders this method unsuitable. The recent remedy adopted in London could be copied. Hollow concrete blocks could be used to cover the statuary to offer protection from blast and splinters without occupying undue space around, in crowded parts of a city.

### Precautions for Services

A successful scheme of evacuation would minimise the strain on the supply of services essential for maintaining the community. Yet in the interest of the many who must live in vulnerable zones they must be guarded from destruction and dislocation. As described in Chapter V, water-supply, lighting, telephone, telegraph and communication, transport facilities, food supply and drainage etc. should be maintained. Their destruction would render life in the area impossible. The Government of Great Britain insists that public utility undertakings should adopt "such measures as may be specified in the notice to secure that the factory premises, mine or as the case may be, any of the premises of the undertaker, can be made less readily recognisable by air-craft in the event of hostile attack."

The Civil Defence Act, 1939 draws special attention to the safety of railways, docks and harbours as well as electricity undertakings and the State grants half the expenses incurred for measures adopted to safeguard them.

"There may be paid out of moneys provided by Parliament towards approved expenses of public utility undertakers in taking measures, whether before or after the passing of this Act, to secure the due functioning of their undertaking in the event of hostile attack, grants not exceeding one-half of those expenses."

These grants are in respect of measures to secure the due functioning of public utility undertakings. These are further subjected to obscuration of light in the interest of safety. Even in India soon after the outbreak of hostilities in Europe, police guards were placed at aerodromes, electric power-houses, sources of

water-supply, etc. Camouflaging is insisted upon in European countries and the State will provide expert advice to those compelled to adopt it in the vulnerable zones of Great Britain.

Numerous instances of the break-down in the supply of essential services due to bombing have been reported from the areas subjected to air raids. People have been deprived of water and gas in the towns blasted by Nazi bombs. Communal kitchens had to be set up and food supplied free to bombed areas. Transport services have been disorganised by debris and craters in roads, by damage to buses and trams, and by the break-down in electricity. The break-down in water-supply effectively contributed to the break-down of resistance in Singapore. To quote General Gordon Bennett, who commanded the Australian forces in Malaya "Lack of water, incessant bombing and the greatly superior numbers compelled the troops to surrender. At that time two hospitals only had enough water to carry on for another 24 hours."

The opening raids on Rangoon scared the menial servants of the Municipality and the Hospitals that scavenging and other municipal services were affected during days following the raid. Tending patients in hospitals also became difficult.

The transport system was dislocated in Alexandria by air raid since the panicky population hurried to leave the city by thousands.

Even the possibility of air raids are reported to have caused a rise in the price of meat and to its scarcity at Calcutta, as live-stock are not brought into the city as before.

Restaurants and hotels may be closed causing hardships to male members who have evacuated their families as a measure of safety. Government had to compel their owners to keep their premises open, in Singapore. Suggestions for opening up depots for food articles which would function during and after air raids have been made in Madras.

An idea of the precautions necessary and how they have to be concerted might be had from the measures adopted in one of the well-known restaurants in U. S. A. The Management of the Benjamin Franklin, one of Philadelphia's largest and most popular

hotel, have taken every precaution for the safety of guests and the entire organisation is prepared for any contingency.

Here are some of the steps the Managing Director has supervised. Every employee belongs to a certain station during an emergency. Mimeographed instructions assigning employees to specific jobs during emergencies have been distributed to the hotel's entire staff. The assistant managers have been made responsible for the blackout. The engine room force has been instructed in extinguishing all visible lights, while the kitchen staff has been instructed about turning off gas and electric current there; for the Benjamin Franklin roof, thirty-two men have been carefully instructed in handling bombs; these thirty-two men have been instructed in the use of stirrup pumps, sand, rakes, hoses and sloops in case incendiaries fall. They know where the supplies are placed on the roof and are thoroughly familiar with their duties. A similar group of men have been assigned to proceed to the light court roofs for protection at those points. For each floor certain people on each watch have been assigned to various duties. On each floor specific people have been instructed to "advise all guests of an alarm and escort them to . . . floor". Thus each floor is manned with employees who know what to do and where to guide guests for greatest safety. Every visible light, every sign light, every show-window light, in fact every visible light in the entire building not controlled by some central switch has been assigned to some person for switching off and that person knows where each switch is. The hotel has a fully equipped first aid station with all necessary supplies and equipment with trained personnel to care for anyone who may be ill or injured. All have completed a course in first aid and this work was under the supervision of Mrs. George H. O'Neil, wife of the Managing Director of the Benjamin Franklin.

The protection of water-supply, the maintenance of drainage, the preservation of transport facilities, lighting, scavenging and law and order, the supply of food-stuffs, etc., need various measures which must be concerted after a careful study of the individual problems under expert guidance. No general measures can therefore be suggested. The structures used in connection with these essential services should be protected as suggested in the preceding sections. Since it is preferable that these structures should escape harm effective camouflage measures should be adopted to assure their functioning.

Water-supply could be immunized by making it independent for every building or groups of buildings either by reviving the system of wells and opening them up where possible or by a system of tube-wells all over the town as was proposed in Calcutta, to some extent. This will provide urban folk with protected water-supply. The problem of underground drainage is more difficult to solve especially where the flush-out system has come to stay. Several towns do not possess underground drainage and the cess pit in use could be reformed and retained. In the residential areas of cities some similar system must be devised and the magnitude of the task will be greatly minimised by planned evacuation. These may prove useful to hold the water used for decontamination and would help to prevent the spread of liquid gas contamination. In important commercial areas the underground drains must be protected by concrete road surfaces that would prevent penetration by bombs. Allied to this question is the problem of flooding and other consequences of shattered mains and precautions must be adopted to prevent this effect endangering life in the locality.

The Madras Government recognise that "in the event of an air raid, damage may be caused to water-mains, supply pipes or fittings" and remind consumers "that the water-supply within their property including pipes, tanks and fittings, is the responsibility of the owner or occupier of the building. The responsibility of the supplying authorities is limited to the water-mains and pipes upto and including the outside stop valve on the communication pipe in the street.

"Consumers are advised to make themselves familiar with the position of the stop-cock on the service pipe inside their premises so that they can shut off the supply in an emergency."

"In the event of the temporary suspension of the water-supply the water in the storage tank, if there is one, should be sufficient if it is used very carefully for a day or two. If this water is used for drinking purposes it should always be boiled before use."

"It is of the greatest importance that consumers should do their utmost to economise the use of water during and after an air raid, as large quantities may be required for fire-fighting and decontamination."

Suitable centres have been selected in vulnerable parts of the city with a view to temporarily accommodating, feeding and sheltering people who may be rendered homeless in the event of air raids.<sup>1</sup>

A thorough overhaul of the water-supply system has been recommended by the Chief A.R.P. Officer to the Government of India, for the city of Karachi.

Lateral protection for vital services such as waterworks and drainage systems from the risk of air raids has been insisted upon the Karachi Municipal Corporation by the Sind Government. The special A.R.P. Committee estimated that it would cost about Rs. 80,000.

It has become evident that coal shortage might seriously hamper the working of the pumping stations in Calcutta. As a precautionary measure these questions must be investigated and proper provisions made in advance since transport facilities may not be available during emergency.

The most essential precaution, however, for maintaining water-supply and drainage is the keeping in readiness of squads who would repair without delay the destruction that might be caused to the water-mains, filter beds, and tanks. Measures to house the Municipal servants associated with scavenging and other services at a safe distance outside the city where they could live and come to do work in the city are equally vital.

### Sewer Squad Organization

Sewer squads to deal with repair and maintenance of the sewer system under air raids are an essential part of Civil Defence Organization. How this body would work, would become apparent from the dramatic excerpts from the *Civilian Defence Plan of Chicago Department of Public Works*, given here. It is the opinion of the Bureau of Sewers, that its regular force should form the basis of repair and maintenance activities made necessary by raids or sabotage and that in case of extreme emergency it would be practical to expand these forces with volunteer labour. In that event regular employees would be divided into an assumed number of gangs which then would be supplemented by volunteers assigned to work with

<sup>1</sup> Vide The "Hindu", 29-8-1941.



these divided gangs of experienced men from the bureau. The Sewer Squad Organisation would function as described below :—

A brick sewer in State St. has been bombed. The news comes through the Police department by radio, and a complaint crew from the first district is dispatched immediately to the scene to find the streets flooded. They call for help and squad E is ordered to report. Meantime, members of the complaint crew are standing upon a manhole when suddenly it is undermined. They feel the earth tremble and jump to a safer location in the nick of time. As the manhole caves in, water gushes into the street from a broken 36 in. water main. Fire and police trucks from nearby stations have arrived. Sewer workmen, after identifying themselves help to form a cordon to keep people back until the water pipe extension crew can close valves and the gas company gang stop the flow from a broken gas main. The Superintendent of Sewers meanwhile has ordered out trucks from a yard  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles away, with lumber for sheeting and bracing, brick and cement for rebuilding sewers, manholes and catch basins as well as a portable electric light set, pumps, hose connections and a full outfit of tools. The sewer gang clears debris so as to install pumps and unwater the crater and handle the flow of the sewer. An air compressor is set up and air tools are breaking large slabs of concrete in the crater while other workmen are clearing debris or hauling it to temporary dumps in side streets. Trucks are loaded by a crane from the cleared area beside the crater, the muck and debris being removed so that the workmen can get at the sewer and other underground structures. After excavation has progressed sufficiently, the sewer and appurtenances are rebuilt, all local connections repaired, the crater backfilled and the street restored to traffic.<sup>1</sup>

Electric power-houses, telephone exchange, telegraph stations, etc. should be protected by suitable measures, at least to prevent blast and splinters of nearby explosions, damaging the structures. Measures to prevent the destruction of machinery could follow the procedure recommended for factories. Here again camouflage assumes special significance.

The Indian home could be made self-reliant by reviving the oil lamp but where electricity is used for power, dislocation is inevitable unless other sources are improvised for emergency. Attempt should

<sup>1</sup> Vide extracts from *Engineering News Record*, I.C.J., Oct. 15, 1949, p. 386.

be made to decentralise sources of production so that when one of them is destroyed, others might function.

Special precaution should be taken for restaurants and boarding houses as well as grain stores and food depots and markets. By State compulsion the premises must be strengthened and rendered blast and splinter-proof. Wherever possible the large stocks of grain should be removed to less vulnerable spots.

By suitable arrangement stocks could be brought into the cities whenever necessary. The cattle supplying meat and milk should also be removed to safe places within easy reach of city zones and arrangement should be made to supply these to the city every day.

All these require an efficient transport system which will stand air raids and continue to function, not merely supplying the necessities of life to the residents of raided areas but also provide them with conveyance facilities. It is necessary to reorganise and protect the transport system—the roads, the railways, buses, and other vehicles, and railway trains and stations. The precautions mentioned in Chapter V should be given careful consideration and introduced wherever possible.

Roads are liable to be blocked by debris. Debris clearing squads should be kept in readiness to attend to this problem. Bomb craters might obstruct traffic. They should be filled up immediately. It is suggested that small gangs should rapidly patrol a defined portion.

They will receive and await instructions as to where they should go to reinforce another gang. Craters may be of such size as to render the street impassable for ambulances or fire-fighting vehicles. It seems desirable that before any attempt is made to provide an ordinary road crust or even one which is temporary in the usual sense, the holes should be filled to within a few inches of the road surface with a material which can be kept ready in sufficient quantities and is easily handled. Highly porous material, such as hard core, should not be used where water in considerable volumes might flow into the crater before a water-proof crust could be provided. The materials provided should include a relatively small quantity of a good binding gravel, prepared by the addition of clay, if necessary which would be laid after the main mass of gravel or earth had been placed and its surface rammed to a few inches below

the road surface. If a binding gravel is not available ordinary gravel or road metal may be rammed into the surface of the main filling. The work of filling bomb holes must, of course, be co-ordinated with that of dealing with broken sewers or water pipes one point being that very deep craters should immediately be filled nearly up to the levels of such conduits.<sup>1</sup>

### Precautions for Transport

Transport units can withstand a raid if they are small. Instances of machine-gunning and bombing of buses have come to light, but yet they are preferable to trams, light railways and bigger units within city limits and on the borders. A system of transport by buses should be encouraged and railway termini removed outside the city zone.

All glass must be removed from omnibus windows or they must be protected by netting or other anti-scatter device. Anti-blast adhesive netting has been fixed in the windows of a number of buses, trolley buses and trams in London. Blast and splinter-proof bus stands for passengers are also necessary within vulnerable zones. We should, however, remember that garages for buses and public transport should be erected outside crowded cities where they could be housed in safety.

The problem of horse and bullock-drawn vehicles is pitiable. They should be encouraged to serve the reception areas and the outskirts of vulnerable cities. Otherwise protecting the animals will lead to difficulties.

Railway lines and stations give birth to serious problems. The huge stations could be easily damaged by indiscriminate bombing. Sandbagging, baffle walls, fire-fighting equipment, fire-proofing of material, removal of glass and window panes should all be done suitably to reduce the damage to the structure as well as to the people who frequent it. In times of crisis railway stations will be crowded and shelter protection should also be provided both for the staff and the passengers. In the interest of safety of passengers at two London Terminal stations glass has been replaced with roofing felt. Ruberoid roofing material was substituted for glass. At one station this involved the removal of 10,558 panes. At other stations glass has been protected by wire-netting. Arrangements for artificial lighting should be made in case the glass is substituted by opaque materials.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Safety News", May 1940, p. 103.

Balloon barrage, anti-aircraft gun, and other devices are essential to minimise chances of damage and destruction. Effective camouflaging is necessary. For railway stations are so huge and defy protection by the various measures discussed in the previous sections.

Railway trains are subjected to machine-gunning and bombing. One method of assuring safety is to camouflage the carriages. In addition the substitution of anti-splinter mediums to glass panes may be considered. Blast and splinter-proof tunnels at suitable intervals might be built wherein the railway train can take refuge if raiders chase them. Such refugees may be equipped with anti-aircraft devices. If suitable tunnels and hill sides are available they might be excavated to provide safe places for carriages and engines, when not in use.

Railway lines are liable to be destroyed by direct hits of bombs. Huge craters would prevent transport. Squads of workers trained to put lines in order and repair the damage quickly should be kept ready. Fire is another danger. A network of mobile fire brigades is in existence in Britain, each with its express engine ready to rush it to any fire. Fully equipped fire trains are also kept at key points for major outbreaks. Every goods and passenger trains on the railway system in Britain has its quota of sandbags. These measures are essential for any railway system.

To safeguard goods fire-fighting engines should travel along the lines drawing many trucks each holding large quantities of water.

If possible temporary platforms could be erected outside city limits and made the terminal so that even if the main station is bombed passenger and goods traffic might carry on unhampered. Suitable bus transports to the terminal to facilitate access should be organised.

Provision should also be made by Government to take over the running of essential services in case of need. The amendment to the Defence of India Rule empowering the Central and Local Governments to authorise any person to take over from a local authority or its officers, any of the essential services is a welcome move in this direction. The amendment has it:—

“If any local authority fails to comply or delays compliance with the appropriate Government’s order or if it is necessary or expedient so to do for ensuring the due maintenance of the vital services of the local authority in the event of hostile attack, the appropriate Government may supersede the local authority.”

Structures housing restaurants, clubs, cinemas etc., where large numbers congregate need every precaution, not merely to save the structures, but also to inspire confidence in the customers which is essential to run such institutions. In England 'cinema managers are finding camouflage an aid to business.' It has been discovered that where cinema roofs have been camouflaged and other steps taken to protect the public during raids, receipts have gone up and people have resumed the cinema habit.<sup>1</sup>

Finally protection to crops and stores of grain against enemy action should also be given careful consideration.

Regarding standing crops the advice of the Minister of Agriculture in Great Britain will be found very useful.

Alleys should be cut through extensive stretches of corn when the crop is green to limit the spread of a fire, and the immature corn will make excellent silage. Fire-fighting brooms made from local material and a good supply of water should be kept handy, together with any spraying appliances that may be available. Hay and corn ricks should be dispersed round the farm as much as possible. The Ministry's leaflet gives detailed suggestions. Apart from measures to be taken by farmers themselves, arrangements for light trailer pumps and stirrup hand pumps to be made available to fire authorities in the main corn-growing districts specially for use in fighting crop fires, have been made in Great Britain.

According to Mr. Joseph Edwards of the Cambridge School of Agriculture, two methods of control are possible. The first concerns treatment of the growing crop; strips of corn, about five yards wide, and running in the direction of the prevailing wind—namely north-east to south-west, should be cut through any large acreage. This should be done when the crop is eared and green and cut, either fed to stock or made into silage. The second point concerns the stocking of the cut crop. He suggests that the rows of stocks should run in the direction of the prevailing wind, and that two normal rows should be stocked as one so as to widen the distance between the rows. Both of these treatments should prevent any fire from spreading over the whole area.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>The "Builder", Oct. 18, 1940, p. 375.

<sup>2</sup>Vide "Safety News", September 1940, p. 139.

### Decontamination of Building Materials<sup>1</sup>

The elements of nature are probably the best neutralisers we have—but often too slow for present-day life. We must, therefore, assist nature's action to reduce such damage to a minimum and lessen danger and inconvenience.

Concrete is a widely used material to-day and is found in all substantial buildings in varying quantities. Though durable and generally easily cleansed by normal processes, due to its porosity, it absorbs the persistent liquid gases readily. By the introduction of the various reputable water-proofing agents, it is possible to offset this characteristic to a marked degree, but not sufficiently to permit of no further treatment.

A simple treatment is ordinary silicate of soda or water-glass (one part water-glass to four of water), the first application being given when the concrete is green, and additional applications being given every four to six months. This treatment actually fills the small pores and voids at the surface, preventing penetration. The decontamination of such a surface can be carried out by swilling down with water and then sprinkling with bleach and brushing well. The bleach solution might be allowed to remain some thirty minutes before being washed off. Bleach should never be used alone, and if water is not available should be mixed with earth, ashes or saw-dust, in the proportion of one part bleach to from one to two parts of the other ingredients. It should be borne in mind that the brushing and action of the bleach will remove the protective covering of water-glass in time, and the frequency with which the water-glass treatment must be repeated depends largely upon the amount of use or wear the surface is given.

The contamination of a concrete surface by mustard gas vapour is not serious and usually the opening of all doors and windows for a few hours will be sufficient provided there is a strong current of air to blow through. Twenty-four hours should be enough in most cases, though heavy vapour contamination may require a longer exposure, especially if the air currents are light.

Should a concrete surface, which has not been treated to prevent penetration, become grossly contaminated for any length of time with liquid mustard gas, one application of bleach powder may be insufficient, and a further treatment of bleach cream and water

<sup>1</sup>Vide J.I.M. Cy.E., Vol. LXVI, No. 12, p. xiii.

should be allowed to remain over the affected portion for from five to ten hours, depending on how long the contamination has lasted before treatment commenced. Bleach used with water, or with earth, ashes or saw-dust, may be placed over the contaminated area as a neutralising cover. In many cases it might be wiser to remove the contaminated portion and relay the surface. This applies not only to concrete but also to prepared and plastered surfaces. Some authorities claim that decontamination of such surfaces can easily be achieved, but there is certainly no more trouble to hacking out and making good, and the certainty of protection thus afforded is infinitely greater and more desirable.

Great care must be taken regarding the disposal of the chippings or old plaster to prevent them from causing further harm. Burying in the ground is a safe procedure.

Sodium sulphide in a 1 per cent. aqueous solution or 1 lb. of bicarbonate of soda per gallon in commercial sodium hypochloride solution can be used if bleach is not available, but they are somewhat less effective. On the other hand, they are not nearly so corrosive to metals as bleach, and for this reason may be preferred. The value of these washes is increased if they are applied hot or boiling.

The treatment described above is suitable for cleansing glass or highly glazed tiles, but these materials as well as metal, may also be decontaminated by wiping off with petrol, paraffin, turpentine, alcohol, or benzine once or twice. Care must be taken to see that the cotton waste or rags used are carefully handled and later disposed of so that no one will subsequently be able to touch them and contract burns. Destruction by burning is probably the safest method for them if carried out in a furnace or other fire with a closed flue with a good draught. If placed in an open fire or bonfire, the fumes coming off might cause considerable injury to anyone not protected, for the gases so liberated would be of a strong concentration.

A blow-lamp applied directly to the place of contamination, which is marked or stained by liquid gas, is a treatment which could be used on bricks, porous tiles, and various building blocks. Concrete may also be treated in this way, but caution must be exercised in the extent to which the heat is applied or damage will be caused.

In some instances, excellent results have been obtained on road surfaces by spreading paraffin and then setting fire to it. Here, again, however, certain surfaces may be damaged if too harshly

treated and, generally speaking burning could only be resorted to in the country, where the bleach treatment cannot be applied.

Fibrous materials are the most difficult and in many cases are impossible to cleanse due to the facility of penetration by liquid gas. Hardwoods do not so readily absorb liquid gas as softwoods, but, nevertheless, certain penetration takes place. If treated immediately after contamination they may present little difficulty, but if contamination has been of long duration, the problem becomes a difficult one. The application of bleach, bleach cream, or bleach vaseline immediately after contamination will usually be effective, but three or four treatments with intervals between to allow the bleach to be absorbed may be necessary if the contamination is of longer duration. With softwoods, due to their porosity, treatments must be more thorough. When softwoods have been contaminated for any length of time, it may be almost impossible to neutralise the effect, and destruction by burning must be resorted to. The timber-yard presents many difficulties. Ordinary vapour contamination can be left to the weather and after a few days no traces of gas should be present. Liquid contamination, on the other hand, has to be treated with bleach. It is impossible to go into detail here, on how much timber is worth bleach-treating or how much should be burnt. In a state of war all timber becomes many times more valuable than in peace times. Long exposure to weather is a help but is not a cure, and affected timber must be used with discretion and only by a staff having some knowledge of decontamination.

Painted surfaces which have been splashed might be sprayed or brush-treated with one of the above solutions, or wiped off with paraffin or petrol. Here also, the plumber's blow-lamp may come in handy, for, instead of neutralising the affected area, its complete removal may be accomplished with scraping and the aid of the flame.

It must be remembered that throughout all cleansing operations those at work must, whenever possible, work on the windward side of the job and, in addition, be protected by proper clothing all the time, for in such operations strong concentrations of gas will naturally be given off which may have dangerous effects.

From the foregoing, it will be realised that fire-resisting materials are most suitable for building, to combat gases. Heat is the quickest neutralising process we have, and fire can be applied



in moderation to such materials. This refers particularly to liquid contamination and not to vapours, for ordinary wind and rain is sufficient in the latter case.

Thus all A.R.P. structures and particularly hospitals, first-aid posts, depots for working parties, report centres, telephone exchanges, and wardens' posts, should be constructed of such materials as concrete and brick-treated to prevent penetration, glazed tiles, metals, enamelled ware, and glass.

### Organisations

All these precautions will do much to reduce damage and destruction but they cannot prevent damage nor can they protect everything in crowded cities. Certain amount of damage and dislocation is inevitable and organisations of different kinds should be set up to deal with the consequences of destruction, to repair and rectify the damage and render life in the area possible. Fire-fighting services, rescue parties, demolition squads, decontamination parties, etc. are all needed; especially repair service for damaged buildings have a very valuable part to play. Thousands of skilled workers have been pressed into service in London for repairing bomb-damaged structures, for demolishing dangerous buildings and to clear debris.

Competent advice is necessary on all aspects of precautions. Expert guidance is indispensable even for apparently simple measures like sandbagging.

Even in Great Britain such advice is freely made available by the State to owners of factories and producers of essential services in vulnerable zones, who are compelled by the Civil Defence Act to camouflage their premises. In countries where A.R.P. is new this is even more necessary both to facilitate the public to adopt precautionary measures as well as to ensure that they are sound. It is the duty of the State to make expert advice freely accessible to the citizens in a poor country, and this measure would amply repay.

As far as possible it is better to avoid damage to structures needed for production and essential services. It is better even for other structures since this would reduce the burden upon A.R.P. Organisations. Camouflage and light obscuration thus assume great value in times of war. For the main principles, we turn to the next chapter.

## APPENDIX TO CHAPTER IX

### Famous Buildings in Britain Damaged by Aerial Attack.<sup>1</sup>

HOSPITALS.—Charterhouse Clinic, Great Ormond-street; London Hospital; Queen Mary's Hospital; St. Bartholomew's Medical School; St. Thomas's; Swiss Relief Centre; St. Dunstan's Headquarters; Ford's Hospital, Coventry; and American Ambulance Unit, Tunbridge Wells.

CHURCHES.—Westminster Abbey; St. Paul's Cathedral; Canterbury Cathedral; St. Martin-in-the-Fields; St. Clement Danes; St. Giles, Cripplegate; St. Swithin's, Cannon-street; St. Augustine, Watling Street; St. Boniface, Alder-street; St. Sunistan-in-the-East; St. Clement's, Eastcheap; Jewin Chapel; Dutch Church, Austin Friars; Swedish Church, Rotherhithe; St. Magnus the Martyr; St. Mary-at-Hill; St. Mary Woolnoth; St. Margaret's, Westminster; Christ Church, Westminster Bridge-Road; St. John, Smith-square; St. John's, Kensington; Our Lady of Victories, Kensington; St. Mark's, Regent's Park; and Islington Parish Church.

EMBASSIES.—American (time bomb removed); Japanese (evacuated); and Spanish.

PALACES.—Buckingham Palace, Kensington Palace, Lambeth Palace, and Eltham Palace.

OTHER BUILDINGS OF WORLD-WIDE INTEREST.—House of Lords; British Museum; Law Courts; Tate Gallery; Imperial War Museum; Somerset House; Wallace Collection; Burlington House; Tower of London; Westminster Hall; Temple; Inner Temple Library; Stationaries' Hall; Royal Hospital, Chelsea; Hogarth House; Holland House; Radnor House, Twickenham; Statue of Richard Cœur de Lion.

PUBLIC PLACES.—Australia House; Bank of England (near); County Hall, Madame Tussaud's; National City Bank of New York; Public Record Office; South Africa House; University College Library; Yokohama House; Specie Bank; Y.M.C.A. Headquarters; The Zoo; Argyle Theatre, Merseyside; Arts Theatre,

<sup>1</sup> List issued by the Ministry of Information of the buildings bombed in Britain in 9 weeks during September–November 1940.

Birkenhead ; Birmingham Art Gallery ; Birmingham Town Hall ; Royal College of Surgeons ; Indian Students' Hostel ; Italian Tourists Company ; and Wimbledon Centre Court.

NEWSPAPER OFFICES.—Associated Press of America ; *Daily Express* ; *Daily Herald* ; *Daily Mail* ; *Daily Mirror* ; *Daily Sketch* ; *Daily Worker* ; *Evening Standard* ; *Glasgow Herald and Bulletin*, London Office ; *New Statesman and Nation* ; and *The Times*.

SQUARES AND STREETS.—Berkeley-square ; Leicester-square ; Kensington-square ; Sloane-square ; Smith-square ; Berwick market ; Bond-street ; Burlington Arcade ; Bruton-street ; Carnaby street ; Lambeth-walk ; Maddox-street ; Oxford-street ; Park-lane ; Piccadilly ; Regent-street ; Rotton Row ; Royal Arcade-Savile Row ; Watling-street ; Elephant and Castle.

STORES.—Austin Reed (Piccadilly) ; Bourne and Hollingsworth, Ford Showrooms, Regent-street ; Gamage's, Cheapside ; John Lewis ; Peter Robinson, and Selfridge's.

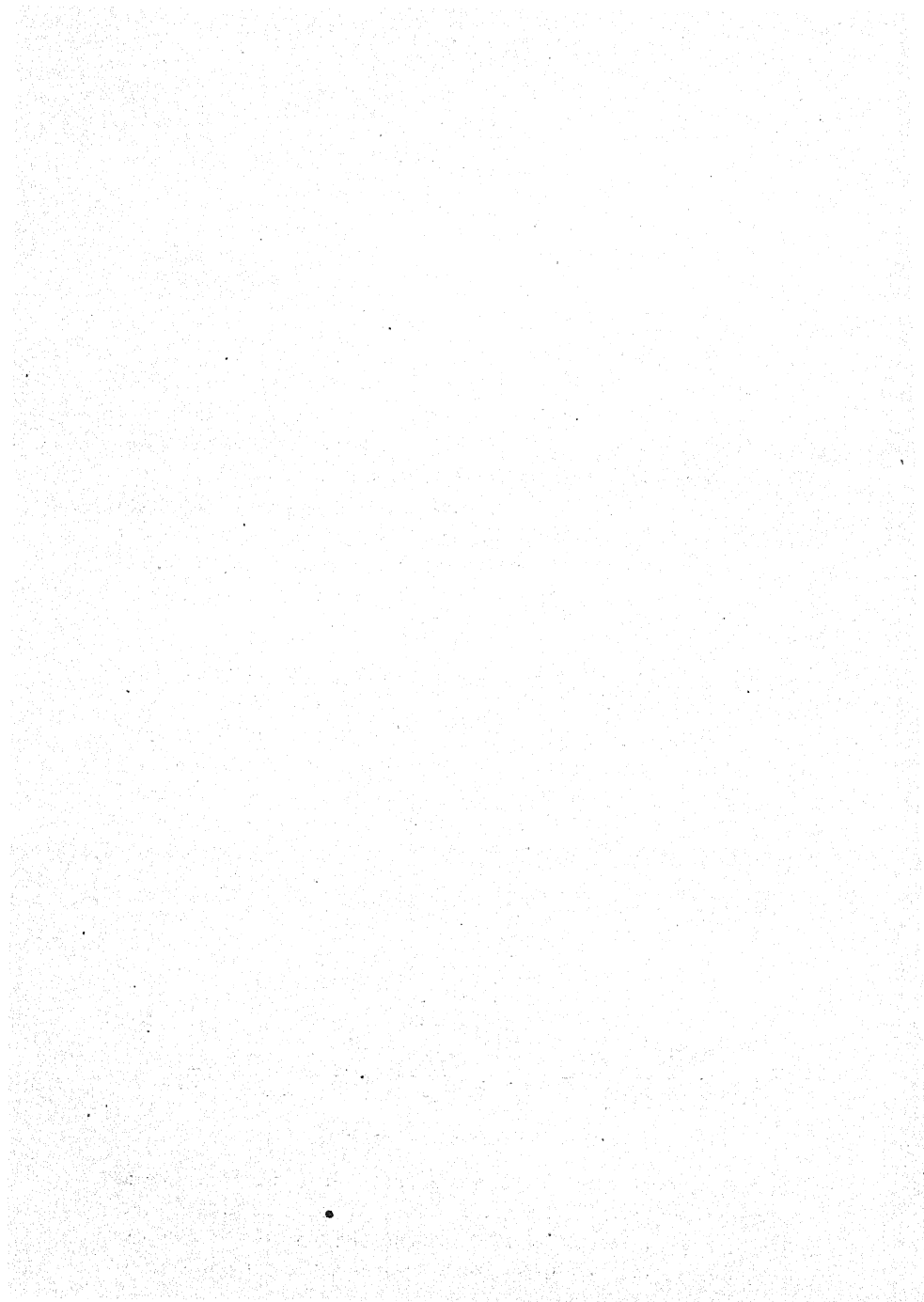
CLUBS.—Arts (Dover-street), Carlton, and Reform.

SCHOOLS IN ENGLAND.—Enemy action has destroyed or badly damaged 970 elementary schools and 133 other schools in Britain according to the Report of the British Board of Education. Vide *The "Hindu"*, 20-7-1943.

## CHAPTER X

---

### CAMOUFLAGE AND LIGHT OBSCURATION



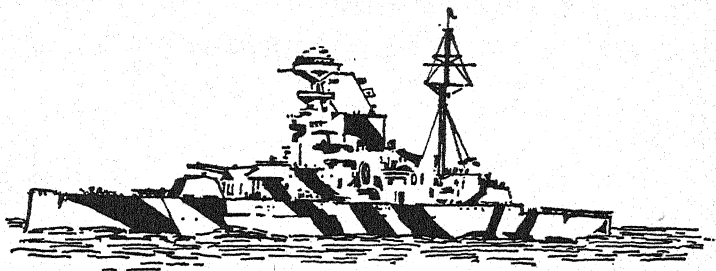
## CHAPTER X

# CAMOUFLAGE AND LIGHT OBSCURATION

### Introduction

Total war and attack from the air imperil the safety of vital objectives in modern times ; and measures to render them less conspicuous to the airman, assume special significance. Camouflage thus forms an integral part of Civil Defence. Camouflage is the art of visual deception ; in Civil Defence, it includes all those measures which are designed to make a target less readily recognisable to the airmen. In other words, it is the technique which helps to obliterate conspicuousness of objectives on the ground, to the airmen. Used in its widest sense, camouflage includes any kind of deception practised by military, naval, air force and civil authorities to conceal their objectives from the enemy's view.

Some sort of deception has been practised by the field forces ever since battles began. The Trojan Horse is a classic example. Dummy canons have been used in warfare during the middle ages. The Boers, Napoleon and Stonewall Jackson adopted various tactics to conceal military manœuvres. The submarine warfare aggravated the need for camouflage of the navy. Ships were dazzle-painted to

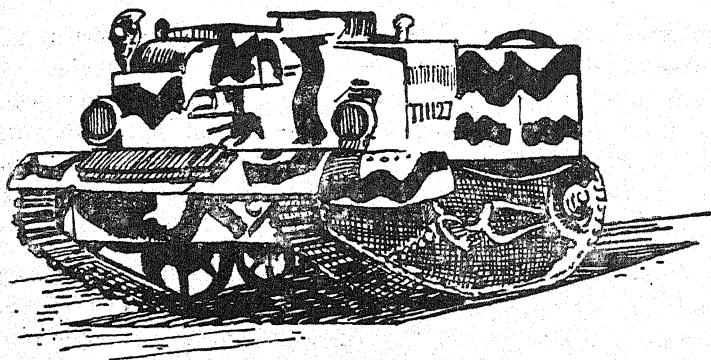


A dazzle-painted battle-ship

escape the submarine. Towards the end of the Great War, it was even made compulsory for every merchant-vessel to be camouflaged, and some 4,000 ships were dazzle-painted in 1918. Railway carriages transporting ammunition, were similarly treated in France.

Troop movements and army practices were carried out by the Germans under opaque overhead covers concealing the movement below.

Recently allied troops were hidden in Tobruk so very successfully, by camouflage measures, that they were not seen until they sprang to the attack from the "apparently deserted and shelterless no man's land," which led the angry Nazis to coin the sneer, "Rats of Tobruk." Hiding an army in the field is a most difficult job of camouflage at any time, but in the bare waste of Tobruk it is seemingly impossible. However, with every man co-operating, vehicles, artillery, field works and camps disappeared into the brown dust and rocks of the desert. The Italians built Tobruk and afterwards its defences, but even they did not seem to know their own town. Such was the excellent method of concealment and deception worked out by an Australian unit.<sup>1</sup> Very ingenious camouflage sack cloth suit have been worn by Japanese snipers in the jungle of Burma to escape attention.



A camouflaged Bren Gun carrier used in East Africa by Indian troops in 1941<sup>2</sup>

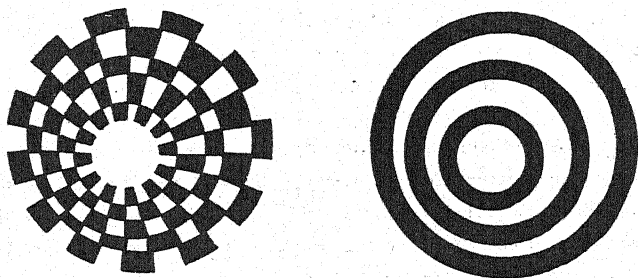
Camouflage measures are broadly classified into four groups, namely, military, naval, aerial and civil. Military and army activities such as the Germans carried out under cover, might be classed in the first group. Germans covered miles of roads and acres of fields with rigid hangers coloured and modelled to represent the original scenery and they also successfully concealed great military

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* the "Hindu", 28-12-41.

<sup>2</sup> Hutchinson's Pictorial History of the War, No. 6, Series 11.

activity in orchards and fields covered with open squares of cellulose fibre material or wire. Rigid roofs helped to grow vegetation and the Germans kept them very low and sloped all the edges down at an angle not exceeding 15 degrees to the horizontal to avoid shadows.<sup>1</sup>

Objects to be concealed are covered with string or wire-netting and the process is sometimes called strategic camouflage. Naval camouflage includes smoke-screens and dazzle-painting of ships



A type of dazzle-painting recommended for moving objectives

in inverted perspective. The purpose of the dazzling lines is not to make the ship less visible to the enemy, but to deceive him as to its size, direction and speed. Effects are produced, which when viewed at a distance of even half a mile, would suggest that the vessel is travelling in a deflected path to its actual course. In some cases, it would even become difficult to know in which direction the ship is proceeding.

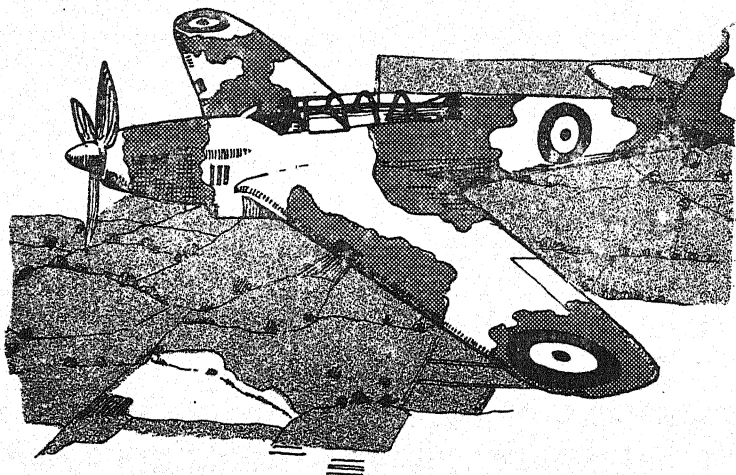
Aerial camouflage includes the camouflaging of air-craft. Disruptive patterns are painted over the air-craft while the under-side is given a light hue and the two cleverly merged to produce the effect similar to the countershading colour effect of fish in water. When viewed from above, the disruptive patterns would make their detection difficult, while air-craft in the air would be almost impossible to locate from below on account of the colour of the under-side which would merge them in the sky.

Civil camouflage, which has come to the forefront in recent times, includes all those measures which help to disguise the shape and the shadow of objectives on the ground. Railway stations, power-houses, nerve centres, factories, oil tanks, means of communication and transport, and other objectives whose destruction

<sup>1</sup> Vide C. W. Glover: Civil Defence, 3rd edition, p. 558.



would break down the resistance of the people, are entitled to camouflage treatment. In the belligerent countries, these objectives are camouflaged and great ingenuity is exhibited by the Germans. They have even planted full-grown trees on top of tall buildings, painted green bicycle paths and broad drives through parks, and stretched nets like those used by trapeze performers over lakes, ponds and other bodies of water to prevent them from reflecting the moonlight.<sup>1</sup> The nets have been painted to look like anything but water. In some ponds they have created floating islands of grass. Railway stations in Germany have been ingeniously made to look like hillocks. Oil tanks in vulnerable areas receive most careful disruptive treatment.



A camouflaged air-craft

✓ With the advent of total war, camouflage assumes a special significance as an essential protective measure for civilian objectives. Centres of vital war production as well as those essential for maintaining the urban community are treated in a manner which make their detection extremely difficult. Its importance and value are so great that camouflage measures are compulsory for vital centres in Great Britain. The Civil Defence Act of 1939 empowers the ✓ Government to enforce it wherever it is considered desirable.

<sup>1</sup> The "Sunday Standard", 3-8-41.

According to that Act :—

*Section 45.—Camouflage*

The Minister may serve on the occupier of any factory premises a notice requiring him to take or complete such measures as may be specified to secure that the premises are less readily recognisable by air-craft.

*Section 46.—Grants under Part VI*

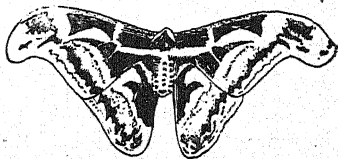
There may be paid out of moneys provided by Parliament towards the approved expenses of any persons on whom a notice has been served under the two last preceding sections in taking the measures specified in the notice grants not exceeding one-half of those expenses.

*Section 47.—Penalty for Failure to Comply with Notice*

If any persons fail to comply they shall be liable to a fine not exceeding one hundred pounds, and if the failure continues they shall be liable to a fine not exceeding fifty pounds for each day on which the offence continues. A reasonable period from the date of the conviction may be fixed for the compliance with the requirements of the notice and where the Court has fixed such a period the said daily penalty shall not be recoverable for any day before the expiration.

A new Defence of India Rule published from Simla on 23-8-1941 "enables the Government to take or to require people to take such measures in respect of any premises as may be necessary to make the premises less readily recognisable in the event of an enemy attack." The object is to carry out camouflage where necessary. The importance of this in certain circumstances needs no emphasis.<sup>1</sup>

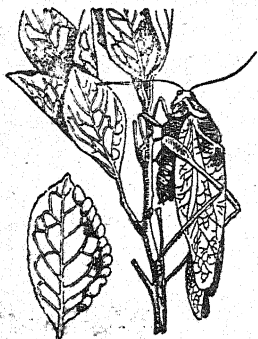
Nature exhibits some of the most effective forms of visual deception and provides us valuable guidance regarding camouflage measures. The butterfly, the chameleon, the rabbit, the partridge, the zebra, the panther, the elephant and the giraffe, possess colours and patterns as aids to disguise and concealment, and the reptiles—the snakes—carry patterns which render detection of their presence nearly impossible.



Disruptive patterns found over a kind of butterfly

<sup>1</sup> The "Hindu", 23-8-1941.

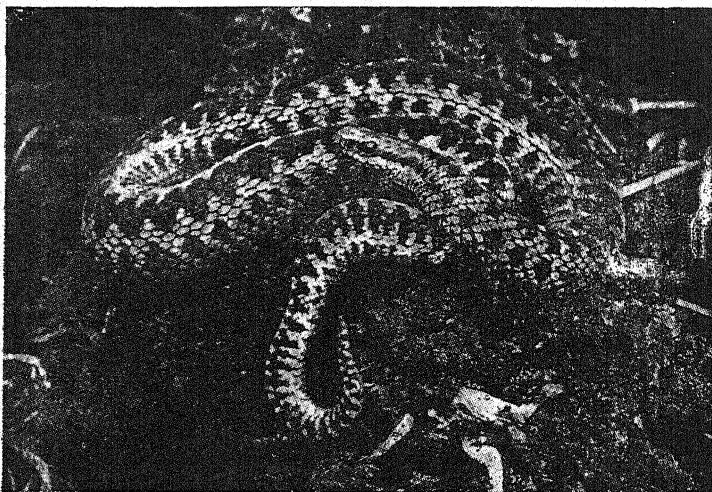
The fish too have protective colouration to help them in the struggle for survival.



The leaf insect

Volumes have been written by scientists regarding the colour scheme adopted by nature to protect the various living organisms from their enemies. All animals are coloured in such a way as to best secure their safety and other interests and not so as to expose them to danger. For instance, the dark colour of the fish on the upper dorsal side and the pale white hue on its underside explain this phenomena. When looked

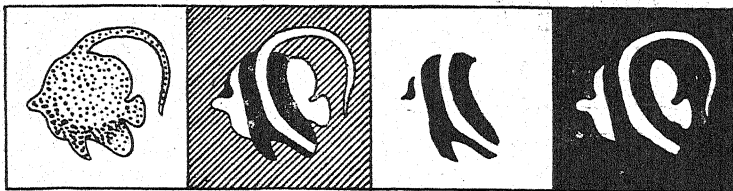
from above, the colour of the back coincides with the deep black sheet of water and when observed from below, the pale hue is in tone with the colour of the thin layer of water made transparent by the light rays above.



A python in its natural surroundings

Patches of contrasted colours are sometimes distributed irregularly over an animal's body to catch the eye of the observer

and distract his attention from the form of the animal, such as we find on the zebra and the panther. The elephant in a shady jungle is an outstanding example of adaptive colouration. It is possible to come very close to the animal without recognising its presence. The protective colouration of the chameleon is well known. Researches in the range habits of brown pocket mice in New Mexico, have revealed that the brown mouse turns white in the white sands of the New Mexican desert, black in the lava beds of the nearby Malpais, and red in the red sands near Alamogordo. It has further been discovered that even lizards in these areas turn partly white, black or red after a short stay.



Disruption in Nature : Patterns over a fish showing their effectiveness

The devices adopted by Nature to protect her creatures might be grouped into six classes.

1. Adaptive colouration ; such as is found in green snakes etc. The creature has a colour and tone which blends it into the background.

2. Disruptive pattern ; as those found upon the panther, snake, etc. which attract attention to the disruptive pattern and render recognition of the shape of the object very difficult.

3. Behaviour and imitation ; as found in stick insects, grasshoppers, leaf butterfly. Behaviour and imitation make the creatures look like some natural feature such as twigs, leaves, etc.

4. Dazzle-painting ; such as is found in the zebra. Bright contrasting colours and tones are cleverly used to dazzle the eye of the attacker and make it difficult to judge the direction of movement of the animal.

5. Countershading ; such as we find in fish. Light tones underneath and dark tones on the top reduce the appearance of solidity.

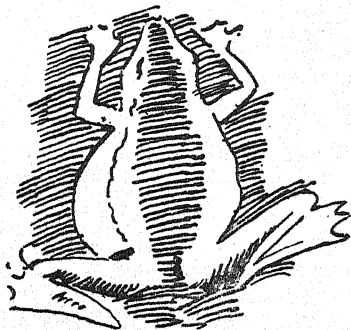
6. Deception and disguise; as is found in the butterfly. Classic examples are the false eye on the wings of the butterfly and the false eye of the fish near its tail. It reduces the chances of attack on the real eyes. Some insects even disguise themselves as something very different; the fly, for instance, which looks like a moth and the moth which looks like a worker-bee; the latter manages to enter the hive to steal honey.



The Zebra

in harmony with their environment by various other helpful measures. Man however by ignoring nature and environment has failed to provide safety to his handiwork. Man-made objects by the regularity of their outline, by their geometrical shape and shadow, by their difference in colour and material stand out conspicuously in the landscape when viewed from above. A light coloured industrial plant amid rural surroundings is therefore readily spotted from the sky. The ground when viewed from the air shows a vast area with patterns characteristic of its vegetation, cultivation and human habitations. This pattern varies according to the activity of the

Nature offers security to her creatures by keeping them



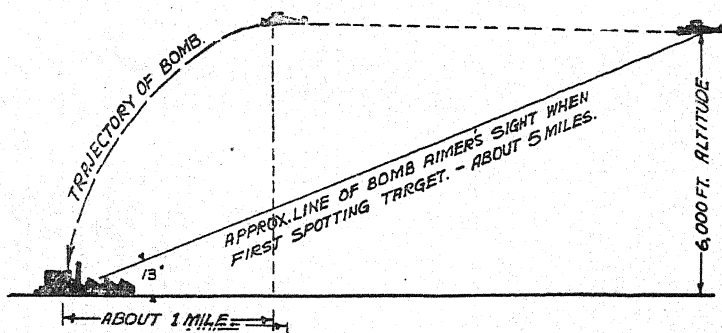
A frog and how it disappears into the background

people who live in the area. Paddy fields show dark grey, and irregular patches of white and red indicate an Indian village. Woods and forests appear almost dark owing to their rough surface or texture, while a sandy desert shows a very light hue. Footpaths and country roads appear a little darker than concrete roads.

It is the reflected light which shows the object to the air observer. Texture of the surface therefore determines the degree of visibility and objects are seen in varying shades according to their surface, whether smooth or broken. The plain level ground reflects most of the light and appears light in colour to the airmen as well as in normal photographs. Walls and roofs reflect most of the light and hence appear prominent in the landscape.

Bomber pilots are provided with maps and charts of the area indicating the targets to be bombed. Their location is determined by photographs taken before or during the war. However in the final stage of operation whether dive bombing or precision bombing the pilot depends upon his own vision when releasing the bomb.

To ensure success to his operations the bombardier must recognise the objective at a distance of several miles. At this distance he can get only an oblique view. Vertical view can be had only when the bomber comes too close, which would permit him no time to search the area for the objective.



Locating targets from air-craft and releasing bombs over them

Camouflage measures need not completely cover a building and hide it from the view of the onlooker. This is obviously impossible for most structures and unnecessary. It is enough if the measures render recognition from a distance difficult.

If the target is not recognisable at a distance, the bomber will miss the target. After he drops his bombs, if he starts to search, the local defence will get an opportunity to deal with him. Camouflage thus achieves its purpose.

Let us suppose the airman is flying at 10,000 feet ; the bomb will take 25 seconds to reach the ground. The speed of a modern bomber is usually 200 to 240 miles per hour. Taking the higher

Typical bombing problem

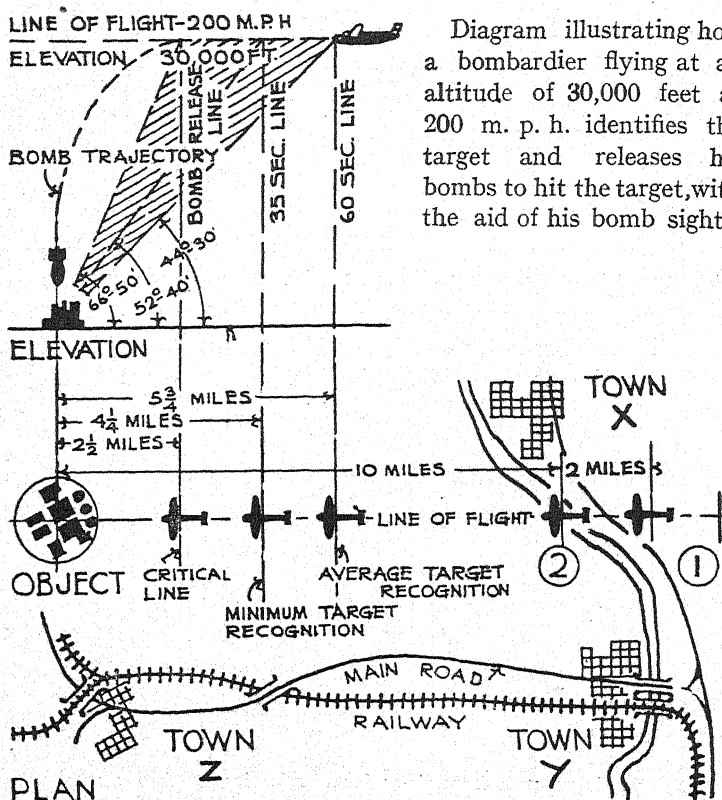


Diagram illustrating how a bombardier flying at an altitude of 30,000 feet at 200 m. p. h. identifies the target and releases his bombs to hit the target, with the aid of his bomb sights.

speed, the plane travels one mile in 15 seconds and would be nearly 2 miles off the target when the bomber releases the bomb. The operations all take time. So the bomber must be able to spot the

target at a distance of 4 miles from it. The vast expanse of view from an aeroplane gives a vast area of the country to be searched, in order to find the target. A bomber looking for a factory, not knowing whether the plane is pointing dead at the factory or not, travelling 240 miles an hour, may find himself on the target before realising it. All we need do in camouflage is therefore to make the buildings look as innocent as possible, that is to say, as much like the surrounding country as possible. Accurate bombing requires an uninterrupted view of the target and even the clouds which interrupt such a view is a serious handicap. A bomb aimer can afford to miss the target for only five seconds. But a series of five-second interruptions would render it difficult to hit anything deliberately. The ideal of camouflage therefore lies in presenting the raider with a landscape devoid of arresting features.

Camouflage is the art of visual deception. The aerial observer, whether bombardier or photographer, for whom camouflage has to be largely considered today, is a mobile observer. Every factor involved in his vision is in continuous movement. His eye is moving. Light and atmospheric conditions are changing. The elements of the landscape are in motion.

The goal of the aerial observer is to find and fix a target. But the target must be interpreted in terms of an object as he is accustomed to identify it. To grasp an object he needs first to isolate it from its surroundings by its outline. To understand its form he has to evaluate its constituent shapes by their tone, colour, and texture values. Anything that can be done to interfere with the observers' identification of forms constitutes good camouflage.

✓ The purpose of camouflage is not so much to conceal an object completely as it is to confuse the enemy attacker. The bombardier has only a few seconds in which to locate his target, set his bomb sight, and release his bombs. If camouflaging can inject the element of confusion into those few vital seconds, it will have justified the time, trouble, and money it cost.

✓ Complete concealment not only is impractical except at tremendous expenditure, but in most cases it is unnecessary. Through the practice of physiological and psychological optics it is possible to create as much confusion on the part of the aerial observer as



by obliterating an object entirely. As in the case of the snake and the owl, (p. 460 and 468) it is sometimes simpler and even more effective to build up a confusing background or environment surrounding an object than to attempt to disguise the object itself. Neither the snake nor the owl is changed in any way, but in their natural surroundings each is perfectly camouflaged.

As Major Robert P. Breckenridge, the author of "Modern Camouflage" and head of the Army's Camouflage School, in U.S. A. has emphasised in a recent address to O. C. D. officials, camouflage is not magic. It will not make a chimney look like a cow pasture or a power plant like a country lane. It can, however, conceal the points needed for sighting by bombardiers until after the plane has passed the place where those points should be seen for accurate aim.

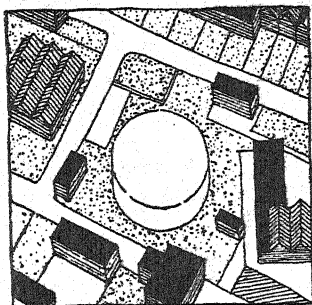
### **Colour : Toning Down**

Three features help to make buildings conspicuous; their colour, shape and shadow. Building materials generally do not conform to the earth colour. The burnt brick, the fired roof tiles, the cement mortar, the colour finishes, the whitewashing and the corrugated iron roofs are thus discernible. A geometrical and regular shape appears conspicuous by its contrast to trees, vegetation and contours of the surrounding area.

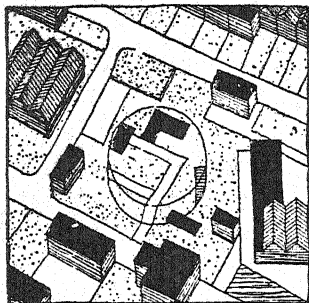
The most conspicuous feature is the shadow. No natural object throws a regular shadow, and since the shadow may be very much larger than the object, most part of the day, attention of airmen is invited to its presence, and its shape makes the recognition of the object comparatively easy. A factory, for instance, with its expansive roof and its ploughed field aspect, due to shadows in the valleys of roofs and its regular shadows is easily detected. An aerodrome with its large units regularly laid, its concrete runways and administrative blocks is readily recognised. Railway stations by their size and characteristic shape are also easily spotted.

To conceal a building and make detection difficult, it is necessary to deal with the colour, the shape and the shadow. Protective colouration as found in animals is adopted for buildings.

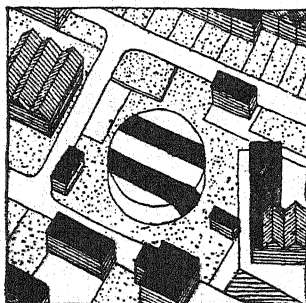
By suitable paints and designs, an object could be merged



A large gas holder in an industrial area



Imitative patterns painted over to merge it in the surroundings<sup>1</sup>



Bold patterns drawn over with a view to disrupt the outline<sup>1</sup>

tones will be dark, unless there happens to be a new building

in the neighbourhood. The ground pattern should be painted over the roof, and the walls toned down to suit the landscape. Otherwise the outline of the building could be disrupted by painting patterns resembling the neighbourhood. Structural excrescences might also be added to distort the shape. For instance a large oil tank shows itself up by its round shape which is most difficult to obliterate. Suitable schemes are painted over, and the shape also distorted. Paint cannot eliminate shadow. It is concealed and distorted, by garished netting, and shaped excrescences. Whenever these prove inadequate dummies are made and cleverly located to mislead the airman by drawing his attention and bombs to it to prevent the risk of attack to the original objective.

Camouflage measures should therefore aim at obliteration of colour, distortion of the regularity of outline and concealment and disguise of shadows. Colour, to some extent, can be dealt with by suitably painting the different surfaces of the objective to tone down the object into the landscape. The general impression of an urban locality as seen from the air will be a chequered pattern of houses, back gardens, streets and a few open spaces. The prevailing

<sup>1</sup>These methods alone have now been shown to be quite ineffective and toning down is first adopted in modern practice and camouflage treatment is applied afterwards.

estate. Toning down is therefore adopted as the first step in camouflage.

### **Shape : Merging and Disruption**

The shape of an object is discernible by its colour, and regular outline and patterns are painted over to confuse the outline and contours, imitating the surroundings.

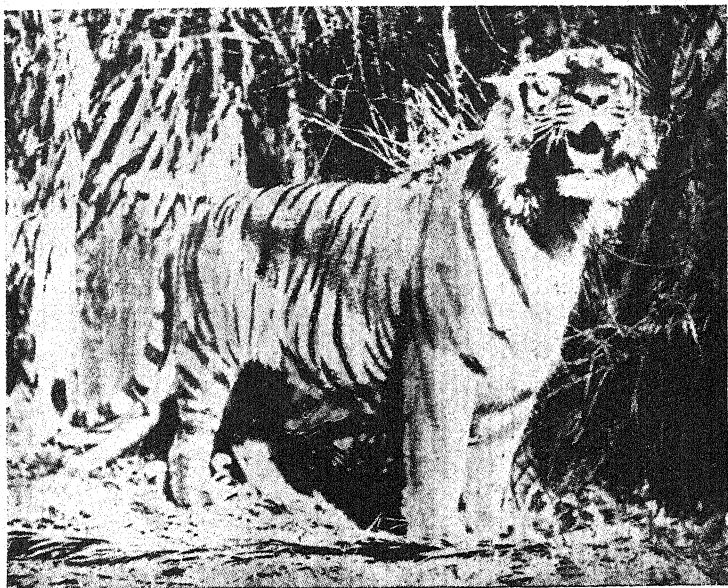
Imitation of the surroundings, be they rural or urban, should carefully reproduce the ground pattern effectively on the building, its roof and walls. It is unnecessary to produce details and make an exact copy of the surroundings. It is enough to present a picture whose broad essentials are in harmony with the ground pattern,



The Owl in its natural surroundings

to escape notice. To normal vision under good condition, an object must be more than 6 feet in its least dimension to be visible at 5 miles and considerably larger to be noticeable. The size of camouflage pattern should conform to this rule and small buildings and details could therefore be conveniently omitted. The imitative patterns should eliminate regularity.

Camouflage of large areas, such as factory roofs etc. cannot be achieved by this method. The area is too vast and the outline of the building would attract attention.



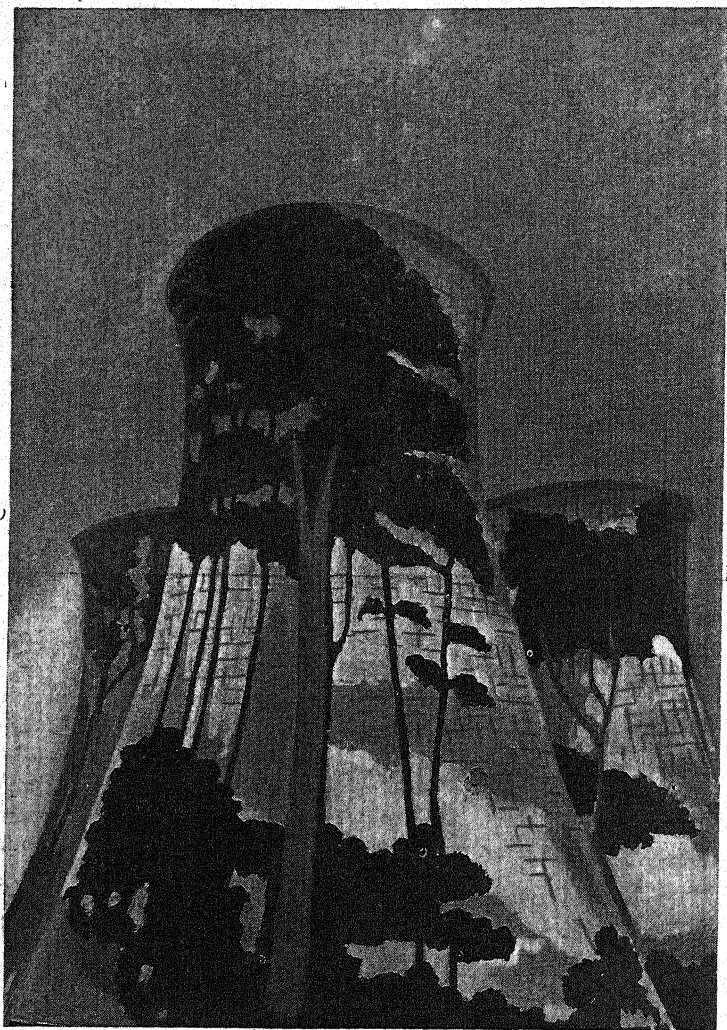
Stripes help to merge the form of the tiger in the jungle background

Disruption or distortion of the form of the building is therefore necessary to make it unrecognisable or inconspicuous. This depends upon producing patterns which have some bearing to the prevailing ground pattern but which do not conform to the edges, and by the clever use of netting. The object when camouflaged must completely merge with the ground pattern of the surrounding areas, in colour, tone and texture.

Disruptive pattern painted over should cross the contours and break the edges of the building. A pattern which is wholly contained by the outline of the object and follows its contours will have little disruptive effect. Disruptive pattern should be continued on the building and down the side and on the ground itself. Adjacent patterns should differ in tone, and the disruptive pattern must appear natural. Otherwise, it would be



Typical disruptive patterns



The late Oliver Bernard's<sup>1</sup> scheme of Camouflaging Cooling Towers, by painting. Recent Camouflage practice however recommends bold disruption only

conspicuous. For example, a chalk quarry pattern however well reproduced, will fail to achieve the object if the ground pattern has none of them. A light coloured red, painted across the roof of a

<sup>1</sup>Was the principal assistant to Solomon J. Solomon, Chief Camoufleur with the B. E. F. in France in the last Great War

building, will only look like a road, from two aspects, that is, in direct prolongation and will look unnatural, seen from other aspects, for it will appear broken by each successive roof ridge.

Disruption can be very successfully attempted on buildings which have trees near them. By continuing either the shape of the trees or their shadow irregularly over the walls and roof, in any strong contrasting tone, the form of the building will be broken. Regularity in the shape and size of disruption should be avoided. Patterns must be large and bold to be effective, preferably it should never be less than 20 feet in any direction. Disruption applied to a roof must be carried down over the walls and merged into the ground. Scene painting on the walls should never be attempted. The pattern adopted should conform to the surrounding landscape and should never attract interest.

The four main principles underlying disruption by painting are :—

1. Reproduction of the ground pattern by duplicating natural tones and patterns.

2. Colours must harmonise with those of the landscape in tone as well as in contrast.<sup>1</sup>

3. Details and small patterns are unnecessary and a bold sweeping treatment is required.

4. The disruptive patterns must be continued down the sides and ends of buildings and over the adjacent ground.

A very expensive but more effective disruption of the outline of an object can be achieved by means of flat, irregular shapes suitably fixed to structures. All additions to be of real value must be capable of resisting wind pressure, cyclone, effect of heat and cold and heavy monsoon. A large flat platform cut to the shape of a tree can be attached to the eaves of a building so that it projects into the shadow area. This form of disruption is very effective since natural shadows are created which move with the sun. But its disadvantage is that it has to be of a large area not less than 20 feet in the least dimension and is consequently very difficult and expensive to fix.

The designs or patterns to be drawn over objectives must harmonise with the essential features of the surrounding landscape, to be effective. A careful study of the ground pattern thus becomes essential.

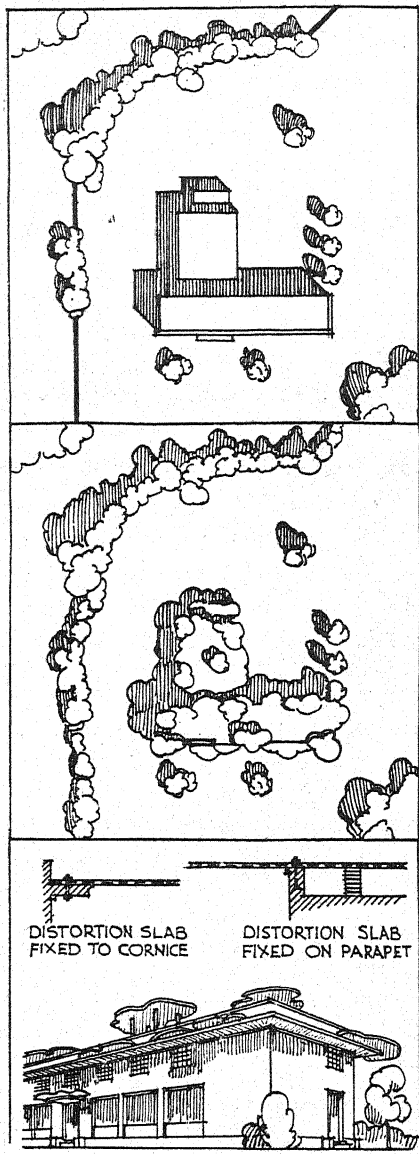
The ground pattern is the airman's view of the ground below him. It is the earth's surface in plan. There are seven broad varieties.

<sup>1</sup> Exact colour match is immaterial, for colour fades.

1. City and urban.
2. Farmland.
3. Paddy fields.
4. Forest.
5. Desert.
6. Mountain.
7. Combination of any of the above.

They vary from the natural 'wild' ground pattern extremely rough (mountains) to extremely smooth (deserts). While the urban pattern is more regular, the rural is more natural. Cultivated land and towns all over the world conform to a similar pattern, patch work quilt and crossword puzzle regularity. Indian villages reveal a muddled appearance—no well defined pattern, but fields of various colours with hedges and patches of wooded country. Each target in its setting has its own characteristic ground pattern as it is found with every human face or even in case of birds and animal faces.

Trees, meadows, fields, as well as separate leaves, show us a wealth of greens in infinite variety. In a leaf all the processes of reflection, absorption and scattering take place in the same way as



Structural distortion of a building : *top*—aerial view : *middle*—aerial view after distortion : *bottom*—perspective view showing the distortion slabs in position.

of reflection, absorption and scattering take place in the same way as



in an ocean hundreds of feet deep. Absorption is caused here by the chlorophyll grains, scattering is probably brought about by innumerable grains of all kinds in which the contents of the cells are so rich, or perhaps by the unevenness of the leaf's surface.

The upper sides and the under sides of leaves differ in tint even if the illumination is the same. The upper side is smooth, therefore reflects better and so is also more patchy. The under side is duller and paler and shows more pores.

Trees seen against the light stand out darkly against the distant background and make us feel its distance, its remoteness, more sharply. A distant wood in a flat country can actually be compared to rows of hills. Meadows give one level expanse of a single colour and an impression of smoothness and open space, and seen at a distance, its green runs to blue green and further off, it approaches more and more the atmospheric blue of the sky.

Shadows are to be found between the trunks and stems in woods and shrubberies, and in open windows in towns, viewed from a distance. They are spaces in which we can only look through a narrow aperture. The light rays which enter it can emerge only after being reflected a number of times, becoming considerably feebler each time. Dark woods absorb nearly all the rays and re-emit only four per cent. of the incident light. The darkness of a wood is, however, only relative, and if we draw near, the eye having once become adapted to the light, we can see that everything in it shows light and colour. Similarly every detail in a room, seen from inside can be distinguished, whereas the same room seen from outside through the open window looks pitch dark. Delicate objects outlined against the bright sky usually look black.

Where the sun shines, its brilliant yellowish rays predominate over the light radiated from the sky ; but in the shade, light only falls from the blue or grey sky. Shadows are, therefore, generally bluer than their surroundings and this difference becomes accentuated by contrast. In flat or gently undulating country shadows accentuate the relief only when the sun is very low. Its rays then almost graze the surface of the ground, causing very curious variations of light and shade.

There is a remarkable difference in colour and structure to be seen in almost any landscape, depending on whether we look at it



✓ towards the sun or away from it. The entire aspect of the scenery changes. A field of young corn, a meadow, a field of lupine, are yellow-green towards the sun, but away from it they are bluish. The waves in a field of ripe rye are chiefly caused by the changing aspect of the ears; facing the sun, we see practically only bright light waves; looking away from the sun, we see a few bright but more dark waves. A lawn mown with a lawn mower looks much lighter in colour when the direction of mowing is away from us than when it is towards us; in the former direction we see much more reflected light. Freshly ploughed land glistens if one looks at right angles to the direction of the still damp furrows. Duckweed on the water of a ditch behaves in exactly the opposite way to grass. Away from the sun it is yellow-green, but towards the sun pale grey green. Fruit trees in full blossom are white only when seen away from the sun; seen towards the sun, the blossoms stand out black against the sky. The branches and twigs of trees are grey, and brown seen away from the sun, black, without detail, towards the sun.

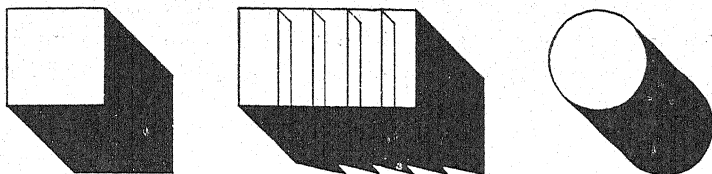
A brick-paved road is brown-red towards the sun, white-grey away from the sun. A gravel road is white grey towards the sun, brown-grey away from the sun. An uneven road, covered with snow, seen towards the sun, looks as a whole darker than the smooth snow at the side; away from the sun it is the other way round.

Photographic tone ranges from black to white. The tone depends more upon the light reflected towards the camera than upon the colour of the object. If the light is reflected directly into the camera, the surface will appear light. The relative tones of the different parts of an objective, change with the point of view from which they are observed. For different surfaces act differently on the incident light and this is noticeable when flying round an object.

Most surfaces in nature are rough, since they are covered by trees, grass, shrubs, etc. Each is composed of a number of small surfaces which reflect light in different directions. The more light they reflect upwards, the whiter they will appear. A grass field consists of a large number of minute points, each reflecting very little light and will hence appear dark; but if a man walks over it and crushes down the grass with his feet, the crushed grass will reflect more light and will appear light.

### Shadow : Elimination and Disguise

Even though the colour and shape of an object are effectively disguised its presence would be revealed by its shadow. For the shape of a shadow has a definite relation to the shape of the object which is casting it, and even though it goes through various distortions, it enables the observer who has studied shadow to recognise the form of the building which is casting it. Without a shadow such as on a cloudy day, it is difficult to judge the height of a building from a vertical view-point. The area of shadow increases and decreases in size and moves in the opposite direction to the sun's travel. Early morning and late afternoon shadows are the longest. No amount of paint will remove a shadow.



Shadows reveal the shape of objects

The vertical wall on the shadow side is in shade. Shade is generally lighter than the shadow due to the diffused reflected light reaching it from beyond the shadow edge. The tone of the surface on which the shadow falls determines the density of the shadows. The lighter the surface, the lighter the tone of the shadow. But however light the tone or colour of the area, the shadow will be very much darker than the darkest object kept in direct sunlight. Therefore, a shadow thrown on a white surface will be darker than a black object in direct sunlight. The colour of the shadow assumes the same colour as the surface on which it falls, except that the tone is darker. To establish the area of a shadow, we must peg it out on the ground at 8 a.m. and 5 p.m. and run a line, white or chalk line from peg to peg to obtain the range of travel.

Shadows could be treated by netting and screening, by garnished netting, by trees and bushes and by counter-shading. From the edge of the building roof to the edge of the shadow, wires could be fixed. Over this supporting wire, a cover could be spread consisting of local and cheap materials such as hessian, canvas, woven bamboo or grass mats, chicks, chittai, leafy branches of trees,

etc. Garnished netting may be used. Chick or wire-netting or expanded metal could be fastened to the supporting wires and interwoven with narrow strips of gunny or leaves. If time permits, quick-growing creepers could be grown and allowed to climb the netting. It is advisable to carry pegs beyond the shadow area, as this presents a lower angle and gives less difference in tone between the flat roof and the sloping roof.

Trees and bushes break the shadows when suitably planted and thus help to disguise the form of the building. Countershading of the shady side of an object may sometimes prove very effective. The colours (tones) used must carefully intermingle at the point of junction. Painting the shadow surfaces with light colour will reduce density to a great extent but is suitable only in congested areas for deep closely reflected shadows such as we find in narrow streets. In open surroundings, this would make the building conspicuous on a cloudy day, while it may be helpful during bright sunshine.

There are four ways of dealing with shadows cast by an object.

1. Elimination of shadow, is done by attaching canvas sides sloping gradually to the ground at an angle of 15 to 30 degrees to the horizontal. This prevents the shadow from being cast. The canvas could be painted to harmonise with the surrounding landscape. The slopes are brightened to a lighter tone as they are of a darker shade. Canvas should cover the eaves and cornices, and this method is very effective. The Germans adopted this measure in the last war to conceal military manoeuvres.

2. Disguise of shadow, is done with the help of string or wire-netting. It acts like the curtain in a window. The vision is obscured since the light outside the netting is greater during the day, than within. When the netting is coloured lighter than the shade within, the shadow cannot be detected. String netting made of hemp or cotton should be suitably dyed and rot-proofed. Field forces garnish the netting with hessian or steel wool or aluminium plates if available to create solids and voids which help to add texture and make the netting process absolutely effective. Without garnishing, the shade of the netting will show and a hundred per cent. visual deception may not be possible.

The net is considered a most suitable material for concealing large areas of glass used in factories, since daylight is not obstructed.

The mesh recommended is half inch<sup>1</sup> or less when measured in the diamond either way. Where a non-reflective surface has to be covered, the mesh could be larger.

3. Shadow distortion is achieved by dummy trees, artificial excrescences and by netting. Flat boarding not less than six feet in its least dimension in plan, and painted suitably, are fixed to the eaves and cornices of buildings, raised above the roof to throw shadows on the flat roof itself and also along the straight edges of the shadow of the building. Garnished netting could also be similarly used. Where a regular shadow edge is cast, dummy and real trees could be planted. Occasionally, wire-netting sloping down from the roof may also be used.

Shadows could be killed by transforming them into intermediate 'blobs' appertaining to the local ground pattern. Dummy bushes, trees, rocks, etc. are made in conformity with the ground pattern and sited to break up the shadows.

4. Countershading. The shadow is always darker than the shade. By countershading, the shady portion of the roof and walls could be made indistinguishable from the shadow and be made to appear continuous with the shadow itself. Countershading can make a surface in relief look flat. The portion covered by the shadow can also be painted lighter to harmonise in tone with the walls in shade. The roof towards the sun and also the walls, could be darkened to match the side opposite. This method is considered very effective in congested areas where one object throws its shadow on the other. This, however, is inadequate, for viewed from a different angle the objects become more conspicuous by the colours. The change in the direction of light from the sun renders countershading a very defective method.

A combination of methods to disguise and distort the shadow has to be adopted for success and for these measures, string or wire-netting serves as valuable material. Of all camouflage materials, net is perhaps the most effective and is chosen by the field forces for its portability.

The theory underlying the net is based on the common experience that it is difficult to see into a room fitted with a light lace curtain, the lace absorbing all our attention and producing a

<sup>1</sup>*Vide* C. W. Glover: "Civil Defence", 3rd edition, p. 565.

screenic effect. The veil-like curtain is strongly illuminated and if the objects in the room have only a small percentage of that brightness they add to the uniform brightness of the veil a fraction too small to be perceived. At night, when there is a light in the room, you can see through the curtain quite well. The side nearest to us is practically unilluminated, and only imposes a very feeble illumination on the objects of various brightness in the room. For those who are in the room and look outside, the effect is in both cases the other way round. The same phenomenon occurs when an aeroplane, clearly visible in the moonlight, is no longer to be found when a search-light is used. The air between our eye and the aeroplane is illuminated by a beam of dazzling light which prevents us from seeing the weak light-contrasts behind it.



Garnished netting used for concealing a machine-gun post

String or wire-netting serves a similar purpose as that of the lace curtain. Garnishing by creating solids and voids, and shadows which harmonise with the surrounding ground pattern makes screening by nets more effective.

The object of garnishing is to obtain the correct proportion of solids and voids which produce texture as is found in the landscape, to enhance the efficacy of netting. Garnishing is, in essence, thickening some part of the area of the net so that texture is

produced and the reflected light rays are diverted and prevented from reaching the eye of the observer, thereby misleading the air observer. Any local material could be used if it is suitable for garnishing. Brushwood, grass, crops, straw, coir, sea-weed, leaves, jute sliver, chicken feathers, raw wool, goat hair and horse hair, are classified as natural garnish, while manufactured garnish includes cloth, hessian patches, hessian strips, shrimp nets, plywood, asbestos sheets, scrim, vignetting, chittai, steel wool, steel shavings, aluminium plates, etc. Experience has shown that any material, natural or manufactured, with which the desired effect can be produced could be used. There is no rigid rule about the choice of material for garnishing. We must produce the correct colour, tone and texture by the most convenient and quickest method possible. Tufts of tall grass may be wired to nails projecting from strips of lumber laid on the screen. Other possibilities include vines grown from suspended containers, live plants and shrubs, cut branches are used—green or dead—installed upright as otherwise their brightness and general appearance are unnatural. Growing vines will increase the effectiveness of dummy trees.

Planting is another effective means of camouflage, provided the materials used are typical of the immediate areas. Regularity should be avoided, unless an orchard pattern is desired. Portable trees and shrubs growing in boxes or tubs may come in handy if the first attempt at camouflage fails to deceive enemy observers.

Selection of garnish should, however, be made with care. A ground and air reconnaissance, a study of the colour, tone and texture, of the site and its surroundings, the type of frame that should support the garnished cover, and the necessity for fire-proof materials or otherwise, should be given consideration. While natural garnish requires constant renewal, artificial ones need colouring by paints, dyes or stains, which are not good natural colours and are liable to fade.

Garnishing must produce a texture and tone that would harmonise with the surroundings and the pattern adopted should imitate natural shapes. The net used is often square and the following precautions are suggested to obtain ideal results. The garnish should disrupt the shape of the net by breaking the square outline. The shadow thrown by the pattern should harmonise with the ground pattern and should be irregular, and the ends should not run

parallel to the edge of the net. Garnish must be thicker in the centre and thinner as it approaches the edges, and the colour must merge in the landscape. Its colour should be a little darker in tone than the surroundings, since colour is liable to fade. Scrim, if used, should be twisted to produce texture. If other materials are used, solids and voids should be thoughtfully spaced. Wherever possible, natural vegetation should be used to supplement artificial garnish. Looked through half closed eyes or through field glasses thrown out of focus, the efficacy of garnishing could be tested.



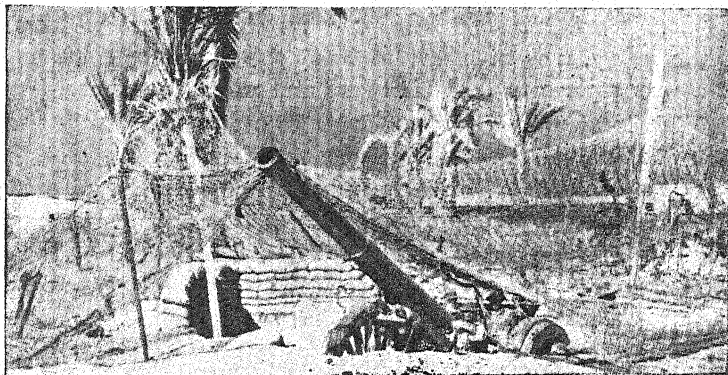
A 25-lb. gun and its crew camouflaged by an overhead cover of garnished netting

Sometimes, it may become necessary to conceal the objective completely. Garnished netting serves the purpose most effectively, and field forces resort to overhead covers to conceal their gun and other positions. Such covers should be garnished on the top to harmonise with the ground pattern. They are erected in the same fashion as ordinary roofs. Large overhead covers are generally erected to conceal operations connected with the construction of dams, assembling bridges or land mines and sometimes over sections

An order under the Defence of India Rules relating to the trade in hemp in the Province of Bengal has been promulgated by the Provincial Government. The order is for the purpose of securing all hemp so that the Government may not experience any difficulty in getting supplies of hemp grown or available in Bengal for making camouflage nets.

of roads, to hide traffic. To prevent oblique view, side screens or curtains are attached around the open ends. When a suitable site is selected, erection of a camouflaged overhead cover is simplified. Trees, bushes and open ground produce patterns which could be effectively imitated by garnish. Trees along roadside help to suspend the net between them, obviating the task of erecting posts to carry the netting.

Garnish, over the horizontal surface of an overhead cover, should be thickest in the centre, and towards the south. Garnish should be vignettted towards the edges in an irregular shape, to help distorting the shape and shadow below. The garnished area should completely cover the area occupied by the shadow cast by the object. Wood or metal frames could be used. Air reconnaissance at 1,000 to 5,000 feet is essential to check the effectiveness of such covers.



A gun emplacement covered by camouflage netting

The method of erecting large overhead covers has been standardised by the field forces in view of the importance and frequent need for such a cover. The procedure follows the method adopted for erecting large tents. For cloth-garnished netting, string or wire, the spacing recommended for intermediate posts is 15 feet maximum, whereas 8 to 10 feet is permitted if light-grass and bamboo-covers are used. The diameter of the posts should vary from 2 to 4 inches. With 12 or 14 gauge wire, one length preferably, a skeleton frame is made. Intermediate and diagonal wires are then fixed and the cover, previously garnished and disrupted, is put over the frame. Side screens at a slope of 25 degrees to the



horizontal are attached where necessary, and these are fixed a little above the head of the horizontal plane of the roof to prevent shadows. Where side screens meet, sharpness is to be avoided. The pegs around any net overhead cover should not form a regular shape.

To large civilian objectives overhead covers would prove very expensive, but vital units, of factories and power-houses, where power plants are installed, could be concealed by overhead covers. The ridges between the roofs of large factories and the ploughed field appearance conspicuous by the shadows in the valleys, could also be treated with garnished netting. Where total concealment by one overhead cover is impracticable by size or other reasons, side curtains, as recommended for large overhead covers, could be attached to objectives to conceal shape and shadow.

### Dummies

If the existence and location of an objective are well known to the enemy, it is necessary to decoy the airman by some means to a wrong place to deal his blows and waste his bombs.

The ideal way is to camouflage the target effectively and at the same time to set up a dummy at a safe distance to the original, but close enough *i.e.*, from half a mile to quarter of a mile to decoy the bomber pilot and bombs.

Dummies are classified into two groups: those that scare the enemy and force him to divert his course by their apparent strength, and those that help to invite the enemy's attention and waste his blows upon them. A dummy mine-field or anti-aircraft battery may divert the enemy, while a dummy oil tank will invite his attention and waste his ammunition. Most things connected with war can be reproduced as dummies, from the smallest machine-gun to the biggest battleship, such as the Scharnhorst. Dummy aerodromes, buildings, tanks, lorries, guns, pill-boxes, dumps, gun-emplacements, camps, obstacles, etc. are made. Sometimes dummies are used to trick the enemy, such as an artificial tree, a dummy road, and dummy damage to structures.

For producing effective dummies a careful study of the characteristic features of the original is necessary and the following hints would prove valuable. The characteristic features of railways are long straight tracks with gentle curves, embankments, cuttings, dark area between lines, light paths alongside signals, tunnels,

stations, etc. The dummy should, therefore, have light embankments or cuttings, large stone aggregates, covered with engine oil, telegraph posts, signals and fences. Ballies or other suitable material should be laid as rails. If necessary dummy bridges, trees, as also goods wagons made of wood framing and gunny cloth, could be used. Occasional working parties along tracks, are recommended by authorities. A dummy road is obtained when the surface effect is produced by sprayed tar, cement wash, tar, gravel, etc. Stone aggregate for metal, dummy trees and tracks would add to its effectiveness. Tracks are easily made and are very helpful. They should not be terminated abruptly, but extended to a suitable termination.

Concrete surface appears light in photograph, macadam surface dark grey and gravel or mud track, dark. Concrete and macadam roads are usually highways, possess few sharp corners and reflect light. The sharp curves of gravel and mud tracks are indistinct when viewed from the air. The surface effect obtained for the dummy should produce these colours, tone and texture effects, if it should be effective.

Dummy trees could be made with ballies and artificial branches covered with two-inch mesh wire-netting lightly garnished with coir or steel-wool. They should be sited in clumps. They help to break shadows, to conceal small units and to distort shape. Characteristic features of trees viewed from the air are, their dark texture, tell-tale shadows and "roundness of form". Real trees could also be transplanted by suitable arrangement, and sometimes very large trees are also replanted this way. The use of trees without life with newly cut branches of green leaves is, however, deprecated, since the leaves will fall off sooner or later and the dry twigs will show differently.

Light net or wire frame covered with gunny cloth, suitably sized and painted, and coated with creosote to stand the weather, produce dummy rocks, and these are very helpful in treating large camouflage schemes containing several building units located on hills.

There are two ways of producing dummy buildings. They should accentuate the characteristic features of the originals, in the locality, their tone, their roofs and their tell-tale shadows.

The first way is to remove patches of turf of the shape, the size being much larger than the three-dimensional original, of one side of the sloping roof of a building. This will represent the sunny side. The other side of the patch should be left normal and the turf suitably darkened to represent the shadow. The second method is to construct three-dimensional dummy buildings of mud, ballies and other cheap locally available materials of nearly full height. These are advisable in open areas.

The details of doors and windows should be avoided. The effect of height can be intensified by the clever use of bush, trees, battering of walls and by the judicious use of contrasting tone colours.

In congested areas, dummy shadows and plinth are effective. Shadows must be thrown on each other and the correct tone should be obtained.

A dump has the characteristics of a large depot and possesses buildings surrounded by mounds, tracks, railways, roads, etc. In erecting dummy dumps, we must get dummy houses, mounds made of garnished netting, tracks, railways and roads.

There is no satisfactory method of producing water effect by dummies. The best solution is to use real water, although bright galvanised iron, tin, silver and plain glass are suggested for imitation. These, however, cannot produce satisfactorily the bright glint, the changing tone and the peculiar impression of depth which are the characteristic features of water while viewed from above.

Circular frames and galvanised iron could make dummy oil storage tanks. An earth cover is added and the height intensified by using bushes and contrasting tone colours to produce the features of the original, namely circular shape, characteristic shadow and earth bund.

A large dummy bridge is not a practical proposition unless it is erected and used as an alternative crossing. In that case, it becomes a major engineering problem. A medium-sized dummy bridge can, however, be made. Very light dummy bridges are made with wire strands hung with gunny cloth. To be effective, these dummy bridges should possess clear approach by road or rail. The shadow of a bridge would differ in tone between the bridge and water, the

parapets are of a lighter tone, while the track is darker. It is necessary to remember that traffic must be closed to the public if these dummy bridges are to be erected.

To be effective, the dummy must have every essential feature of the original, with the minimum of detail. Dummies must pass off as the real thing when carefully observed from the distance, from where the enemy would have the chance to look at them. The materials used must be strong and light, preferably portable and convincing, easily assembled and dismantled. Siting must be carefully done, and the correct background and setting should be chosen. They must be maintained with great care, and any large scheme must be complete in every respect. Dummies must be camouflaged cleverly, enough flaws being left to invite the observer's attention. They should, wherever possible, be large enough to throw natural shadows, dummy shadow being avoided as far as possible.

'Dummies must be thought out in terms of a general scheme and their maximum effect depends upon carefully worked-out association of ideas.' Since they depend upon the element of surprise for their success, absolute secrecy should be maintained about them. They should, however, be constructed before the real positions are erected in the case of field units, or at the same time. They must emerge clearly out of the ground pattern by their characteristic features, which are the same as those we have to camouflage in the real objective. It is, therefore, necessary that the main characteristics must be accentuated. Dummies should preferably be planned and constructed in secret and assembled on the site.

### Typical Problems

A combination of concealment, distortion and deception according to the locality and the vulnerability of the objective should be adopted to produce the most effective camouflage. The ground pattern, vegetation, climate, possible direction of the approach of the enemy air-craft, nature of ground defences and the strength of interceptor planes, should all be taken into consideration in evolving the scheme. Experience during the past two years, however, provides valuable clues in respect of most of the objectives commonly chosen for air attack. Arranged in the order of importance they are, defence posts, pill-boxes, gun-emplacements,

etc., aerodromes, producing centres of war materials, oil storages, ware-houses of essential commodities, means of communication and transport, nerve centres such as power-houses, water reservoirs, etc. and civilian structures.

**DEFENCE POSITIONS.**—Defence positions cover both static and field defences. The static defences include light machine-guns, pill-boxes, dock-houses, gun houses, anti-tank and road vehicle obstacles, light anti-aircraft guns, entanglements, land-mines, observation posts and large coastal batteries. Owing to the vital importance of siting to obtain best results from camouflage measures, a ground and air reconnaissance is recommended before the site is selected. Precautions during erection are also necessary to prevent the enemy from pin-pointing their location. A general precautionary measure recommended is the use of dummies, screens and tracks, clear of occupied area. Hiding the tracks used is also suggested.

During construction, wherever possible, regularity of outline must be broken to conform with natural features. Smooth surfaces should be textured. Auxiliary buildings must be carefully sited and disrupted, and the texture of concrete facings should generally be made rough. Associated structures should be constructed and disguised by disruptive painting etc. to look like local buildings. They should be treated like camps and barracks. Everything should be toned down to harmonise with the landscape.

Anti-aircraft guns should be sunk into the ground and nets and brushwood used to conceal them. The tracks leading to them should be concealed so as not to reveal the position. Search-light positions should be made to look like huts. Pill-boxes would remain inconspicuous, if they are properly sited and disguised to look like surrounding objects, whether in urban, rural or coastal area. Its outline must be broken. Blockhouses and gun-houses have characteristic shape. Their lines must be broken wherever possible, and precautions must be taken against blast effect. The subsidiary fixings must be strong. Since siting is the most important consideration for the efficiency of defence posts, suitability to concealment is the next consideration.

Coast defence units comprise several items and exhibit certain regularity of lay-out. The various units which comprise the coastal battery are gun-emplacements usually in pairs, magazines, battery, observation posts, anti-aircraft guns, light machine-guns,

search-lights, and associated quarters such as the engine house, A. R. P. shelters, tracks, turning loops of vehicles and considerable quantity of spoil caused during construction. They should be treated as part of one scheme worked out to defeat all forms of air attack. Siting has, therefore, to be given special attention. Overhead cover must be used throughout erection. The concrete used for gun-emplacements and aprons should have rough texture. Rough irregular corrugation should be made on the surface of the apron and its hard edge broken. Sea-weed and brush-wood should be secured by means of wire-netting. Treatment should be varied for twin emplacements. Light cover which could be quickly removed should be adopted for guns. The most disturbing feature in most static defence positions is the presence of tracks and spoil, and unless controlled throughout, they would present obstacles to effective camouflage.

**AERODROMES.**—Their vital importance leads the enemy to pin-point their position even before wars begin. If the enemy has pin-pointed the location of objectives and these are only toned down they would still continue to be well defined targets. Camouflage measures should, therefore, aim at increasing the difficulty of recognition, since their position or location is already well known. Visibility from distance should, therefore, be reduced, since aerodromes are generally near large urban centres and main highways. The features that generally help recognition of an aerodrome are :—

1. Large areas well defined by runways made of concrete with a highly reflecting surface.
2. Large hangars with hard stands for planes.
3. Air-craft on ground.
4. Tracks formed by air-craft and service vehicles.
5. Associated buildings, stores, bomb dumps, quarters for personnel, administrative buildings, aero clubs, ground defences, etc.
6. Proximity to large cities and main roads.

All these items should receive special attention in the camouflage scheme. Complete concealment is virtually impossible for landing grounds. Making it conform with the local ground pattern after careful reconnaissance and photography is the only feasible

solution. Indifferent efforts generally fail. Initial cost and maintenance constitute the chief problem. Dusting powders, bituminous paint, waste oil mixtures, coal-dust, coke breeze, etc. are recommended for use. Anything which may be blown up by the propeller into the mechanism of the modern aero engine should be avoided.

Runways must be treated to look like landing grounds, and the scheme adopted should harmonise with the latter. Concrete and tarmac runways should be sprayed with hot bitumen and then dressed with pre-coloured stone chippings gauged to about one-fourth inch with a light roller, like those of old motor wheels.

The surface must be rolled, and a thin layer of tar with local dust dressing may produce a matt surface which will prove very effective. The treatment for runways is usually very expensive.

Similar treatment is required for large areas of tarmac or concrete on which planes are warmed up. The ground pattern should be carried over the area in combination with disruptive patterns on the hangars. If the local background justifies it, netting of shadows and disruptive colouration would prove helpful.

The conspicuousness of concrete surfaces may be reduced by colouration alone, but experience indicates that a combination of granulation and colour treatment is essential in order to reduce spectral reflection from all angles and to reduce the photo brightness of the runway to a value comparable to that of most natural ground covers.<sup>1</sup> However, if colouring without the granulation is considered, a rapid, inexpensive treatment that produces a low gloss finish is important. Several methods for accomplishing this result are suggested :—

1. A spray application of an asphalt or tar emulsion. When dry this produces a dark brown to a black dull finish.
2. A spray application of water, gas, tar makes the concrete surface brown and dries to a dull finish. Darker brown can be obtained by applying several coats.
3. The ordinary wood stains obtainable in a wide range of colours, when sprayed on concrete, penetrate the surface and produce a dull finish.

<sup>1</sup>*Wide Protective Concealment* (U. S., O.C.D. Publication 1942) pp. 45-46.

The durability of a single application of any of the above treatment will probably not exceed 4 to 6 weeks under traffic. Additional applications may be made quickly and cheaply. When the colour is worn, these may still be effective for longer periods as tone down.

A combination of colouring and granulation is to be preferred to colouring alone. What is essentially a coloured, granular carpet is required to successfully reduce the brightness of an airfield runway. The long straight edges should be interrupted by extending the adjacent pattern into the runway. Three classes of coatings are suggested for these purposes :—

1. Precoloured sawdust on asphalt or tar emulsion.
2. Chopped rubber precoloured or sprayed on an adhesive.
3. Crushed rock or slag on an adhesive.

Associated buildings should be treated as part of the whole scheme. Dummies might be constructed and suitably located. If there are ground defences and bomb stores, the former should be treated like small static defences while the latter should be concealed by overhead garnished netting. Dummy planes, dummy bomb craters, etc. suitably located would help to mislead the airmen. Concealed dispersal points for air-craft in neighbouring fields are however essential, but tracks leading to them should be avoided.

Air-craft on the ground are difficult to find if treated with uniform lustreless olive drab. Appropriate patterns superimposed upon the olive drab are a further improvement as in the case of vehicles. Seasons also must be considered, for olive drab would, of course, be useless on open show. Cover of nets and trees may readily be contrived in many instances. More recent practice is to disperse planes in the open, taking advantage of natural lines and intersections. In many instances sandbag or other splinter-proof walls for each plane are constructed to plane height, usually without cover and open at one end to allow the plane to be wheeled in, tail first. Such shelters are generally not concealed except where woods are convenient but are designed rather to minimize the damage from any single blast.

For air-craft in flight, different paints are preferred, although the olive drab is relatively inconspicuous. A paint with a reflection spectrum approximating the spectrum of clear weather sky has been developed but is not known to be commercially available.



Paint manufacturers' should be able to define the spectrum curves of their products so that there need be no misapprehension as to the properties of coatings considered. The sky spectrum is desirable on surfaces to be exposed against a sky background a ground or ground haze spectrum would be preferred for surfaces to be viewed against an earth background. The view-point of the anticipated enemy whether above or below, the weather, the season, and the time of day should be considered in conjunction with the choice of colouring. Disruptive pattern would be more suitable in flight over mottled ground.<sup>1</sup>

It is one thing to conceal an oil tank or a small factory building, but something entirely different to disguise an air-field runway measuring some 250 feet in width by a mile or so in length. Such a project was recently handled, though by covering an entire runway. But airports don't just disappear overnight. And it seemed reasonable to assume that this particular airport was already established in the enemy's records and calculations, so the whole operation had to be performed over again in reverse. The airport, or something that looked exactly like it, had to be moved somewhere else so that when enemy planes came looking for it they wouldn't have any trouble in finding it.

As a result, a similar plot of ground a few miles away was laid out to resemble the original airport. In this case, the runways were literally burned into the ground with blow torches, the burned grass and scorched earth resembling concrete in colour and texture. Then, to add to the realism, dummy hangars were constructed and dummy planes scattered over the field. As a final precaution the hangars and airplanes were camouflaged just enough to be recognized as camouflage jobs, and there is nothing better calculated to draw the enemy's fire than discernible evidences of camouflaging.

The complete job was a big undertaking, yet it was accomplished with a minimum of time, expense and materials. Anything can be camouflaged to the point of total obliteration if there is time and money. Many camouflage projects are now making use of discarded tin cans, for instance. If their polish can be preserved they are used for various light-reflecting devices; if they are rusty, they are of a colour and texture to resemble earth and are laid over highways, railroad tracks and even the roofs of buildings to make them blend into their natural surroundings. In the war areas, even

<sup>1</sup>*Vide* Protective Concealment, pp. 27-28.

the damage done by enemy bombs is immediately camouflaged, either to minimize the destruction that was actually accomplished or to exaggerate the destruction so that the bombers wouldn't return later to finish the job.

False roofs, built out of light portable materials and complete with chimneys, air vents and sky-lights, are among the most frequently used devices for erecting dummy buildings in less than overnight time. Localities where there are conspicuous landmarks, such as bridges, highway or railroad intersections, prominent hills, valleys, or distinguishable ground patterns, do not make suitable sites for vital war industries plants for the same reasons. The nets may be covered with garlands of osnaburg, burlap, even paper strips on occasion.<sup>1</sup>

Siting is a fundamental consideration in camouflage treatment, and the lay-out of the aerodrome should, wherever possible, tend to follow some general ground pattern. Advance landing grounds should be made to conform as nearly to the original pattern as possible after levelling. Gravel might be tried for runways. Where asbestos or concrete roofs exist reflection results; the hangars could be roofed with a view to camouflage.

FACTORIES.—Factories are generally very large and comprise different units such as stores, administration, power and the different manufacturing departments. Roads, railway sidings, gasometers, chimneys and cooling towers may also form part. A factory is easily detected by one or more of the following features.

1. Large homogeneous expanses of roof with their ploughed field aspect due to shadows in the valleys. Some factories have a roof area of over a square mile. In the case of north-light roofs this effect is particularly noticeable.

2. The shine from roofs caused by the reflection of light from smooth surfaces. When the observer looks towards the sun, this effect will be particularly conspicuous.

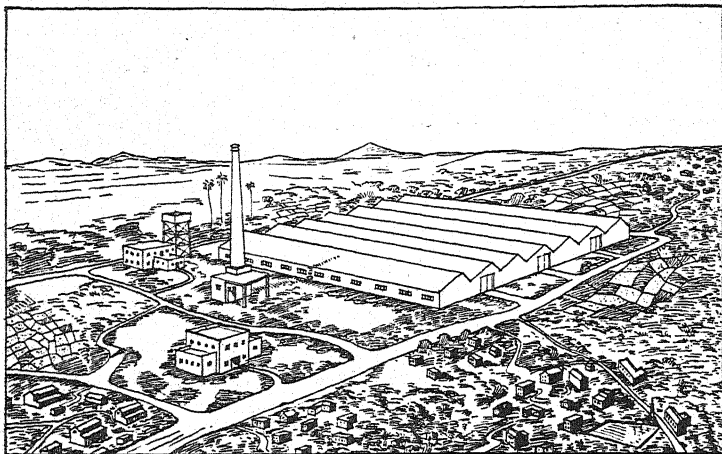
3. The bulk of the units such as large gasholders.

4. Regularity of shadow and silhouette, especially in the case of oil tanks or petrol depots, considered most difficult to obliterate and very difficult of complete solution.

Workshops show as busy areas usually containing a proportion of buildings larger than is normal in the neighbourhood, frequently having specialised construction in roofs—spot lights, good roads,

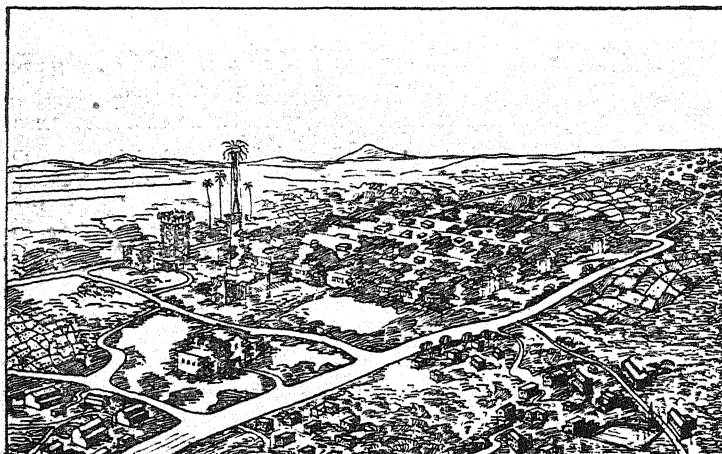
<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Civilian Defence," Oct. 1942.

and often rail or water communication. There are also waste dumping grounds.



A typical factory in a rural surrounding

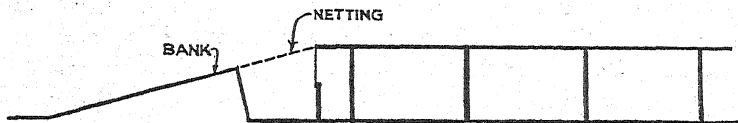
Storage yards possess good road and rail facilities and well spaced out marshalling yards. Railway lines are usually the characteristic feature and they are not suitable subjects for camouflage.



A view of the same factory camouflaged

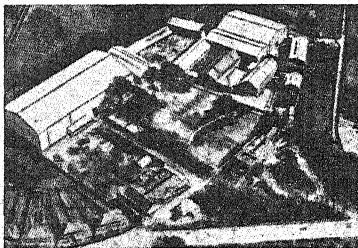
The different units should be examined, the most vital ones singled out for total concealment, the others toned down and certain

others should be left alone. Total concealment of all the units should not be attempted. Large lengths could be broken by painting the surrounding ground pattern over the roof and the side walls, either an agricultural landscape, a village or urban pattern. Netting to conceal the shadows in the ridges is helpful, while the shadow sides could be treated with garnished netting covering completely the shadows cast. Dummies could be used to mislead



Economical method of netting to conceal shadows cast by a building with flat roofs

the location of vital power units, while real and dummy trees could be planted to break the outline of the shadows wherever netting would prevent access to vehicles. The measures necessary for camouflaging a factory are: changing or breaking the form of the objective, by irregularly placed structural additions; distorting or removing the shadows by garnished wire or string netting; cutting long lengths of buildings by suitably connecting parts of ridges, by wooden planking or garnished netting or by colour or dummy trees and bushes. Cutting long lengths of buildings could also be done by colour. Bold disruption can be attempted, avoiding



A large factory in a rural surrounding



The same factory camouflaged by paints, nets, etc.

regularity both in shape and size of the disruptive pattern. Painting the glazing in the roof would prevent daylight entering the factory and garnished wire-netting is therefore suggested to conceal them. Patented devices to cover them during emergency are being used in Great Britain, where by automatic control, opaque board,—camouflage painted—covers the glazing whenever required. Large overhead covers made of garnished netting

could be adopted for the vital plants that cannot be quickly replaced in times of war. Bulletin No. C. 13 recently issued by the Research and Experiments Department of the Ministry of Home Security emphasises the need for camouflaging glazing in factory roof lights or in windows. No treatment may be required in certain built-up areas, but for large factories in suburban or rural areas, expensive camouflage is often necessary. It may be painted on the glass or the outer surfaces of external shutters, any anti-shine preparation applied to the outer surfaces of the glass or it may be nets. Nets suspended horizontally from ridge to ridge of a saw-tooth roof cut off some light from the vertical or steeply sloped north-lights. The standard net may cut off about 30 per cent. of the daylight through the window it shields. Nets from the eaves similarly cut off light which might otherwise enter the factory through vertical glazing in the walls. Anti-shine treatment for glass may reduce the amount of light transmitted, as much as 40 per cent. or more when the glass is clean and it will be much more when dirt begins to collect.

These three measures would reduce the natural light entering the factory. The glazing area should, therefore, be larger in future constructions. If the amount of natural daylight should not be affected by camouflage treatment, external shutters become necessary. They will carry camouflage patterns and will serve the purpose of obscuration. A fundamental requirement in their design is that they should be capable of being closed very quickly immediately a warning is received.

If the glazing can receive camouflage treatment letting in sufficient natural light, internal obscuration system could be employed and a considerable saving of expense could be effected.

The specifications and drawings made by the Research and Experiments Department are intended mainly for north-light factories. Movable shutters in panels hinged to flap or to slide or to fold so that they can be moved away from the glazing are recommended for external shutters. For internal shutters, sheet materials of weather-resisting character, which would resist glass splinters, are recommended. Internal light weight screens have to be suspended so that they do not fall to the floor when thrown out by blast. Any inexpensive flexible light weight sheet material that is not liable to warp might be used with a light frame and painted, to

make it weather-resisting. The following sheet materials are considered suitable.

1. Kraft liner board. .0126 inch minimum thickness.
2. Corrugated fibre board.
3. Solid fibre board.
4. Wall board or building board.
5. Ply wood in frame.
6. Wire-netting and fabric.
7. Box shooks.
8. Thin metal sheets.
9. Plaster board.
10. Fire-resisting sheet material.
11. Insulating boards.
12. Matting of the grass or fibre variety.

Since large factories with several units form almost a town, concealment, disruption and deception, by painting and merging the units in the landscape, by disruptive patterns, by breaking large ones into small units, concealing and breaking the shadows, and by dummy structures, we have to produce an effective scheme. It is also essential to locate, if possible, vital plants in buildings as distant from each other as possible and to stock the manufactured products in different units and store them in distant places. Structural alterations also form part of the measures designed to ensure safety.

To camouflage only the factory will not suffice. To hide or obscure adjacent reference points even several miles away is as necessary as to do so to the target itself. If the enemy is to be kept from rapidly penetrating our mask, we must resort to area camouflage.

At least 35 per cent. of the effectiveness of camouflage depends upon the willingness of everyone in the area under observation to abide by a set of rules. These may include such widely varied requests as the prohibition of smoking chimneys: the abandonment of certain roads, the organisation and distribution of traffic at certain hours; and the parking of cars according to preconceived plan. Large portions of the factory may be broken up by painted surfaces having the appearance of smaller buildings from bombing altitudes. The shape and height of smoke stacks may be minimized by irregular shaped light wood and cable fins attached about halfway up the stack painted to blend into the surrounding design.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Harper Geoff: The American City, Sep. 1942, p. 91.

In a highly industrialised area a plant is more difficult to conceal, due to the many smoke sources, even when its colour blends with the surroundings. Siting, planning and construction are therefore fundamental considerations. These three are essential to help successful concealment. "The problem of concealment involves care in the selection of sites, care in the choice of methods of construction, suitable treatment and the distribution of buildings on the site and in particular, attention to the lay-out and construction of roadways."<sup>1</sup> It has been strongly recommended in Great Britain that the civil defence camouflage establishment should be consulted at the earliest stage in war-time building project, and advice is given free.

The Research and Experiments Department of the Ministry of Home Security has recommended some designs for factories, helpful both for camouflage and for resistance to bombs.

The best type of roof for camouflage purposes is a flat one with no projections whatever. Increasing experience has emphasised the importance of this. A succession of arched spans is admissible, from the point of view of camouflage, provided the arches are reasonably flat. A new factory type having a completely flat roof, is now added to the range of designs, and slight modifications to the glazing and eaves details have been made to reduce shadows.

At the request of the Directorate of Camouflage, Ministry of Home Security, another type has been put forward to meet the needs of camouflage and steel economy. It is further stressed that the three following requirements are just as important as the final camouflage treatment, and are fundamental to its full success.<sup>2</sup>

1. Careful selection of site to avoid proximity to readily located landmarks, etc.
2. Careful consideration of lay-out of buildings and of site arrangements generally to avoid undue regularity, and to merge the factory as much as possible in the surroundings.
3. Careful consideration of the design of building types to meet camouflage requirements.

Already authorities in India have indicated their intention to control the design and construction and lay-out of buildings and

<sup>1</sup> Mr. R. Fitzmaurice, "War-time building." "The Builder", March 14, 1941, p. 820.

<sup>2</sup> "Builder", 26-9-1941, p. 290.

structures, to reduce their vulnerability. Camouflage requirements could also be incorporated when details are worked out, so that the structures may obtain not only greater strength to resist air-craft bombs but also greater chances of escaping them.

In future planning, orientation of buildings or objects should be carefully considered to minimise the shadows.

**OIL TANKS.**—A tank form's regular pattern, of circular objects accentuated by sharp, black shadows is easily seen from 30,000 ft. up. Oil Storage tanks are very conspicuous by their shape and shadow, by their proximity to harbours and by the railways, roads, and tracks that lead to them. Generally circular, they are extremely difficult to treat effectively, since the circular shape is the most difficult to deal with. No general scheme can be applied to these oil installations. Painting of the tanks with disruptive patterns, it is considered, will offer "not more than 2 per cent. immunity value," owing to the circular form of the structure, which is the most objectionable form possible from the camouflage point of view. It is also stated that such treatment only serves to increase the evaporation losses in the tanks.<sup>1</sup>

Netting does not very much improve matters owing to the circular form. It is almost a maxim that circularity must be broken or covered over opaquely, if it is to remain unobserved. It is impossible to maintain efficiently netting and canvas unless expensive varieties are used, which would raise the cost to a figure equal to, if not greater than, that of deformation with really permanent materials. Surroundings might also render the use of netting unsuitable.

Each tank must receive its own specific treatment by deformation with permanent materials. Fire-proof materials alone should be used.

According to Col. Chesney, "80 per cent. immunity value" can be obtained by deformation. The net, according to him, does not offer more than 30 per cent. immunity value. Oil tanks and gasometers indeed are two instances in which "the paint brush outlook is quite hopeless".

A. R. P. measures for the tanks and splinter-proofing to distant explosions require blast walls surrounding the tank. During construction, they could be suitably designed to help structural deformation by permanent materials, which would prevent circularity from becoming conspicuous. A little extra cost could

<sup>1</sup>Vide C. H. R. Chesney: "The Art of Camouflage," p. 110.



obtain different forms for the several oil tanks that are found usually clustered near large urban centres. Fire-proof materials alone should be used for distortion, and netting of the shadow sides might prove helpful, if garnished with steel wool or other fire-proof garnishing material. Disruptive painting on the top is equally necessary. Where no blast wall has been built, steel posts could be used to help deformation. Considering the size, a large overhead cover of garnished wire-netting might be difficult both to fix and to maintain under changing weather conditions.

Oil tanks are large and the metal plates of which they are made are thin. They cannot be bored through nor there are hooks and fixtures to which wire netting, garnished with fire proof material, such as steel wool, could be suspended to conceal the shadows. By the nature of their construction and size therefore, oil tanks afford no facilities, for the treatment of their shadows or their shape.

Careful siting and design alone could ensure immunity to these vital units. In future all oil tanks should be sunk below ground level and their top covered with concrete slab and camouflaged. The top of the tank may be a foot or two higher than the ground level to permit the fixing of pumps to draw out and refill the tank, conveniently without interfering with the roof covering.

Wherever possible they may be located in hill slopes, where suitable entrance tunnels, camouflaged, would lead to the sunk tanks, which would be safe from aerial bombardment. The inlet and outlet pipe lines should also be covered and effectively camouflaged.

**ESSENTIAL SERVICES.**—Communications may be roads, railways, both broad-gauge and narrow, canals, rivers, etc., or telephone and telegraph, requiring underground or above ground lines. All forms of communication are indications of activity, of headquarters, of extensive works. Defiles in communications are suitable objects for enemy attack—bridges, locks, ends of marshalling yards.

Listed in order of visibility are, concrete roads, tarmac road, water-bound macadam roads, and shingle and earth roads. A concrete road is brilliantly white and regular and a modern production, and invariably leads to an industry or place of military importance.

Railways, broad-gauge, have wide smooth curves, embankments, cuttings, etc. and show dark. Light gauge railways have

much sharper curves and pit contours closer. The only scope for concealment is spurs and dummy lines.

Canals are regular waterways with locks while rivers serving as communications have wharves.

Cables show where earth has been turned and reveal fairly regular lines and sharp junctions and are usually continuous lines in the opposite sides of obstacles such as roads which break them.

Air lines show the spoil where the posts have been dug in, as regularly spaced spots as in a straight line irrespective of obstacles.

Railway stations, railway lines, wagons and carriages, garages and cars as well as harbours, bridges and roads are singled out for air attack to dislocate communication and transport system. Railway stations are very large structures and it is difficult to disguise them by painting or by deformation. Some odd eye-striking feature could be concealed. The different units could be toned down, to keep within the surrounding tone.

In Hamburg the Binnenalster lake was covered with floating structures, piles being driven into the water. Huge rafts were put out in the lake to represent streets, houses, etc. A replica of a bridge was built about 600 yds. north of the real bridge and the railway station had "road" painted across the top of it. Little wooden houses were built and trees were set up to give the tell-tale stretch of water, the appearance of a part of the city.<sup>1</sup> The Potsdam railway station has also received camouflage measures.

Even if the railway station is camouflaged, it is difficult to conceal the lines and roads leading to it. Merging and disruption by painting and concealment by netting should all be tried to disguise it. The railway line for some distance may be concealed by netting but a dummy line should be laid to mislead the enemy. Since railway carriages are machine-gunned, dazzle-painting could be tried as was done in France in the last Great War. Oil tank wagons could be covered by opaque material and made to look like passenger carriages.

Instead of going to the pains and expense of completely covering, say a length of railroad track, it may be broken up at intervals to resemble something else altogether actually camouflaging only a fraction of the total area. Modification of the various

<sup>1</sup>The "Mail", 4-10-41.

graphic elements that go to make up a setting may be as deceptive as thorough-going change.

A dummy line provides the best solution to the railway line and dummy bridges might be erected at strategic points. Roads are difficult to conceal over long stretches and dummies, as already suggested, should be made to divert attention.

It is reported that after years of experiment, a New York inventor has perfected what he believes is the most satisfactory anti-aircraft camouflage for highways, also for air ports, bridges and other structures.

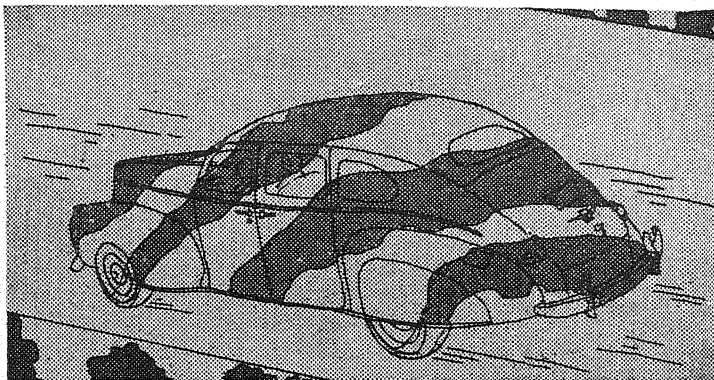
His invention consists of a coloured paving substance, similar to asphalt, which blends road or building surface with the surrounding colour scheme. Dark greens, greys and browns are the chief colour combinations. The material is said to be cheap to produce, long-lasting in effect, and easy to apply.<sup>1</sup>

Strands of rope and straw might be used to cover canals leading into important objectives. But unless done over fairly long distances, the airmen would detect the position. A harbour is located by the large number of buildings, by the roads and rail leading to it and by the piers and the jetty. Toning down and concealing the important units by netting and extending the ground pattern by disruptive painting, alone are practical. It is idle to merge the entire area into the sea and finances may not permit the expensive Hamburg experiment. The railway lines and the roads should be camouflaged if not diverted, and a dummy harbour should be conspicuously shown at a safe distance to mislead the enemy.

Motor vehicles have also been subjected to machine-gunning and measures are taken to camouflage them. In Great Britain all army and other service vehicles are painted in a dull jazz pattern to render them less visible from the air. Power is given to the authorities for prohibiting the use of vehicles on roads unless camouflage measures are adopted to diminish visibility. The Ministry of Transport has recommended to owners to repaint their vehicles to make them less conspicuous by using dark neutral shades but not grey and khaki which are generally adopted for service vehicles. The jazz system is also not to be used. In normal

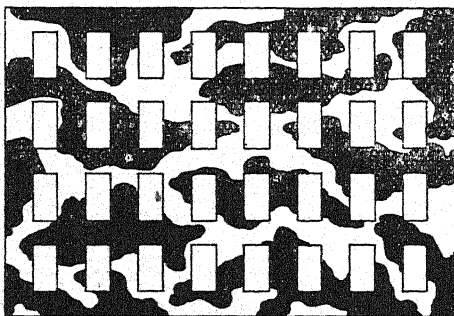
<sup>1</sup>The "Hindu", 2-11-41.

circumstances in daylight, main roads are clearly visible from a height of 2,000 feet. It is easy for dive bombers to machine-gun



A Camouflaged Motor Car

motor vehicles. The best method for camouflaging vehicles is to use a variegated pattern of black, green and brown. Difficulty arises since different treatment is required for the town and the country. For this reason, there has been developed in Great Britain a system of camouflaging a vehicle differently in the two parts.



A method of Camouflaging open car parks by disruptive painting of the ground advocated by American experts

If it should become necessary to hide civilian vehicles from the kind of concentrated attack on road and personnel that might be expected to precede an invasion effort, then for such vehicles as must remain in service U.S.A. experts feel that countershading and patterns may be desirable. Counter-

shading is accomplished by lightening the sides of bodies in comparison with their uppermost faces. Patterns in general, should not present sharp angular contrasts. For country landscapes, they may well consist of alteration of black with mudbrown patches.

on a lusterless olive drab base. No such recommendation should be followed blindly however, for, deserts, plains, snow-covered regions and many other specific environments will require individual study.<sup>1</sup>

Regarding car parks a method of disruptive painting of the ground advocated in U. S. A., is illustrated in page 501. For vehicle harbours to be improvised quickly on the field, a grove of trees should be selected. If necessary some of the trees and lower branches should be cut off to facilitate easy and quick movement of vehicles. The gaps, in between trees, should be covered by spreading camouflage netting. Garnished netting should also be hung up sloping all round, to prevent viewing through and suitable provision should be made for access and exit of cars. Landscape architects in U. S. A., recommend the planting of giant willows and pines in open car parks to shade and protect the cars.

For protection of water craft against aerial observation from a high angle no successful form of concealment has been reported. At anchor, large vessels may be masked to look like smaller ones, or a group of small ones may be masked to look like a larger one ; or either may be masked to look like harbour works. In motion, vessels with a shore line in the background may be successfully treated according to the same principles as vehicles. On the open water, if viewed from a low angle, paints having deep sea or sky tones are effective. The bold dazzle stripes of 1918 are now considered of questionable value although still in use for special purposes. Conclusive experimental results are not available.<sup>1</sup>

*Water-tanks and Standpipes:* The problem of how best to camouflage overhead water tanks and standpipes has been given careful thought by the water-works department at Reading, Pa. As a result of the studies the tops of the standpipes in Reading have now been painted a neutral earth brown colour and the identifying signs normally visible from airplanes have been painted out. The Reading water department was studying this problem even prior to the entry of the United States Army to the effect that experience in England had proved water tanks and standpipes not to be bombing targets. Consequently they used the usual aluminium colour. However upon the entry of the United States into the war, the city council on its own initiative repainted the tanks to eliminate their possible use as landmarks.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Vide "Protective Concealment", p. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Vide The American City, Nov. 1942, p. 91.

**WATER.**—Camouflage of water is a difficult problem, and the greater the extent, the more difficult it is to conceal successfully. Attempt should be made since large sheets of water serve as conspicuous landmarks. The tone of the surface varies with the view of the observer, the position of the sun and clouds. Aluminium sheets could be used with advantage, to create the illusion of an altered course to flowing water. Nets might be suspended along each bank to help to narrow a river and alter its shape and this could be made more effective by anchoring or tying rafts across the river with bushes, trees, etc. thrown over them.

Still water could be more effectively tackled. Nets, plain or garnished, could be used to alter the shape. Small patches could be completely concealed by an overhead cover of nets. Rafts covered with chittai toned down to merge with the surrounding landscape, liberally scattered over with muttee, creepers, plants, etc. could be floated where the area is large. Plants, small trees and bushes that float on surface might be encouraged as also water weeds. Drainage might be attempted wherever possible. Any method attempted for concealing water should pay heed to changing weather conditions.

In treating water we should bear in mind its extreme variability. Its surface alters with every shower which feeds it, every change in the sky it reflects, every variation in the breezes which touch its surface, every stage in the changing season and every hour of rotating day and night, so that it may be said with perfect truth, that never do we see it under the same conditions twice and never is its surface the same.<sup>1</sup>

There are several tricks-of-the-trade which merit brief note. When imitating buildings of simple design, decoys may be merely painted on the ground and outlined on the shady sides with vertical panels or sheets to cast shadows. Railroad tracks may be at least partially camouflaged by sowing weeds and vines along the green-painted ties and tracks. Roads and railroad sidings leading to camouflaged buildings may be given an innocent appearance by extending them for a considerable distance beyond the site. Railroad yards will be less obvious if planted with trees, if crossed by fake concrete streets and if steam locomotives are replaced with electric or diesel engines. Air fields will be less prominent if located in the country where their turf runway (suitable for all but the heaviest planes) blend with surrounding fields and are criss-crossed with painted hedges. Finally, if the camouflage of a project proves

<sup>1</sup> Vide V. V. Vadnerker, "Town Planning in General", p. 32.

ineffective and it is peppered by near misses, false fires may be lighted to convince the bombardier that he has accomplished his mission. They may be touched off in pans atop the target itself or a safe distance to one side as a decoy for any bombers that may follow up the initial attack. Protective concealment is a science embracing the fields of design, construction, art and engineering. And, even the comparatively simple first and second stages of camouflage may not be effectively accomplished without expert advice. "No camouflage at all may often be safer than camouflage ill conceived." Because where the aerial observer detects the evidences of camouflage he recognises that they make a vital objective and is much more likely to concentrate on it.<sup>1</sup>

Very ingenious and efficient measures are necessary since photography has developed to a great extent. Photographs taken in darkness now show details as clearly as in daylight. Infra-red photographs unmask the cleverest camouflage. The greatest progress, however, has been made in high altitude reconnaissance photography. A spherical plate camera is capable of recording the whole of Berlin in one exposure. It could photograph the whole of a 400 square mile area from 30,000 feet. A 40 in. telephoto lens could define railroad sleepers at 30,000 ft.<sup>2</sup>

### General Procedure

Even for simple painted camouflage, the projected solution should be studied on paper. More deliberate efforts will require the study of plans and elevations of the object (with rough outside dimensions specified), maps and aerial photographs of the area.

Before camouflage is begun, it should be decided (on the basis of need, cost and probable success) through how many of four stages the operation should be carried. "Toning down" the first stage usually involves only the use of dull paint to suppress bright colours and sharp contrasts. "Second Stage" concealment, includes, in addition to toning down, the creation of patterns to resemble the characteristic patterns of the vicinity. More deliberate, the third stage, attempts to conceal the outline of buildings, *viz.*, screening, the introduction of false forms and the roughening of smooth textures. In its fourth and final stage, camouflage technique may be carried to the point where the object is totally concealed by exact duplication of surrounding tones and patterns, etc. This may call for the building of false roofs, decoy buildings and other

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Civilian Defence, June 1942, p. 10.

<sup>2</sup> According to Col. Goddard: *The Hindu*, 28-2-43.

complex construction, elaborate planting and even burial of the project. Only a target of extreme importance would justify the cost of this all-out camouflage.

Being the quickest and easiest, toning down is recommended as the first stage in dealing with the conspicuousness of objectives. The general impression of a locality as seen from the air will be a chequered pattern of houses, back-gardens, streets and a few open spaces. The colours represented will be the red, white or brown of roofs, the green of grass or gardens, the brown of earth, the grey of roads, and the black of shadows. The prevailing tones will be dark, unless there happens to be a new building estate. The first steps to be taken are:—

1. Darken all light surfaces, roofs and walls, to conform to the prevailing tone of the neighbourhood.
2. Treat all roof lights to prevent shine.
3. Darken all light concrete roads.

Before a large complex camouflage problem is undertaken, complete photographic reconnaissance should be made from the air to produce at least one mosaic from  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles up, different oblique shots taken at 3,000 ft. up and 1 mile away, two vertical stereographic pictures from 3,000 ft. one in colour. Air photographs are of two kinds, oblique and vertical. Oblique photos show a view as when viewed from a high hill, while vertical photos are practical pictorial maps, where shadows are shown up. Photographs so taken will assist in the subsequent development of rendered drawings and scale models of the proposed camouflage. To permit co-ordination and control of the various defensive measures being taken in a given area, these preliminary studies should be reviewed by appropriate civil or military authorities before working drawings or actual camouflage is begun.

Air observation of an objective is the fundamental requisite for successfully camouflaging it. Both for devising a scheme for adoption and for testing its effectiveness after application, aerial reconnaissance of the objective is essential. Although the technique to be adopted depends upon the objective and local conditions, the following procedure is advisable.

1. Examination of aerial photographs of the region and the objective, study of site and lay-out plans, ground photographs, etc. which are available.
2. Reconnaissance flight over the site and the surrounding country.



3. Ground reconnaissance of the site and buildings, examination of vital plants, replaceable and rest non-replaceable, and their location,<sup>1</sup> ground photographs of key buildings.

4. Ground reconnaissance of the surrounding area.

5. Preparation of lay-out plans; sections and elevations of buildings. Zoning of the objects and the zoning of the respective units of the objective in the order of importance.

6. Analysis of data.

7. Air photographs and views.

8. Preparation of complete camouflage report including lay-out plans, etc.

9. Preparation of model, if necessary.

10. Application of the scheme to the model.

11. Execution of camouflage scheme to the objective.

12. Record all activities and efforts connected with the scheme.

13. Air reconnaissance during and after execution for verification.

14. Treat the scheme as a whole and not in bits.

The different stages of work are :—

Preliminary Scheme—Air Reconnaissance—Ground reconnaissance—Camouflage report with approximate estimate—Approval and sanction.

Detailed Scheme—Photographs, coloured and ordinary, aerial and ground—Model, application of camouflage measures—Air Reconnaissance, before, during and after camouflage is applied—Detailed estimate and specification—Approval and sanction.

This would involve ground and air reconnaissance; zoning of objects and landmarks and listing each unit of the objective in their order of importance; preparation of preliminary report, including an approximate estimate of the cost of the entire objective and the value of its contents; a general description of the contents is also necessary. A model should then be made and the camouflage scheme should be applied to it. Work should be done on a unit of the whole scheme to enable a more accurate and detailed estimate. Preliminary and even final estimates cannot be very accurate in camouflage schemes and a reasonable and good percentage for contingency must be allowed, since camouflage schemes may sometimes have to be altered in the course of application. The

<sup>1</sup> The cost and value of the entire objective including its contents should also be ascertained to determine the proportion, which expenditure on camouflage bears to the cost of the objective.

final report should then be prepared and approved before the scheme is carried out. Ground and air photographs should form part of the preliminary and final reports. Air photographs preferably in colour would be of great value.

Successful camouflage should be attempted at 5,000 feet. Frequent air observations of the camouflaged objective should be made to note the effectiveness of the measures under the changing conditions in tropical climates. Camouflage to be successful needs considerable attention not merely during the application of measures, but also upon their maintenance, after application.

A camoufleur, before he attempts any scheme, should first do ground and air reconnaissance and survey the objects and their landmarks, including the surrounding areas in further detail to enable him to zone landmarks and objects which need serious consideration for camouflaging purposes. He should decide then which area could be regional and which one could be individual only. In both cases landmarks are of great importance. Where a camoufleur thinks that toning down of non-vital buildings is desired because of their conspicuousness due to their colour, which may give clue to the enemy, they should be toned down to merge with the surrounding colour so as to make them less conspicuous.

A model helps to determine the effectiveness of a scheme at a very low cost and is of great value when many similar objectives need treatment. It should, however, constitute an exact replica of the original, so that shadows can be easily plotted out and mathematical calculations of areas etc. worked out accurately. Models are recommended for small pumping stations, small and large factories, depots, arsenals, etc. pill-boxes, gun-emplacements, coast defences, aerodromes, water cooling towers, hangars, etc. Any material suitable can be used for the construction of models. A scale of 1/200 is recommended, but it should depend upon the time available, proficiency of craftsmen, heights from which models may be viewed and the cost.  $\frac{1}{8}$ -inch to one foot scale is also suitable for models. Accuracy in scale models is of the greatest importance and ground pattern must be included in the model. An observation tower may be erected if a suitable place to view the model from above is not available, the height depending on the scale of the model constructed. Installations are generally camouflaged to deceive the high level bomber. Successful camouflage should, therefore, be adopted at 5,000 feet. To construct a model, the following are essential.

1. Low altitude photos—500 to 1,000 feet.
2. Air photos at 3,000 feet and above.
3. Personal reconnaissance of the objective.
4. Lay-out plans, plans, elevations and cross-sections.
5. Contour plans or maps.

Photo checks should be carried out at every stage in the construction. Check, tone with camera and get the right colour effect to deceive the camera. Good camouflage should also deceive the observer's eye. A definite programme is required to effect quick operations. Stated in order of importance, they are

1. determining the scale and the preparation of working plans,
2. the making of the platform,
3. gridding—marking out,
4. the cement base, and
5. the ground pattern.

The camouflage pattern should be experimented on the model and checked by photographs and by observation from appropriate height. A view in the open from a roof or observation tower so as to get the appropriate relative height and distance is desirable, but in its absence, it could be checked in a "sun laboratory" which is a dark room containing a turn-table and an artificial "sun"—a powerful lamp which could be swung into any desired position.

Since objects appear different when they are viewed "up sun" or "down sun", aerial photographs from the four sides are necessary as well as reconnaissance, when the shadows are longest—morning and evening. The cooling tower disruption executed by the late Oliver Bernard was the result of using scale models, first attempted by him.

Since aerial reconnaissance and interpretation of aerial views and shadows form the essentials of successful camouflage, one who has experiences of flying and air photography is considered essential to make a successful camouflleur. Basically, of course, everybody who has pretensions to experience in art, architecture and natural history can be considered a potential camouflleur, as Myerscough Walker observes. A pure artist may know a great deal about colour and the representation of realism but he knows nothing of natural history nor ability to visualise a building unless presented with a scale model. Neither can he prepare drawings that can be handed to others for structural alterations. The architect knows

building and is conversant with the fundamentals of colour as applied to structures but is deficient in ideas of natural camouflage. The naturalist knows the theory of camouflage from natural history but is unable to draw technically or visualise an unbuilt structure. A combination of all these faculties and proper training are necessary. A knowledge of building construction and materials is absolutely essential for the static camoufleur.

The case of an architect has been strongly made out by Col. Chesney based upon his experience as a camoufleur with the B.E.F. in France during the last war. Since camouflage extends far beyond the sphere of paints and leads to structural alterations, an architect is considered suitable for effective schemes of concealment, both by his training and outlook.

### Materials

Various kinds of materials are required for camouflage,

1. to change the appearance of the surface of the objective, *e.g.*, paints, etc.
2. to conceal a feature or surface, *e.g.*, netting.
3. to give texture to concealing and screening materials, *e.g.*, coir, bushes, etc.
4. to distort the shape, by excrescences such as asbestos cement sheets.
5. to distort aerial view by such things as trees, plants, shrubs, creeper, etc.

It is essential to possess first-hand knowledge of the light and colour of the landscape in which the objective to be camouflaged is situated, to arrive at the proper scheme that should be adopted.

It is equally essential that the colour chosen has the correct tone and texture.

The fact that it is the reflection of light which makes the object conspicuous, lends the tone greater importance, in camouflage schemes. Any coloured surface possesses three qualities, colour, tone and texture. Colour bears its usual meaning like red, green, etc. The tone depends upon the amount of light reflected by the coloured surface and is expressed in such terms as light red, deep red, light green, dark green, etc. The tone is largely determined by the texture which is the quality of the surface of the painted area

such as matt or glossy. The amount of light reflected to the eye depends upon the quality of the surface or the paint. A matt surface scatters the light which falls on it in all directions. A glossy surface behaves according to the laws of specular reflection just as a mirror. At low angles of vision, a highly reflecting paint or glossy surface will reflect so much of sun's rays that it will be impossible to discover the colour that has been applied.

What really matters is therefore the tone and the texture. Colour tends to disappear in sunlight. It tends to turn to grey or disappear when seen from a distance due to atmospheric haze. It is the tone which is therefore vital for producing contrast. But the tone will not be appreciated if the surface reflects much light. Reflection completely destroys the effect of colour and tone. A glossy or smooth surface is therefore unsuitable. If the shine in the light of the sun should be avoided, the paint used should produce texture which would help to diffuse light in all directions more or less evenly. The amount of diffusion depends upon the texture of the surface. The more broken the surface and bigger the lumps, the greater will be the shadow content. Texture is therefore of greater importance than colour. A few tones sufficiently matt would produce effective contrast. But colours of the same tone would blend and neutralise each other. Three to five contrasting tones may be essential, and would suffice since subtle gradations will be lost to view from the air.

Very few actual colours are therefore required, the number depending upon the local landscape. Select fewest possible colours after a careful study of the predominant colours in the locality to which camouflage treatment has to be applied. Browns, greys, buffs and greens are colours found in nature and are a sound basis for camouflage colours. The distant view should be considered in selecting the colour, for the green of a tree looked at from 50 feet will turn to a dark grey green when seen from the air. Unless the colour harmonises with the surroundings, the object would be conspicuous. A dark green colour scheme is unsuitable in the middle of a desert; similarly a light buff treatment for roofs in a woody area. Large samples should be applied on the actual surface to be treated and examined, for colour in a small sample card or panel looks much lighter than when applied on a large surface on the exterior. Allowance should be made for fading and for the overlay of dust after application.

It is advisable to make colours darker than what is actually required. They must be fast and resisting the effect of sunshine. Colours fade when exposed to the sun and the brighter they are, the quicker they fade. This fading will affect the tone and the relation which one tone bears to another in the colour scheme adopted, thus upsetting our calculations and the efficacy of the patterns. Further, the colour applied to the slope of a roof towards the sun should be slightly darker than the side away from the sun to obtain uniform tone.

A chief difficulty in choosing a paint is that a sufficiently matt paint may not be durable. Fundamentally, a paint consists of a pigment, a medium to bind the pigment to the surface and a thinner to enable the paint to be spread. Mattness is produced by increasing the proportion of pigment and consequently reducing the proportion of binder. The result is reduction of durability and elasticity. Paints are classified into (1) oil paints, (2) oil-bound water paints, (3) bituminous paints, (4) silicate paints, and (5) cement paints.

Number (1) Oil paint is glossy when new and increased pigmentation to obtain mattness will affect durability. Number (2) Oil-bound water paints are matt, cheap and have good covering capacity, but are less durable than white paints. They are suitable for many camouflage purposes. Number (3) Bituminous paints are dull in colour but cover most of the range required in camouflage. Number (4) Silicate paints are best suited for porous surfaces and stand weather. Number (5) Cement paints are as silicate paints but colour may fade.

Materials to be covered by camouflage paints are generally corrugated iron, steel, asbestos cement, slates, stucco, concrete, brick, concrete areas and roads, asphalt and glass. Oil and bituminous paints are the most durable for corrugated iron and steel and asbestos cement roofs; a priming coat to resist alkalinity is essential before using oil-bound paint. Oil-bound water paints may also be used. Bituminous paint can be used without the priming coat. For slates, stucco, concrete or brick walls, all the above paints are suitable, but an alkali-resisting primer may be required if an oil paint is used on concrete. Only a bituminous paint should be used on asphalt. There is no known method of colouring existing concrete roads permanently, as the wear and tear due to traffic

may necessitate frequent renewal. In such circumstances, the most suitable paint is the one which is cheap, easy to apply and proof against adverse weather, occurring shortly after application. Bituminous emulsions fulfil these conditions, although all the other types of paints can be used.

For glass surfaces, these paints will obstruct light. Where light cannot be totally prevented, the glass pane should be covered with clear varnish and then spread lightly with granite or similar dust of size which will pass 20 mesh to prevent the shine from the glass used for north-lights or sky lights. When carefully done, shine can be effectively eliminated without cutting off more than 50 per cent. of light. Coloured particles could be used if roof patterns should be carried over them.

To produce a very good matt surface, a paint in which gritty particle have been incorporated during manufacture should be selected. The surface it produces will have an excellent texture and will be truly matt. They are not however durable. Coloured particles sprayed on to a coat of varnish or coloured emulsion also produce an excellent texture, but durability depends on the quality of the varnish used. Wherever possible, local grit such as breeze or brick dust can be scattered over a surface previously treated with a binder such as bitumen. Size of the particles should not exceed  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch and require a coat of paint over them in order to secure good adhesion.

Ordinary flat paints are not sufficiently matt to overcome reflection at low angles of vision. It is necessary to add something to roughen the surface. To conform to the landscape prevailing in India, bajri well ground or earth, can be mixed, taking care that the binding medium will prevent their flaking off when dry. Milk is considered effective to prevent flaking and could be used as a thinner white earth is mixed.

Manufacturers in United States claim to have developed a series of camouflage paints which defy detection. The O'Brien Varnish Company of South Bend, Indiana, have published an interesting "Paints for Victory" booklet giving Federal Specifications and actual colour samples of paints for camouflage purposes, and another company have developed a series of camouflage paints which they claim defy detection by infra-red photography.

Paint alone is called for in "first stage" concealment. To be suitable for this purpose, paint should be cheap, easy to apply, do the job with one coat and produce a lustreless finish. While a wide range of colours may be necessary for certain projects, the darker shades, greens, browns, greys and olive drab, will most effectively reduce visibility. Durability of the vehicle, if not the pigment, is of secondary importance, for camouflage must be altered in line with seasonal changes in the natural surroundings.

The lustreless olive drab colour on all army equipment is a compromise or "average" colour for year round use. Besides its use in the toning down of bright areas and contrasting surfaces, paint may be used to duplicate local natural patterns on surfaces to be concealed. These may be trees, hedges, ploughed furrows, streets, house tops, etc. for bad and good examples. Unfortunately painted vegetation will not fool enemy aerial photographers if they use an infra-red film. Thus, on infra-red photograph real trees appear almost white while painted ones show up black. Green leaves contain chlorophyl, green paint does not.

Adhesives and Granules are recommended for camouflaging concrete surfaces subject to wear, particularly roads and air port runways. The army suggests an asphalt or bituminous emulsion covered while wet with chopped scrap rubber, dyed sawdust, coloured slate granules or asphalt-chips. Easy on rubber tyres such surfaces are light-absorbing and are subject to protective colouring. They might well be used in the camouflage of roofs as well as runways. Sand granules are unsatisfactory; a surface of these small particles reflects considerable light.

Camouflage paints both oil-bound and washable, as well as water paints are manufactured and supplied in different shades. Flat, oil, gritty or non-gritty, and extra oil-bound distemper type, gritty or non-gritty, for all types of surfaces are offered by manufacturers as suitable for spray or brush application. If made from guaranteed light-fast pigments and absolutely non-reflecting, the finish may remain unaffected by wet weather. Anti-reflection finishes for glass roofs or windows, are also offered in the market.

The selection of colours—colours to be of lasting quality, unequal for hiding power, washable, non-tarnishable, heat and weather resisting—paints selected must flow well, look well, cover well, and wear well and they must be quick and easy to apply, of rapid drying and reasonable effectiveness and durability.



Precautions to be taken in choosing colours are that there will be no variation in colour supplied. They should have good storage properties and the place of storage should be well ventilated and dry. There will be no fear of chipping and troublesome discolouration, crumbling and flaking. The material must be efficient and reliable. If so selected they would cut the time and trouble of mixing—a distinct economic advantage, especially on large areas. The material must have capacity for recoatability and washability. There should be elasticity and grip in paints. Materials like G. I. Sheets and Asbestos roofs and walls must be provided with prime coat suitable to their respective qualities.

Specially designed equipment is available for applying colour to surfaces for camouflage purposes including gritty, non-reflective paints, A. R. P. window black and anti-splinter medium as well as for the preservative treatment of sandbags.

For greatest coverage in shortest time, a portable displacement sprayer is advisable. Aerograph Spray Painting Equipment provides a quick and efficient means for applying colour to surfaces. The B. E. N. Patents Ltd. have in their possession a machine extremely portable, entirely self-contained, with petrol engine-driven compressor, a large paint container and long reach spray guns. The 'Aerospray' is another variety of portable spray painting plant as also the Volspray Equipment which has special guns for spraying the sanded paints and dry camouflage sand recommended for use.

Excellent flat paints, very suitable for application to all types of glass surfaces, simple to apply and quick to dry, are sold in Great Britain. White road marking paints are also on the market.

Complementary lacquers used for windows and electric bulbs would let natural lighting during the day, but will not allow artificial light to penetrate out at night. They are made in two colours, blue and orange-yellow or amber. Windows are to be painted with blue lacquer and electric bulbs with orange-yellow lacquer. Blue translucent paint for windows and amber translucent paint for electric light bulbs are also applied. Since glass panes are either removed or protected for fear of blast these treatments have largely been given up in the United Kingdom.

Various materials required for camouflage purposes have been standardised for use in Military works. Since in many cases specifications alone cannot ensure that the articles are satisfactory,

standards should be produced so that the correct type of materials could be obtained. Materials to be used in any camouflage scheme should be decided on the type, place, and under varying atmospheric conditions. Effectiveness of any scheme of camouflage depends upon the materials used. At the present time there are no special camouflage materials in India which have been developed for the purpose, except special camouflage paints, nets and scrim. India possesses a great many indigenous materials which are suitable for development for camouflage purposes. Scientific Research Boards and Laboratories regionally placed must be established and worked under competent skilled research workers. This would help towards improvement of existing products and formulation of new materials to keep pace with the varying demands and requirements. They must be subjected to careful tests for immediate and subsequent vigorous conditions of the tropical sweltering sunshine, cool and hot and rainy weather. The availability and economy of materials both during war and in peacetime should be investigated. For during war, shortages, priorities and outright bans on the supplies and equipment he needs would tax the camoufleur's ingenuity and limit his methods.

India has to realise the necessity for camouflage. Germany erects and demolishes strategic landmarks overnight and Russia hides whole armies. Camouflage is a battle of wits and not a dull building job. It calls for the most careful exercising of the brains. The art of camouflage is not a machine-made product. A camoufleur must have imagination and train of thought, undisturbed power to visualise, and ability to conceive the whole scheme in its proper perspective. All these if travelled properly in the right direction and in their proper angles of perspective are almost bound to success. Each object to be camouflaged will have to be dealt with independently on its own merit with due regard to its ground pattern which may probably vary in each case. A factory considered vital in Singapore or a power station concealed which caters for million lives in a city, are worth all labour and pains. It is a vital job which India needs badly.

### Conclusion

A most elaborate camouflage scheme may not secure safety if the location of the building is disregarded. Treatment of objectives without regard to the landmarks and neighbouring

structures cannot be as effective as when the different units in an area are treated as parts of one scheme and the arresting features of the landscape toned down.

Co-ordination between the different authorities responsible for the execution of camouflage measures is therefore essential to produce efficient regional treatment. Since military objectives may be entrusted to army camouflage units and civil structures to civilian departments and the objectives may all be scattered in one region, there must be close co-ordination between the civil and military camouflage officers. Co-ordination is also essential between the different civil camouflage officers as well as between the camouflage officers and the owners or occupiers of the objectives to be treated to expedite the work and to secure maximum effectiveness.

A regional treatment should take into consideration the following factors :—

1. Zones surrounding vital factories.
2. Zones including landmarks to vital factories.
3. Zones containing vital essential services such as water-supplies, electricity key points, headquarters, etc.
4. Landmarks to navigation.

Landmarks reveal the position of objectives close by. When British heavy bombers raided Milan on December 18, 1940, the Pirelli Works, which held large stocks of rubber and well known for the manufacture of motor stores, went ablaze. The Air Ministry News Service explaining the reason pointed out that they are peculiarly vulnerable to air attacks, since they lie between two conspicuous railway systems and can be recognised with comparative ease. Landmarks<sup>1</sup> which need our attention may be factories, cooling towers, barracks or similar large structures, rivers and canals, harbours, chimneys, clock towers and roads and railway systems.

<sup>1</sup> This category includes such difficult camouflage subjects as great bridges, grain elevators, gas holders, canals, skyscrapers, blast furnaces, and capitol buildings. Three types of solutions have been suggested for such problems. Smoke or fog is one of these. Another is the use of decoys in conjunction with the disguise of prominent reference points. The third type of solution in certain cases only is the use of patterns, the reduction of brightness, and false formwork just as in the normal camouflage solution. Disruptive patterns applied to an actual gas holder achieves only limited disguise or reduction of visibility. Shadows remain definitive. (*Vide Protective Concealment*, p. 26.)

The importance of landmarks cannot be overemphasized; they are not only airplane signposts but, if within one or two miles of the target, they may also be used as direct reference points with the aid of which modern bomb sights will permit the registering of a direct hit upon a completely camouflaged objective. Observation of both landmarks and targets from the air is facilitated by their heavy shadows which accentuate these forms. Therefore, while any degree of camouflage which reduces the visibility of an objective may be worthwhile, complete camouflage must take all five of these recognition factors into account. Least important is colour, for at great altitudes small differences in colour are lost to sight. In the consideration of new buildings, many of which should now be planned and designed for complete concealment, additional factors must be considered. Thus, if feasible, the new project should be situated remote from prominent landmarks and preferably, in a rural area where innocence is easy to fake, where low land-costs permit dispersion of the buildings and where, if the plant is discovered by enemy airmen, bomb misses will do but little damage. Dispersion facilitates camouflage and reduces the effect of bombardment.

With but few exceptions, no two landmarks or targets appear the same from the air. Each is a camouflage problem in itself, but may have some common characteristics.

The Nazis did some extensive camouflage work in Holland to hide their air fields from British attack, something difficult to do because the canal system amounted practically to direction signs. So the Nazis painted in some false canals to mislead the R.A.F. All went well till winter came. Then the real canals froze up but the phoney ones remained beautifully clear.<sup>1</sup> Recently in the Soviet Triple raid on Danzig, Koenigsberg and Tilsit carried out during August 1942 the flying weather was fairly good—dark night with few clouds. The Soviet bombers crossing the frontline at a great height reached their objectives after their long flight without difficulty following rail-roads and rivers.

A highway intersection in brilliant white concrete, serves as a handy reference point for the bomber on its way to more important targets. And if strategic enough it might itself be bombed to disrupt traffic.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Civilian Defence, June, 1942, p. 43.

A long river or a broad channel is equally a dangerous pointer. Night raiders in Zeppelins over England during the last war were easily guided by the Thames to the position of London. The phosphorescence of waves reveal the position of harbours however perfectly blacked out at night. The glow or phosphorescence of the sea is caused mainly by millions of microscopic marine animals. They emit light when oxygen is dissolved in the water, as by stirring or by the breaking of the waves. It contains those colours that convey a strong impression of light to our eye such as, in particular, yellow and green. Measures have not yet been devised to eliminate this phenomena.

Further it is difficult to maintain the correct colour, tone and texture of paints used in camouflaging objectives, throughout the year. In monsoon months a shower would make the paints glisten. Every colour, if wet, is twice as brilliant as it is, when dry. As soon as objects are covered by a thin film of water, their surface becomes smoother, they no longer scatter white light on all sides, and therefore, their own colour predominates and becomes more saturated. Rain alters the colour of the ground altogether. Street cobbles reflect more strongly the more steeply our gaze falls on them. Not only asphalt, but also very uneven paved roads, can reflect splendidly at large angles. The colours of roads, of sand, soil and gravel grow darker and warmer. A pool of water on an asphalt road reveals beautiful shades of colour. Great care should therefore be exercised in the choice of camouflage paints.

Every community launching such a project needs first of all, informed and concentrated leadership. Camouflaging is not something that can be undertaken individually by different organizations, industrial plants or other agencies. It must be operated on a community scale, for it would be worthless to camouflage an industrial plant in one block and leave a skyscraper in the next block unconcealed.

The importance of location is, therefore, stressed for all future erections of buildings etc. in the interest of safety. Since the policy of the Government of India is towards industrialisation a Siting Board should be established so that suitable sites could be selected for the location of new and growing industries. This will encourage building industries in healthy localities and if they are properly sited they will minimise the expenses of A.R.P. and camouflage

measures. This will make our centres of production, safe in times of peace and war. Space and vegetation around an objective are very helpful to concert effective camouflage measures, and wise spacing of all important buildings and objectives is, therefore, necessary to assure chances of escape. Flying at a tremendous height, a bombing machine is likely to release bombs haphazardly over an area in which the objectives are known to exist. The greater the proportion of unbuilt to built-up areas the more are the chances to escape direct hits. If the objectives were in open country and enemy planes happen to be passing over that country, it is certain that, without camouflage, they would descend low enough to attempt a direct hit and would probably succeed. In such circumstances, camouflage would be worthwhile and very effective.

The most effective camouflage material is the one which most closely duplicates the native surroundings in every respect. Therefore it is advisable to use growing plants or trees whenever the situation and the time available permit.

Trees are most effectively used in their natural condition and environment. They should be planted in irregular patterns simulating natural origin and so located as to mask regular slopes and the edges of nets and to break regular shadows cast by structural elements.

It may be impossible to utilize permanently planted or naturally growing trees in certain locations because of certain functions of the installations. In such circumstances the effectiveness of the camouflage treatment may be improved by using transportable trees. Artificial trees may sometimes be used to advantage.

Large non-flowering bushes will be very helpful in performing the same functions outlined for trees. They are useful where a forest texture is to be copied.

Where the height of the camouflage must be reduced to a foot or two, creeping vines are useful. They can be grown on wires strung over concrete parapets or grown along slopes to break up the regularities of changes in tone. They can be grown on nets as a natural garnishing and also on the structural skeletons to form artificial trees.

Excavated or graded earths are conspicuous from the air unless simulated in a completely denuded region. Grasses and undergrowth, in general, should be allowed to flourish without restraint except where the intent is to blend into adjacent harmless environment such as a golf course or parked area. Irregular growth is likely to be more adoptable than trimmed growth to subsequent modification for a specific concealment plan.

Recently in U.S.A., special fertilizers have been used to cause changes in grass texture and color. These changes can be effected in rows or in field patterns to produce various imitations including dark shadows. Special varieties of grasses can be sown with the same purpose.<sup>1</sup>

Since our targets need protection not only from the bombardier's direct observation but from aerial photography as well, and since the infra red film shows up clearly a great deal more than is visible to the human eye and makes artificial nets and foliage appear very different from real plant growth, the best possible effects can be produced only by transplanting real trees, shrubs and vines to screen the target.<sup>2</sup>

Recent American opinion favours therefore "camouflage planting" to screen roads and parking spaces and vital objectives. A canopy of giant willows or an ever green flat top of pines has been suggested to shade and protect parked cars. Tall pines planted close to buildings help to break up the tell-tale shadows. Large trees can now be transplanted with the aid of men experienced in the line, in consultation with landscape architects. Whether bombs fall or not intelligent tree planting for camouflage will produce permanent community assets.

Our accepted methods of architectural grandeur is not conducive to effective camouflage treatment. Tall clock towers, water towers,

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Protective Concealment, p. 62.

Authorities in India have already realised the value of trees for effective camouflage treatment. The Government of Madras have drawn public attention to this question in a Press Note.

<sup>2</sup> Marjorie Sewell, "Camouflage Planting", *The American City*, April 1943, pp. 52-54.

Whitewashing adds to conspicuousness of objectives. All important structures should by colour wash be toned down within the surrounding tone as indicated by a communique issued by the Government of Madras.

minarets and very prominent skyline features considered necessary to add grandeur to structures are not amenable to camouflage treatment. Smoke, suggested by some to envelop them, has been criticised by the opposite school, who point out that smoke areas would invite the special attention of the bombers ; moreover, weather conditions might make successful enveloping impracticable. It is, therefore, suggested to leave out all objects rising above a large factory or building, for it is useless to attempt to camouflage them. "Leave these objects standing and camouflage the rest of the factory, so that from the air one would see a hay-stack, water tower and a clock tower, but the vast area of the factory surrounding these objects would not be related to them."

Many buildings by their design and construction cannot be concealed easily. Camouflage in civil defence will become more successful if in the future the architect, the builder, the artist and the naturalist combined and carried out research, thoroughly on all possible forms of concealment. Considering the fact that the aeroplane, motor car, etc. have improved in efficiency as also in pattern, building design could improve combining æsthetics as well as security.

Architectural æsthetics directed towards security is bound to give us buildings and structures pleasing and at the same time secure.

Aerial warfare requires to disguise our essential services which promote war effort, landmarks which guide the enemy in his efforts of bombing and others which help to concentrate on targets easily pickable.

Camouflage is a new science of concealment created by the air-war. Our cities are confronted with strange new problems of large scale concealment for which our organization is unprepared to cope immediately with such vast and technical undertaking of limitless thought and imagination, availability of local materials on a large scale and good personnel efficient and sufficient to rapidly plan and operate. Substantial funds, facilities for research and operation as well as freedom and powers to effect camouflage quickly are necessary in the interest of security.



## OBSCURATION OF LIGHT

If camouflage is adopted to reduce chances of attack during day, drastic lighting restrictions are attempted with the intention of reducing the risk of destruction at night. A night raid is particularly disastrous and difficult to resist and lights are useful pointers to the night bombers. Black-out as it is usually styled came into vogue even in the last War when Zeppelins began to raid London.

The aim is to secure that as far as is practicable, hostile air-craft passing over the country at night would see no light which might serve to guide them to a particular objective or assist them to determine their position.<sup>1</sup> The restriction accordingly impose general darkening as a permanent condition from the outbreak of war. Drastic lighting restrictions now form an important feature of the precautionary measures taken as a form of security against air attacks.

They cover,

1. The masking of all windows and skylights and doors at night, of all occupied premises to prevent light inside from being visible from outside, and the prohibition of external light.
2. The prohibition of all illuminated advertisements and signs except those for A.R.P. purposes.
3. The screening of all windows and skylights from factory buildings with dark blinds or paints.
4. The elimination of normal street lighting although means for aiding movement in darkened streets by reflectors, white markings, or dim, well-screened indicator lights which cast no appreciable illumination, are permitted to mark the line of the road and also obstructions and danger points.
5. The control of lighting for essential services where absolutely necessary.
6. The restriction of lights carried by road vehicles and the screening of interior lighting in public vehicles.
7. The restriction of lighting in trains and on railway premises.
8. The control of shipping, navigation, and air-craft lights.

<sup>1</sup> Home Office A.R.P. Circular 14th February, 1938. Memorandum on Lighting Restriction.

# Table of Emergency Lights

Light or Illuminated sign	A.R.P. Circular	Specifications	Mounting height	Candle-power	Brightness		Illumination at road level foot candles	Requirement at distance	
					Candle per square foot	Equivalent foot candles		100 feet	250 feet
Street Lighting	344/1939 S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	B.S./A.R.P. 37	9' — 19' and upwards	0.015 — 1.500	—	—	0.0002 — 0.0004	—	—
Traffic Signal	Memo—Aids to Movement S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	B.S. 505/1939 Electric lamp B.S. 555/1939	7' 6" (centre of lowest optical system)	Lumens (510 — 535) electric lamp	—	—	—	—	—
Traffic Sign (Mandatory and Prohibitory)	Memo—Aids S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	—	—	—	Order of 0.1 (for Lettering)	—	—	Legible	Inconspicuous
Advance direction Sign, etc.	Memo—Aids S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	—	7'	—	(Order of 1.0)	—	—	"	"
Bollard (Panel)	Do.	—	—	—	—	—	—	Clearly visible	"
Refuge Light (White Cross)	259/1939 S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	—	—	—	not exceeding 0.5	—	—	—	—
Obstruction Light (Red)	Memo—Aids S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	—	—	not exceeding 1.0	—	—	—	—	—
A.R.P. Sign	S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	B.S./A.R.P. 32	8'	—	—	0.04 — 0.10	—	Clearly legible	Inconspicuous
Fog Flare	S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
Hand Lamp	S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	B.S./A.R.P. 3	—	not exceeding 1.0	—	—	—	—	—
Hand Torch (or Lamp)	S.R. & O. 1940 No. 74	—	—	(Dimmed by two sheets tissue paper)	—	—	—	—	—

Without legislative compulsion it is impossible to do all these, and obscuration of light is therefore included in the Civil Defence Act of Great Britain.

Street lighting is vigorously controlled, lighting from shop windows and residences must be obscured by opaque shutters or black-out paints. Motor cars must use sidelights only and trains are also run with as little light as possible. Their head lights must be closed when they approach any metropolis so as to make its position less obvious.

Lighting on the coast is also controlled to prevent sea-craft from locating the position of coastal cities and objects. Residents in houses along the coast of Madras have been warned to screen their domestic lighting effectively. An interesting device has been planned in Coney Island, the Black Pool of America, to erect a gigantic screen 18 feet high and nearly 3 miles long along the sea front to shield the lights of amusement places and shop windows from any enemy submarines lurking along the coast.

In page 523 are indicated the principal types of emergency lighting permitted in the streets, together with the values of candle-power brightness or illumination allowed.

Extensive tests have been made, some of them covering several thousand square miles and at huge cost, to test the effectiveness of these measures. While the value of preventing lights from illuminating the targets below, which would aid the airman, cannot be minimised, experience has disclosed that strict enforcement leads to several disadvantages. Measures to counteract these thus become an essential part of the scheme of black-out in any country, and several remedies are being adopted in Great Britain by the Government and the people. A careful study of these measures is essential and particularly valuable to our country where black-out regulations are rapidly extending over the land.

The most serious disadvantage disclosed by experience is the increase in traffic accidents. Strict black-out regulations entail great hardship for the pedestrians as well as drivers of vehicles and traffic accidents rapidly rose in Great Britain.

Road deaths more than doubled in the first month of its operation ; 1,130 persons were killed in accident in Great Britain

in September 1939 compared with 672 in August 1939.<sup>1</sup> Petrol was since then rationed and speed limit was more stringently controlled. Still hundreds of people were killed. October claimed 219 victims in the roads of Great Britain and November 1939, 926, while in November 1938, only 613 died. For September, October and November 1939, black-out deaths alone have been reckoned to total 674. 895 people were killed in December 1939. This is 212 more than those killed in December of the previous year. Official figures show that 1,155 were killed on roads during December compared to 683 during the year before. The total is considered highest on record for any single month, black-out contributing 895.

During the period September 1 to December 31, 1939, namely, the first four months of the war 4,133 persons, including 2,657 pedestrians, died from road accidents, compared with 2,494 in the corresponding period for 1938. In January 1940, 619 persons lost their lives on roads of whom 461 were killed in the hours of darkness. An increase of 134 or some 28 per cent. over the figures of January 1939. Twenty miles speed limit was imposed from 1st February 1940. A decrease has been registered for the month of February, 419 deaths, which mean 44 less than in February 1939. The reasons given are, the 20 miles speed limit; the publicity campaign for greater care; the snow and ice which reduced traffic during the earlier part of February, and rationing of petrol; features upon which we cannot always count for road safety.

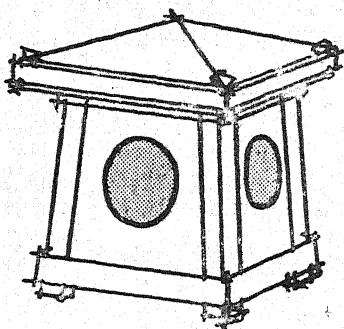
The problem of fast moving trains is more serious. Apart from the possibility of fast moving vehicles getting into accidents by bombed and shattered railway lines, there is the danger of collision. Train accidents have enormously increased in Germany after the advent of the black-out. They have also occurred in England. The first officially reported train accident happened at Bletchley. It cost only four lives and four carriages but it is a sufficiently grave sample.

Interesting devices are adopted by individuals to escape road accidents. Some have adopted white collars, hat bands, belts, umbrellas, etc. to make them easily discernible by the motorist.

<sup>1</sup>Statistics of road accidents published in the "Hindu". The battle of the Black-out, the "Hindu," October 29, 1939.

Some cyclists put on white stripes to their coat backs for the same reason. And lonely townspeople evacuated to the country keep dogs to guide them at night.

Vehicles are also painted to facilitate recognition. Cars were painted with white lines in Sweden. White stripes are generally



A.R.P. Lantern for indicating shelters, refuges, traffic signals

put on the mud guards. Obstructions in the roads such as pillars, etc., are also painted white or with white stripes to avoid colliding with them. A. R. P. Lanterns specially designed for illuminating street islands, pedestrian crossings, etc. are available in Great Britain. One type is in reinforced, fine-finished cement-sand concrete, provided with air-inlets in base. The lamp within is fitted with

a long time burner, giving continuous light for seven days, 168 hours, without attention, on one fuel charge of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  pints of paraffin oil.<sup>1</sup>

Aids to movement are daily being evolved by the Ministry of Home Security to get over the dangers of night travelling.

With a view to minimising the risks of accidents arising from motor vehicles colliding with street refuges under black-out conditions, the London Civil Defence regional authorities have requested local authorities in the region to adopt a uniform road marking to indicate the presence of such refuges.

This marking takes the form of a white line along the centre of the roadway, starting thirty feet from the refuge. At twenty feet from the refuge the line bifurcates, forming two forms of a "Y" until the refuge is reached. The arms of the "Y" are joined at intervals of three feet by cross-bars of white stripes.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Other models are also made, for Shelter Indicator, for Interior Illumination, for Military Road Blocks, for use with Main Electric Supply, for General Utility Purposes.

<sup>2</sup> J.I.M.Cy.E., Vol. LXVI, No. 8, p. xix.

The dangers of collision with sandbag walls or lamp posts in black-out could largely be avoided if obstructions are treated with paint containing phosphorescent powders throwing off light to warn pedestrians. Certain powders glow for several hours after exposure to the mercury vapour lamps. This property is now being utilised in warning lights for black-out nights. The glow-worm technique as this is popularly called is adopted for various kinds of traffic signals, dials and instruments. Luminous paints are coated even on the overcoat and helmets of policemen guiding traffic. These show only when the rays of shielded car lights fall upon them.<sup>1</sup>

An apparatus has been invented in England by means of which motorists will be able to see in the dark, without any light being visible from the air. The apparatus, weighing about 10 pounds and taking up little room, is worked by a motor-car battery and projects an invisible ray which illumines all surfaces previously treated with a special liquid. If kerbs, signposts, grass verges and the rear of vehicles are coated with this liquid, which is inexpensive to produce, motorists equipped with this invention can travel safely and speedily at night, it is claimed, even if all other lights are extinguished.

The invisible ray would render objects on which it was directed brightly luminous for a distance of 200 feet. At present the necessary mechanism is said to cost about £16 to produce.<sup>2</sup>

In spite of all these as the "Times" pointed out regarding black-out accidents in England, "the list of casualties which we inflict on ourselves on the roads reads like the list of casualties inflicted by heavy and prolonged air offensive by the enemy."

Many other difficulties have also come to light, such as strain, depression and risk of lawlessness.

The damage to health is also mentioned and it is pointed out that sudden switching off of light might lead to panic and normally avoidable accidents. For the eye takes some time to adjust itself

<sup>1</sup> They are stationed at various points and in one case luminosity failed and the policemen, who remained completely invisible had several escapes from being run over! The "Hindu", 11-7-1939.

<sup>2</sup> "Hindu", 4-6-1939.

to marked changes in light. In some factories black-out arrangements have resulted in shutting away daylight through the windows with consequences easily imaginable.

Black-out has caused excessive strain to the eyes. Many ambulance drivers in London who have to drive at night, have to use eye-masks, soaked in eye lotion, in moments of relaxation.

The depressing feeling which enshrouding darkness creates upon the minds of the old and the young should also be reckoned, while the increased scope for certain classes of criminals who are helped by darkness is really deplorable. Statistical evidence have not been made available, but the risk may become practical when black-out conditions get settled.

Strict enforcement entails not a little expense. The experiment held in August 1939 covering over half of England on an area of 27,000 sq. miles came to £150,000. In the Metropolitan area of London alone 20,000 special police constables and war reserve officers had to be engaged!

It also leads to hardship. During the first three months in Manchester "1,060 have been charged with offences against the Lighting Restriction Order and almost all of the number have been fined."<sup>1</sup>

These are the disadvantages in time of peace, but others may crop up during actual raids. Complete black-out will necessitate more number of shelters in the interests of accessibility and the additional cost on this account would not be small. Further this will hinder the efficient functioning of A.R.P. services during a night raid, and an instance is already on record that fire during black-out could not be immediately and successfully dealt with.

As the London correspondent of the "Mail" writing in April, 1941 stated "London's West End Clubs have suffered so severely in raids that it comes as an added shock to clubmen when one of them succumbs to the ordinary risks of fire. These risks are aggravated nowadays by police insistence on a rigid black-out which often prevents flames being detected from outside until they have obtained a firm hold in the building. This is what happened

<sup>1</sup>"Illustrated Weekly of India", January 21, 1940, p. 11.

in the case of the Bath Club, one of the few institutions of the kind in London which still boasted of a waiting list." <sup>1</sup>

To overcome the difficulties entailed by black-out it is suggested that lights should be arranged so that they could be switched off when the warning of a raid is announced. It is claimed that in Moscow "in the event of an air raid, lights can be switched off in quarter of a minute." It is also reported that "New York's quarter million street lights can be turned off in any black-out emergency." The 28,000 control boxes installed in the city were adjusted by 12,000 electricians.

Arrangements to extinguish all street lights on the receipt of a warning to obviate the difficulties of a permanent black-out will involve considerable amount of electrical work which cannot be rapidly carried out in times of war and due to limited supply of labour and materials. This system presumes that warning can always be given. But the air raid warning system is not automatic. It depends upon many human and other uncertain factors and we must not be lulled into a feeling of security if there is no warning. As Mr. Herbert Morrison has declared that we are "not sure that experience in that city (Moscow) is relevant to conditions in this country."

The question of "lights till sirens go" adopted in Russia, to overcome the disadvantages of black-out has been examined by British authorities, and Herbert Morrison's observations need careful consideration. "The scheme is likely to lead to an increase in road accidents, because the vehicles would continue in the roads in the dark after lights have been suddenly extinguished." The mass switch device by which all lights can be put out has not therefore been adopted in Great Britain.<sup>2</sup>

More than two years previously Sir John Anderson as Home Secretary examined this question and rejected the idea.

His statement,<sup>3</sup> dealing in detail with the difficulties with which the Government were faced in considering the question of modifying black-out restrictions pointed out "only in a few towns, it is pointed out, can lights be extinguished from a central control. In most towns lamps are lighted individually, and the conversion of

<sup>1</sup> "Mail", 13-6-1941.

<sup>2</sup> "Hindu", 11-10-1941.

<sup>3</sup> J.I.M.Cy.E., Vol. LXVI, No. 11, p. x.



these lighting systems to enable lamps to be extinguished centrally would involve many months of work and cost millions of pounds."

He further pointed out that if, on receipt of an air raid warning, lights were suddenly put out, people would be plunged into a blackness which would create confusion and might cause panic in the streets. Moreover, it has been proved by co-operation with the R.A.F. that ordinary street lighting in a built-up area can be seen by hostile air-craft as far away as forty miles, and switching off lights on receipt of a public air raid warning would be an insufficient safeguard, since by that time the raiders might have come within sight of the area.

Apart from this consideration, the statement declares, lights would have to be extinguished on receipt of the preliminary warning which is received some minutes earlier than the public warning. That would mean that the confidential preliminary warning would be converted into a public warning, with all the dislocation and interruption of industrial activity which that would entail. An arrangement which would constantly put areas under public warning on occasions when no raid developed "would undermine public confidence and would seriously impair the productive capacity on which the country's war effort depends."

These difficulties, Sir John Anderson concludes, would not be overcome by reducing the intensity of street lighting, since even modified street lighting is visible to air-craft at considerable distances, particularly in favourable weather conditions.

Since then experiments with a view to devising a type of modified street lighting of very low intensity which would not be visible to raiding air-craft and could be left alight even when a raid is in progress are being attempted by the Home Office of Great Britain. Still Sir John's observation holds good since the types of lighting so far tested have failed to satisfy the conditions required. "I cannot hold out any definite hope at present that it will be found possible to devise a type of lighting which will prove satisfactory, but further experiments are in progress."

To avoid the disadvantages of the black-out and at the same time to secure its advantages the creation of a canopy of glaring lights over a city has been suggested by an outstanding authority

on out-door lighting who considers that it would afford better protection than a black-out in the event of invasion.<sup>1</sup>

This is to be done by the installation of numerous small though powerful search-lights, pointed upwards and mounted on the roofs of large buildings and at high elevations. Such a glare of light would tend to blind enemy flyers, prevent them from seeing through the curtain of light and locating vulnerable targets.

Such a canopy is believed to silhouette bombers to the eyes of defending air-craft flying in the sky above the heavy bombers. Such lighting could also be used to decoy enemy pilots by being placed about open fields adjacent to a city, thus extending what would appear the boundaries of the city as viewed from the air.

Mr. Dickerson points out that Nazi pilots now engaged in night raids on London and other large English cities have apparently had little difficulty in finding them in the black-out. Moonlight reflecting from the roof-tops, and from such rivers as the Thames plus parachute flares, have helped the Nazi raiders in locating vulnerable targets. Even without moonlight, such cities as London, Birmingham, and Manchester have a different reflection from that of the surrounding country and therefore can be detected from the air. The black-outs, plus cloudy and misty atmosphere, have helped the Nazi raiders hide in the night sky, making it difficult for English pilots to find them. He, therefore, believes that by installing these small, powerful search-lights not only in the cities but also outside the urban limits in rural areas, the enemy might be decoyed into unloading his bombs on unimportant ground. This idea is well worth exploring, but to most Indian cities would not be feasible since it would prove very expensive and in many cases not possible.

The system of dazzle lighting a target has also been adopted as complimentary to blackout. The Germans endeavoured to hide ports and other targets behind a dazzling curtain of light, supplied by a tremendous concentration of low angle search-lights. At the same time a terrific barrage of anti-aircraft fire is put up. This method was adopted, when a powerful force of the R.A.F. attacked on 8-5-1942, the Baltic port of Warnemunde. But in addition to a great deal of high level bombing fast flying British Bombers defied

<sup>1</sup>A. F. Dickerson, Head of "General Electric's" Illuminating Laboratory  
*Vide* The American City, July 1941, p. 15.

the curtain of steel and dived under the curtain of light to find their targets and dropped their load of bombs from heights of only 400 feet.<sup>1</sup>

Douglas Reed in his recent publication "Prophet in Home" also feels similarly. People who live in cities which have been bombed will also know that it does not prevent them (night raiders) from finding and bombing definite areas in these towns, even individual buildings. Was not London city bombed on a night? Was not Buckingham Palace bombed several times? What is really needed to combat the night raider is a whiteout. The blackout is the friend of night raider. It does not prevent him from finding his way. It gives him the best cover he could wish. But it does prevent our night-fighters from finding him and shooting him down. They could easily do that if he were visible, and to make him visible you must either light up the sky or light up the ground so that a British fighter flying high, can see beneath him the night raider against that background of light.<sup>2</sup>

As things are at present black-out cannot be divested of difficulties and dangers. Since the advantages it offers are too precious to be ignored, the only way open is to concert measures to minimise the evils, along with measures to enforce lighting restrictions.

After a careful consideration of all the factors involved, the Government of India have decided that a permanent black-out is unnecessary in India and that the obscuration of lighting is more suitable to conditions obtaining in this country. It is also decided that the imposition of sudden complete black-out on the receipt of an air raid warning is impracticable.

"Obscuration means the reduction of the power and number of lights to the absolute minimum, and the screening or shading of all remaining lights so that no light is cast above the horizontal and no appreciable light is reflected on the ground, with the general effect that, at best, all lighting becomes invisible to the enemy, and in any case no particular target can be singled out for attack."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The "Hindu," 10-5-42.

<sup>2</sup> Quoted, *Safety News*, Feb. 1943, p. 79.

<sup>3</sup> *Vide* Government of India, Handbook No. 3 "Technical Air Raid Precautions in India."

Therefore black-out regulations in India are so designed that lights will be so obscured in the streets as to allow their beams to fall within a limited area directly under the lamp, while lights in residential quarters will be so covered as to allow no beam to pass beyond the doors and windows.

Obscuration of light is now in force not merely in the coastal cities and towns but in many interior towns as well.

Black-out exercises have been held in different parts of India ; in Lahore, Amritsar, Sialkot, Gujranwala, Wazirabad, Gurdaspur, Dalhousie and Pathankot and other towns of the Punjab ; in Bombay, Calcutta, Madras, and other provinces. Lights are also dimmed at the Railway Stations.

Stiff black-out tests have also been carried out by the A.R.P. Organisation in India—72 hours' continuous black-out in cities vulnerable to air attack. Under the scheme, street lights only are cut out, allowing electric current to residential quarters.

Lighting restrictions apply to all kinds of buildings and structures, to street lights, as well as to the Railway and Transport system in vulnerable areas. They also apply to the cremation of bodies during night in some cities.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Commissioner of Police, Bombay, prohibited the cremation of bodies between 5 p.m. and 6 p.m. or the keeping of any funeral pyre burning after 8 p.m. There will, however, be no objection to the conveyance of bodies to the burning ghats before 6 a.m., says a Press Note.

Reconnaissance from the sea has shown that fires lighted for the burning of bodies during the hours of darkness are visible at a great distance from the shore and also from the air. Such fires would be of assistance to the enemy and, in the interests of public safety, the restrictions have been imposed. It is expected that those concerned will co-operate in carrying out a measure imposed by public necessity. No serious inconvenience will be caused to the public since the conveyance of bodies to the burning ghats—without the carrying of any lights—has been allowed during hours of darkness. The "Hindu", 28-3-1942.

Ban on cremations after dusk was laid at Calcutta when Japanese raids began in December, 1942. During the night, lights from funeral pyres are likely to give indication to the enemy air-craft of the location and they may be mistaken for workshops and may become targets for attack by enemy bombers. The Chief Executive Officer of the Calcutta Corporation, therefore passed an order prohibiting until further notice the lighting of funeral pyres between the hour of 4 p.m. and 4 a.m. during the close of December 1942.

The Government of India permit members of the public to use electric hand torches during black-out after the air raid sirens have sounded the "Alert" provided that the aperture through which light is emitted is not more than one inch in diameter and the light is dimmed with a piece of paper to that extent.

Air Raid Wardens have been asked to advise the public to use torches as little as possible, especially in crowded places and particularly when 'enemy' air-craft are overhead. Economy in the consumption of batteries should also be stressed. These regulations do not apply to the hooded lamps known as A.R.P. hand-lamps and the use of these hand-lamps are permitted after the 'Alert' only in the case of police and civil defence workers and other persons who are permitted by the police to use them for essential work.

Conditions in Indian cities and towns differ from those of English urban areas. Domestic and street lighting, road sense of the public, and traffic control measures, etc., vary from place to place. Already even the 'partial' obscuration enforced in Indian towns has begun to entail hardship upon the citizens as well as civic authorities.

Shading the lights have entailed expense to Municipalities.

Prosecutions for non-compliance with the A.R.P. lighting rules have loomed large in the police courts in Bombay. Thirteen persons were charged on 11-7-1941, before the Presidency Magistrate, Esplanade, for non-shading or insufficient shading of their lights.<sup>1</sup>

In Madras during the month of July 1941, over 1,000 motor cars were brought to the Traffic Office Headquarters for defective observance of lighting restrictions and their owners were warned and given instructions as to the proper way of screening lights.

On the first day of August, 1941 alone, as a result of checking by traffic sergeants, about 170 motor vehicles were found with improper lighting arrangements.<sup>2</sup>

Soon after the lighting restrictions were brought into force about twenty persons were charged for failure to comply with the regulations regarding domestic residences, in Negapatam.

Other disadvantages have also been pointed out in India. The Bezwada Municipal Council stated in a resolution: "Since

<sup>1</sup>The "Hindu", 12-7-1941.

<sup>2</sup>The "Hindu", 3-8-1941.

the black-out was introduced, there had been several thefts, one murder, one case of attempted murder and many accidents on the road, and that therefore the Council was of opinion that the black-out was 'causing more danger than the expected danger' ".<sup>1</sup> The Council therefore refused to sanction the sum of Rs. 7,000 incurred by the Commissioner in connection with the black-out arrangements in the town.

A leading daily referring to some of the features of the black-out in force drew public attention to the disadvantages.

"And yet Madras too enjoys—or should we say, suffers?—black-out, of sorts. By courtesy rather than from conviction, it has come to be called the "partial black-out" in this city, one continues to wonder what its purpose is. This depressing camouflage had its origin in the early days of the war, when the menace from the air appeared to be the first concern of the defence authority and darkness seemed to be the obvious first step in air raid precautions. Some half-measures were taken, in the shape of banning private illuminations, without their being shaded above and on sides, and hiding the street lights under miniature bushels. We do not know if these devices were found satisfactory from a military point of view, but the annoyance and danger they caused to the public have grown; and the public's legitimate grouse has not been lessened by anomalies which, in course of time, crept into the enforcement of these restrictions."<sup>2</sup>

Since the very night of February 15, 1942, on which the black-out was enforced in Puri town for the first time, there have been several cases of arson and incendiarism in the thatched quarters of the town, causing widespread panic among the people. Detailing the measures taken to meet the situation, the communique of the District Magistrate of Puri, stated that the affected parts of the town had been sub-divided into three blocks and a responsible police officer, with a number of constables, had been put in charge of each block for patrol duty both day and night.

Interesting cases have cropped up in places subjected to strict black-out restrictions. A crash into a bollard on an island refuge in London Road, Coventry, on October 24th, 1940, by a lorry

<sup>1</sup> The "Mail", 22-11-1941.

<sup>2</sup> "Darkness and Defence," the "Hindu", Editorial, 29-4-1940.

journeying from London to Liverpool raised an interesting legal point under the lighting restriction orders, in an action before Mr. Justice Oliver at the Manchester Assizes on March 5th, 1941. A haulage contractor had lorries doing long-distance journeys. On leaving London one of his drivers had been required to put off his headlights owing to an alert. He reached Coventry not knowing whether the all clear had been given. He ran into an island bollard, which was not lighted. In stating the present rulings, counsel stated that the occasion of the accident was due to the Coventry *blitz*. There were 42 instances of damage to the gas installations and it might well have been that the gas pressure was not sufficient to keep the bollard alight.

The Judge found that, owing to enemy action, the bollard was not lighted but that Bowker's driver was driving blind because when leaving London for Liverpool he had been warned of an "alert" and was told he must not use his headlights. At 1-30 in the morning there was no alert on at Coventry but the driver had made no inquiries and was still driving blind at 15 miles an hour. Such a speed was a great deal too fast when driving blind and the driver failed to see this great white object. This, he said, was negligence on the part of the driver and Bowker could not succeed. The Judge also found that the Corporation had been negligent in not taking reasonable care to light the bollard or done something to warn drivers. Therefore he said, if the Corporation had been suing Bowker they would have failed, their own negligence having contributed to the accident.

Interesting devices are therefore coming into vogue to aid movement during black-out in the *blitzed* countries of the world.

A new system of traffic signal lighting designed to do away with the need for screens and masks was demonstrated at Salford recently. By means of a transformer, operated by a time switch, the current passing through the bulbs illuminating the unscreened lenses was reduced until the signals were showing only a deep glow of colour. Tests showed that this was clearly visible from over 200 yards away, and was far more obvious to drivers than a screened signal illuminated by 100-watt bulb. A.R.P. authorities were satisfied with the dimmed signals. A substantial economy in the use of electricity is expected as an indirect result of their use. According to a Police Official, on the basis of Salford's experience,

hundreds of accidents at junctions controlled by traffic signals could have been avoided if some such system had been generally adopted at the beginning of the war.

At Belleville, in New Jersey, a dimming system has been adopted which permits the traffic signals to be operated as usual under normal conditions and to continue in operation during black-outs. By operating a switch at the police Headquarters all of the signals are dimmed at once to one-fourth their original brightness so that they cannot be seen from the air. The hoods over the lights have been painted black to prevent any possibility of reflection upward. The principle has been approved by the Federal Office of Civil Defence and the plan seems to have a number of advantages over many other systems adopted.

Paints that glow in the dark are being used for showing up objects in London's black-out. The fluorescent paint is made use of in a variety of ways, for example, for illuminating the platform, steps of buses, edges of railway station platforms and tramway junctions.<sup>1</sup>

*Luminous tape to off-set black-out hazards:* Reports are still coming in of many accidents in households and on the streets as the result of blackouts. To reduce the risk of accidents, a wide range of luminous materials which glow in the dark have been made available. One of these items which is considered particularly utilitarian is Glo-Tape manufactured by Stylecraft Belts Inc., of New York. "Glo-tape, size one inch wide, comes in rolls of one yard each. It can be stitched or glued to corners, doors, light switches, stairways, elevators, machinery—in fact to anything; self-charging, non-poisonous, and easily cleaned with a damp cloth it seems just good common sense to eliminate unnecessary blackout risks by utilizing something like this to indicate danger points in homes and plants."<sup>2</sup>

Electric Eyes to blackout street advertising signs are suggested in U. S. A. It is claimed that the device is easy to install and once in place requires no attention and operates at all times in conjunction with street lights.

A Blackout Bulb, which eliminates the need for special shades and contains ample light to avoid stumbling over furniture and yet cannot be seen from the air is reported to have been successfully

<sup>1</sup> Safety News, Sep. 1942, p. 288.

<sup>2</sup> Civilian Defence, Dec. 1942, p. 34.



developed and tested by Army Engineers at Fort Belvoir, Va. The new bulb is heavily coated with black except for an orange button about the size of a small coin at the bottom. One bulb in each room will provide enough light to permit occupants to see each other plainly as well as the furniture, doors and windows. Army pilots and engineers tested the bulb recently in a tiny town with only forty houses in New Jersey. Each home was equipped with the black-out bulbs and the shades and curtains left up. When pilots flew over they were unable to see a single ray of light. Army Engineers explain that orange was selected as the colour for light-emitting button, since it is near the red end of the spectrum. Red has been found to be the light least visible from the air. While the black-out bulb will not permit reading or playing at cards, it is safer and more convenient than no light at all. It can be used to light sections of the houses where there are too many doors or windows for the practical use of black-out drapes. One room of the house can be completely blacked-out externally to permit reading with ordinary light, while the rest of the house can be lighted with the special bulbs.

Black-out by means of curtains and window-blinds seriously affect ventilation especially of large premises and factories. Ingenious devices are being adopted to get over the problem of black-out ventilation. A Pamphlet—Factory Ventilation in the Black-out—was issued in the early part of the war and has now been re-issued in a slightly revised form by the Factory Department of the Ministry of Labour and National Service. It describes briefly the various measures which can be taken to improve ventilation without permitting the escape of interior artificial light. A number of drawings are included showing simple ideas for the construction of light-traps at ventilator openings.

How to secure adequate ventilation and yet insure that the room is light-tight is no simple matter for the average man. To solve this problem the Clopay Corporation has a black-out ventilator which is thoroughly light-tight but supplies sufficient fresh air to ensure ventilation. This unit sells for 49 cents in U. S. A. It fits on the sill of any window.

The chief of the Black-out and Traffic Control Section, Engineer, Board, War Department, Fort Belvoir, Va., suggests the following Black-out Requirements for Highway Movement.

The basic problem is to devise techniques to develop lighting equipment which will provide maximum safety and efficiency of traffic movement consistent with reasonable freedom from detection of aerial observers flying at medium bombing altitudes.

1. Illumination of a 30-foot roadway in such a manner that the apparent road brightness from the driver's seat is the same from 20 to 100 feet in front of the vehicles.
2. Uniform reduction in roadway brightness from 100 to 200 feet in front.
3. Visual cut off of the top of the beam directed downward at an angle of 1 degree below the horizontal.
4. Elimination of stray illumination outside the limits specified in 1, 2 and 3.

Extensive tests demonstrated that this beam pattern makes it possible to drive safely at 15 miles per hour.

The interior illuminated sign box was designed to provide a portable sign having the most legibility for its size and the amount of battery current consumed. It is safe from aerial observation at low altitudes and can be detected as a light source on the ground from distances of 1,000 to 2,000 feet. This exterior sign-illuminating device may be attached to existing traffic signs to make them legible.

The black-out street lighting luminaire provide an even distribution of light on the surface of the roadway over which it is placed. The intensity of illumination produced is about double and sufficient to permit pedestrians to move around without bumping into one another and without stumbling over obstacles on the sidewalk or the roadway.

Extensive experiments have shown that the best way to modify a traffic signal for black-out operation is to reduce the operating voltage during black-outs to one-fourth the rated voltage.

Reflectorized anklets and reflectorized leggings are designed to be worn around the ankles of pedestrians. Since they are worn as close to ground level as possible, these devices will return the light from an approaching blackout headlamp at distances of 100 to 200 feet. The high rate of pedestrian accidents during black-outs in England emphasizes the importance of reducing this hazard.

Black-out flashlights are recommended in orange or orange-red. The black-out traffic baton will permit traffic policemen to give a

legible indication to approaching traffic when either normal driving lights or black-out driving lights are used. The reflector buttons embedded in the plastic rod outline the baton when normal driving lights are used ; light furnished by the flashlight lamp and diffused by specially designed flutes cut on the inside of the plastic rod, outline the baton during black-outs. War department's experiments have not confirmed many of the extravagant claims made for the use of luminescent materials during black-outs. Inasmuch as most of these materials deteriorate rapidly under exposure to sunlight and moisture, and retain useful luminosity for only a relatively brief period after excitation, they cannot be recommended for continuous use out of doors.<sup>1</sup>

A lawsuit concerning the liability of local Councils for black-out accidents came before Mr. Justice Humphreys in the King's Bench on August 19, 1941.

The suit was brought by Mr. Arthur G. Lyus Leytonstone, who sued Stepney Borough Council, claiming damages for alleged negligence or breach of statutory duty. Mr. Lyus claimed in respect of personal injuries received when he collided with a sand bin in Seattle St. on September 15, 1940. He alleged that the bin became a danger when the black-out restrictions were enforced, and the Council did not take steps to make it visible to pedestrians by painting it white. This was done about a month after the accident.

Until the War, street lighting effectively showed up the sand bin, but under the Defence Regulations, the Council quite properly ceased to light the streets. The mere fact that the Council was absolved from its duty of lighting the streets, did not absolve it from any other duty which the Common law might impose upon it to see that people in the street were not unduly inconvenienced or had accident caused to them. Mr. Lyus was awarded a total of £190, including £40 special damages, and entered judgment for that amount and costs.<sup>2</sup>

This judgment of a well known judge of a well known judiciary makes very clear the responsibility of civic authorities to concert measure to overcome the difficulties of black-out. We will do well to remember that so long as light obscuration cannot be abandoned as long will aids to movement and several other measures, remain indispensable.

<sup>1</sup> The American City, Nov. 1942, pp. 86-87.

<sup>2</sup> J.I.M.Cy.E., Vol. LXVII, No. 4, p. xii.

## APPENDIX

### Camouflage in Ancient India

Used in its broadest sense of deception, camouflage has been practised by the field forces in every country, and the Trojan Horse has its counterparts in Hindu mythology and history. Every kind of camouflage now adopted has its ancient counterpart. Some of the most ingenious devices described in the epics would make modern generals envy the ancients for sheer ingenuity.

Several Sastras mention devices to enshroud the forces from the gaze of the enemy which may be compared to the smoke screen tactics of modern navies. Disguise of form and distortion of shape have their prototypes in the Asuras who assumed different shapes to mislead their victims.

The celebrated Man-Lion in Hindu Mythology and the Elephant-headed obviator of all obstacles, constitute outstanding examples of the distortion of shape ! The Lion's head was the best possible camouflage to destroy the enemy who had obtained the power by arduous penance and preparation to defeat the enemy. He obtained the boon as everybody knows, of invincibility in war with any man or beast.

Dummies recommended to frighten the enemy or invite him to waste his blows have their classic example in the Lord of the Lanka whose numerous heads in all probability represented a clever scheme to overcome the enemy's sword and arrow. Attempting to escape destruction by deliberately flying neutral flags and painting the Red Cross over military objectives are no more ingenious than the trick adopted by Arjuna's Charioteer in that immortal battle when he assumed the guise of a woman whom Bheeshma scorned to fight, and thus escaped Arjuna from the great warrior.

Since wars were confined to warriors and non-combatants were left in peace, the need did not arise to camouflage civilian objectives and structures. That this was not beyond the capacity and powers of ancient master builders is, however, apparent from various passages in the ancient literature dealing with architecture of the Epic age.

Mansions which Alladin's genii might envy, have sprung overnight by the magic efforts of heavenly architects. So dexterously was the assembly hall at Indraprastha built for the Pandus that even very close observation could not decide the material of which the walls and floors were made. The shining flooring misled the visitor to be a lotus pond, while bathing pools inside palaces were not easily distinguishable as such. So cleverly were they done that they achieved successfully the camouflaging of water, which the modern camouffleur would consider a marvel. The Kuru Prince was therefore dismayed when he went there for the Rajasuya !

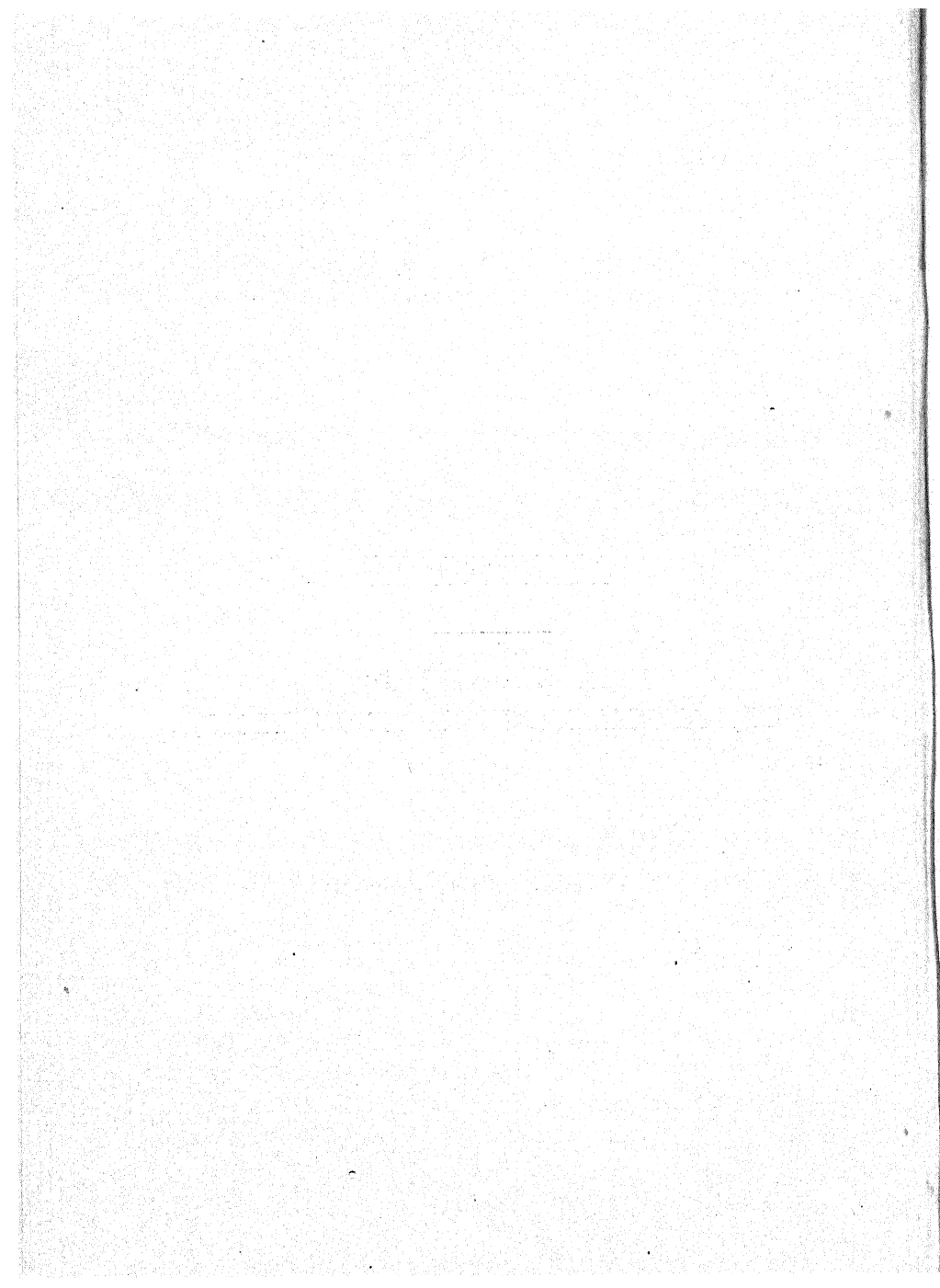
Regarding manipulating news to build up national morale and break down that of the enemy, now attempted by controlled radio and press we can hardly find a parallel in recent times to the wellknown ruse the Pandavas adopted in the great battle of Kurukshetra. Drona proved invincible and his archery devastating. There was no hope of victory by fair fight. "Aswathama killed" shouted Bhima approaching him. How could it be his only son, endowed with immortality? The great archer in grief, for verification turned towards Dharma. "Aswathama killed" cried Yudhishtira adding in tones inaudible "the elephant". He spoke the truth, for Indravarma's elephant named Aswathama lay dead on the field, killed by Bhima. Dharma's first two words brought the desired effect, however. Broken-hearted Drona easily fell a prey soon after.

Modern camouffleurs can search with profit the pages of the Puranas, Epics and Mythology of the Hindus for wealth of knowledge and practice and procedure which for sheer ingenuity are unsurpassed even by the latest advances of deception in modern war.

## **CHAPTER XI**

---

### **CIVIL DEFENCE ORGANISATIONS AND EDUCATION**



## CHAPTER XI

### CIVIL DEFENCE ORGANISATIONS AND EDUCATION

Japanese aggression in the East and the possibility of air raids on India has brought into prominence the need for A.R.P. preparations. According to the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee, foremost among these is the possibility of large scale daylight raids. It cannot be expected that the whole of the long Indian coast line can be given such strong defence as would put an end to daylight raids.

In India, it is also necessary to provide A.R.P. services for tens of millions of people in an extremely short space of time. It is, therefore, far more important to make even the simplest provision for the many, rather than to concentrate on elaborate extensive schemes which, however perfect, can cater only for the few. A great deal can be done by the people themselves in getting preparations under way.

Committees, representing all sections of the community can be of the highest value in helping the victims of raiding, as well as in bringing the most urgent problems to the notice of the authorities. Since the need for Civil Defence Organisation to deal with possible air raids is now realised all the world over, even in distant Australia and America, Civil Defence organisations have been formed. Black-out tests have been carried out in Australian cities, in Siam, in South Africa, Ceylon, etc. In May 1941, an office for Civilian Defence was established in United States with Mayor La Guardia of New York, at its head. President Roosevelt divided the new Defence Agency into two General Divisions, one being a Board of Civilian Protection, to advise and assist in the formulation of Civilian Defence measures.

A very efficient Organisation has been set up in Great Britain.<sup>1</sup> The A.R.P. or the Civil Defence Organisation co-ordinates the work of different agencies engaged in the following work.

1. Air raid warnings, to provide as far as possible warning of impending air attack.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Home Office Circular "Air Raid Precautions", July 9, 1935, p. 45.



2. Lighting Restrictions.
3. Reporting damage. Information about the fall of bombs, including the presence of gas.
4. Police Forces, to supplement the regular police for emergencies. Fire brigades, strengthened to enable them to deal effectively with the results of attacks from the air.
5. Rescue Parties, etc., to relieve the police and fire brigades and to rescue persons who are injured or trapped and to shore up dangerous walls, etc.
6. Treatment of casualties. Mobilisation and expansion of the medical and first-aid resources. To provide first-aid posts, casualty clearing stations and hospitals for more extended treatment, together with an adequate ambulance service. Facilities for decontamination of gas casualties and their clothing are also essential.
7. Anti-gas services. Separate arrangements for the decontamination of vehicles, buildings, and their contents and contaminated ground, as well as for the organisation of expert gas detectors who can determine whether a bombed area is free from gas or whether decontamination measures are needed.
8. Maintenance of essential public services. Public services such as water, gas, and electricity to be kept going at any rate on a basis of minimum requirements.
9. Road repairs and clearance of debris.

In the words of Capt. Liddel Hart, air raid precautions, cover "measures for the dispersion and concealment of works which may form likely targets; the duplication of sources of essential supply, so as to limit the effect of damage to any one of them; the evacuation of population so far as possible from specially endangered areas; the provision of bomb-proof or splinter-proof shelters for workers in and inhabitants of such areas; the organisation of emergency services to give warning of impending attacks, to

maintain order, to clear debris, to deal with outbreaks of fire or the dissemination of gas, and to restore communications."<sup>1</sup>

Nation-wide organisations to deal with these problems have been set up in most European countries and A.R.P. has almost become part of the daily routine of the inhabitants of the crowded cities of Europe. A brief description of the British system would give us an idea of the fundamentals of a successful system. Her civil defence forces number a million and a quarter men of all ages and classes and hundred million sterling was spent upon civil defence alone in the first year of its organisation.

### **Civil Defence in Great Britain**

The Civil Defence Organisation of Great Britain is a national affair. It is managed by six Government Departments, 12 Regional Commissioners, 315 large Local Authorities, 1,200 small Authorities, and three million men and women.

The civil defence mechanism is based on the regional scheme and has been cleverly dovetailed into the well proved system of local Government through the councils and committees, the controllers of the local authority and the people. It has become an integral part of their national and local life. It comprises of fire-fighters, wardens, casualty services, rescue parties and so on. Highly organised team work becomes necessary, for the streets are cumbered with debris, blocked with bomb craters, the muck and the smoke and the smoulder of escaping gas, smouldering fires and shattered buildings. Across these obstacles, essential transport and fire appliances are moved. Ambulances get back to the hospitals and first-aid posts, where the doctors and nurses tend the wounded. After a severe raid, the dislocation in the city is more than any town can cope with from its own resources and personnel. Houses over a large area have shattered windows and rooms. Some have their walls blown in, exposing the contents to the rain and dirt of the winter weather. Great areas in the city have no water supply, no gas to cook by, no light for the offices and workshops let alone their homes. When the morning arrives, the civil defence personnel need relief and rest. The arduous task of bringing back to life a shattered city and rehabilitating its crippled limbs begins. Order is restored, unnecessary traffic kept out of the city, roads are

<sup>1</sup> Encyclopædia Britannica : Year Book 1940, "Civil Defence".

cleared, essential services—electricity, gas, water, buses, drainage—are attended to. No time can be wasted. Water carts quickly come on the scene where the mains are smashed. Loudspeaker vans tell the public where to go and what to do. Communal kitchens are extended, for many have no cooking facilities. Scores of mobile canteens are drafted into the area. There is then the work of demolition of buildings tottering and unsafe, of billeting and evacuating the homeless, of effecting immediate repairs to damaged houses, of sending assistance to those who have lost everything in the world and have only the clothes they stand up in.

At the beginning of 1936, instruction classes were started and local authorities were advised to appoint A.R.P. Officers. Recruiting on a national scale started with the A.R.P. Act of December 1937 and with the passing months, men and women from shops, offices and factories were fashioned into fire fighters, ambulance drivers, wardens and rescue and first-aid workers. The September crisis of 1939 gave a tremendous impetus. Recruits rushed to join the A.R.P. Services in a mighty tide. The institution of decorations was announced by His Majesty on 23rd September 1940. The organisation of civil defence is a vast and complex undertaking. Controlled by the Ministry of Home Security, there are twelve regional organisations covering the entire country which would work independently if the head-quarters is affected. Each region has a Regional Commissioner. London has three. The working of individual A.R.P. Services is under the immediate control of officers appointed by the various local authorities. The decision to sound an air raid warning comes from the fighter-command who issue, whenever possible, a preliminary warning to the control centre of the district. The A.R.P. Controller summons his staff into action by pressing a button. Telephone passes the warning to the report centre and to warden's posts. The medical services are notified. Intelligence Officers get ready to mark all movements on their maps. Telephone, gas, water and electricity officers become alert to receive and pass messages. If approaching raiders continue on their course, the fighter-command signals to sound the siren. Individual wardens and police take to their posts. The warden communicates incidents to the report centre and the complete machinery is set in motion. The report centre passes on the warden's communication to the control centre and from there orders are issued to A.R.P. depots according to the needs of the

emergency. Rescue, first-aid and ambulance parties are despatched to the scene of the incident. In the report centre and the control room, they are supplied with as lucid an account as possible of what is happening and what is wanted. Reinforcements are sent when required.

No raid on England has been allowed to get out of hand. There has been no Reign of Terror such as Warsaw suffered. Fires have been fought and conquered in periods incredibly short, the injured have been saved, the debris cleared. Men and women have worked among the havoc of high explosives and defied the machine-guns of diving air-craft, burrowed to the rescue of the entombed under the threat of falling masonry and comforted the suffering, while they themselves have suffered. It is impossible to describe what happens daily of firemen mastering a blaze, with bombs bursting about them ; of rescue parties working against ghastly obstacle—indeed, against time itself—to reach people buried in debris ; of ambulance drivers urging their loaded vehicles through the hell of *blitzkrieg* in the black-out ; of first-aid workers bringing succour to the injured ; of the people who operate mobile canteens, so that refreshment may be always at hand for their comrades.

And to these must be added a vast throng of unsung heroes, whose work is done just as diligently—wardens and shelter marshals ; telephonists and street messengers ; animal guards ; office and factory staff ; roof watchers and the rest.

Both the cities and the country-side are divided into clearly defined areas, each with its Control Post where Wardens are on duty day and night. Both men and women are enlisted some on a salaried basis, others voluntary ; the full-time male wardens in Great Britain receive £3 a week. The women £2. Plans for reporting air raid damages are ready the moment a state of war exists ; so the Wardens can be compared to the Royal Corps of Signals in an army on active service.

For instance the city of Bristol has been divided into divisions for practically all purposes connected with Civil Defence. These divisions are based on peace-time police divisions. Consequently, general co-operation was less difficult than might otherwise have been the case.

It soon became clear that to accept the city boundary for civil defence operation would be impossible. By negotiations with the adjoining countries, considerable areas outside the city have been placed under the Bristol A.R.P. Controller for action but not for administration. The Civil Defence operations in Bristol are based on a policy of decentralisation. A final point to which special attention might be called is the provision of static water for fire fighting. As a result of experience, priority has been given to its provision. Millions of gallons of water for this purpose are now scattered over the city in various types of tanks, reservoirs, etc.

The Control Posts form the units of the organisation.<sup>1</sup> It is from these Posts the Wardens are sent out on patrol; it is with these posts that they keep in perpetual touch. Each Warden is as familiar with his own area as a policeman on his beat; it is his duty to make personal contact with the families that live in his area, and he gives them advice on a multitude of points connected with air raid protection. He examines the splinter-proof shelters provided by the Government or constructed by the individual householder. The lighting restrictions are his special care. And he has a dozen other duties, all of them connected with the safety of the civilians in his area. The Wardens are the eyes of the Control Posts by day and their feelers during the hours of darkness. Vigilance is their watchword.

When the report comes through, that enemy raiders are approaching the boundary, the word is transmitted to the Control Posts. By the time the "Action Warning" comes through, every Air Raid Warden is ready. The undulating note of the sirens can be heard if the raiders continue on their course; the whistles of the

<sup>1</sup> In the event of an emergency the London areas' Civil Defence Organisation is controlled from one central control room. On receipt of an air raid warning on the teleprinter, direct from the Fighter Command, the watch on duty immediately go to "battle" stations. From this room there is direct communication to all A.R.P. Group Headquarters, Scotland Yard, and the Home Office. From here the Operations Officer can transfer as many A.R.P. forces as necessary to cope with severe damage in any one quarter—this is known as "mutual assistance".

The British recommend a control centre for approximately each area of 100,000 inhabitants. With their superior communications, the Director, Office of Civilian Defence, U. S. A. thinks they can operate on a basis of one centre to every 200,000 people and considers that anything more than a quarter of a million will be setting the stage for disaster. India cannot in the interest of efficiency exceed the British limit of one for 100,000 inhabitants.

Wardens carry the news far and wide ; and when the raiders have passed, the sirens sound a long steady blast. If gas-bombs have been dropped, the Wardens' rattle proclaim the tidings, the public must continue to take precautions until the " All Clear " hand-bells can be heard in the streets. Wherever he goes the civilian carries his respirator with him ; so that every man, woman and child in England is ready for the signal of a gas attack.

It was under the A.R.P. Scheme that the great evacuation took place ; teachers, helpers, mothers, expectant mothers, cripples, blind people and hospital patients were conveyed from their danger areas. It was the biggest scheme of its kind that has ever been conceived ; nearly one million children apart from adults left the towns. Everything went through with an efficiency that was almost miraculous ; and the power of the enemy to break down civilian resistance by air raids has been enormously reduced.

In cities and villages, First-Aid Posts and hospitals are prepared for casualties caused by enemy bombers. Rescue squads, first-aid parties, and ambulances are ready for instant duty. 200,000 new beds and mattresses were provided by the Government, and nearly one-quarter of a million stretchers.

Provision has been made for fires that may be started by incendiary bombs. Even the distant villages have their Auxiliary Fire Service with full equipment ; and under the A.R.P. scheme, public shelters have been provided at thousands of points in English towns. As for poison gas, no country could be free in Europe but none is in a better position to resist attack than England ; the Government have supplied gas masks for all and full instructions have been given to make suitable rooms gas-proof. By means of pamphlets that have gone out to millions of homes, by lectures, by radio-talks, and by the newspaper press, the public have been given copious instructions for their personal safety in an enemy air raid. By day and night the work has been carried on ; and the A.R.P. machine is now in motion throughout the land.

Provision has been made to deal with incendiary bombs and fires that might be started. In addition to the fire brigade, Auxiliary Fire Service manned by men and women have been organised on an extensive scale. Equipment to remove incendiary bombs have been distributed and instructions imparted to innumerable householders.

The fire brigades carry on their work even during a raid and have successfully dealt with the fire raids of Nazi airmen. Provision for the supply of water to fight the fires by cisterns etc. have also been made.

Rescue parties and demolition squads as well as arrangements for removing debris and clearing the sites consisting of trained personnel and necessary equipments, exist in all vulnerable zones. The *blitz* has proved the great importance of this work in crowded cities ; repair of roads, demolition of dangerous buildings, restoring the supply of essential services cannot be done without these.

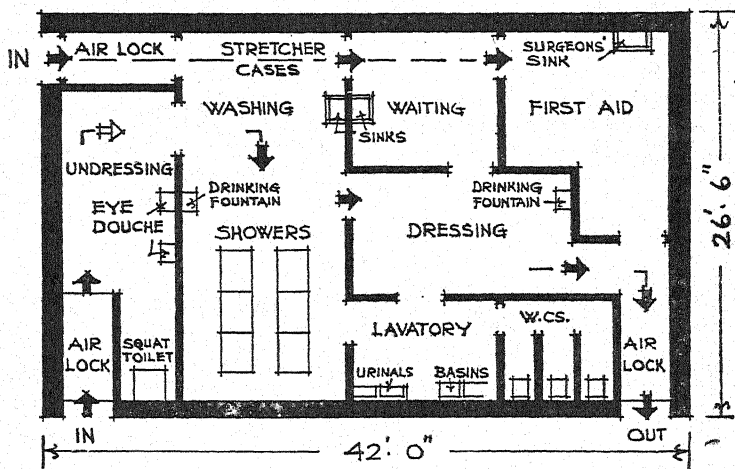
The Rescue Party is essential “ to rescue living persons who are trapped in the wreckage, to recover the bodies of persons killed in the collapsed building, to temporarily shore up or otherwise provide support for the building so weakened that a further collapse is likely which would endanger life or obstruct an important roadway, or where necessary to demolish it ; and if necessary to salvage food stock buried under debris.”

Decontamination squads consisting of trained personnel to deal with gas attack are also organised. Each party has necessary equipment to carry out decontamination work to buildings or roads affected by poison. Cleansing stations are provided in suitable centres to treat civilians attacked by gas.

The use of time-bombs by the Germans has necessitated the formation of bomb disposal squads to render the neighbourhood safe and save the structures closely. A one-ton bomb was removed from the vicinity of St. Paul's by one squad headed by Davies and the Cathedral was saved, so also a German Hospital. Extremely risky but absolutely essential to save architectural treasures, these squads are manned by patriotic men who risk their life on behalf of the nation. The bomb is removed and carried to a safe place—a field or meadow—and made to explode.

Hundreds of tons of debris have been removed from the crowded parts of London and the problem of removing and salvaging and stocking building materials and debris have given rise to difficult problems which the Borough and County Engineers are trying hard

to overcome. The Ministry of Home Security have issued circulars to 'systematise and help the process.



A.R.P. Decontamination and First Aid Post

A separate organisation deals with evacuation and the allied problems. The free distribution of air raid shelters is made by the Government directly and through local authorities in Great Britain. Several non-official committees such as the A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee also help this task in England.

Air raid precautions will cost the local authorities in the metropolitan area of London more in the coming year. A sum of just over £7,500,000 has been spent by them in the year ended March, 1941 while the estimate for the next year was £80,00,000. Fire services alone cost the London County Council £11,47,120 which sum was expected to exceed one million and three quarter in the year 1942.

The principles and methods adopted in planning and executing schemes of A.R.P. are fundamentally similar in all countries although details and the degree of thoroughness may vary.

In Germany, in Russia, in France, etc. and even in the peace-loving country of Switzerland A.R.P. Organisations have been set up long before the recent war. Precautions were afoot in France many years ago and a plan for evacuation was ready in 1930. The



German measures and Polish regulations regarding A.R.P. for Buildings and Roads have already been dealt with in Chapter VI. It is claimed that Berlin's air defence and A.R.P. are organised with considerable skill as also those of Moscow. The geographical and natural conditions have succeeded in helping Chungking to possess an efficient A.R.P. system.

The A.R.P. force in the Capital now total more than 25,000 men and the Air Defence Corps consists of 20,000 persons, all having received military and air defence training. The independent rescue corps, the stretcher-bearing battalion and the Air Raid Service Corps have been reorganized to render better service than before. Chungking has now more combat planes and anti-aircraft batteries than in the summer of 1941. During the past one year when no air raid occurred in Chungking, air defence authorities had been redoubling their efforts to improve the City's dug-outs, fire-fighting brigade, anti-gas equipment and other A.R.P. services. Air defence intelligence has been so improved that reports concerning the enemy aerial operations against Chungking can reach the Capital within one or two minutes and in five minutes enemy activities can be well detected.

The territorial Civil Defence of Portugal, looks after the defence of the Portuguese population as well as State property against air attacks. This organisation would be entrusted with the Portuguese Legion which has received military instructions for over five years.

It was estimated in June 1942, that there were 9,000,000 volunteers engaged in Civilian Defence activities in the United States.

Hundred million dollars have been set apart in the U. S. A., Budget 1942-43, for Civil Defence although general military opinion was that enemy air raids on U. S. A., will not be on a scale approaching anything like the raids on England or Europe.

Civil Defence has been organised in Burma. According to the Secretary of State for India, "active steps have been taken to organise Civil Defence on lines generally similar to those of Britain, adopted to suit local conditions, particularly in the Rangoon area." The organisation covered arrangements for the evacuation so far as may be necessary of urban population as well as the provision of shelter. The organisation was in charge of an officer who had experience in the Ministry of Home Security.

## The Warning System

The fundamental requirement of the A.R.P. organisation is an efficient warning system. The inhabitants should be appraised of the approach of enemy air-craft in time so that they could take cover, and the A.R.P. personnel also could be on alert, ready to meet any emergency. Generally the task of detection of approaching air-craft is entrusted to the Military Department, Coastal patrols and observer corps, aided by sound locators, etc. Sirens wail to warn (warning signal) the approach of the enemy and wail differently to signify that the raiders have passed ("All Clear").

In England the detection of the approach of enemy air-craft is organized and controlled by the R.A.F. which uses both R.A.F. personnel and voluntary part-time civilian spotters. The R.A.F. decides when, and in what areas, air raid warnings are to be given, and when the "all clear" (Raiders passed) signal is to be given. Their instructions are passed to the police, air raid warden headquarters, and other organizations concerned.

On the detection of enemy air-craft, a first or "Yellow" warning is given over a comparatively wide area; but this warning is a secret warning to the Civil Defence services and other official organizations, to stand by. The ordinary population is usually unaware of the existence of a "yellow" warning.

On the near approach of enemy air-craft to an area, a "red" warning is issued. The air raid sirens are then sounded. These are installed at fixed points, emitting a warbling or undulating note of a penetrating character. It is the more readily distinguishable since in wartime no other sirens are permitted. (Fire Engines and ambulances use bells).

In the early days of the war, ordinary civilians, whether at work or in their homes or in public places, were supposed to go to the nearest shelter when the air raid warning siren was sounded, and to remain there until the "all clear". However, since a single enemy plane cruising around can maintain an air raid warning for long periods, and also because essential work must be carried on even during serious raids, the siren warning ("red" warning) has come to serve most of the civilian population merely as a warning to be on the alert, ready to take appropriate steps if they should hear planes overhead or bombs falling near (i.e. by instantly taking shelter or throwing themselves to the ground). During the period of a "red"

warning, essential workers continue their work and those on urgent errands proceed on their way. On the other hand, those who have no pressing reason to be out of doors remain at home. School children are kept in the school premises if a siren warning is sounded during school hours, and are not released until the "all clear" is given. Neither pedestrians nor motorists are prevented from proceeding on their way.

Buses and trolley cars continue to operate unless the conductor decides that the immediate locality is being actually bombed, whereupon he may stop the vehicle. The passengers may then take shelter or proceed on foot. During the period of a "red" warning, railroad trains slow to a crawl. In theatres and cinemas, the "red" warning is announced, and patrons may either proceed to shelter or remain to watch the performance, which continues.

Large buildings of all kinds, maintain a service of "roof spotters" who, during an air raid, give warning within the building of the near approach of enemy air-craft. This warning is announced within the building by various means such as klaxons, bells, etc. On this signal all the occupants of the building are supposed to go to the shelters, but this rule is not everywhere enforced on all occupants; thus in some offices and factories essential war workers, or senior men, or all but young people, are allowed to continue work if they wish to do so.

Some large buildings transmit their internal warning to passers-by and neighbours by hoisting a flag.

The roof spotters announce when the internal warning is to be cancelled, i.e. when immediate danger has passed. All occupants then usually leave the shelters and return to work, even though the "red" warning is still in force.

The R.A.F. decides when the general "red" warning is to be cancelled. The sirens then sound the "all clear" to cancel the standby order to civil defence personnel, release school children from school if the normal leaving time has passed, to empty the shelters of the more nervous or cautious sections of the population, and to enable those who have continued their work to dismiss from their minds the need to remain alert for signs of imminent danger.

No system of air raid warnings can be infallible. In London, bombs have been known to fall before the "red" warning, and after the "all clear".<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Civilian Defence, June 1942, p. 13.

According to an eye-witness, the first raid on London occurred without the Air Raid Sirens going into action. It was after about 15 minutes that the Air Raid warning was given and by that time the raider had left the vicinity of London, after doing its dirty work. The only explanation he thinks justifiable, is that the raider must have flown very high from its base up to London where it suddenly came down, dropped the bombs and went away, giving no chance for an Air Raid Warning to be sounded.<sup>1</sup>

Similar system is adopted in India. There are four types of signals defined as :—(1) Grey Signal. (2) Yellow Signal. (3) Red Signal. (4) Green Signal. Grey Signal: this is information received by district authorities from other districts informing them that enemy planes have been sighted far off, this warning does not indicate whether the planes are likely to approach the area or not. (2) Yellow Signal : This message is sent out to Police, Fire Service and A.R.P. head-quarters when enemy plane movements are uncertain. There is no definite possibility that the planes would be over the area. This information is conveyed to the Wardens so that they may be on the alert. It is just possible that after an Yellow warning no raid may occur. The Public will not know of this. (3) Red Signal : When the enemy planes get near and the city is really within their bombing range, the red signal, the alert warning, is given. The sirens roar up, shriek and fall. This wailing sound continues for two minutes and the whole organisation gets into work. On hearing this A.R.P. volunteers will take their posts of duties and the public will take cover. (4) Green Signal : When the raiders have passed, an All Clear is given. The siren or hooter shrieks steadily at a high pitch for two minutes. The wardens reinforce this signal by ringing hand-bells.

The degree of success which will attend the working of the various A.R.P. services depends very largely on the receipt of information of a threatened raid before it actually occurs. It must be remembered that such notice will be only that aeroplanes are flying in the direction of the district and not that a raid will definitely be made on a specific portion or indeed on any portion of the district.

For this reason it is obviously unnecessary to sound air raid warnings to send people to shelters and to have all the A.R.P. personnel standing alert merely because hostile aeroplanes have been

<sup>1</sup> Metha: Indian War Effort Number.

observed flying in the direction of the district. To do so would be playing into the hands of the enemy by keeping them from their work by day or from their rest by night, while the enemy planes might never approach within a hundred miles of the borders of the district. The solution is to strike a mean between the two extremes and to hand on the warning to the general public of a particular area only when there is a reasonable likelihood that the area will be raided. This requires an organization for observing the movements of hostile planes, for the collection and collation of the information available, for the transmission of the requisite information to the authorities responsible for the issue of warnings and for the division of a Province into suitable warning areas.

The observer system is a purely military responsibility in India. The information will be passed on to the civil authorities for A.R.P. purposes. The warning area will ordinarily be the civil district. If, in any case, action by a District Magistrate is required for the passing on of any message, special instructions would issue.

As explained earlier, the object of splitting up a province into warning areas is to restrict the dislocation of normal activity to as small an area as possible. It follows that warning messages received in one district should not be repeated by the recipient to someone in another district. If the second district is threatened, it will be warned separately and the passing of any message outside the area to which it applies will only lead to unnecessary dislocation. There are, however, some exceptions to this. In certain parts of a province telephone communication do not exist and the telegraph system is restricted. Use will have to be made of railway telephone and telegraph circuits and of private systems belonging to the Irrigation and Hydel departments. Where such parts outside the district will require warning, separate instructions will issue to District Magistrates. According to A.R.P. Hand Book No. 5, issued by the U. P. Government, Grey message will be sent out to all districts as soon as information is received that hostile air-craft have been spotted. Yellow message will be issued approximately thirty minutes before the estimated time of arrival of hostile air-craft at the point of receiving the warning. Red message will be issued approximately ten minutes before the estimated time of arrival of hostile air-craft at the place receiving the warning. Its receipt will be the indication for the sounding of the public warning signals. Green message cancels the Red message and will indicate that the

hostile air-craft are moving away from the point receiving the message. White message cancels the Yellow message and will indicate that hostile air-craft have passed out of the area covered by half an hour's flying time from the place receiving the message. Blue message cancels the Grey message and will indicate that there is no further likelihood of attack for several hours.

These six messages will be transmitted from the hand-over point to the control-centre either by telephone or telegraph according to the facilities available.

### **Fire Prevention and Fire-Fighting**

An efficient fire-fighting organisation has now been found to be essential. In fact, fighting fire is the biggest job on the home front in Great Britain. Fires may leap up in a hundred places at a time. High explosives would thunder down. Water-mains may be broken and emptied, roads may be blocked by craters. Therefore 1,400 separate brigades were got ready in September 1940. Now the Home Secretary has authority over all the brigades of England and Wales. The Secretary of State for Scotland has similar authority over all the brigades in Scotland. The Ministry of Home Security operates through regional and sub-regional organisations. Many men have been called up for whole-time fire service and larger number for part-time service. As Herbert Morrison has emphasised, "the old proverb about prevention being better than cure is profoundly true of the battle of the flames." The army of fire-fighters has been greatly reinforced by the army of fire preventers, men and women who make it their business to put out the fire-bomb before it becomes ablaze. There are nearly two million people for fire-bomb fighting, enormously easing the work of the brigades.

**FIRE-PREVENTION:** As Herbert Morrison emphasises, "not a single house or business must be left uncared for" to watch and extinguish the fire-bomb before it can begin its destructive work.

All male British subjects normally working within the city of London may now be required to register for fire-fighting duties. The order applies to all British subjects working in the city between the ages of 16 and 60 except for some specially exempted classes.

For the present, women are not compulsorily drafted, but Government reserve the right to call them if necessary. But women can voluntarily undertake work at once.

Under the "Fire-watch" service scheme every man under the age of 50 will be on duty for 48 hours per month in the neighbourhood of his place of work. Such a scheme is essential if our cities should not get burnt by incendiary attack.

One general method, although it is not very practical, is to shovel sand or earth on to the bomb which has the effect of extinguishing the burning electron metal by choking or smothering, that is elimination of air, and also insulating the heat.

One of the modern methods, however, now available for fighting these bombs is the use of inorganic salts which become molten in contact with them and choke the combustion of the bomb casing by excluding the air on the same lines as using a large amount of sand or earth. These salts can be used in concentrated solution, discharged from a hand extinguisher, or in granulated form by means of a "bomb snuffer" that is an iron hood arrangement carried on the end of an iron bar or handle which is clapped bodily over the bomb and releases a large amount of the powder which is contained in a carton in the casing melted by the heat.

**FIRE-FIGHTING:** The fire-fighting service (the Fire Brigades) thoroughly reorganised is reconstituted as the National Fire Service, since August 18, 1941. The new service is composed of 33 fire forces operating under an entirely new system of control. A Force Commander has all men and pumps in a whole area under his direct control. Reserve camps are permanently manned and kept ready to move at a moment's notice, and are organised within reasonable distance of the main target areas. The National Fire Service has a quarter of a million men and is the largest fire-fighting unit in the world. The total membership of Britain's Fire Guard in residential areas and business premises amounts to several million men and women.

The fire prevention and fire-fighting services also extended to rural areas to guard Britain's cornfields with 12,500,000 acres under the plough—Britain's agricultural leaders have planned how to

protect her corn crops from Nazi fire-bombs. Among the safeguards which may be enforced is the cutting of fire-breaks or lanes, about 30 ft. wide, across the direction of the prevailing wind. The crops, cut green, would not be wasted, but made into hay or silage. Corn stooks can be protected by setting the rows as far as possible. Ricks would be set at least 15 yards apart and, preferably out in the field, to prevent enemy landings.

For dealing with outbreaks of fire, water-carts would be kept filled near the standing crops, and further reserves, stored in ricks or van covers supported on stakes.

Fire-fighters will arm themselves with stirrup pumps, fruit spraying machines, liquid manure carts, wet sacks and brooms, cut from timber and hedgerows. With fire-watchers A.R.P. Wardens and Home Guards in every parish, there will be no lack of manpower to safeguard the vital harvest.

### Roof Spotters

Roof spotters are essential to minimise the loss of output, of industries. As Mr. Arthur Greenwood admitted in the House of Commons, at the beginning, interruption of production during alerts had seriously affected output. Later the system of factory spotters reduced the amount of interference occasioned by the enemy action. Of course there remained loss due to actual damage or destruction of plant.

To circumvent stoppages or delay due to air raids either in factories or in offices, Roof Spotters are appointed. Except in the most exposed offices civil servants in London ignore the ordinary alert signal and carry on until the second emergency warning is circulated when raiders are actually near. Even then the staff continue to work in shelters. The general object is to enable essential work to be continued, visitors to be received and important conferences to be continued.

Drastic reduction in the time lost through air raids has already been achieved by the "roof spotter" system, according to reports collected from factories all over the country by the Ministry of Supply. Many thousands of hours have been saved and firms employed on important contracts have overcome difficulties which arose when intensive raids first began.



## Rescue and Demolition

Trained squads are necessary to "rescue living persons who are trapped in the wreckage, to recover the bodies of persons killed in the collapsed building, to temporarily shore up or otherwise provide support for the building so weakened that a further collapse is likely, which would endanger life or obstruct an important roadway, or where necessary to demolish it; and if necessary to salvage food stock buried under debris."

An idea of their organisation and working could be had by a study of the Rescue and Demolition Services in the London Region. The London County Council is responsible for the control and administration of Rescue and Demolition Service. The personnel of the service, which in the main is drawn from building trade operatives is organised on the following lines:—

Light rescue parties consist of ten men, exclusive of the driver, each party being made up of one leader or foreman, and three skilled men (tradesmen) and, in addition, six men responsible primarily for general assistance in the work of rescue, four of whom are trained to render first-aid.

Heavy rescue parties consist of eight men, exclusive of the driver, but including one foreman and three skilled men. Such heavy parties are provided with heavier type of equipment in order that they may undertake the more onerous tasks of rescue. In addition, arrangements are made on a county basis for a panel of contractors to deal with certain major damage beyond the scope of normal rescue parties. Such contractors are required to enter into prime cost contracts on the lines of the model contract prepared by the Home Office.

The various boroughs may be likened to the "front line" of this branch of civil defence. The officers-in-charge of each case are usually assisted by two or three technical deputies, three technical assistants, five clerical officers, including pay clerks and two clerks of works per depot.

The average number of depots per borough is roughly four.

In addition to the general supervision and organisation of service in the borough, the officers-in-charge are responsible for the recruiting, training, allocation and discharge of personnel,

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* A.R.P.M.3.

accommodation, complaints, liaison through group to region, and the framing of exercises and their direction.

The technical assistants are responsible to the officer-in-charge for details of training and exercises, and reports; attendance at incidents during raids or exercises, the technical inspection of damage, details of equipment, vehicles, etc.

The clerks of works at the depots are responsible to the officer-in-charge for the discipline, equipment, stores, welfare, bedding, etc. and also the direction and co-ordination of teams at an incident and examination of work carried out after a raid.

Generally speaking, in addition to bricklayers, carpenters and plumbers, the following trades are now accepted as "skilled" men:—Riggers, mattock men, steel erectors, demolition men, timber men, painters, plasterers.

The terms of service within the metropolitan area are at rates £4 5s. for leaders, £3 17s. for three skilled men in each party, and £3 per week for other men in the parties, the twenty-four hours' shift being in operation generally. One meal to the value of 1s. is given for each twenty-four hours on duty; leave at the rate of one day for each complete month of service; three blankets and canvas strip per bed for each man. Boiler suits have been provided with distinguishing badges in the London County Council area, but the provision of a uniform type of clothing is under consideration in that area.

Generally speaking, apart from normal training, the trades unions recognise that the following works should be carried out by rescue and demolition parties:—Work for men's comfort and protection and demolition works that will afford a "picture of bomb damage."

Individual training for leaders and others specially selected, is carried out in five schools in the London County Council Area (one in each group which also serves out-county boroughs).

Schools deal with 175 trainees per week, and some thousands of trainees have been passed through the schools. Instruction is organised by the L.C.C. with a chief instructor and each school has two assistant instructors.

The course extends for five days, from 9 a.m. to 5 p.m. daily. Trainees are provided with a syllabus, and diagrams of knotting, shoring, etc. so that when leaders return to depots they take with

them sufficient information to train their own teams. After five days spent at the schools, it is generally found that the trainees develop a good standard of morale and discipline, which is gradually being carried into the squads.

The schools provide training in knotting and lashing, and the use of derricks, sheer legs, scaffolding, shoring, raking and flying; jacks, gins, blocks and tackle; Rescue by lines, acetylene cutting apparatus; demolition by manual labour, and demolition by explosives. The syllabus of the course is revised from time to time, and an advisory panel of technicians has been formed to deal with this.

Team training is directly carried out by District Surveyors in charge of each borough. Co-ordination of training in and between groups is carried out by an officer, under the direction of Major Bax appointed for the purpose. Unlike individual training, it consists entirely of practical team work conducted out of doors by means of exercises. These exercises comprise :—

1. Squad training, to train men to work as a team under their leader and to teach leaders, qualities of leadership and control.
2. Squad exercises, exercises of personnel in team spirit, and detailed knowledge and familiarity with the squad exercises under their leaders. To teach proper loading and manning of lorries and also care and cleaning of equipment and speedy response to instructions.

General responsibility for training rests with regional headquarters. District Surveyors make details of programmes to suit local conditions. Operational orders of exercises should be kept confidentially amongst the technical staff until the time of the exercise. Exercises need careful consideration, and are done by preparing a suitable number of "set" incidents on a card which act as an indication for the officer acting as instructor in charge of the exercises and umpire. On the back of the card is entered the considered solution and any points the umpire or instructor has to stress at a conference after the exercise.

Umpires are detailed for each incident for the purpose of :—

1. Recording times taken.

2. Notes of action of the squads for discussion afterwards.
3. Making full lessons of exercise known to directing staff and rescue and demolition personnel.

Before exercise begins squads are assembled at depots and are indicated the general idea of the exercise.

\* Skeleton exercises are carried out in or near the depot as a prelude to exercises in the borough area. These skeleton exercises are also held in grounds of a training centre or school.

Exercises in streets are held at a convenient location, which may be within a borough in the form of a derelict or deserted structure and conducted on the same lines as the skeleton exercise, with the object of gaining detailed knowledge of movement in traffic, swiftness of action.

Collective exercises are held embracing two or three squads, acting in co-operation under the direction of a clerk of works who is responsible for joint action, to learn co-operation between leaders of the various squads, simplification of reports back to depots and report centres.

In order to avoid boredom, six physical training instructors have been appointed to supervise physical training on a voluntary basis. Organised games are carried out on a league basis (football, boxing, etc.). Instruction is given at the various depots on boot repairing, wireless, internal combustion engines, and other subjects.

Recent experience has shown that with regard to the removing of debris, it appears to be a safe rule that debris under which people are trapped should be disturbed as little as possible, and that tunnelling or cutting through debris, in order to reach the point where the victims are assumed to be, is usually a much more rapid and effective method of rescue rather than removing the debris from the top.

So long as there is the slightest possibility of casualties being rescued alive, no effort should be spared to accelerate their rescue.

The need for proper technical supervision of the work of rescue has been brought out, especially in the case of incidents of considerable size; and it may be desirable to depute and train one or more persons to undertake such a work.

Night work with the limited amount of light available is difficult as was anticipated. Sometimes the work is helped by the light of fires started; but in view of the enemy's practice of returning to bomb areas on fire or showing bright lights, it is unwise to use flares.

The risk of a heavy attack being followed up by a further one on the following night must always be borne in mind and arrangements should be made for adequate services, equipment and facilities to be available to compete with such an attack.

The sight of ruined homes and the stench of smouldering wreckage have once again become familiar in the towns of Exeter, Bath, Norwich and York. The important lesson to be learnt is that with these "Baedeker" raids on small towns of which no part escapes, local resources are overwhelmed and the officials and all members of the services are themselves victims. Assistance of all kinds from outside on a large scale is, therefore, essential. "Paper plans" which do not take this factor into account, are worse than useless—they give a false sense of security.

Recent experience of intensive attacks on target cities has shown that a very heavy burden falls upon the chief officers of a local authority during and after the attack. Local authorities will wish to do all that is possible after the attack. It is possible by advance planning to mitigate this burden. The A.R.P. Controller will be heavily engaged during the period of attack in keeping in touch with developments in the area and meeting demands on the Civil Defence Services. When attack is over he will have much to do in restoring these services and providing as quickly as possible against the risk of a second attack. It is therefore desirable that one person should be able to devote himself entirely to the Civil Defence Organisation and that another should be responsible for the numerous arrangements which have to be made immediately after an attack to provide for the welfare and maintenance of the population and the restoration of public services.

Mutual aid in Civil Defence matters among the local authorities has been planned by the urban districts in England. The schemes are intended to cover the operations of clearance and repairs to roads, sewers and bridges damaged by enemy action. These works are interdependent and must form part of one co-ordinated scheme. It does not cover the work of repair to gas, water and electric mains, or post office plant and work of repair to road craters.

A normal sewer repair gang will consist of a foreman or ganger, two timbermen, pipe-layers and five labourers with one lorry and driver, but inability to form complete gangs should not be a deterrent. When enemy damage occurs in particular locality, the local authority's Engineer will assess as soon as possible his own resources for dealing with it, including the resources of local contractors with whom he is in contact or who may be working in the neighbourhood; he will then form the mutual aid scheme and he will get into contact by telephone with the operating officer, explaining his requirements and supplementing his request. The Operating Officer will make immediate arrangements to supply his needs and will inform the Co-ordinating Officer above of the steps which are taken. Mutual aid of this nature should not be normally sent for distances exceeding 30 miles and arrangements whereby billeting is necessary should be avoided if at all possible.<sup>1</sup>

### Salvage and Storage

Salvage of property, removal of debris, and the clearance of site, go together and form essential parts of A.R.P. work in any city. Plans must be laid and organisations got up for these purposes in advance. The work of salvage in Britain covers the following items :—

1. Assistance to owners of damaged property to recover and transport their possessions.
2. The protection and storage of goods belonging to absentee owners, premises being rented for this purpose, if necessary.
3. The protection and storage of commodities insured under the Government War Risks (Commodity) Insurance Scheme in so far as owners may have been unable to protect and store such commodities for themselves.
4. The recovery and disposal of food and useful materials.
5. The recovery and disposal of material under the Salvage Scheme of the Ministry of Supply operated by local authorities; this scheme implies the sale of the material and the crediting of the proceeds to the person entitled, whether the original owner or the local authority to which the material may have been surrendered by the owner.

<sup>1</sup> J.I.M. & Cy. E., Vol. LXVII, No. 13, May 27, 1941, p. 296.

Such work of salvage is undertaken as far as possible by Civic authorities, Corporations and Municipalities and Local Bodies. Many of the purposes of salvage can be achieved only if the work is put in hand as soon as possible after the damage has been done ; if the whole of the operations necessary cannot be carried out at once, the first and most urgent stages should be undertaken. If the damage is so extensive as to put the necessary salvage beyond the resources of the civic authority request for help should be made to higher authorities and Provincial Governments, or to neighbouring Civic bodies with available resources. The Ministry of Home Security suggests preliminary conferences between these bodies so that help could be expedited in times of need. It further advises that higher authorities should be notified if the local authority does not intend to undertake even the first stages of salvage work.

The possibility of securing suitable premises for storage of salvaged property should be explored in advance and power should be obtained to requisition suitable premises during emergencies.

The removal of debris and the task of clearing sites disfigured by damage should also be immediately attended to, to prevent the psychological influence, these will create on the morale of the people. Authorities should make such an arrangement for this work as they deem advisable and practicable. Expenditure on the work may be included in the claims for A.R.P. grant of the Central and Provincial Government as is done in Great Britain.

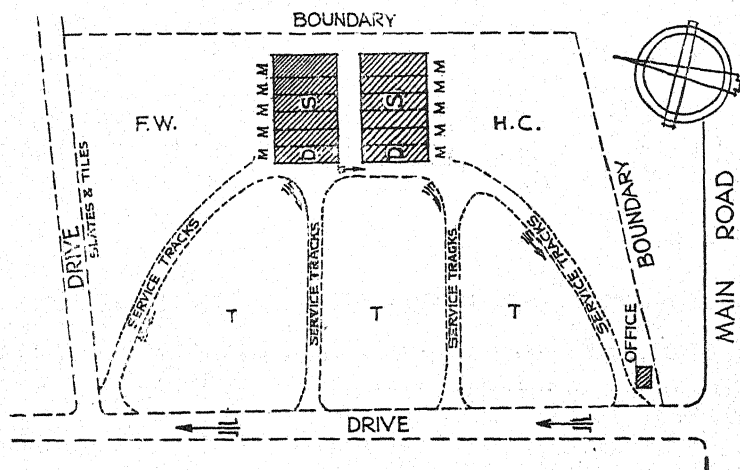
The difficulty of securing the necessary transport for the removal of materials, salvaged under the salvage scheme, may arise. The " stand by " rescue party lorries of the respective areas might be used. But this is not advisable for the routine house-to-house collection of salvage ; rather they should be used (i) at times of special appeal when the vehicles of the Cleansing Department would be unable to cope with the response, (ii) for the conveyance of collected material from local dumps to a collecting centre or to a railway. Such vehicles must be subject to immediate recall for A.R.P. duties if the necessity should arise.

Considerable attention should be paid and plans made for the storage of materials salvaged from war debris. The bulk of these materials to be dealt with consists of timber, metal, bricks, doors and windows, sanitary fittings, etc., and a reasonable system should be adopted that will end in preserving and utilising them to their best

advantage for repair and other work. Four main factors govern the problem. They are:—

1. Approximate amount of materials to be stored.
2. Sites available for this purpose.
3. The best methods of storing the various materials.
4. The most efficient and economical utilisation of labour employed upon the task.

The first is difficult to estimate as it depends upon the extent of bomb damage. And the sites chosen should be large enough to deal with present requirements. They must be decentralised as these dumps present targets for air-craft and are very vulnerable to incendiary bombs. The site chosen should be as remote as possible from targets of any military importance although its position must not prevent its accessibility to the haulage vehicles which are necessary to feed it and draw supplies from it. The adjoining diagram would give an idea of a typical site and lay-out.



A typical lay-out for salvage depot<sup>1</sup>

The best method of storing depends upon local conditions and building materials, but certain broad principles could be followed to obtain satisfactory results and efficient working. The service tracks might be ten to twelve feet in width and so laid out as to enable the collecting and delivery vehicles to draw up within reasonable distance of all the stacks of materials laid out at various

<sup>1</sup>T=Timber; M=Materials; H.C.=Hard Core; F.W.=Fire Wood; D=Doors; S=Sanitary fittings.



points on the site, in order to minimise the manhandling of these materials.

The service tracks should be constructed from hard core or stone rubble, from demolished houses. A corner of the site should be allocated to firewood dump, which although it cannot be neatly stacked as in the case of scantlings and boarding, should have its limits pegged out so that it shall not spread over the area, but tend to grow in height only. If space permits, it is a good idea to separate the small firewood, such as broken laths and match-boarding, etc., from the heavier materials, and thus form two stacks.

The areas marked with the letter T could be used for the stacking of timber (soft woods) in their various sizes. The individual lengths should be kept about half an inch apart, while layers are separated by members running at right angles to the main stack. These stacks may be taken up to a height of from twelve to fifteen feet and approximately twenty feet wide. In some cases they may be separated by stacks of salvaged bricks and if this procedure is not adopted they are then kept about forty feet apart in order to minimise the risk of fire spreading from one to the other. Partly filled sandbags should be placed at each individual stack to be at hand should an incendiary bomb fall upon the site adjacent to it.

The ground adjoining the existing drive which bounds the northern extremity of the site may be used for the storing of tiles, etc. in their various sizes and categories.

All hard core should be deposited in one place preferably south east corner. Like the firewood stack its boundary should be pegged out and the heap made to grow as far as possible in height only. If successive layers are made to form a ramp, the delivery vehicles can then back-up this ramp and so deposit their loads at or near the summit.

Brick, timber, firewood, tiles and hard core would occupy the maximum space and need no covering or housing. But doors, windows and window frames, sanitary fittings, etc., need more care in housing and storing. Sheds could be put up at the extreme end of the site opposite the main road and the different kinds of materials stacked in different bays. Doors, etc., should be so stacked as to be fit to be taken out easily when required and there should be ample

access for inspection and further storing. The size of these bays should be adjusted to suit the articles that may come up for storing.

It must be realised that the methods of stocking should not merely preserve the materials but give easy access to them and a passage way of at least 2 feet wide be left down the centre of the bays for this purpose.

Regarding the sheds they should be constructed from salvaged timber on the site and roofed with corrugated iron sheets. Separate stairs or portioned cubicles fit for the storing of metals after they have been sorted into their various groups, such as pipes, bends, gutters, sash weights, etc. should be provided. Salvaged lead should also be stored in the main shed, well rammed to form a compact mass.

Duties upon the salvaged site should be allocated with great care in order to obtain satisfactory results, combined with economy of labour. The following workers are essential ; store-keeper to keep stock-books up-to-date ; working ganger or foremen ; two men maintaining the stocking of sheds in proper order. Three men on timber and brick stacking, two men for metal sorting and storing and a driver and two men for sorting and delivering outgoing orders.

If materials on the site are allowed to collect without proper system of storage a great deal of additional labour would become necessary in order to carry out the sorting. The working of the salvage site will be greatly facilitated if the incoming materials are, to a certain degree, prepared on the demolition site, for storage. A close co-operation between those carrying out the demolition and those employed on storing the materials will minimise labour and greatly add to the success of the work.

For the purpose of stock keeping it will be a great help if each article in the sheds is marked with a small dab of red paint after being booked in. Local conditions will determine the procedure and details but the principles indicated may help in successfully tackling the problem.

The procedure to be adopted for salvage of property and clearance of debris should be as follows :—

Roads blocked by debris should be dealt with as soon as possible after the incident by the Road Repair Squad. Structures which

are dangerous to roads or adjoining property should receive immediate attention from the Rescue and Demolition Parties. Special salvage squads should be sent to major incidents to assist owners in the salvage of properties and furniture from dangerous structures. Arrangements must be made to remove and store furniture and other articles from property, scheduled for demolition, priority being given to cases where the furniture is exposed to the weather.

Regarding demolition, priority should be given to sites where the damage is most likely to have a depressing effect on the morale of the public and wherever possible work should not commence until the owner is consulted. Majority of the material salvaged should be taken to a special depot established for the purpose where detailed records of the materials salvaged should be kept by a store-keeper. In suitable cases the salvaged materials should be taken direct from the site for use in repairing adjoining property or the construction of domestic shelters. Comprehensive and up-to-date records of all matters relating to war damage has to be kept. Civic authority should act as the co-ordinating authority for the salvage and demolition scheme throughout the city.

While the removal of goods and articles is the responsibility of the owner, assistance may be given by the Local Authority in salvaging furniture and valuables. Where alternative housing accommodation to which furniture can be moved is not immediately available, a suitable building should be requisitioned under Defence Regulations and goods taken there for temporary storage. Local Authorities should look after the goods of owners who cannot be traced and protect them from further damage.

The Ministry of Home Security emphasises in its circulars that immediate attention should be given to the clearance of streets and the removal of debris from the building sites need not be undertaken as a matter of absolute urgency. Of course, regard should be paid to the depressing effects of mutilated buildings, if allowed to remain for lengthy periods. H.S.C. 209/40 states that regarding urgent demolition of dangerous structures the Engineer should inform an Officer of Police not below the rank of Inspector and start demolishing. In the interest of public safety the Engineer should take a broad view on matters of demolition.

To facilitate the removal of demolished materials from the site the practice recommended is the purchase, as far as is practicable, of the damaged properties, excluding land. Prices paid for small terrace type houses have varied from £10 to £15. Rescue and Demolition Parties have been used for such work, but the operational efficiency of the rescue services should not in any way be impaired by such work.

### War Damage Repair

We next have the problem of repairing structures damaged as the result of enemy action. This is work with which we have little previous experience. The Ministry of Home Security in Britain have issued an explanatory circular regarding War Damage Repair Procedure and several Borough Engineers have been adapting them to local conditions. Speedy execution is the fundamental requisite and would alleviate the distress and hardship of sufferers. As a result of experience it has been found advisable to carry out three separate surveys each for a distinct purpose. A preliminary survey should be carried out as soon as is practicable after the damage has occurred in order to carry out 'first-aid' repairs immediately. It will be a cursory inspection describing the property, location and type of damage. First-aid repairs should start immediately and must be given priority after rescue and demolition work has been carried out.<sup>1</sup> The object of this should be to render weather-proof as many houses as possible within the first twenty-four hours. Care should be exercised in selecting premises, the more seriously damaged having been evacuated, can be left for a later decision. First-aid repairs, generally speaking, would cover those "which will quickly render property, wind and water-tight, including roofing and window protection by felting and reglazing together with minor joinery work, and in some cases items necessary to maintain the sanitary services."

The methods to be adopted depend upon the nature of the structure and building materials in use. Windows should be attended to first, then doors and the roof. It will be advantageous to resort to retiling, than adopting temporary covering. Damages to plaster if it happens is generally on a large scale and only first-aid patching up should be attempted.

Essential buildings include hospitals, first-aid posts, schools, bakeries, food factories, water works, buildings used for Civil Defence

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Ministry of Health Circulars Nos. 1810, 1848 and 2144.

purposes, etc. These must be attended to first. Buildings needing permanent repairs should be attended to after other buildings have been rendered first-aid. Experience shows that prior contact with all local builders and contractors is vital in order that an efficient organisation of the maximum strength can be brought into operation with the minimum delay, and builders should be encouraged to keep in stock such materials as tiles, glass, plaster board, timber scantlings, brick, etc.

It is preferable to have the materials on hand locally. Builders and Local Authorities' repair staffs should report at the depot as soon as possible after damage has occurred, and receive instruction "chits" to proceed with the repairs of groups of damaged properties (from information gleaned from the preliminary survey), the aim being to render weatherproof as many houses as possible within the first twenty-four hours. To achieve this, care should be exercised in deciding the order in which repairs should be carried out, as the more seriously damaged houses having been evacuated, can be left for a later decision. For instance, it will be found that a number of houses having damaged windows and slight roof damage can be rendered habitable within the same period as, say, one house which requires complete retiling.

As the whole work is carried out at a rapid pace by a large number of contractors, it is necessary to keep as close a check as possible on the repair instructions issued, to avoid unnecessary overlapping. For this purpose a cross-indexed record of all properties dealt with, set out under street names and contractors, would be found beneficial in checking accounts and compiling the Schedule of Properties. In view of the different methods adopted by builders, it is advisable to produce some standard form of time sheet for issue to all builders and contractors, which will enable the clerical side of the work to be simplified when preparing accounts.

A second survey indicating particulars of damage to roofs, walls, floors and contents, etc. should be made for carrying out permanent repairs. Since numerous houses of varying sizes and types with a variety of damage have to be dealt with it is necessary to adopt some system and prepare an "omnibus" specification, covering materials, workmanship, and schedule of repairs. A

combined job sheet and tender form for each property should then be prepared wherein the contractor should state the lump sum price for the permanent repair and the number of days in which he can complete the job. To expedite all these, additional staff may be found necessary and civic authorities should make provision beforehand.

To facilitate war damage repair the civic area should be divided into wards and representatives of the local building industry should confer together with the civic authorities, and each allotted their respective zones. In some cases owners would like to assume responsibility for their own repairs. A list of such property should be prepared in advance, and kept with the authorities. Care should also be taken to discover frivolous reports of war damage.

In the case of 'permanent' repairs a second survey of each property should be made. A schedule of repairs should then be prepared to each property. This should embody a brief specification of the work to be done together with approximate quantities, *i.e.*, the number of new tiles required; the number of chimney stacks or pots to be rebuilt; the area of plaster to walls and ceilings to be renewed; the number of shades, doors, etc. to be repaired or replaced; and the number of squares of glass, with approximate sizes; from this schedule an estimate of the cost of repairs should be prepared.

The practice of inviting competitive tenders may prove unsatisfactory, as has been done in some English Boroughs, owing to the time involved and the natural desire of the Builders to provide for every contingency. In the interest of economy and efficiency, all repairs should be executed on a common basis as allowed for first-aid repairs in Great Britain. This will be more equitable to owners. All repairs must be supervised by the technical staff of the Engineering Department of the Civic authority.

In England, the power to carry out first aid repairs on private property is derived from the Housing (Emergency Powers) Act, 1939, which became operative in September of that year.

The Act allowed a local authority to enter upon a dwelling without notice for the purpose of carrying out repairs necessary to preserve the health of the occupants, if the owner was unable or unwilling to do so. The view has always been taken here that if an

owner has not commenced repairs by 8 o'clock on the morning following a raid, then he is unwilling or unable to do so.

Bombed British cities solved the problem of first aid repair by careful planning in advance. Bristol, for instance, so far as materials were concerned, spent £4,000 on all kinds of goods likely to be required and they were kept as a stand-by. A senior member of a large and reputable firm of contractors was put in charge in conjunction with the co-operation of officials of each of the six A.R.P. divisions of the city for repair work. All building contractors in the city were invited to become members of a panel to carry out first aid repairs, working on the Ministry of Home Security's Prime Cost Contract.

### A.R.P. Medical Organisation

To deal with Air Raid Casualties a carefully evolved medical organisation is necessary and most countries threatened by air attack have evolved some organisation or other. It is found that the types of injuries to be expected in air raids can be broadly classified into four groups :

1. Lacerated wounds ; they may be very severe and extensive.
2. Crush injuries : the result of falling masonry.
3. Burns : a natural result of incendiary attack.
4. Shock : usually present in almost every case.

Even the relatively large number of hospitals in England found their resources taxed during raids. Arrangements should be made to set up emergency hospitals possibly even in tents and to staff them. All available doctors should be mobilised for this purpose and the experience of the great Indian Influenza epidemic called upon when popular organisations provided large numbers of trained personnel who administered treatment under skilled guidance.<sup>1</sup>

The Punjab Government has proposed to establish a temporary emergency medical service. The principal duties of the members of this service will be to assist civil surgeons in their work on the medical side of A.R.P. and Civil Defence generally.

<sup>1</sup> A.R.P. C. C. Report.

As for the treatment of casualties the Government of India have a scheme under which casualties can be evacuated by hospital trains from any heavily raided area to hospital areas in the Central Provinces and Berar, should the need arise. Calcutta has provided 7,153 beds for air raid casualties of which about 2,901 were ready for immediate use in December 1942. This is one bed for every 294 of the population approximately. As the casualties in all the five Christmas raids on December 1942 were comparatively light, the casualty organisation was not seriously tested.<sup>1</sup>

The British system has stood the test for over two years and its chief features are worth noting to evolve an efficient organisation for India. The British have evolved a regional hospital administrative set-up for the entire nation which they hope to carry over into the peace-time future. In London there are nine medical schools and the teaching hospitals for the medical school is the central sector hospital for an area extending about fifty miles out into the rural country on a pie-shaped sector basis, some broad and some narrow. All the hospitals in a given sector are commanded by the hospital chief at the sector or apex hospital in London. Every day he gets telephone messages of how many beds are available in each of the twenty or thirty hospitals in his sector. Picture this during ninety consecutive nights of *blitz*, as they had during terrible winter in 1940. He picks up his telephone and he says to a hospital here or there "I am sending you a hundred patients". "There are no questions raised as to who will pay the bill or we will take it up with the board of trustees" or this is a private hospital or we will call you back in a half hour or we have not got the beds. This is *blitz* war medical administration and it works to perfection.

Sir Girling Ball, who is the Sector Chief for the hospitals in sector III, radiating from St. Bartholomew's in London, St. Bart's as it is known, has about five hundred nurses either registered or student. Peace-time nurses were sent out, as a rule, to the sector peripheral hospitals. The nurses are aided by trained assistants and auxiliaries or volunteers. If the hospitals in the outlying areas are not large enough to take care of the patients, evacuated to them, they build one-story cottage huts adjacent to the hospitals.

<sup>1</sup> The "Hindu" 9-1-43.



According to Sir Girling the main problems in hospital administration under the *blitz* are :—

First is personnel : the great difficulty is staffing the base hospital, that means the outlying hospital, with medical, nursing and lay personnel, including cooks, orderlies, masseurs and other such workers. Another problem again under personnel, is the billeting of nurses and others transferred out to the rural hospitals. In the country there is no housing available to care for the added personnel of the upgraded hospitals.

Second is equipment : there is great difficulty in securing adequate equipment, such as operating tables, x-ray and laboratory supplies and kitchen equipment for upgraded hospitals. In London in peacetime, there were just over twenty-one thousand voluntary hospital beds that means private hospital beds ; not government hospital beds, and seventeen thousand London County Council beds; these are public beds. In general the National Government pays practically all the *blitz* hospital costs.

Up to a figure of thirty thousand casualties a day was forecast, when actually they had somewhere around three hundred. They overestimated by one-hundredfold, but they never regretted it for a moment and they continually said that to have had the opposite situation occur would have been tragic, even criminal. Then comes the problem of transportation of patients. Lorries or trucks are needed and there is a great need for more X-ray and pathology and surgical requisites and equipment for kitchens. Each hospital in the sector retains its own autonomy, and this is true in a general way throughout England. Each hospital has a medical officer, a lay superintendent and a matron and each of these has a deputy.

Regarding *blitz* hospital financing the Ministry of Health pays for the casualty beds used. The hospital pays for the civilian sick. The Minister of Health pays for all transfer of patients from the central to the outlying hospitals. If there is a crowding from the *blitz*, the civilian patients are sent out of the hospital to their homes or are crowded to make room to meet the need. At the receiving end of the hospital there must be a sub-distributing office with a wall chart and spot map, pins indicating the bed which are full and which are available and what operating room facilities are available at the moment. This brought up the question of the operating room being

underground and protected so that a doctor could go on operating if the rest of the hospital was *blitzed* away. In Liverpool there was a hospital, a thousand-bed hospital, where there remained hardly anything that was less flat than a table top. All this happened one night in May 1940, when the city was heavily hit and the hospital was made just a shambles.

It is most vital to have a carefully planned resuscitation room where the most critically ill or dangerous patients will be taken. A few other administrative *blitz* hospital matters are of interest. The siren broadcast is not sent to the wards or rooms where the patients are living or sleeping.

It is important to have an emergency diesel engine system of electric lighting for the central part of the hospital used in *blitz* casualty service to supplement the regular electric current and the normal lighting if that should be blitzed away, and that often happens. The diesel engine system should be connected with all reception rooms, resuscitation rooms, operating theatre and the elevator. It is vital to have main X-ray services and electro-cardiographs in the cellar and well protected in addition, and to have mobile X-ray services that can be taken to the bedside.<sup>1</sup>

### Food and Drink, Clothing and Cash

One of the most urgent needs of the blitzed areas is good and stimulating beverages. Recently Her Majesty the Queen gave a convoy of fully equipped vans to rush food and drinks to towns which had been subjected to severe bombing. These have proved a great boon to the stricken populations and are named Queen's Messengers. This has been followed by a new organisation, "Blitz trailers". The trailers are small, easily managed, are capable of being drawn through the streets during a bombardment, if need be, by man-power instead of the motor power for which they are actually intended. One trailer is being sent to each Civil Defence regional area to be loaded up with hot soup, tea, blankets, clothing, anything immediately needed by people bombed out of their homes.

Eighteen food-flying convoys, each costing £5,000 are stationed at key points throughout Britain ready to rush hot meals to any blitzed area.

<sup>1</sup> Civilian Defence, Nov. 1942.

Each convoy will have eight vehicles—one 350-gallon water tanker, two lorries each containing 6,000 meals (tea, wholemeal bread, margarine and vegetable stew), two kitchen equipment lorries and three canteens. Insulated containers keep the stew hot. The vehicles have been specially designed for mobility. They can cross rough ground and bomb craters. Five despatch riders on motor cycles will travel with each convoy to maintain communication with stricken areas. Each convoy will have a staff of thirty.

Mobile kitchens also play a very helpful role in raided areas of England and Scotland. They can be rushed to the scene of distress and provide meals for those who have lost their homes and means of cooking. They are rushed to the blitzed areas soon after a raid. They supply tea, coffee, sandwiches, cakes, cigarettes almost anywhere where they are needed and do wonderful work in the big cities. They are extremely helpful especially to the A.R.P. personnel to carry on their diverse tasks in the bombed area.

Feeding arrangements are also made for children in the vulnerable zones. Young children eat their lunch at feeding shelters in London.

Private individuals too help in providing food in times of distress. Miss Violet Markham, well known social worker, set up a canteen at her own expense in a very poor neighbourhood just outside London, doing most useful work. It serves shelter folk night and early morning, as well as homeless people, and those who find it difficult to cook owing to shortage of gas and water. Tea and sandwiches are specialities, a large cup of tea costing a penny and a large sandwich the same price. It is staffed almost entirely by voluntary workers.

Clothing and comforts for bombed-out people are provided for: especially clothing for children. The National Council of Girls' Clubs, London is doing good work in this connection. It received 8,000 garments for distribution among the bombed-out children.

Relief for air raid victims in the shape of food, clothing and cash for small immediate necessities is distributed through the civic heads in Britain; grants are also made towards the cost of funerals and the removal of furniture to new homes—the grants are given for immediate distress arising from enemy

bombing—the policy and administration of the Lord Mayor's Air Raid Distress Fund are now carried out by a council made up of representatives elected by the Civic Heads in each Civil Defence region throughout the United Kingdom with the Lord Mayor of London as Chairman. A local Committee set up in each region allocates grants to such civic authorities as may need assistance for the relief of air raid distress in the respective areas. The fund amounted to more than two million pounds in January 1941 and grants amounting to £800,000 were already made.

Government officers sealed a number of rice godowns in the Calcutta area to keep stocks in the places where they are known to be scarce and to prevent unregulated sales in a panic so that planned measures may be taken immediately to ensure distribution to essential services and the public markets.

To ensure adequate supply of food grains and other articles various measures may become necessary. Scare may lead to the closure of shops. It was decided therefore that shops, godowns and stores in the Calcutta area dealing in rice, wheat, atta and certain other commodities which may remain closed after a period of 24 hours after the all clear signal is given may be forcibly broken open by certain categories of officers. Under an order published in the *Calcutta Gazette*, Government Officers are empowered to take possession of the goods lying in such shops and dispose of them in such a manner as they consider expedient. Shops dealing in flour, dals, mustard oil, salt, coke and matches also come under its scope.

To provide relief for the middle classes whose food problem was rendered difficult owing to the exodus of domestic servants, it was proposed to start restaurants on the model of the Lyons corner house in England at ten or more centres by the Calcutta Relief Committee which was formed with Dr. B. C. Roy as the President soon after the Christmas *blitz* and the net-work of such popular canteens was proposed to be completed within a week's time.

A scheme for the supply of cooked food to 5,000 persons daily, who might be rendered homeless in the event of an air raid, was adopted at a meeting of the Delhi Municipal Committee. The scheme involved a recurring expenditure of Rs. 20,000 per month and a non-recurring expenditure of about Rs. 15,000.

In Calcutta 15 relief centres were established with branches for the homeless. These included a special centre for unaccompanied women and another for orphaned children. Accommodation was available for over 5,000 and this was being expanded. In addition there were seven kitchen centres equipped and supplied with food-stuffs sufficient to serve 22,000 persons for fourteen days. Cooked meals were sent by lorry from the kitchens to the relief centres. To cope with the problem of persons leaving the areas by road, a large number of camps were organised, staffed, provisioned and supplied with medical comforts along the main roads available, leading out of the area.<sup>1</sup>

### Post-Raid Information

The Ceylon Government has introduced a post-raid publicity scheme for giving efficient news to the Public and Press within one hour after the all clear signal. They have also organised an Essential Service Labour Corps consisting of about 5,000 educated men to be ready to do any work in case of emergency that might arise after air-raids. The establishment of information bureaus in the United Provinces for post-raid purposes has been decided upon by the Civil Defence department of the U. P. Government. The Government have felt the necessity of forming a separate department in the A.R.P. Organisation which would be able to keep members of the public informed about the whereabouts of their missing relatives and friends in case of an air-raid. In order to facilitate such enquiries, Government have decided that each A.R.P. organisation which would be able to keep members of the public informed about the whereabouts of their missing, every area should have an information bureau. These information bureaus will, in each case, maintain contact with and collect information about their own areas from the Central Information Bureau in each town and the police stations in their respective areas. A Central Office and 22 sub-offices were opened in Calcutta when Jap raids commenced, each with a paid supervisor, though reliance is placed mainly on volunteers for running the service. A women's section has been established with branches in each sub-area.

An essential requisite for post-raid information is correct identity of the person living in the raided area. Various devices have

been adopted. Metal Identification Tags have been distributed to the school children of Rutherford, New Jersey. The tags are worn at all times as bracelets or on neck ribbons, and carry serial numbers corresponding to those in a central file. Rutherford also has made identification tags available for children of pre-school age.

Finger prints have great value and are advocated for Civil Defence identification work. There are over 36,000,000 official cards in the Identification Division of the Federal Bureau of Investigation in U. S. A. There is a need for finger printing at least the Civil Defence personnel and those engaged in essential services.

The Government of Bengal have impressed on the public the advisability of purchasing identity discs. In a Press Note they say, in the unlikely event of an individual becoming a casualty during air-raid, an identity disc is frequently of great assistance in enabling one's relatives and friends to be informed as quickly as possible, as a complete record is kept of all such discs sold. Employers of Labour are strongly advised to purchase them for all persons in their employment.

### A.R.P. for Animals

At the request of the Home Office, the National A.R.P. Animals Committee has been formed for organising protection for animals against air raids. The aim of the Committee is to have a guard for every street who will be the contact officer between the first-aid posts and animal owners. Through his agency, restoration of animals lost or strayed in air raids will be simplified, and it will be the duty of the guard to make known to animal owners the address of the nearest first aid posts and to give information regarding A.R.P. for animals. Under this scheme each registered animal will be given an identity disc, which, apart from serving its A.R.P. purposes, will enable lost dogs and cats to be restored to their owners. It is suggested that this work is eminently suitable for the local women's organisation, as the duties of guards are not onerous and they will not be called upon to handle injured animals.<sup>1</sup>

The National Air Raid Precaution Animals Committee Hospital has been established to deal with animal 'casualties'. Animal ambulance stretchers are used to carry dogs, etc.

In Manchester, the National A.R.P. Committee for animals have opened a depot and registration branch; voluntary workers visit houses in all parts of Manchester and Salford and prepare a register of domestic pets. Every registered animal is issued with a split ring and identity disc to identify the pet when injured or dead.

Gas drill for dogs has also been prescribed. The first point about gas drill for dogs is to get the animals used to seeing their owners and family wearing gas-masks. Unless this is done, the dog might disobey orders coming from such a strangely disfigured human image, especially on an occasion of quick movement and a certain amount of excitement. Secondly, the dog should be accustomed to the occasional use of its gas-proof kennel, or box, which has a wire net door covered with wet blankets or sheets (not sodden or dripping) if nothing more elaborate. Dogs will rarely consent to wear gas-masks.

The size of a gas-proof shelter is also determined. It appears that a medium-sized dog breathes out 0.3 cubic foot of carbon dioxide per hour. Taking healthy air as containing 0.05 per cent. of carbon dioxide, the dog requires 1,500 cubic feet of air per hour and, therefore, for a one hour's period in its shelter, 160 cubic feet of air space. A man breathes out about twice as much carbon dioxide as a dog. One useful hint is to place soda lime in a receptacle in the shelter during a gas raid, as it absorbs carbon dioxide.

The possibility of an animal becoming hysterical in the street should be avoided both in the interest of the public and of the owner.

A.R.P. Schemes for animals are also under way in Indian cities. In one city the area is divided into 21 A.R.P. Divisions with one first aid post for animals in each division. Each post is manned by a veterinary assistant surgeon. The veterinary hospitals in the city are to serve as base hospitals for treating animals severely injured. A mobile first aid unit is also provided. Animal guard officers are to be appointed to help animal owners and to give instructions on A.R.P. measures. Leaflets in English and in local vernaculars containing instructions to animal owners have also been prepared for distribution.

Petrol rationing has necessarily increased the draught animal population in the city. Trenches for persons engaged in looking

after the animals, should be situated as near as possible to the stables. Generally stables should be protected from splinters by strengthening the existing baffle walls. The doors and the windows should have either baffle walls or internal traverse walls in front of them. No inflammable material should be used in the construction of stables. A yard should be provided to collect animals leading from the gangway in case of emergency. For ten horses a yard 50' x 50' is usually sufficient. Hay should be spread in limited quantities before the animals and should not be stored overhead. Hay should be stored in a corner of the yard taking advantage of the two sides of the wall.

Immediately on hearing the siren the drivers of hack victorias should stop the conveyance and request the passengers to take cover in the nearest shelter. He should drive further to a by-lane or emergency siding and immediately release the animal which should be tied by a rope hung round the neck. The ears should be plugged with prepared ear-plugs from cotton wool and the food bag should be given to the animal. A knee halter should be put on the horse over the knee to prevent movement of the animal. The conveyance should be wedged with wooden boards. The driver should then take to shelter himself. The bullocks should be tied by a rope round the base of the horn; the other end should be tied to a yoke or wheel after it is wedged; ears should be plugged and some hay spread in front of them. A halter should be put on to prevent movement.

Do not tie a horse by the reins to the wheel or hub.

Do not tie cattle by a rope to the nose string.

Do not attempt to gallop horses to a place of safety.

Do not tie animals to lamps posts, traffic beacons and area railings.

Pets should be fastened by leather strips and kept indoors in a safe place. Ears should be plugged with cotton wool and well fitting muzzle put on. In no circumstances should a dog be allowed to stay out. If the animals are restless, a dose of sedative mixture should be given. Never attempt to take a dog with you to a public shelter. The animal should be fastened in a strong room in the building.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Safety News, March 1943, pp. 115-116.



A Defence of India Rule empowers Central and Provincial Governments to destroy animals which have been seriously injured or whichever dangerous are at large or out of control as a result of enemy action. The Government Press Note, however, indicates that it is not the intention that the rule should be used except in cases of absolute necessity. The Corporation authorities at Madras, however, went one step further. The Zoo animals were shot dead to prevent the possibilities visualised by this Defence of India Regulation, while we are told that in the vast zoo of London precautions to follow Madras example are only kept ready although the City has been suffering the *blitz* for over two years.

A similar incident is reported from Australia; 3 lions, 1 leopard, and 1 tiger have been ordered to be shot under air raid precautions regulations in Sydney in January 1942. Because of danger to residents should the animals get loose in air raids. The animals were valued at £500 sterling and were owned by a circus which was prevented by petrol restrictions from leaving Sydney and going into the country.

### **Unexploded Bombs, A. A. Shells and Crashed Air-craft**

Provision to deal with unexploded bombs, unexploded A. A. shell and crashed air-craft should be made. The work should be entrusted to trained specialist parties. The position and type of any of these occurrences should be immediately reported. All A.R.P. personnel should send relevant facts to help the specialist parties to reach these spots quickly.

#### **UNEXPLODED BOMB :<sup>1</sup>**

Its immediate vicinity should be cleared of all persons. Houses in the danger zone should be evacuated and the public in the street should be warned. Traffic should be diverted from the zone.

" In open spaces the danger zone of an exposed unexploded bomb may possibly extend up to a range of 1,200 yards. If the

<sup>1</sup> The problem of detecting and destroying bombs is receiving considerable attention in America. In New York, N. J., U. S. A., the Bomb Squad carried out considerable experiments with models to master the technique of detecting the dangerous contents of bombs and successfully destroying them. The diagnosis is done by a listening device or by a powerful portable fluoroscope for photographing the inwards. (The " American City," Aug. 1941, p. 15).

bomb has penetrated to such a depth as to be invisible, a minimum of 250 yards should be allowed. Crowds should be discouraged from congregating even at these distances."

In built-up areas, the effect of blast varies greatly and the following precautions are recommended :—

1. In ordinary straight streets, the houses covering a frontage of 100 yards on either side of the bomb should be cleared of occupants.

In the remaining houses of the street the inhabitants should be instructed that, if they remain indoors, they should keep to rooms on the unexposed side of the house until advised that the danger has passed.

2. In crescents and squares all houses within 200 yards of the bomb should be cleared.

In the remaining houses of the crescent or square the inhabitants should be instructed that, if they remain indoors, they should keep to rooms on the unexposed side of the house until advised that the danger has passed.

3. In all cases every window in all houses in the street, crescent, or square concerned, should be opened as wide as possible until the danger has passed. If a person in the danger area has to leave his house, he should so far as possible move in a direction away from the bomb, and use any cover afforded by intervening houses.

#### A.A. SHELLS :

Shells from A.A. Guns may fail to burst and be found unexploded on the ground where they would remain as "dud shells" until removed by trained specialist parties. Care should be taken to ensure that they are not tampered with by unauthorised persons.

#### CRASHED AIR-CRAFT :

Crashed air-craft, or those forced to land, may catch fire. This may cause fuel tanks to explode and any unexpended

machine-gun bullets, to be discharged. The heat may also detonate bombs contained in the fuselage, and, even in cases when no fire has resulted, bombs hidden from view might be set to explode after an interval of time.

In all cases, therefore, of air-craft which have been forced to land or have crashed, the precautions to be followed are the same as for unexploded bombs given above.

### **Compensation for Air Raid Damage to Civilians**

A noteworthy fact among the precautionary measures adopted in Great Britain against air danger to civilians, is the provision of compensation for the damage done to their person and property by enemy action. A scheme of insurance was prepared soon after the declaration of hostilities, for civilians injured in air raids. It was amended in July 1940. This amended scheme of compensation for physical injury sustained by civilians as a direct result of warlike operations, had the effect of bringing the whole civil population under its purview against injury caused by air raids or invasion, if they were gainfully employed at that time.

The amendment increased the allowances and pensions to meet the rise in the cost of living.

A married man with two children was to be given fifty-three shillings eleven pence weekly, if totally disabled.

Within a short time, about 127 pensions were granted under the scheme, either for serious disablement or to widows. The Ministry deals so expeditiously with pensions that in one case the widow of an air raid warden to die on duty received her pension within twenty-four hours of his death.

Compensation is also given for essential clothing and furniture lost by raid victims. A maximum of £30 for clothing, £50 for furniture was fixed. These were relaxed and increased. By the beginning of 1941 a free insurance scheme was formulated covering all civilians who suffered air raid damage. As outlined by Sir Kingsley Wood, Chancellor of the Exchequer in the House of Commons in February 1941, "every householder in Britain will receive free compensation from the Government upto £200 for air raid damage to clothing, furniture and other household goods, under

the new Government free insurance scheme. Upto another £100 free compensation will be paid for wife and £25 for each child."

In addition to these free grants, the proposal has been made that people should be able to insure at low rates, namely, at one per cent. upto £2,000, 1½ per cent. from £2,000 to £3,000 and at 2 per cent. from £3,000 to £10,000.

The finances of the State do not warrant such schemes for India, but some provision must be made for protecting the interest of those who are compelled to stay on at their work, and for their dependents. Those who must stay in vulnerable areas to help the maintenance of essential services or other necessary work should be brought within the scheme of insurance and their employers made responsible to pay, with the assistance of Government, if absolutely necessary. Otherwise people will leave their posts and there will be a breakdown in the supply of essential services as well as in production, for unlike in industrialised countries, those people would adjust and not fear to face hardship, and go back to land.

Equally necessary is the organisation to record and notify casualties in case of an emergency and for the disposal of the dead in an enemy air raid. As has been suggested by the Government of Bengal<sup>1</sup> this organisation should be responsible for identification, transportation and disposal of bodies and of valuables found on bodies, and for decontamination of gassed bodies before burial.

The organisation must keep in close touch with the A.R.P. organisations and the hospitals, casualty services, report centres, and wardens, and have a suitable staff and maintain a sufficient number of vehicles for transport of bodies and the necessary registers.

The Government of Bengal have requested the Calcutta Corporation to draw up a comprehensive scheme on the lines suggested for the Municipalities in the vulnerable areas in the district of Hooghly, Howrah and 24-Parganas and in Asansol and Chittagong. It is hardly necessary to add that the scheme should be extended to all vulnerable areas and suitable sites selected to cremate the dead.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Vide "Mail", 30-8-1941.

<sup>2</sup> Even coffins were made and kept ready in some towns of England before the severe Nazi blitz over the country.

The siting of cremation or burial grounds is a problem that needs careful consideration under war conditions. During the last war due to lack of foresight this problem created difficulties and complications. The fact is that cremation and burial have to be done with sufficient foresight as otherwise it hinders the growth and healthy development of cities. It will be found very difficult, for instance, to deal with war graveyards, when questions of planning and development are taken up by planning authorities for post-war reconstruction. The areas, therefore, must be zoned now itself. If all dead bodies are cremated the matter would be simplified. Until burial is allowed, grounds should be reserved and their zones given due consideration under war conditions, to avoid difficulties in the towns of to-morrow.

### Women and A.R.P.

Women have as important a role to play in Civil Defence as men. Indeed they are superior to men for certain essential services after a raid, such as nursing, feeding, etc. In India women A.R.P. workers are essential because the *purdha* is in vogue in many vulnerable cities and towns.

Women in England are doing a great deal to help A.R.P. and their work indicates the wide scope that lies before them.

When the present war broke out, the Women's War Service Organisations quickly sprang into being under the popular abbreviated titles of A.T.S., W.A.A.F.S., and W.R.E.N.S. The A.F.S. and A.R.P., moreover, gave women scope as telephonists, air raid wardens, air raid shelter marshals, and as ambulance drivers. Women to-day are also employed as "roof-spotters" and women air pilots are permitted to fly newly-built air-craft from the factories to the air stations. Members of the A.T.S., specially trained at an artillery school, are working on the kinetheodolites in conjunction with the A.A. batteries. The work requires a high degree of skill and accuracy and courage, and is often carried out under conditions of actual warfare.

In addition to ambulance driving, telephone operating and other war-time duties, the Women's Mechanical Transport Corps now have their own despatch riders. These girls keep communications going during air raids, etc.

One of the most interesting developments of Women's Voluntary Services during the past year has been Housewives' Service, which now has a membership of 204,000 women all over the country. They have enrolled to train for duties during and after air raids caring for children, practising elementary first-aid, providing hot drinks for A.R.P. personnel, assisting in emergency rest and feeding centres. For fire-fighting, each member keeps buckets of sand and water ready in her house.

Many of our women would, however, find it difficult to do all these kinds of work but many of them could be easily trained for several of them. For effective education of the public—which cannot ignore the housewife in the Indian home, trained Women A.R.P. workers are essential in this country.

In certain cities a separate Women's A.R.P. Service has already been created, composed of, and officered entirely by women, who perform the duties similar to those performed by the members of the services mentioned above, except that there is no corresponding engineering section.

A note explaining the nature of work which will be undertaken by the Women's A.R.P. Services in one city, says that, "primarily their duty at present would be to help men wardens in their educational work by dealing with women. In places where *purdha* is in vogue, women could be successfully employed. Women's volunteer services and Ladies' work parties are being approached to help in the recruitment of these guards."

The Women's Air Raid Precautions Corps has been started in Madras and other cities.

Their aims and objects are to instruct women of all castes and creeds in self-help and in the rudiments of Air Raid Precautions, so that in times of emergency they may be of assistance to themselves and their families and also to the A.R.P. Organisation. The aims and objects of the organisation were recognised and approved by the A.R.P. Area Committee, and financial assistance was allotted towards expenditure incurred in connexion with Corps' activities. The Corps is under the command of the Commandant and is organised in two branches each with its Branch Leader, one for propaganda and organisation and the other for instruction. These branches are again sub-divided into Divisions, each Division

having its own District Leader and the Instructresses. This has been done to ensure that no woman has any great distance to travel to gain information and help. The Commandant has an Advisory Committee consisting of the Branch Leaders and ladies representing every community in the city.

Lectures are given in the vernaculars in a simple form for all to understand. Instructions to be given are such that all may be educated to help themselves in any emergency, air raids, fire, famine or pestilence.

The United Provinces has established an honorary A.R.P. Women's Service, composed of and officered entirely by women. Madras has a women's A.R.P. Corps (which teach women self-help during air raids, particularly methods of dealing with fires) while in Assam a certain number of women wardens have been enlisted.

In Bengal the function of the Women's Organisation is limited to enrolment as volunteer wardens and members are only required to advise and instruct women residents of their respective localities on A.R.P. measures; they are not expected to do duty at the Warden's posts or to patrol their sectors at the time of air raids or immediately afterwards. In Bombay, women are given instructions by A.R.P. instructors and they then give house to house lectures in their respective beats. In nearly all provinces a start has been made in bringing women into the Civil Defence Organisation. The *pardah* system naturally has complicated efforts in securing the co-operation of women-folk in some area.

The assistance of all those among the existing women's organisations, which are ready to help is required. The Government of India has contemplated a scheme which envisages the appointment of a woman who would perhaps be styled " Director of Women's A.R.P. Services " and whose principal duties would be :—

1. To assist at headquarters in evolving an A.R.P. scheme for women.
2. To tour and help provinces to organise and stimulate interest, and
3. To draw into the organisation as many as possible of those existing women's organisations as are willing to help and make the fullest use of their assistance.

That it might become necessary as the scheme evolved, to appoint women assistant Directors with headquarters in various Provinces was also recognised by the Government of India.

### **A.R.P. for India**

India's economic condition cannot permit a close copy of British Organisation but the main features might be incorporated. This is evident from the recommendations of the A.R.P. Sub-Committee appointed in Bombay. The report suggests :

1. Arranging air raid and "all clear" warnings,
- 2. Control of lights,
3. Organisation for dealing with damages caused, and
4. Education of the public.

The A.R.P. Organisation recommended by them consists of a whole time officer, a number of air raid wardens especially for premises or companies employing more than 300 or 400 persons. Air raid warning and all clear signals should be given by means of sirens to the general public, and by telephone to a selected number of subscribers who are intimately connected in concerns associated with civil defence and public utility services. Each siren would have a two-mile range and the "warning" signal would be denoted by the sirens wailing up and down at a four-second interval over a period of two minutes, the all clear signal would be a steady blast of two minutes' duration as recommended by the Home Office of Great Britain.

For controlling street lights in time of war, it is suggested that a combined scheme would be necessary to provide for :

1. Permanently reducing the number of lamps lit and the strength of each lamp lit ;
2. Providing shades to prevent glare ; and
3. Extinguishing all street lights on the receipt of an air raid "warning".

Measures are also recommended for the treatment of casualties and repair of damages to hospital accommodation, auxiliary fire services, volunteers, salvage work, provision of anti-gas equipment and education of the public.



For urban areas with a population of over 10,000, such organisations are essential. But the question of rural areas may be postponed for the present. The main risk to inhabitants of a rural area is from bombs dropped at random, and the likelihood of a house being hit, or of casualties occurring depends on the relative areas of occupied and unoccupied ground. Casualties should therefore be few, even if many bombs fall, and such as would occur would be more likely to be single casualties.

Such a state of affair does not justify elaborate precaution. Local organisations with air raid wardens on the scale of perhaps 3 per 500 population with first-aid boxes and some protective equipment as suggested by the Home Office of Great Britain for rural England, might be adopted for villages of over 5,000 inhabitants. A first-aid point and some trained attendants and provision to get help from the nearest urban centre should be made. Voluntary help from the villagers must be enlisted.

Air Raid Precautions in rural districts will therefore consist in the main of enrolling and training the allotted number of wardens, and providing the allotted number of first-aid parties, rescue parties and decontamination squads.<sup>1</sup> First-aid posts and points will also be provided. The assistance to purely rural areas, in the unlikely event of serious damage or a number of casualties occurring in them will depend on mobile parties coming from elsewhere.

In Indian cities, considered vulnerable, A.R.P. Organisations have been set up and during the last two years considerable progress has been made. An idea of the rapid progress made in Indian cities could be had from the following statistics which refer to a typical region, the Madras Fortress Area.

The total number of trained wardens at the end of February 1942 was 4,695; 135 persons were also undergoing training, then.

The strength of volunteer messengers was 580, of whom 25 were despatch riders. A further batch of 166 messengers were also undergoing training.

<sup>1</sup>Home Office A.R.P. Dept. Circular No. 10/1939. Air Raid General Precautions in Rural Areas.

For the 28 First-Aid Posts located within the city limits, 92 Doctors, 164 Nurses and Midwives and 201 First-Aiders had been allotted. Six Doctors, 8 Nurses and 14 First-Aiders had been allotted to the four posts in the outlying areas in the Chingleput District.

There were 91 First-Aid Parties, out of which 46 were voluntary and 45 paid. The paid parties are posted permanently at the seven combined Depots so far established. For the paid nucleus of the Rescue Service, Moplahs from Malabar were recruited and trained in lifting heavy weights and in erecting and dismantling machinery. Those who had already arrived were given regular training every day in practical rescue work, in the use and care of equipment and on A.R.P. matters in general.

Subsidiary schemes were made for Government buildings and private firms and offices.

A.R.P. Publicity Officers have been appointed. All possible steps are being taken to educate the public about the measures to be taken by them in the event of an emergency. House to house propaganda is also being organised. The assistance of the All-India Radio and the Cinema theatres in cities are also being enlisted in this connection.

To bring Civil Defence measures in the civil areas of Cantonments in line with the policy laid down by the Civil Defence Department, the Government of India have appointed a Cantonment Officer, Civil Defence Department. These arrangements are purely for the civil population. Arrangements for the protection of military barracks installations continue to be made under military orders. The Cantonment Officer maintains liaison with the Defence and War Departments regarding the co-ordination of Civil Defence and passive air defence measures in cantonments.

In the rural areas the District Magistrate is the supreme head of the Organization. In one of the A.R.P. Handbooks of the Government of India the position of the District Magistrate (or corresponding officer in the Presidency towns) is defined: The District Magistrate has inherent powers as the representative of the Government and experience has shown that after a raid, he must take charge generally and act fearlessly on his own responsibility. Where a civil district contains more than one classified town it is

for consideration whether the District Magistrate can be both the Controller in the headquarters town as well as standing above and being generally responsible for the whole civil defence organisation of the district. In any case he must accept the latter responsibility. In outlying towns it is necessary to put the sub-divisional Magistrate in a position analogous to that of the District Magistrate above. Similarly departmental officers of such towns, the assistant surgeon, the P. W. D. Engineer, etc., should be placed in a position in which they can act freely in an emergency.<sup>1</sup>

In view of the increasing gravity of the war situation several Indian States have created separate Civil Defence Departments. Such departments organise A.R.P. services and have been established in Mysore, Gwalior, Hyderabad, Bhopal, etc.

Civil Defence now forms part of the Central and Provincial Government activities : Madras allotted Rs. 60 lakhs for Civil Defence for 1941-42, Bombay Rs. 70 lakhs, U. P. Rs. 80 lakhs and Bengal Rs. 168 lakhs, and the Punjab Rs. 40 lakhs. The Department of Civil Defence at the Centre frames the policy and exercises supervising function over the activities of the Provincial bodies. Advice and information are offered to the public as well.

The Central Government bears a share of the expenses incurred by the Provincial Governments and the proportion increases as the amount spent becomes larger. The Provincial Governments and Municipal authorities share the expenses of A.R.P. measures. The expenditure on A.R.P. measures such as digging of slit trenches, providing water basins and cisterns for fire fighting purposes, etc. which are intended for the use of the general public will be met by the Provincial Governments in full. The Municipal Councils and Local Boards should undertake such work in their areas if requested to do so by the District Magistrate or the Special A.R.P. Officer for the area. A claim for reimbursement of the amounts spent may be preferred by these bodies through the District Magistrate.

Expenditure on measures necessary for the protection of Municipal Councils and Local Boards' buildings and their employees however has to be met from their own funds.

Organisations in India generally follow the lines of the English system suitably modified. \*

<sup>1</sup> *The Hindu*, 4-4-42.

A.R.P. forces throughout areas in India, regarded as vulnerable, were under mobilisation, following Japanese aggression in the Far East and as a result of the Civil Defence Conference held in Delhi in November 1941. The mobilisation proceeded on the basis of whole-time work and payment for a large proportion of them.

Provinces have gone ahead with the taking up of necessary buildings, motor vehicles, etc., both for intensive training and for active A.R.P. work.

Local authorities have made arrangements to establish rest centres and feeding centres for homeless people. Lists of casualties would be published as quickly as possible and posted outside the local municipal offices where information from hospitals and first-aid services will be collated. Besides the wireless and news bulletins, loudspeaker vans will tour the streets.

Provincial Governments have prepared schemes for the dispersal of population, the establishment of evacuee camps and emergency food and rest shelters. Some have already been established.

The main idea, however, is that those who can get away from congested areas or big towns should be enabled to do so. From this point of view, therefore, the voluntary exodus of people from cities is considered a great advantage. But as regards those who depend for their living on work in cities, the plan is dispersal and accommodation in temporary camps, about a mile or two away, so that they can go to their places of work and return and still be away from the conditions of congestion inside the poorer quarters of the cities.

For the vast majority of the poorer population, however, it is emphasised, the slogan is : " Stay in your house. Do not get out to look for a safer place, because the odds are that you won't find a safer place."

Pucca shelters, such as those in England, are not considered desirable in India. It is explained that experience in England has shown the danger arising from the falling in of shelters, killing a great number of people, who otherwise would have been safe, and the dangers of casualties due to a panic rush for the shelters are great and must be guarded against. An expert had been to Calcutta advising the authorities on the technique of building elaborate shelters.

Next to the hole under the bed, the best thing is stated to be slit trenches ; but these are not possible in some parts of the country particularly Calcutta, where water is reached when two or three feet of earth is dug.

#### MOBILE FIRST-AID POSTS:

The Central Government have circulated a scheme under which in the less densely developed and populated areas, fixed first-aid posts might be replaced by mobile first-aid posts, which could be used, in effect to set up an aid post as and where required. Experience in England has shown that mobile first-aid posts can largely be used instead of fixed aid posts in suburban areas and that even in thickly populated areas, they are likely to prove useful for replacement or reinforcement of the fixed aid posts which might be destroyed or swamped by a large number of casualties. These mobile first-aid posts will not be in addition to those fixed aid posts, which have already been selected and sanctioned but would replace some of the fixed first-aid posts, according to local conditions.

#### TRAINING OF ROOF SPOTTERS:

Further progress is reported in connection with the Scheme for the training of roof spotters. This scheme, prepared in conjunction with the Air Staff, is intended to ensure that work in vital factories, important commercial firms and Government offices, is dislocated as little as possible by air raids. Roof spotters are intended to warn the occupants of premises concerned, of the approach of hostile air-craft in sufficient time to enable them to take shelter before an attack develops. To assist roof spotters in the task of identifying hostile air-craft, the Central Government have under consideration a scheme to supply them with playing cards on the reverse of which will be illustrations of various types of enemy air-craft.

Civil Defence extends much further than air raid precautions. A.R.P. proper concerns itself with steps to be taken to deal with air raids, firstly to minimise their effect and subsequently to repair the damage done. The wider activities of Civil Defence comprises such measures as the care of persons rendered homeless, the evacuation of non-essential sections of the population from the danger zones and perhaps most important of all, the maintenance of the morale of those who had to "Stay put." There are five main A.R.P.

Services. (a) The Wardens Service (the key service). (b) The Communications (or Messenger) Service, (c) The Rescue Service, (d) The Casualty Service and (e) The Fire Fighting Service.

Provincial Governments, especially on the eastern side, have made very considerable improvements in organising and training the Civil Defence services since the war on Japan started. Co-ordination of the services with training schools and experienced instructors from Britain have been provided by the Government of India.

For instance at the end of September 1942 in the Madras Fortress Area, the total number of fully trained volunteer and paid wardens was 1,508 and 2,174 respectively. Besides this, 134 voluntary wardens were undergoing training and 15 were awaiting training. One hundred and fifty-nine volunteers and 1,014 paid messengers completed first stage of training. For the 28 First Aid Posts in the city, there were 79 doctors, 136 nurses and 213 first aiders. For the 5 First Aid Posts outside the city there are 14 doctors, 9 nurses and 41 first aiders. Fifteen doctors, 20 Auxiliary nurses, 60 first aiders and 10 lay personnel are attached to the five mobile first aid posts which have been provided. There were 87 paid and 5 voluntary First Aid Parties.

### **Civil Defence Training**

In England the Wardens are the backbone of the A.R.P. Emergency Services. They are usually local residents, trusted and respected by their neighbours, who give the lead on what to do in emergency and thus help to avoid panic. They call the rescue or first-aid squads and then carry on with rescue or first-aid work themselves until help arrives, or fight fires until the brigade comes on the scene. The main work of rescue squads is to extricate casualties from below masses of debris. This is only necessary where there are buildings with basements or with several storeys. It is essential that they have considerable training in how to handle injured persons and how to tunnel through debris without causing it to collapse. First aid parties in Great Britain have mostly been called on to wrap casualties up in blankets and send them off to hospital as soon as possible. Many more minor casualties requiring field treatment are to be expected in India, where, as explained above much less protection, is afforded by buildings.

Of vital importance is the education and training of personnel directly engaged in A.R.P. work. From decontamination

and fire-fighting to the handling of evacuees and erecting air raid shelters, efficient training is required.

The subjects covered by the Examinations of the Institute of Civil Defence (India Branch) given below for qualifying candidates to membership would give an idea of the wide field to be covered and the comprehensive nature of the education necessary.

- (1) Methods of Air Attack and General Principles of Civil Defence: probable forms of aerial attack; various types of bombs and their principal effects; administration of Civil Defence; instruction and information of the public.
- (2) Gas attacks and their effects; nature and properties of war gases; methods of identification and detection; methods of protection; gas-protected rooms; general principles and methods of decontamination of clothing; elementary first aid for gas casualties.
- (3) Methods of Protection against High Explosive Bombs. H. E. Bombs and their effects; shelters in private industrial and commercial buildings; shelters outside buildings; public and communal shelters.
- (4) Protection against Incendiary Bombs and Fire; dangers of incendiary attacks; fire fighting hints.

The following subjects are compulsory for the Final Examination:—

- (1) Methods of Air attack and General Principles of Civil Defence (Advanced).
- (2) Indian Statutory provisions concerning Civil Defence.
- (3) Structural Civil Defence.
- (4) Organisational Civil Defence.
- (5) Civil Defence in Industry.
- (6) Civil Defence in other countries.
- (7) Organisation of Medical, First Aid, Casualty and Cleansing Services.<sup>1</sup>

In the Home Office Air Raid Precautions School at London, courses last for three weeks. The full cost of instruction

<sup>1</sup>Safety News, March 1943, p. 198.

is borne by Government. The course is intended for officers engaged in the preparation of Air Raid Precautions schemes under the Air Raid Precautions Act and Regulations, whether they are permanent officials of the authority selected for these special duties or whether they are officers specially appointed for the purpose. Officers should not normally be sent to the school immediately on appointment. Before attending a course they should have had an opportunity to make themselves familiar both with the organisation of local government in their districts and with the handbooks and memoranda issued by the Home Office, as otherwise they will not be in a position to take full advantage of the course.

The purpose of the school is to train officers charged with the preparation of general air raid precautions schemes and the instruction given do not in any way supersede the specialised training in anti-gas measures which is at present being conducted at the two Civilian Anti-gas Schools at Falfield and Easingwold. The type of course given at present is designed to provide a background to the subject of air raid precautions organisation and to convey information about certain national aspects of air raid precautions with which officers of local authorities would not normally be familiar. Arrangements are made for specialised lectures to be given by officers of the Air Raid Precautions and other Departments on general questions of organisation and on special questions such as medical organisation and problems of structural protection.

The school also serves as a focal point for the accumulation and dissemination of the knowledge and experience acquired by Air Raid Precautions officers in handling the practical difficulties arising in applying the general principles laid down to the circumstances of their own area.

One such school for every province attached to the Provincial A.R.P. Organisation and the Board of Survey and Investigation is absolutely necessary for this vast country. More will be needed to produce enough persons to man the A.R.P. Organisation for India to cover thirty million people distributed in over 1,000 centres.

A.R.P. methods, materials and specifications now recommended in India, are based upon the B. S. S. Conditions in India being different, tests should be made to discover whether these stand our



climatic and geographical conditions, which vary all over the country. It is high time that Indian Standards are evolved for the materials. Actual tests should be made to assess their resisting power, against aerial bombing.

A Central Board should be established for this purpose. Regional Centres should also be created to test the materials available in the region. Experience in Europe and in Far East would provide a basis to work upon. These boards would co-ordinate research work in A.R.P., and building materials. Government, however, should subsidise schemes and make Indian requirements, self-sufficient and self-reliant. Such impetus is bound also to develop the materials required for post-war reconstruction.

Instruction and training is imparted to the A.R.P. personnel by the Provincial A.R.P. Staff Schools and Civil Defence Schools of the Government of India. As proposed, there were to be four Civil Defence Schools, situated at Calcutta, Lahore, Bombay and Hyderabad (Daccan). A Civil Defence Staff School has been established at Calcutta, recently transferred to Lahore, conducting A.R.P. Officers' courses. A.R.P. Industrial courses are imparted at the Civil Defence Industrial School at Calcutta.

The Government of India had also suggested to the provinces that specialist instruction centres be added to their own provincial A.R.P. Schools. At these schools the teaching given at the New Civil Defence Specialist School at Lahore would be disseminated. There will be three wings to the Lahore School; (a) Warden's Service, (b) Casualty Service, and (c) Rescue Service; and the school had proposed to run a practical rescue squad of its own instructors to go into action in Lahore if raids occur there.

The commandant and staff of this central school do not teach mere theory; they are nearly all of them men who have been through heavy raiding conditions in England and will have practical ideas, learnt by hard experience, to impart.

The decision is understood to have been taken to split the existing Central A.R.P. Training School in Calcutta into two schools, one for officers and the other for instructors. The school at present has accommodation for thirty-five officers and forty-five instructors, and as a consequence of the suggested establishment of two schools, the output of officers is expected to be doubled and that of instructors to be quadrupled.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "The Hindu", 21-12-41.

In addition to the Civil Defence Staff School and the Civil Defence Instructors' School located in Calcutta, the Government of India have decided to open four more civil defence schools. A second Instructors school and a second specialist school were proposed to be established as soon as the necessary premises and instructors were obtained.<sup>1</sup>

The selection of proper personnel for A.R.P. services is essential otherwise the work will not be efficient and dependable. This happened in one city. The Hindu correspondent at Vizag stated (*Hindu*, 21-5-1942) that out of less than 100 paid wardens 33 were suspended for absconding from duty at the time of raids. A fifth of messengers "Paid" were suspended for the same reason. Several others among other A.R.P. services were suspended for desertion on April 6th. Paid personnel with little educational or other qualifications are least fitted to do the important task of educating the public in matters pertaining to A.R.P. which can effectively be done only by persons of status, local influence and personality.

The Government of India have just promulgated a new rule under the Defence of India Rules concerning the responsibilities of local bodies in certain contingencies. The rule empowers the Central Government in respect of cantonments and other areas in their direct jurisdiction, and the Provincial Governments in respect of local authorities subject to their control, to require such authorities to take such measures as they (the Government) may deem necessary for the protection of persons and property under the control, or within the jurisdiction, of such authorities from injury or damage or for ensuring the due maintenance of the vital services therein. These powers are to be exercised only in the event of hostile attack. In such an event, it shall be the duty of the local authority to comply with the order. The rule also provides that the funds of the local authority shall be applicable to the payment of the charges and expenses incidental to such compliance, priority being given to such compliance over all other duties and obligations of the local authority. The new rule goes on to lay down that the appropriate Government shall be entitled to carry out the orders at the expense of the local authorities "without prejudice to any other proceedings which may be taken in respect of the contravention of the order."

<sup>1</sup>The "Hindu," 16-6-42.

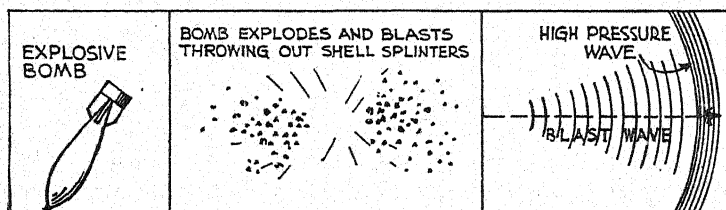
The Government of Madras direct the owners or occupiers of all buildings within the Madras Fortress Area to provide themselves with water, sand, sandbags and shields on a scale fixed by them.

The Government have decided that sandbags should be provided free to the owners of *kutchra* tiled houses and thatched houses. These sandbags must not be sold or otherwise disposed of without the prior permission of the Government. All householders should make their own arrangements to obtain the quantity of sand required by them.

Various measures to prevent breakdown of essential services have been adopted and people are advised on many other points. For instance in the event of the sewage system in the city breaking down owing to enemy action, flush-out latrines may cease to function. The owners of bungalows and garden houses are advised that, during such an emergency, they may open trenches or bore-hole latrines as a substitute for flush-out latrines. These latrines should be 30 to 50 feet away from wells used as drinking water sources. Trenches should not be dug on loose soil. Sites where sub-soil water level is nearer than six feet from ground levels should be avoided.<sup>1</sup>

### Public Education

One of the most important Air Raid Precautions is the instruction of the people in what to expect and what to do. They

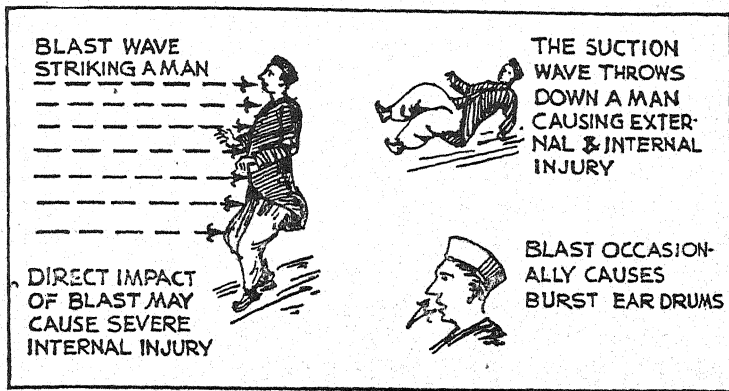


The action of High Explosive Bomb

have to be taught what to do, to get into the shelter, to fight fires and to treat water to make it drinkable. They have to be persuaded to evacuate their children in time, to volunteer as wardens, to refrain from panicky evacuation. The best defence against panic is to

<sup>1</sup> "The Hindu", 27-3-42.

have the whole population usefully employed and here they can be used in first-aid, rescue, fire-fighting. It was also found in Britain



How High Explosive Bomb effects affect persons

that normal life could be maintained after raiding, in spite of early fears that everything would be dislocated. Efforts have to be made to overcome religious difficulties which would otherwise make communal feeding and emergency water arrangements impossible and difficult. To do all this it is necessary first that propaganda shall emanate from trusted and respected leaders of the people. But it is also necessary that it shall be carried out in the liveliest, simplest, most attractive manner, by leaflet, film, poster, lecture, and particularly by word of mouth through individual contact.<sup>1</sup>

Citizens enlightened in A.R.P. constitute the foundation of air defence. "If the emergency comes the country will look for her safety not only to her sailors and soldiers and air men but also to the organised courage and foresight of every household."<sup>2</sup> Authorities feel that "it is of essence of any such preparation that the civil population should be informed of the present and future possibilities of air attack and instructed in the precautions designed to meet it." Even in enlightened England the Home Office has taken particular care to disseminate correct and ample information through its invaluable handbooks and circulars and the need in India where A.R.P. is new cannot be exaggerated.

<sup>1</sup> A.R.P C.C. Report.

<sup>2</sup> The Protection of Your Home against Air Raids. (Home Office).

The need for the education of the public has been recognised by the Government of India, for panic would be on a much larger scale both because of the larger numbers involved and because of the multiplicity of dangers of unknown magnitude. The Government of U. P. recognise that the results would be so appalling that every step must be taken to prevent such an outbreak. Obviously the most effective step is to remove the causes.

The scope of education must cover the whole field of A.R.P. but should be simple and confined to the main outlines. The goal should be that every man, woman and child will eventually be familiar with the various forms which air attack is likely to take, with the outlines of the organisation of the A.R.P. services which are being created for their benefit and with the steps which they should take both now and at the time of a raid to avoid or minimise injury to themselves. Suffice it to say that the Air Raid Warden is the main agent for the education of the general public.

A.R.P. instruction in U. S. A. includes in addition to the training of A.R.P. personnel, the education of the public. In addition to the organisation for training workers, an organisation for instruction courses open to the general public is set up. The Civilian Defence training imparted in some American cities are of two kinds, social and protective. The Social training courses are open to everybody and include some subjects as nutrition, automechanics, food conservation, nurses aid, and motor corps. The protective courses are given to those who are enrolled as actual Civilian Defence workers. These are required courses for workers and include a general survey course, a course in protection against gas, first aid courses and various specialized courses such as the auxiliary police course.

In the United Kingdom, members of the Home Office staff were specially deputed to go round and give lectures. A similar step in Indian Provinces appears to be necessary and each district has a number of Government officers of various departments already available, and it is essential that all such officers should give active assistance in this vital matter of educating the public. The Civic Guard can do a great deal. Another useful medium is the class room. Arrangements should be made with the headmasters and headmistresses of all schools for talks on A.R.P. to be given. They have great popular appeal provided that they are fairly spectacular but it is important that they should be realistic and carried out in

accordance with the officially recognised procedure of the services concerned. It is also important that the performers should be well trained and rehearsed beforehand. Nothing can be more detrimental to the interests of A.R.P. than displays which are open to criticism or ridicule.

In addition to acquiring a knowledge of A.R.P. there are ways in which the general public can give material assistance when a raid takes place. One is in dealing with incendiary bombs. The ideal is for every man to deal with his own bomb. Well-to-do house-holders and shop-keepers should be encouraged to buy stirrup pumps and two or three buckets and should be trained in their use. Where a house-holder cannot afford a stirrup pump there is no reason why he should not equip himself with sand, a bucket and a shovel. Even if a house-holder does not himself buy a stirrup pump he could keep buckets or tubs of water always filled so that there would be no delay in tackling a fire should anyone arrive with a stirrup pump. This water could also be used to prevent fires started by incendiary bombs from spreading and even to extinguish the fire altogether when the bomb has burnt itself out.

A second point to which public attention should be invited is the storage of inflammable material. If such material is kept in upper storey rooms which are not normally occupied, an incendiary bomb might easily start a big fire before it is noticed. So far as may be possible, therefore all inflammable material should be stored in ground floor rooms where the chances of an incendiary bomb penetrating, are considerably reduced.

When air raid warning is heard, every one should seek cover at once. Persons in or near their own homes should betake themselves with their dependents, in an orderly fashion to their houses; and employees at their place of business should take cover in the shelter provided. Those caught in the streets at the time of an air raid warning should not attempt to go home unless they can get there within five minutes. All members of the public should know that it is their duty to extend the shelter such as it may be of their houses, shops etc. to those less fortunate people who are unable to reach their own homes when the warning signal is given. Where persons are indoors on the announcement of an air raid, even where no refuge is provided they should remain on the premises and should not make their way to a public shelter. Public shelters are provided for the safety of those who find themselves

in the streets and are unable to take refuge anywhere else. It is much safer to remain in an unprotected house than to be caught in the street when bombs are falling.

If a person in the street has not been able to find a public shelter or refuge in some one else's house, before the raid begins, he must make the best use of any nearby buildings or other local features which can be turned to advantage as a means of providing cover. Partial protection from flying splinters and debris may be obtainable in archways, doorways, under balconies, and against walls. Bodily contact with solid matter such as within the wall of a house should be avoided since there is a danger of being hurt through the violent percussion or earth shock set up in the ground by the force of bomb exploding nearby. Protection of the lungs against blast can be secured to some extent by keeping the mouth slightly open and this can best be done by gripping firmly between the teeth a piece of India-rubber, a cork, a piece of soft wood or a handkerchief rolled up tightly into a ball. This also serves to protect the ear drums from possible damage.

The noise created by both attack and defence during a modern air raid is tremendous. To some people it is much the worst aspect of a raid but the strain on the nerves can be reduced by wearing ear-plugs or by plugging the ears with cotton wool.

All vehicular traffic must stop when the warning is given and the occupants of the vehicles must seek shelter. Vehicles must be drawn into the side of the road before they are abandoned so as not to hinder the movement of fire engines, ambulances, etc. Horses should be removed from the shafts and tied up in a side street or in some place where they will get the best available protection from walls or buildings, without blocking the main thoroughfares. Owners of animals, horses, cows, goats, dogs, etc. must tie up their animals in their houses or stables when the warning is given. Their presence on the streets would seriously interfere with the free passage of A.R.P. service vehicles particularly at night.

If a building or shelter in which people have taken refuge should be hit or damaged during a raid, those who are sheltering there should not rush into the streets, if the building or shelter still affords protection and is not however or appears to be in danger of collapsing. They should take shelter in an orderly way in neighbouring houses or in a public shelter if there is one nearby.

After the warning has been sounded it is important not to emerge from the shelter until the " All Clear " is given. On emerging from shelter, inquiries in person or by telephone as to how others in the vicinity have fared, must not be done. During a raid and indeed, at all times in an emergency, it is necessary to keep calm and to act swiftly. When it is safe to do so after a raid, it is better to go out and help others than to stay at home and fret. Those whose houses have been destroyed or damaged and who require accommodation, food and other necessities of life should go to the nearest relief centre where their requirements will be met.

The provision of additional air raid shelters for Calcutta Tramway men along tram routes as well as the improvement of other existing A.R.P. arrangements in the city, is receiving the active consideration of the Government. The Maharaja of Parlakimedi, Premier of Orissa, addressing a joint A.R.P. and Civic Guard rally in January 1943, said that he had been to Calcutta and Mr. P. N. Mullick, Deputy Director of Civil Defence, accompanied him in Calcutta for three days during which time Japanese planes raided. The Maharaja of Parlakimedi said that the advice that had hitherto been given to lie down flat on the ground at the time of bombing when caught in the open was not sound. He was told in Calcutta that after a bomb burst, some of the splinters scattered at a low level grazing the ground. The best course was always to take cover or get into trenches if that was possible. It was only when a shelter or a trench was not available that one ought to lie down on the ground, but it should be remembered that a shelter or a trench was always best protection.

Education in A.R.P. is also essential to familiarise the people with air raids and precautionary measures. This is necessary to prevent panic, which is largely caused by the fear of the unknown. When people get familiar, air attacks and aerial bombs lose their frightfulness. This has been proved by intensive researches in recent times. According to a British Psychologist, who made an exhaustive study of how people act when enemy planes appear over their cities and begin dropping bombs, the reaction to the first air raid is quite different from subsequent raids. The first time people are bombed they get excited and jittery. But after a few experience, their reaction is one of irritation and boredom.

Excepting in the case of persons who are unstable mentally, people quickly develop an indifference to bombing and show little



or no mental strain. Children can take bombing even better than their elders. They regard it merely as an exciting experience.

Women react differently from men. Most men are fatalistic about being hit. "If a bomb has my name on it, I will get it. If doesn't I won't, so why worry?". This is the way most men regard being bombed. But the women seem to think every bomb that is dropped is aimed directly at them. Their fears disappear, however, as they become used to the noise of an air-raid, and learn to distinguish between the engines of their own fighters and enemy bombers or between anti-aircraft fire and bomb explosions. Once these noises lose their terror, women take air raids in their stride.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> P. E. Vernon, University of Glasgow : Quoted from Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology, in Civilian Defence, May, 1942.

During the five raids on Calcutta (of which only one was on Calcutta proper), there was according to Dr. Saha, Visiting Surgeon, Clinic for Neurology and Psychiatry, Calcutta Medical College Hospital, considerable increase in mental break-down cases among the civilians. (i) In a big office, first, two lady typists developed typist's cramp, then a head clerk developed writer's cramp and lastly an English Officer developed the same in singing (ii) A head clerk of another office developed great anxiety about what would happen to him. (iii) A latent schizophrenic developed the delusion that a bomb had fallen on her.

Depression and anxiety are the commonest disturbances produced by frightening and distressing events. Mons describes the behaviour of children exposed to bombing. Previously good and intelligent children become suddenly obstreperous, destructive, mischievous, lazy and truant from school and in short, unmanageable. Their behaviour implies deep resentment against the adults who have failed to provide security and protection for them.

For the prevention of such mental breakdown, Dr. Saha suggests the following arrangements. (1) Propaganda for keeping the morale of the public ; (2) Food and living should be within normal limits as far as practicable as that will give them the real faith about protection ; (3) Public should listen to the A.R.P. talks given on the radio and follow them punctiliously ; (4) All known mentally disordered should leave the place where air-raids are expected ; (5) Suitable arrangements should be made in the A.R.P. scheme for the immediate management of mental casualties so that they may not infect others. Those who show psychotic manifestations should be segregated into a ward or hospital where treatment may be given. Those who show psychoneurotic manifestations should be grouped into different types and then out-door treatment given at a fixed time. They are not to be handled just after attack as that will give them the idea that their conditions are serious. (*Vide* Health, Nov. 1943, p. 199.)

To guard against *Blitz jitters* he recommends to air raid wardens that every person should be given a job to do. "Activity affords muscular relief from pent-up tension. When the air raid siren sounds people at once begin to think about their job rather than about getting killed. They don't feel the urge to rush somewhere.

If we want to be sure the folks in our community do not get the *blitz jitter*; if we want to be sure they come through their baptism of bombs with the least nervous strain we should make certain, as many as possible have a job to do. Captains should be appointed, who have those leadership qualities that inspire confidence in others, to allot work and keep citizens busy during air raids.

Every citizen in the threatened area should know the ABC of A.R.P. This is essential because if raids develop and the enemy becomes more harassing every one's services and co-operation would be needed to resist such attacks. Blanket mobilisation for A.R.P. service as it is otherwise called has been resorted to in cities subjected to heavy and constant air raids. It was resorted to in Moscow. It was ordered at Essen, the Krupp steel centre which was subjected to the thousand bomber R.A.F. raid on June 1, 1942 with an estimated death roll of 2,000. An order published in Field Marshal Goering's paper "National Zeitung" applied to all civilian Germans residing permanently or temporarily in the towns of Essen and Kottwing. Persons under 15 and over 70, invalids, delicate persons or pregnant women and mothers of small children alone would be granted exemption.

All conceivable methods are utilised in England to enlighten the public in A.R.P.

The radio, the cinema, lectures, handbills, pamphlets, etc., are all resorted to; the series of most authoritative publications on the subject has been published by the Home Office. The services rendered by technical bodies and associations, through their publications, discussions and memoranda are invaluable.

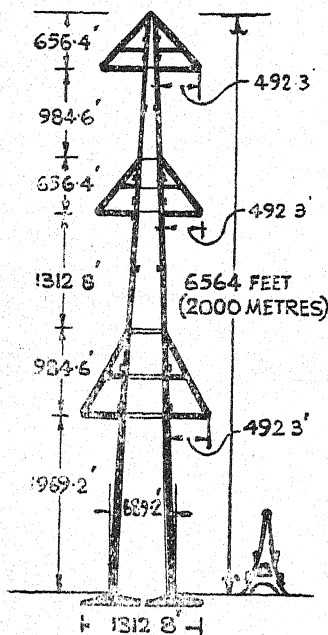
It is imperative that the public in India is enabled to possess correct ideas as to the different aspects of the problem and the task would be facilitated if the Provincial Government, the local bodies like Corporations and Municipalities, and Unions managing urban areas, District Boards, and educational institutions undertake this task before India is attacked from the air. It is desirable that

local bodies are compelled to know the ABC of A.R.P. It is even more essential that students and the coming generation should

be acquainted through their institutions, of the art of planning for peace and protection from raids.

Advisory Boards consisting of experts—official and non-official—with experience of Indian conditions should be formed to achieve this purpose. As has been suggested already in parts of India, non-official bodies are helpful for effectively spreading A.R.P. knowledge to those who constitute the bulk of India's population. The confidence of the public could easily be aroused by their activities.

Further in matters of A.R.P. routine methods of operation should give place to quick action during emergencies. This body would study the varied questions that face the problem of Civil Defence and devise ways and means with imagination and thought, viewing the problem of Civil Defence in its whole perspective. All this is essential to achieve economy, efficiency



Living in towers of this kind has been suggested to eliminate the danger of air attack. Its gigantic proportion could be imagined from the Eiffel Tower which is drawn to the same scale

and sufficiency in operations and administration of Civil Defence.

Further non-official co-operation is essential to render A.R.P. services efficient and country wide, in a vast country like India. The A.R.P. Co-ordinating Committee has drawn attention to this question and more and more and popular control of A.R.P. Services has been stressed by responsible leaders in India.

As stated by the Mayor of Bombay, problems of evacuation, over-crowding in stations and panic among the people existed in Bombay when the Madras coast was threatened in April 1942. The Bombay council had to tackle them and allay panic. They had also to deal with Civil Defence measures. The Corporation of Bombay after prolonged discussions with the Government agreed

to the formation of a Committee predominantly non-official, to control fourteen specific activities of Civil Defence work. The rescue work and similar activities were to be under the control of the A.R.P. Officer. One half of the Committee members were elected by the Corporation and the other half nominated by the Government. Unless A.R.P. work was under the control of non-official bodies, backed by public support, the Mayor emphasised efficient work in times of danger could not be done. "If the mistakes committed in Rangoon were not to be repeated here, A.R.P. work should to a great extent be non-officialised."<sup>1</sup>

Non-official bodies in Civil Defence Work has been set up in many places. The Mayor's Safety Committee in Madras and the Joint Civil Defence Committee in Bombay are very much live organisations as testified by the Civil Defence Member of the Government of India. The Bombay Committee had been officially recognised while there was no difference of opinion between the Government and the Mayor's Committee of Madras. In Lahore and Madras, the Boy Scouts rendered useful service.

The need for the formation of a Civil Defence Committee and the transfer of Civil Defence to a Non-official body like the Mayor's Committee was urged by the Mayor's City Safety Committee in a letter to the A.R.P. Controller, Madras in regard to the organisation and working of House Fire Parties in the city. Especially for this work non-official control would help to set up a very wide organisation. Such a measure would also help to bring down the cost of maintaining efficient A.R.P. Organisations.

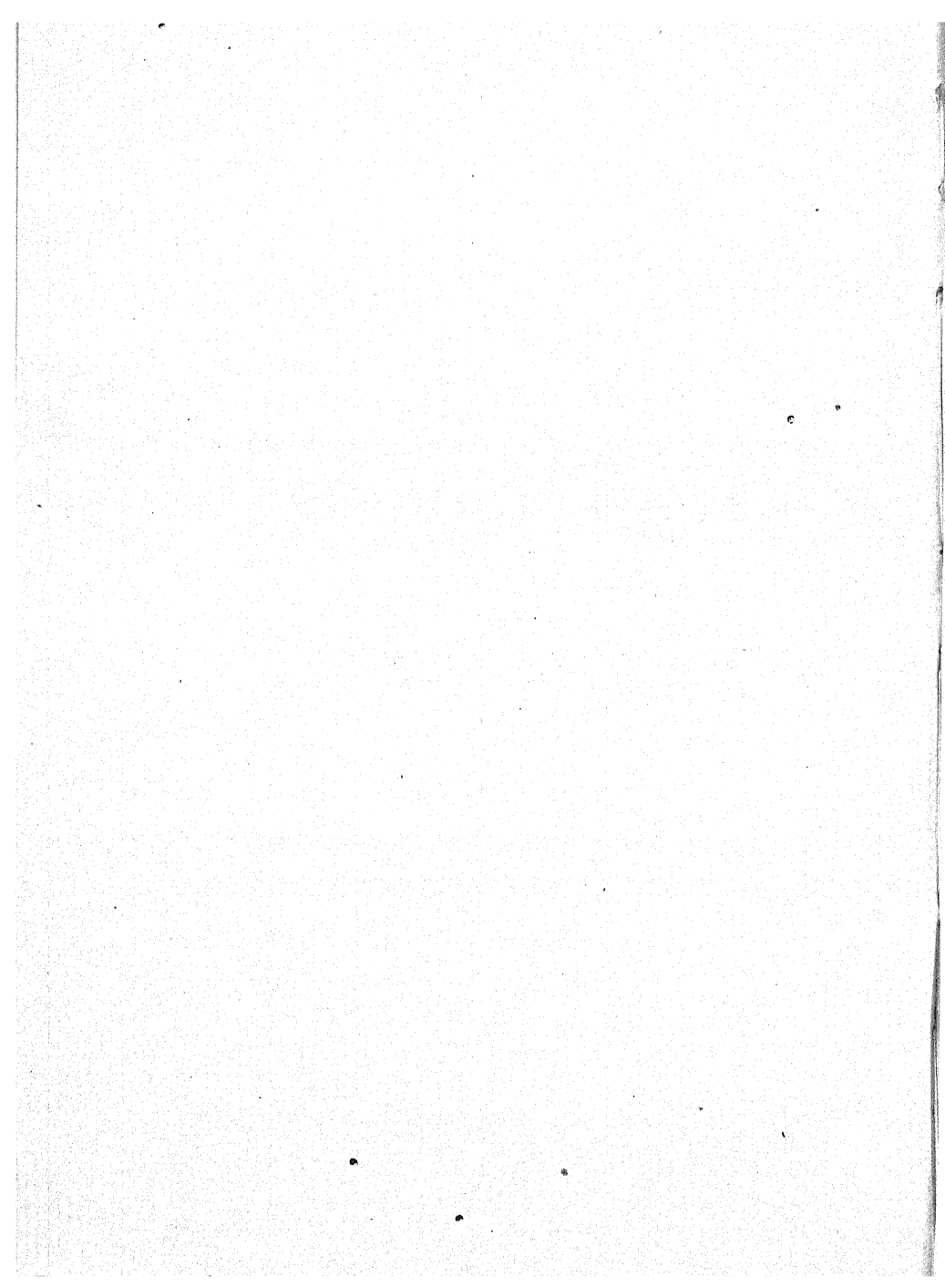
Air raids have come to stay, and unless some miracle happens and changes the nature of man, it is necessary to concert measures to resist them. "I can see little hope within any measurable period of time," said Sir Clement Hindley, "of obtaining for the human race in any part of the world permanent immunity from attack from the air of evilly disposed persons or organisations." If this timely warning should not go unheeded it is incumbent on our part to prepare ourselves and nothing is more valuable in this preparation than the imparting of correct knowledge to the citizen of to-morrow. If the principles of Civil Defence should form part of the curriculum of studies the justifica-

<sup>1</sup> The "Hindu," 7-7-42.

tion is to plan ahead for decades to minimise India's vulnerability to air attack, probably to such a level as to render air raids not worth while.

Herein lies the goal of A.R.P. for India—the ideal that should always guide the measures we undertake, however urgent may be the immediate need for precautions. The need for a two-fold programme has been emphasised in all vital aspects of A.R.P. whether for shelters, or for evacuation or for precautions for structures. Technical Press has demonstrated the importance of a dual programme ; and the Government of Great Britain, in their innumerable circulars repeatedly emphasize the idea. We will do well to realise however oppressive the need of the hour may be, that real security for our teeming millions lies in effective planning for protection.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

---

### Official Publications of the Home Office of Great Britain

#### *A.R.P. Handbooks*

- No. 1. Personal Protection against Gas.
- No. 2. First Aid and Nursing for Gas Casualties.
- No. 3. Medical Treatment of Gas Casualties.
- No. 4. Decontamination of Materials.
- No. 4A. Decontamination of Clothing and Equipment from Blister Gases.
- No. 5. Structural Defence.
- No. 5A. Bomb Resisting Shelters.
- No. 6. Air Raid Precautions in Factories and Business Premises.
- No. 7. Anti-Gas Precautions for Merchant Shipping.
- No. 8. The Duties of Air Raid Wardens.
- No. 9. Incendiary Bombs and Fire Precautions.
- No. 10. Training and Work of First Aid Parties.
- No. 11. Camouflage of Large Installations.
- No. 12. Air Raid Precautions for Animals.

#### *A.R.P. Memoranda*

- No. 1. Organisation of Air Raid Casualties Services.
- No. 2. Rescue Parties and Clearance of Debris.
- No. 3. Organization of Decontamination Services.
- No. 4. Organization of the Air Raid Wardens' Service.
- No. 5. Anti-Gas Training.
- No. 6. Local Communications and Reporting of Air Raid Damage.
- No. 7. Personal Requirements for Air Raids, General and Fire Precautions Services and the Police Service.
- No. 8. The Air Raid Warning System.
- No. 9. Notes on Training and Exercises.
- No. 10. Provision of Air Raid Shelters in Basements.
- No. 11. Gas Detection and Identification Service.
- No. 12. Protection of Windows in Commercial and Industrial Buildings.



- No. 13. Care and Repair of Respirators.
- No. 16. Emergency Protection in Factories.

### *A.R.P. Training Manuals*

- No. 1. Basic Training in Air Raid Precautions.
- No. 2. Manual for Officers Responsible for A.R.P. Training.

### *A.R.P. Pamphlets*

- Aids to the Movement of Traffic to be installed in Roads and Streets in the absence of Street Lighting.
- Anti-Gas Protection of Babies and Young Children.
- Atlas of Gas Poisoning.
- Detection and Identification of War Gases. Notes for the use of Gas Identification Officers.
- Directions for the Erection of Domestic Surface Shelters.
- Garden Trenches.
- Notes on the Construction, Maintenance and Replacement of Sandbag Revetments.
- Organisation of A.R.P. Services in Industrial, etc. Undertakings and the Training and Equipment of Personnel.
- Protection of Foodstuffs against Poison Gas.
- Protection of your Home against Air Raids.
- Shelter from Air Attack.
- Specifications, etc., in regard to Permanent Lining of Trenches.
- Training of Air Raid Wardens.
- War Time Lighting Restrictions for Industrial and Commercial Premises.
- War Time Lighting Restrictions. Lights carried by Road Vehicles.
- War Time Lighting Restrictions for Shops.
- Government Evacuation Scheme.
- Classification of Scottish Areas.
- General Memorandum (Memo E. V. S. 3) June 1939.

### *A.R.P. Circulars, etc.*

- Air Raid Precautions.
- Co-operation between Local Authorities and Occupiers of Industrial or Business Premises.
- First Aid Posts.
- Emergency Fire Brigade Organization.
- Experiments in Anti-Gas Protection.

- Air Raid Precautions Act, 1937.  
Lighting Restrictions.  
Air Raid Warning Signals.  
Air Raid Precautions School.  
Maps for use in connection with Air Raid Precautions Schemes.  
Air Raid General Precautions in Rural areas.  
Provision of Air Raid Shelter.  
Steel Shelters, cases of flooding.  
Air Raid Precautions Act, 1937. Summary of Provisions.  
Stages in the preparation of a Local Authority's Air Raid Precautions Scheme.  
Air Raid Precautions in Schools.  
Teachers and National Service.  
Air Raid Shelter Policy.  
Sectional Steel Shelters. Report upon Investigations of the Standard of Protection afforded.  
Air Raid Precautions. Compulsory Acquisition of Land. Compulsory Purchase Regulations.  
Air Raid Shelters for Persons Working in Factories, Mines, and Commercial Buildings. Revised Code.  
Memorandum on the Revised Code. Air Raid Shelters for Persons Working in Factories, Mines and Commercial Buildings.  
A.R.P. in Industry.  
Air Raid Precautions. Directions for the erection and sinking of the Galvanised Corrugated Steel Shelter.  
Preliminary Memorandum on the Organisation of Air Raid Precautions Services in Industrial, etc. undertakings and the Training and Equipment of Personnel.  
Air Raid Precautions Act, 1937. First Aid Posts and Points.  
Report of the Committee on the Responsibility for the Repair of Premises damaged by Hostilities.  
Civil Defence Act, 1939.  
Air Raid Precautions in Museums, Picture Galleries and Libraries.

### Books and Reports

- Haldane, J. B. S. : A.R.P.  
Hyde, H. M. and G. R. Falkiner-Nuttal : Air Defence and the Civil Population.

New York State Council of Defense: Manual for Local Defence Councils (1942)

National Fire Protection Association, U. S. A : Handbook of Fire Protection.

Central Housing Committee, Washington, U. S. A : Protective Construction and Concealment.

Office of Civilian Defence, Washington, U.S.A: Blackouts (1941)

Do. Do. A Handbook for Air Raid Wardens.

Do. Do. Volunteers in Recreation.

Library of Congress, Washington. Civilian Defence : A selection of available guide books and pamphlets.

Waitt, Col. Alden H. Gas Warfare.

Schurman, E. A. : Plant Protection.

Office of Civilian Defence, Washington : Report of Bomb Tests on Materials and Structures.

Prentiss, Lt.-Col. A. M., U. S. A : Civil Air Defence.

Dupuy, Col. R. E. & Lt. H. Carter: Civilian Defence of United States.

John Strachey : Digging for Mrs. Miller.

Lambert, Jordan W. : The Air Raid Warden.

Cambridge Scientists' Anti-War Group : Protection of the Public from Aerial Attack.

Ajax : Air Strategy for Britons.

Sisson, Lt.-Col. : On Guard against Gas.

Muirhead, T. J. : Air Attacks on Cities.

Jones, H. A. : The War in the Air.

Glover, C. W. : Civil Defence. III Edition.

MacRoberts, Major N. De P. : A.R.P. Lessons from Barcelona.

Bilderbeck, J. B. : A.R.P.

Charlton, L. E. O. : War over England.

Spaight, A. A. : Air Power in the Next War.

Mitchner and Cowell : Medical Organisation and Surgical Practice in Air Raids.

Ernest Dupuy, R. : World in Arms.

Ellison Hawks : Britain's Fighting Forces.

Conference on Structural Air Raid Precautions, R.I.B.A. June, 1938. J.R.I.B.A., June 27, 1938.

Report of the Committee on Air Raid Precautions, the Institution of Structural Engineers, October, 1938.

Report of the Royal Commission on the Geographical Distribution of the Industrial Population.

- The Hygiene of Housing (Bulletin of the Health Organization, League of Nations, Vol. VI, No. 4.)  
 The Census of India : 1931. Imperial and Provincial Tables.  
 Mukerjee, R. : The Regional Balance of Man.  
 Vivian Poore, G. : Essays in Rural Hygiene.  
 Aykroyd and Burnett : Public Health and Nutrition.  
 J. 47485. 100 New Towns for Britain.  
 Simms : Rural Sociology.  
 Gwilym Gibbon : Town and Country Planning.  
 Raymond Unwin : Town Planning in Practice.  
 Lanchester, H. V. : The Art of Town Planning.  
 Adams, T. : The Regional Planning of New York.  
 Anantalwar : Indian Architecture, Vol. I.

### Camouflage<sup>1</sup>

- Air safety for factories.* Popular Science (Chicago), July, 1941.  
 Billing, Noel Pemberton. *Defence against the night bomber.* London, Robert Hale Ltd., 1941.  
 British Library of Information. *Civil defense, a selected list of British official publications.* British Library of Information, 620 Fifth Avenue, New York, 1941.  
 Chesney, C. H. R. *The art of camouflage.* London, Robert Hale Ltd. 1941.  
 Cott, Hugh B. *Camouflage in nature and war.* Royal Engineers Journal (Chatham, Eng.) Dec. 1938, v. 52 : 501-517.  
 Dick, W. E. *Secrets of camouflage.* Discovery (Cambridge Univ. Press) Sept. 1939, v. 2, New series : 467-475.  
 Embury, Aymar, 2d. *Nature's camouflage and man's.* Country Life in America (Garden City, N. Y.), June 1918, v. 34 : 26-40.  
 Glover, C. W. *Civil defense.* Brooklyn, N. Y., Chemical Publishing Company, 1941. Chap. XIV : Camouflage, p. 555-608.  
 Gt. Brt. Air raid precautions dept. *Camouflage of large installations.* London, H. M. Stationary Off., 1939. 15p. (Air raid precautions handbook, No. 11 (1st Ed.) ).

<sup>1</sup> The following list is from Technical Bulletin Feb. '42 issued by the Central Housing Committee, Washington, D.C.

- Luckiesh, M. *Visual illusions, their causes, characteristics and applications*. New York, D. Van Nostrand Co., 1922. Chap XV: Camouflage.
- Myerscough-Walker, R. *The camoufleur and his craft*. Builder (London) Sept. 15-Oct. 6, 1939, v. 157: 424-26, 454, 457-58, 489-90, 519-20.
- Thayer, Gerald H. *Concealing coloration in the animal kingdom; an exposition of the laws of disguise through color and pattern*. New York, The Macmillan Company, 1918.
- Work Projects Administration. *Bibliography of air raid precautions and civil defense*. Work Projects Administration, 2324 F. St., N. W., Washington, D. C. June 1941.
- Barker, Maj. M. E. *The art of camouflage*, Military Engineer (Washington) May-June, 1937, v. 29: 181-184.
- Crane, Capt. Charles. *Experiments in camouflage*. Military Engineer Jan.-Feb. 1933, v. 25: 78-79.
- Engineer Board Notes. *Research in camouflage and concealment facilities*. Military Engineer Mar.-Apr., 1941, v. 33: 121-22.
- Engineer Board Notes. *The selection and testing of materials for camouflage*. Military Engineer, Nov. 1941, v. 33: 526-27.
- Greator, C. W. *Camouflage in nature, with some observations on its application in warfare*. Royal Air Force quarterly (London) January, 1936.
- Hill, Lt.-Col. W. P. T. *A review of camouflage literature*. Marine Corps Gazette (Washington) Nov. 1939, March 1940, Nov. 1940, March 1941; v. 23, v. 24, v. 25.
- Kolassovsky, Col. W. *Camouflage in the Russian army*. Military Engineer, March-April, 1924, v. 16: 116-117.
- Lisle, B. Orchard. *Military oil storage*. Military Engineer, May-June, 1941, v. 33: 215-220.
- MacKenzie, Alister. *Commonsense of camouflage defence*. Military Engineer Jan.-Feb. 1934, v. 26: 42-47.
- Commonsense of camouflage attack*. Military Engineer, July-Aug. 1934, v. 26: 288-292.
- Rodyonko, Capt. Peter. *An all-purpose camouflage net*. Military Engineer, March-April, 1941, v. 33: 151-52.
- An individual camouflage kit*. Military

- Engineer, Sept.-Oct., 1940, v. 32 : 347.  
*Camouflage for chemical weapons.* Chemical Warfare Bulletin, Jan. 1938, v. 24 : 18-22.  
*Camouflage today : Texture and shadows.*
- Infantry Journal, May-June, 1939, v. 46 : 277-79.  
*Domestic paper for hasty camouflage.*
- Military Engineer, Oct., 1941, v. 33 : 438-39.  
*Modern camouflage.* Marine corps gazette, March, 1941, v. 25 : 5-15.
- Saint-Gaudens, Lt.-Col. Homer. *Camouflage reminiscences.* Military Engineer, May-June, 1933, v. 25 : 242-48.  
*Camouflage service in the A. E. F.*
- Military Engineer, May-June, v. 17 : 220-25.  
*Present day camouflage.* Reserve Officer, May 1941, v. 18 : 10-13.
- Toch, Maxmilian. *Adventures in camouflage.* Military Engineer. July-August, 1931, v. 23 : 307-09.
- Saint-Gaudens, Lt.-Col. Homer. *Camouflage of seacoast fortifications.* Military Engineer, Sept.-Oct., v. 23 : 411-414.
- Finch, Lt.-Col. Henry A. *Field camouflage and aerial photograph.* Military Engineer, Jan.-Feb., 1932, v. 24 : 30-35.
- Harrison, Lt. Burton. *Recollections of camouflage.* Field Artillery Journal, July-Aug., 1926, v. 16 : 350-57.
- Saint-Gaudens, Capt. Homer. *Artillery camouflage.* Military Engineer, May-June, 1922, v. 14 : 215-1.
- Saint-Gaudens, Major Homer. *Training in field artillery camouflage.* Military Engineer, Sept.-Oct., 1933, v. 15 : 417-19.
- Arnold, Lt. R. R. *Concealment of motor vehicles.* Military Engineer Sept.-Oct., 1939, v. 31 : 329-34.
- Finch, Col. Henry A. *Notes on camouflage testing in Texas.* Military Engineer, March-April, 1939, v. 31 : 112-14.
- Rodyenko, Capt. Peter. *Camouflage for convoys.* Quartermaster review, Sept.-Oct., 1938, v. 18 : 18-20, 64-66.  
*Experiments in camouflage of vehicles.* Military Engineer July-Aug., 1938, v. 30 : 280-85.

Office of Civilian Defence, Washington, U. S. A.: Protective Concealment.

Major R. P. Breckenridge : *Modern Camouflage*.

Konrad F. Wittmann : *Industrial Camouflage Manual*.

### Journals and Periodicals

The Journal of the Town Planning Institute.

The Journal of the Royal Institute of British Architects.

The Journal of the Institute of Civil Engineers.

The " Builder ".

The Journal of the Institution of Municipal and Country Engineers.

The Journal of the Air Raid Protection Institute, London.

The Structural Engineer.

The Planners Journal.

The Town Planning Review.

The Architect's Journal.

Civilian Defence, Dartnell.

The American City, New York.

Civilian Defence Alert, Chicago.

Indian War Effort Number, Calcutta.

The Indian Concrete Journal, Bombay.

The Political Quarterly.

The Sphere.

The Punch.

The Manchester Guardian.

The Times, London.

The Illustrated London News.

Hutchinson's Pictorial History of the War, London.

The Safety News.

The Times of India Illustrated Weekly, Bombay.

The Hindu, Madras.

The Mail, Madras.

The Indian Express, Madras.

The Statesman, Calcutta.

The Sunday Standard, Bombay.

The Sunday Times, Madras.

# INDEX

- Aerial offensives, cost of  
 modern .. 259-60  
 Aerial Torpedo .. 39-42  
 Aerodrome—  
 camouflage measures for, 487-91  
 siting of, .. 227  
 Aircraft, camouflage measures  
 for .. 489-90  
 Aircraft bomb, definition of .. 3  
 Aircraft Carrier .. 39, 40, 51  
 Air Defence—  
 Essentials of, .. 225  
 Town Planning for,  
 (see Town Planning) 263-70  
 \*Research Laboratory .. 191  
 Air Lock .. 138  
 Air raids over—  
 Britain .. 64-66  
 Burma .. 73  
 China .. 62  
 Crete .. 72  
 Finland .. 72  
 Germany .. 67  
 Greece .. 63  
 India .. 17, 289, 324  
 Italy .. 67-68  
 Malta .. 71  
 Pearl Harbour .. 68-70  
 Poland .. 64  
 Rotterdam .. 63-64  
 Russia .. 62-63  
 Spain .. 61-62  
 Air raid damage, compensation  
 for .. 588-90  
 Air Raid shelters (see Shelters)  
 Anderson Steel Shelter 330-34  
 Animals—  
 Air attack on, .. 218-19  
 A. R. P. for, .. 583-86  
 Anti-aircraft guns .. 93-104  
 Anti-gas clothing .. 120  
 Anti-personnel bomb 8, 18, 73  
 A. R. P.—  
 in India .. 583-99  
 public education in, 604-611  
 schools .. 600-603  
 services (see Civil Defence  
 Services)  
 Art Galleries, location of .. 253  
 Art Treasures, evacuation of .. 391  
 Baffle walls .. 347, 384  
 Balloon barrage .. 105-110  
 Barlow Commission .. 279  
 Basement shelters .. 345-50  
 Belgrade, Nazi raids on .. 63  
 Bibliography, Civil Defence 615-24  
 Birds, effect of air raids on .. 76-77  
 Birmingham car park and air  
 raid shelter .. 145-47  
 Black-out—  
 aids to movement in, 526-7,  
 536-8, 539-40  
 aim of, .. 522  
 defects of, .. 527-8, 535-6  
 devices to escape accidents  
 in, .. 525-6  
 devices to locate targets in, 113-14  
 road accidents in, 524-25  
 regulations in India 532-535  
 ventilation in, .. 538  
 Blast .. 11-14  
 Blister gases—  
 Mustard gas .. 46, 48, 50  
 Lewisite .. 46  
 Bomb, aircraft .. 8-18  
 anti-personnel, .. 8, 18, 73  
 definition of, .. 3  
 British types of, .. 7  
 gas (see Gas bombs) .. 6  
 German types of incendiary,  
 (see Incendiary bombs)  
 Japanese varieties of, 8, 18, 27, 73  
 Bomb—  
 disposal squad .. 552  
 resisting cities, over-ground 260-63  
 „ „ underground 260  
 resisting shelters 122, 126, 129-33,  
 152-3, 155-60  
 sight .. 56, 100-101  
 Bombers—  
 versus Battleships .. 68-70  
 versus Fighters .. 84-91  
 Bombing—  
 by television .. 108  
 reaction of people to, 609-10  
 Booths garden shelter .. 338  
 Box Barrage .. 98  
 Brick shelters, 344, 380-83, 354-55  
 Buildings—  
 decontamination of, 447-50  
 damaged in Britain by air  
 raids .. 451-52  
 Bunks in air raid shelters 364-65  
 Calcutta, evacuation in .. 322  
 Camouflage—  
 11, 113, 453-521  
 ancient Indian, .. 541  
 colours .. 510-14  
 kinds of, .. 456-8  
 materials .. 509-14  
 Nature's, .. 459-62  
 paints .. 511-13  
 planting .. 519-20



Comforts in air raid shelters ..	137	Demolition of dangerous structures after air raids ..	562-66
Canteens in air raid shelters ..	365	Detonation, bomb ..	11
Canterbury, reprisal raids on ..	114	Direct hit of bomb —	
Car parks—		on buildings ..	9, 16, 126
and air raid shelters ..	145-47, 149-51	on shelters ..	386-7
camouflaging open, ..	501-2	on vehicles ..	198-99
Cattle in air raids (see Animals)		Disruption of outline of buildings ..	469-71
Chemical closet ..	141	Disruptive patterns ..	439-40
Chungking—		Dive bombing ..	36
A. R. P. in, ..	554	Domestic surface shelters ..	335-36
Rock shelters in, ..	157	Door, steel shelter ..	140
Churches—		Douglas air-craft factory ..	185-6
destroyed in air raids ..	428	Dummies for deception—	
A. R. P. for, ..	428-30	kinds of, ..	482
Cities—		methods of erecting, ..	483-5
Bomb proof, ..	260-63	Ear plug ..	23
Central parks for, ..	237	Earth waves of bomb explosion ..	20
of tomorrow ..	240	Elsan Chemical Closet ..	141
Civil Defence—		Emergency exits for shelters ..	153
Act of 1939 ..	437	Entrance, shelter	
Bibliography ..	615-24	baffle walls for, ..	317
Institute of, ..	600	requirements ..	153, 317
in Great Britain ..	547-53	protection of, ..	140
in India ..	593-604	traversed, ..	317
Schools ..	600-603	Essential services—	
Services ..	545-46	vulnerability of, ..	195-201, 438
Civilian deaths in air raids ..	60, 63	precautions to maintain, ..	437-446
Civilian respirator ..	120-21	Evacuation—	110-11, 286-326
Cleansing station ..	212, 553	British scheme of, ..	292-301
Clothing, protective ..	121-22	camps for, ..	310-313, 318
Communal shelters ..	151-52, 370-72	cost of, ..	296, 312
Communication facilities—		defects of, ..	298-300
breakdown in air raids of, ..	197-8	failure of, ..	297, 301
vulnerability of, ..	196-200, 208	rural betterment and, ..	310-21
Compensation for raid damage to civilians ..	588-90	Explosives used in H. E. bombs ..	9
Control post ..	550	Factories—	
Cooling towers, camouflage measures for ..	470	camouflaging, ..	491-96
Countershading ..	477	designs for war time; ..	180-84, 427
Craters, bomb ..	18-20	invisible types of, ..	185-6
Crime and air raids, Juvenile ..	77	location of, ..	496-7
Crops, precautions for standing ..	446	precautions for, ..	422-28
Daylight raids ..	53, 54, 55	protective walls for, ..	423-25
Debris clearing ..	546, 567-8	obscuring lights of, ..	494-5
Decongestion of vulnerable areas ..	325-6	Farm animals—	
Decontamination of—		(see Animals)	
buildings ..	164	precautions for, ..	218-19
building materials ..	447-50	Farm produce, protection of ..	213
household articles ..	167	Fighter—	
vehicles ..	212	aircraft ..	81-84
road surfaces ..	209	bombers ..	87
Decoys, Camouflage ..	482-85	escort ..	87
Deep shelters ..	422-3, 154-60	raids ..	92-3
Defence positions, camouflaging ..	486-87	Fighters versus Bombers ..	84-91

- Fire—  
 breaks .. 172  
 brigades, reorganisation of .. 561  
 extinguishers .. 404-405  
 fighting parties .. 396-7  
 prevention education .. 405  
 proof materials .. 170  
 precautions for structures  
 against, .. 392-405  
 water requirements for  
 fighting, .. 172-3  
 watchers .. 401, 560
- First aid—  
 parties .. 599  
 posts, mobile .. 598
- Flares, parachute .. 113-14
- Flying mine .. 95
- Food—  
 and clothing for bombed-out  
 .. 579-82  
 convoys (or Queen's Messengers)  
 .. 579-80  
 grow more, .. 216  
 supply in war time .. 215  
 supply, self-sufficiency of .. 213-14  
 precautions against gas  
 contamination of, .. 212-17  
 production, research for .. 222
- Fragments, bomb, .. 17-18  
 protection against penetra-  
 tion of, .. 18  
 velocity of, .. 17
- Framed structures .. 174
- Garages convertible into shelters 149-50
- Garden trench .. 341-3
- Garnish—  
 manufactured and natural, 479  
 method of using, 479-80
- Gas—  
 attack .. 42-44, 51  
 bomb .. 47  
 contamination of body  
 buildings .. 49-50  
 roads .. 50  
 kinds of liquid poison, .. 45  
 proof doors .. 140  
 refuges .. 122  
 resisting materials .. 165-6  
 spray .. 47-49
- Glass panes—  
 anti-scatter treatment for, 416-19  
 armour plate, .. 179  
 blast effect on, .. 416  
 dangers of, .. 178, 416, 419  
 wired, .. 419
- Gorel Committee on the Control  
 of Flying .. 247-48
- Green belts around cities .. 231-4
- Grow more food .. 216
- Ground floor shelter .. 346-7, 352
- Ground pattern .. 471-72
- Heavy case bomb .. 4
- High explosive bomb—  
 angle of approach of, .. 21-22  
 anti-personnel, .. 8, 18  
 armour piercing, .. 4  
 British, .. 7  
 dimensions of, .. 5  
 German, .. 6  
 kinds of, .. 4-5  
 penetrating power of, .. 14-15
- Holiday camps .. 315-16
- Hospital patients, evacuation of .. 291
- Houses—  
 first aid repairs to, .. 573  
 for bombed-out people .. 321-25  
 war damage repair to, .. 573-76
- Hutment camps .. 323-4
- Incendiary bombs—  
 25-36  
 (see also Kilo magnesium  
 electron incendiary bomb)  
 combined H. E. and, .. 29  
 explosive, .. 28, 31  
 German, .. 27  
 Japanese, .. 27  
 multiple effect, .. 26  
 phosphorous oil, .. 27, 29  
 raids with, .. 32, 33
- Indoor shelters 334, 336-7, 348, 351,  
 336-7, 378
- India, A. R. P. in .. 593-99
- Indian back pack pump .. 398
- Industries, location of .. 241-42
- Japanese air raids .. 18, 73, 221
- Juvenile crime wave in wartime .. 77
- Keymen-shelters .. 361-2
- Kilo magnesium electron incendiary  
 bomb—  
 description of, .. 33  
 destruction caused by, .. 34  
 roofs to resist penetration of, 34, 394  
 smothering the, .. 398-401
- Land marks .. 507, 515, 17
- Land mines .. 24
- Lean-to shelter .. 352
- Lewisite .. 46
- Libraries—  
 damaged in air raids .. 254  
 location of future, .. 253  
 precautions for, .. 435
- Lighting restrictions in India .. 532-55
- Liquid poison gas (see Gas)

Liverpool Anglican Cathedral, precautions adopted for	428	Persistent gases— effect on body ..	48
Liverpool underground shelter	143	buildings ..	49-50
London Tubes used as shelters	156-8	Phosgene ..	45
Lung irritant gases ..	45	Photo-electric devices to detect incendiary bombs ..	403
Machine-gun attack on— children and women ..	37	Pill box air raid shelter	379-80
civilian population ..	38	Planning commission	281-86
fishermen and trawlers ..	37	Ploughing for Victory ..	215
railway carriages	37-8, 198	Post raid information ..	582-3
Maginot line ..	125	Post-war— planning ..	282-4
Malta— air raids on, ..	71	reconstruction in England	273-5
rock shelters in, ..	125	Projecting features in buildings— dangers of, ..	179
Mass raids ..	54, 72	elimination of, ..	179-80
Medical organisation for A. R. P.	576-79	Protection against blast and splinters, lateral ..	407
Methods of air attack	3, 51-61	Protective— clothing ..	120
Mine, flying ..	95	walls ..	186
Models, camouflage ..	507-8	Psychological effect of air raids	74-5
Molotov's breadbasket	26	Queen's Messengers	579-80
Moonlight raids ..	55	Radio location ..	98
Morrison indoor table shelter	336-7	Railways— air attacks on, ..	445
Motor car, camouflaging	501-2	A. R. P. for, ..	445
Mustard gas	45-6, 48, 50	R. A. F. raids, weight of ..	56-57
Museum contents— evacuation of, ..	435-6	Reception areas ..	293
precautions for, ..	432-5	Reconstruction, post-war	273-81
National— Buildings Record ..	431	Rescue parties	552, 562-66
Parks ..	320	Refuge room ..	187
Planning and Reconstruction	281-6	Reinforced concrete ..	174, 176
Nature, camouflage in	459-62	Repairs— first aid, ..	573
Nerve centres, location of ..	247-8	war damage, ..	573-6
Net, camouflage garnishing of, ..	478-80	Residential estates, planning of	243-5
concealment by, ..	476-7	Respirator ..	119
principle underlying use of, ..	477-8	Restaurants, precautions for	438-9, 443
overhead covers of, ..	480-82	Road— accidents in blackout	524-25
Noise, bomb explosion ..	23	accidents, devices to escape	525-6
Non-persistent gases	45	surfaces, decontamination of	209
Non-official bodies in civil defence ..	611-13	systems for air defence	207-8, 210-12, 234-6
Obscuration of light ..	522-40	Rock-cut shelters in— Chungking ..	157
(see Black-out)		Gibraltar ..	125
Oil tanks, camouflage measures for ..	497-98	Malta ..	125
Open spaces for air defence ..	243	Roofs— bombproof shelter, ..	131-2
Paints— camouflage, ..	511-514	fireproofing of, ..	393-4
luminous, ..	527	strengthening of, ..	394
Palaces, precautions for ..	428-32	Roof spotters	561-62
Pasturage around cities ..	246-7	Runways, camouflaging	488-90
Pattern bombing ..	58		
Pearl Harbour, aerial attack on	68-9		

- Rural areas—  
 air raids on, .. 590  
 A. R. P. for, 551-2, 595-6
- Rural betterment and—  
 decentralisation .. 318-19  
 evacuation .. 310-21
- Safety—  
 cities for children .. 246  
 room in houses .. 378
- Salvage and storage .. 567-73
- Sand bag walls—  
 alternatives to, .. 411-17  
 defects of, .. 412-3  
 hollow concrete blocks instead  
 of, .. 410, 414  
 method of erecting, .. 408-9  
 rot proofing of, .. 409
- Sanitation, air raid shelter .. 363-66
- Scabbing .. 15-16
- Schools—  
 Civil Defence staff, .. 603  
 Home Office A. R. P., 600-601  
 Provincial A. R. P. Staff, 602-3
- Schindler stronghold .. 124
- Screaming device for bombs .. 23
- Scott's (Lord Justice) Committee  
 Report .. 318-9
- Self-sufficient units .. 220-22
- Sewer squad organisation .. 441-2
- Shadow, concealment of .. 475-82
- Shelters, air raid  
 brick, .. 380-85  
 designs for India .. 366-80  
 direct hits on, .. 126-29  
 domestic, .. 330-47  
 equipment of, .. 133-44  
 hospitals in, .. 143  
 keymen, .. 361-63  
 large, .. 360-61  
 medium size, .. 348-59  
 sanitation and comfort in, 363-65  
 ventilation requirement of, 134-36
- Siegfried Line .. 127
- Slit trenches .. 368, 373-5
- Smoke—  
 Abatement Society, National 251  
 harm of Industrial, .. 251-2  
 Smoke screen .. 365
- Splinters, bomb  
 penetrative capacity of, .. 18  
 protection against, .. 18
- Spray, gas .. 47
- Spur development .. 256-7
- Statues, precautions for .. 436-7
- Stirrup pump against kilo magnesium  
 bombs, method of using 399-401
- Storage of debris .. 568-79
- Suction effect of blast .. 13-11
- Table shelter, Morrison .. 336-37
- Tear gas .. 45
- Temples, precautions for .. 428-32
- Time bomb .. 7, 13
- Toning down .. 486-7, 505
- Torpedo, aerial .. 39-42
- Town planning for air defence in—  
 Britain .. 266-8  
 France .. 263  
 Poland .. 263  
 Germany .. 265-6  
 Turkey .. 264
- Townships for air security .. 238-6,  
 272-3
- Training of A. R. P.  
 personnel .. 599-603
- Traffic accidents in blackout .. 524-25
- Transport—  
 animals during air raids .. 198-9  
 system, bombing of  
 vehicles, precautions for .. 444-6  
 camouflaging .. 499-502
- Traversed entry .. 347
- Trenches—  
 covered, .. 360-61  
 garden, .. 341-43  
 for floating population .. 360
- Tube shelters, concrete .. 339-40
- Tunnel shelters—  
 in New Castle-upon-Tyne .. 159  
 in Southark .. 155
- Underground—  
 car park and shelters .. 145-47  
 shelters .. 122-3
- Unexploded bombs .. 586-88
- Universities, location of .. 253
- Vehicles—  
 camouflage treatment for, 500-501  
 decontamination of, .. 212  
 precautionary measures for, 609
- Ventilation, shelter—  
 dangers of breakdown in, .. 136  
 mechanical plants for, .. 139-40  
 requirements for, .. 134-6
- Ventilating plant .. 139-40
- Vibration effect of bomb explosion .. 11
- Walls—  
 baffle, .. 347, 84  
 gas proofing of, .. 165-6  
 load bearing, .. 405  
 panel, .. 117  
 protective type of, .. 186  
 resistance of brick, .. 175  
 safety valve type of, .. 187
- Wars, cost of modern .. 260

War damage—		Watercraft, camouflaging ..	502
compensation for civilians	588-90	Westminster Abbey, precaution-	
repair procedure ..	573-6	ary measures adopted in	428-9
Warning system, air raid—		Winkel Tower ..	124
of England ..	555-7	Wilmot's Fortress air raid shelter	
of India ..	557-9		337-8
War time—		Windows—	
Factory design ..	180-184	protective measures for,	178-9,
Nursery ..	307-8	dangers of glass in, ..	414-20
Water—		wired glass for, ..	416
concealment of,	503-4	anti-scatter treatment for	
requirements for fire		glass in, ..	416-19
fighting ..	172-73	pebble screen for,	415-16
supply for residential areas	203-4	Women and A. R. P.	590-93
non-residential areas	204-5		
maintenance during raids	440-41	Zeppelin raids ..	75
tanks for fire fighting, static	402-3	Zoos, A. R. P. for ..	436

APPRECIATIONS AND REVIEWS  
ON  
**AIR RAIDS & CIVIL DEFENCE**

By L. M. CHITALE, F.R.I.B.A., A.M.T.P.I.

• • • • •  
**Private Secretary to His Excellency the Governor of Madras.**

"...His Excellency realises the labour involved in its preparation and appreciates the spirit in which you have undertaken it..."

\* \* \* \* \*  
**Secretary to His Excellency the Governor of Bombay.**

"...His Excellency.....has seen it with much interest."

\* \* \* \* \*  
**H. E. General Sir Claude Auchinleck, G.C.I.E., etc.,  
Commander-in-Chief in India.**

"...One of the essential components of the Defence of India is an efficient A.R.P. Organisation. There is much in your book which will stimulate interest in this subject..."

\* \* \* \* \*  
**H. E. Sir Henry Duffield Craik, Bart., G.C.I.E., K.C.S.I., I.C.S.,  
Governor of Punjab.**

"...a most useful and comprehensive publication..."

\* \* \* \* \*  
**Secretary to H. E. the Governor, United Provinces.**

"...containing as it does very detailed advice on all matters pertaining to air-raid precautions, will give valuable help in preparing the country against enemy attack."

\* \* \* \* \*  
**Secretary to His Excellency the Governor of Sind.**

"...His Excellency was impressed by the all-embracing nature of your book..."

\* \* \* \* \*  
**The Hon'ble Sir J. P. Srivatsava, K.C.I.E.,  
Member for Civil Defence, Government of India.**

"...An excellent treatise which summarises most of the information on A.R.P. in a lucid and pleasing style. It should prove useful both to the A.R.P. workers and the general public."

\* \* \* \* \*  
**The Hon'ble Sir A. Ramaswamy Mudaliar, Kt.,  
Commerce Member, Government of India.**

"...It is a comprehensive publication and must be of great value and assistance to those engaged in formulating air raid precautions. The practical suggestions you have made to suit Indian conditions will, I have no doubt, receive their careful consideration."

**The Hon'ble Dr. B. R. Ambedkar, M.A., D.Sc., Ph.D., Bar-at-law,  
Member for Labour, Government of India.**

"...book is very useful to public and people who will read it will certainly gain considerable knowledge on the question of Air Raids and Civil Defence."

**The Hon'ble Sir Mohamed Usman, K.C.I.E.,  
Member for Posts & Air ; Government of India.**

"...most useful and instructive publication and will, I am sure, serve the purpose for which it is written."

**The Hon'ble A. K. Fazlul Huq, Chief Minister, Bengal.**

"...very pleased to go through your book ...will serve the purpose for which it has been written..."

**Sir K. S. Fitze, K.C.I.E.,  
Secretary to H. E. the Crown Representative.**

"...contains much information that will be of real value to all those concerned with Air Raid Precaution work in India."

**A. W. Ibbotson Esq., Director-General of Civil Defence,  
Government of India.**

"...a useful contribution to the literature on the subject."

**Lt.-Col. A. J. Reeve, Chief A.R.P. Officer, Government of India.**

"...read your book with great interest. There is much literature on Air Raid Precautions, but little of it deals with India and its special problems. Your book has now filled this gap..."

**A Pilot Officer in the R.A.F., Air Head Quarters, New Delhi.**

"...Excellent piece of work... contains valuable information and data that is of the utmost value to persons concerned in Civil Defence... it should be in the shelf of every one in the A.R.P."

**Director, National Service Department, Dominion of New Zealand,  
Wellington C. 2.**

"...You have covered the ground very thoroughly and gathered a great deal of information of a practical nature..."

**His Excellency the Rt. Hon'ble Sir Akbar Hydari,  
President, H. E. the Nizam's Executive Council.**

"...very instructive and of great value in the present circumstances."

**Sir P. S. Sivaswamy Iyer, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E.**

"Congratulate you on having brought out such a valuable book on a topic of immense practical interest. Wide study of the available recent literature upon the subject and much thought have gone into the making of your book. There is no aspect of the problem of air raid defence which you have omitted to consider. Your book is comprehensive and will, I hope, create a wide interest among our people in the subject of defence against air raid..."

**Dr. Sir S. Radhakrishnan, Kt., D.Litt., F.B.A.,  
Spalding Professor of Eastern Religions and Ethics, Oxford University ; and Vice-Chancellor, Benares Hindu University.**

"An invaluable and indispensable book...The practical solution suggested are intended to minimise human suffering and preserve and save intact the products of our culture and civilization from ruthless destruction...Hope this timely publication would receive the recognition it richly deserves..."

\* \* \* \*

**Sir C. P. Ramaswamy Iyer, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E.,  
Dewan of Travancore.**

"...a very valuable and timely publication...congratulate you on the extent and profundity of your information and the research you have brought to bear on the subject..."

\* \* \* \*

**Sir R. K. Shanmukham Chetty, K.C.I.E., Dewan of Cochin.**

"...excellent work...A.R.P. has now become inevitable part of our daily life. Your book is a timely and useful publication...will be of immense assistance to all those engaged in A.R.P. Organisation..."

\* \* \* \*

**The Hon'ble Mr. P. N. Saprú, Chairman, Civil Defence Committee,  
Central Legislature, New Delhi.**

"...read with much interest and admiration...excellent publication which all those interested in Civil protection should go through...industry and ability mark his book."

\* \* \* \*

**Rao Bahadur G. A. Natesan, Chairman, Propaganda Committee,  
Madras Provincial War Committee.**

"...A good deal of useful information is given in a clear and concise manner... The authorities of all Corporations, Municipalities, Industrial concerns and A.R.P. Organisations would do well to acquaint themselves with the valuable information in this book and the practical steps suggested. It would be equally useful and profitable to the well-to-do citizen..."

\* \* \* \*

**Mr. N. V. Modak, B.E., M.I.C.E., M.I.E., J.P. etc., President,  
Indian Institute of Engineers.**

"Civil Defence, in its whole perspective, well presented. First and only book of its kind, best suited to eastern conditions. The Chapter on Post-War Reconstruction is of great interest. Useful to Engineers and A. R. P. Organisations, as well as Administrators and Educational Institutions."

\* \* \* \*

**The Town Planning Institute, London.**

"...a comprehensive review of most that has been published on A.R.P., in this country and provides, in a readable form, a full summary of the official literature on the subject. .... book could be read with advantage by the general public of this country (England) as well as of India."



### **The Indian Concrete Journal.**

"...The most extensive of the books on the subject published in India. ...and a digest of all the information issued in England by Home Office and other authorities. ...Matter is well arranged in sequence and is interesting throughout. The author's remarks with reference to Indian conditions are very useful to the Local A.R.P. Authorities and public at large. The book is profusely illustrated by sketches and art plates, and should prove of great help to Engineers."

\* \* \* \*

### **The Sunday Standard.**

"...a book which has a topical interest and appeal. ... Mr. Chitale employs an easily understandable style and his book should prove of indispensable value to one and all. ... Very valuable chapters. ... the volume, an answer to an Indian's prayer at a moment when bombers are almost over his head."

A graphic and heartening picture of how civil defence can function in times of raids, Mr. Chitale's book should provide inspiration and hope for all Indians. By presenting this comprehensive volume, the author does India a signal service."

\* \* \* \*

### **The "Jute Journal", Calcutta.**

"...extremely timely publication. Mr. Chitale has made extensive researches and a deep study of contemporary problems and events. No pains have been spared to make a highly technical subject easily assimilable to the lay reader ...the work deserves a wide appreciation..."

\* \* \* \*

### **The "Amrit Bazaar Patrika".**

"...Mr. Chitale, an expert in architectural engineering...prescribes in his work many a protective measure...Mr. Chitale's book is particularly valuable...as it admirably summarises most of the information on A.R.P."

\* \* \* \*

### **The "Times of India".**

"A welcome addition to the A.R.P. literature...a good introduction to the subject...is a valuable digest of the highlights of official literature...the problem is treated from all important angles."

\* \* \* \*

### **The "Statesman", Calcutta.**

"Written by an Architect and Town Planner, this volume sets out the main considerations about defence against air raids. It gathers together information about Indian towns and their needs....Gas, fire, blast, splinters are all brought into review. Defences and shelters are considered....The book contains a great deal of varied information and a large number of illustrations...."

\* \* \* \*

### **The "Journal of the Indian Institute of Architects".**

"Very comprehensive...noteworthy simplicity and freshness of presentation ...should be read by every intelligent member of the public."

**The "Bombay Chronicle".**

"Excellent treatise...Commend this book to the Engineers, Architects, City Fathers and Administrators."

\* \* \* \*

**The "Hindu".**

"The author in his professional capacity visualises not only the immediate problems of the people but the even more important problem of the future development of our cities."

\* \* \* \*

**The "Indian Express", Madras.**

"Mr. Chitale's book...will make him (average citizen) realise with a shock just what an air raid means and what sort of protection is necessary...The whole book is a vast mine of information in most of the aspects of air raid defence...Mr. Chitale deals with the whole question in a thorough and comprehensive manner..."

\* \* \* \*

**The All-India Radio, Madras.**

"Strongly recommend to everyone interested in Civil Defence. It is indispensable for one and all engaged in A.R.P. It is a book of the hour and a book of the day. Everyone should read it."

\* \* \* \*

*Extracts from some of the numerous circulars issued by the Heads of Departments of Provincial Governments, all over India, to their Officers recommending purchase of this publication, are given below:—*

**Inspector-General of Police, North West Frontier Province, Peshawar.**

"...This very useful book is for perusal and reference by senior police officers and for record in their libraries."

\* \* \* \*

**U. P. Police Gazette Notification No. VIII-123-42, dated Jan. 5, 1943.**

"...This book...very useful information on A.R.P. It also gives details of the latest protective measures designed to meet air attacks...."

\* \* \* \*

**Bengal Police Gazette, 5th Febr. 1943.**

"...contains useful information on Air Raid Precautions...."

\* \* \* \*

**Sind Police Gazette :—Notification No. 13044, dated 11-11-1942.**

"An interesting and useful book...."

\* \* \* \*

**Inspector-General of Police, Orissa.**

"...the book contains some valuable information regarding Air Raid Precautions work in India. You (all Superintendents of Police, Orissa) may obtain a copy of the book."

\* \* \* \*

**Director of Public Instruction, Assam, Shillong.**

"This is a most useful book and the war being near Assam, it will be of real help to the people of Assam."

**Director of Public Instruction, U.P., Allahabad.**

'...the book contains much useful information on A.R.P. and prescribes many protective measures....It is fully illustrated.'

\* \* \* \*

**Director of Public Instruction, Bengal, Calcutta.**

...This is a useful book....recommend this....you may purchase a copy of the book for your College or School library."

\* \* \* \*

**Chief Engineer (Buildings and Road), P.W.D., Madras.**

"...a useful book of reference on A.R.P. Problems. The Superintending Engineers of Circles and the Executive Engineers of all territorial divisions may get a copy each of the book and get acquainted with Air Raid Defence works....The book may be circulated among the Sub-Divisional officers for study...."

\* \* \* \*

**Chief Engineer, P.W.D., Assam, Shillong.**

"...A useful book of reference on A.R.P. Problems....You (all Executive Engineers) may purchase a copy of the book and get yourself acquainted with Air Raid Defence works, and circulate the same to your sub-divisional officers for study."

\* \* \* \*

**Director of Public Health, Madras.**

"...useful book of reference for those concerned in A.R.P. work....The book is commended to all Health Officers in A.R.P. areas."

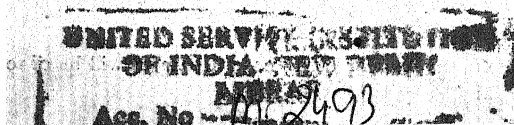
\* \* \* \*

**Federation of Indian Chambers of Commerce, New Delhi,  
Circular No. I.E. 317 dated 1-9-1943.**

"A very useful and comprehensive publication on all matters pertaining to air raid precautions, with special reference to India."

*For copies apply :* The Author, Oriental Buildings,  
Armenian Street, G. T., Madras.

*S.P.*





United Service Institution of India  
Library

Acc. No. M.2493

Class No. 358.274 Book No. CHI

Author Chitale, L.M.

Title Air Raids and Civil Defence

Date of Issue	Date of Return	Date of Issue	Date of Return
---------------	----------------	---------------	----------------



United Service Institution of India  
Library

- \* Books drawn by a member can be retained for one month and renewed once, provided no other member requires them.
- \* New books must be returned within two weeks.
- \* Not more than two books may be on loan at the same time.
- \* Members are prohibited from transferring books to other members.
- \* Members will be required to pay full price with penalty of any book lost or damaged by them.
- \* Reference and Rare books are not allowed to be taken out of the Library.
- \* Books are liable to be recalled when in special request.